

Metts Ancestors in America

The Direct Line

FAMILY HISTORY LIBRARY
35 NORTH WEST TEMPLE
SALT LAKE CITY, UTAH 84150

FIFTH EDITION

By

Albert Caswell Metts, Jr.
1996

PUBLISHED PRIVATELY
BY THE AUTHOR
San Antonio, Texas

*USIC 79
989.2.3
17568 mac*

Library of Congress
Catalog Card Number: 84-62515

Copyright © 1984
Albert Caswell Metts, Jr.

Preface

This history of the Metts family is written for the descendants who are living today and for those yet to be born. Each person is different from all others, but shares, to some degree, inherited characteristics passed on from their ancestors. Stories from the past are interesting and varied. Some of the forebears were wealthy and some were poor. Some were brave and others were not. The famous are easy to find and their lives are on record. Others seem to have tried to hide themselves and have left few dim footprints in the sands of time. Some will never be found.

Research was completed to base these stories upon valid documents. Throughout America, there is a fast growing interest in genealogy, the science of family research. Archives, computers, publications, and societies interested in research are available which were unknown to writers in the past. But problems are developing for the researcher, today. Original basic records, usually, are in county courthouses. In the past, a letter to the Probate Judge of a county would be answered with copies of vital documents. Now, with so many people doing research, letters may be thrown away or the response is a list of professional genealogists. Archives and libraries are crowded and service is slow. Research leads to thousands of documents, copied and filed. Then, when the family story is written, a decision has to be made about documentation. Many genealogies are so well documented that no one will read them, the story is lost in references. On the other hand, if the readers have never seen a land grant from the King of England, it should be included. This family history is written for people to read. Most documents will be left in the files.

Ancestors are those who are fathers, mothers, grandparents, and so on back through the generations. Brothers, sisters, uncles, aunts and cousins are not ancestors, even though they are relatives. To a moderate extent, children of ancestors are named, but the emphasis of this history is given to the direct line. Further, if ancestors were limited to those with the Metts name, the story would be short and dull. Looking back, it may be said that the smartest thing done by men named Metts is that they chose great wives. The surnames of those wives - Oliver, Pillow, Nash, Scales, Taylor, Cock, and many more, point to the origin of today's descendants. What is our family nationality? The children of this writer are about half English. The other half is mostly Scotch-Irish or just plain Irish, or Scottish, and about one-eighth German. Most of our ancestors have been in America since Colonial times. That means that they were here before the American Revolution. Some lived in Jamestowne in the early 1600s. At least twenty fought as soldiers in the American Revolution. Another twenty were patriots during the Revolution. An equal number took part in the Colonial Wars.

The organization of this history is by surname, then by individual going back to the oldest known ancestor. The Metts name will be first. Chapters follow with the other family surnames and persons are traced until they join the Metts line. The charts should be studied in order to understand where people

fit into the family. Another reason for this organization is that there are no plans to publish this book on a large scale. Various members of the family may want the parts that apply to their branch. For example, Pillows need the preface and the Pillow chapters. Some Metts members may need all the chapters. This preface includes discussions that apply to all chapters.

The spelling of names always causes questions. In the colonial days, most of the emigrants could not read or write. This was true of the wealthy as well as the poor. With the Metts family, Michael Albert Metts, the Captain in the War Between the States, was the first of our Metts line to read and write. Some of the Jamestowne immigrants were educated, but their descendants who were moving west and living in the backwoods, did not go to school. When a person was asked for his name, he spoke the word. The writer wrote it the way it sounded. Often, on a single document a name would be spelled several ways. Michael Albert Metts was the first M-E-T-T-S. Before that, it was MITTS, MITS, MITZ, or METZ. Pillow was Piller and Pillar. Allen was also Allin. Cock was Cocke and Cox. In this history, the names will be spelled as they appear in most documents of the period described.

A large part of the information is taken from primary documents, and, probably, is factual. Also, research of dependable references was used to compile the history of the family. Usually, old family legends are based upon truth, but may be exaggerated or may contain honest errors. Much research was done to check and correct the old stories. Even the old NSDAR records are often wrong. The ladies did their best, but the archives, computers, and libraries we have today were not available to them. When Ella Oliver Richardson, sister of John Madison Oliver, prepared her Colonial Dames papers, she went to Richmond, VA, and to Jamestowne, where she spent months climbing the stairs of the old courthouses and digging through boxes of old papers. What took months then can be done in a few hours today. The work of ladies like Ella have lead to the literature in our libraries.

Generally, the stories will be written in the third person until the information is based upon personal knowledge. Then, the use of the first person will tell the reader that the memory and experience of the writer is being described.

Separate chapters for each surname will begin with general information needed to know of that family's background. Charts will allow the reader to study the relationships.

This edition contains the same information as previous editions plus a few additional facts. Some chapters have been rewritten. The main reason for continuing change is to correct errors and to add new information. Some of the recent research has been organized into appendices which are interesting and provide additional knowledge of those people who lived in America long ago.

Introduction

The task of describing several hundred ancestors, of explaining their relationship, and of providing the information to others requires an appropriate organization of the subject matter. Therefore, this book is divided into four parts. Each part is devoted to a different segment of the family. A separate chart is provided for each part. Having four charts simplifies the preparation and use of each to follow the descriptions. The four parts come together as shown below:

	<u>Albert Caswell Metts</u>		Part I METTS
Albert Caswell Metts, Jr.	b. 6 Sep 1886 d. 23 Feb 1965 m. 19 Aug 1915		
b. 24 Apr 1921	Gladys Marie Oliver	<u>John Madison Oliver</u>	Part II OLIVER
m. 2 Jan 1944	b. 22 Jun 1893 d. 20 Jun 1950	b. 4 Apr 1867 d. 1 Mar 1934 m. 24 Mar 1892 <u>Elizabeth Porter Pillow</u>	Part III PILLOW
<u>Elizabeth Lee Gray</u>	b. 16 Jul 1926	b. 9 May 1870 d. 17 Aug 1953	Part IV GRAY

Plans for providing selected parts of the book to family members according to their interests was mentioned in the preface. Most Metts cousins known to this writer are descended from or were raised by both parents of Albert Caswell Metts. Accordingly, Part I, Metts, is devoted to both John Phillip Metts and his wife, Nora L. Taylor.

The family of John Madison Oliver is the subject of Part II, Oliver. Far more information is available on his ancestors than on the others. Many were very famous in early colonial times. The volume of interesting material had to be condensed for practical reasons. This line can be traced back to the days of the Magna Charta in England. Since this book is devoted to American ancestors, those before the immigrants are not presented in detail.

The Pillow kin are given a separate Part III, Pillow. Most of them live around Greenwood, MS. The research on this segment of the family has been rewarding and interesting. Thirteen of these ancestors had military service in the American Revolution. Here, too, two of the lines have been traced back to Barons who were Sureties of the Magna Charta.

The family of Betty, Elizabeth Lee Gray Metts, was the first branch of the family to be researched. Part IV, Gray, is a copy of the report that was prepared and distributed to the members of the Gray family.

The statements, above, may indicate that this book was written for all the cousins. It was. But, the foremost objective must be stated. This book was completed for the children and grandchildren of this writer.

The first child, Virginia Lee Metts was born 18 November 1946 in the 98th General Hospital in Munich, Germany.

The family lived in Degerndorf, Bavaria, until 1947, when the move was made to Charleston, South Carolina. Service at The Citadel lasted for three years. Then, the Korean War started, so Betty and Ginny were moved to Tulsa, Oklahoma. Albert Caswell Metts, 3rd, was born in Tulsa. After one year of Korean War service, there were two years at Fort Benning, GA, where William Roger Metts was born. Next, there was an MBA at Syracuse University, and on to the Pentagon in Washington, where the family lived for many years. Except for four years in Hawaii, Ginny spent most of her childhood in Arlington, Virginia.

She married David Wendell Kennamer, II on 30 November 1968. He was an executive in the IBM corporation. David, Ginny and their children moved from New Orleans to Dallas to Washington to St. Louis and back to Washington. Their son, Charles Albert Kennamer was born 9 Mar 1973 at the Oschner Clinic in New Orleans. Their second son, John David Kennamer was born 27 June 1979 at Arlington Hospital, Arlington, VA,.

As stated, above, Albert Caswell Metts, 3rd, was born in Tulsa, Oklahoma, during the Korean War, on 6 Mar 1951. Most of his childhood was spent in Hawaii and the Washington area. He graduated from the University of Mississippi and came to San Antonio, Texas. He married Patricia Coy Jurgens on 12 May 1979. Their son, Michael Albert Metts, named for his great, great, great grandfather, was born 27 Jun 1981. Stephen James Metts, their second son, was born 11 August 1984. Both boys were born in the Methodist Hospital in San Antonio, Texas. Their father is an accountant.

William Roger Metts was born at Fort Benning, Georgia, on 30 December 1952. As his brother, his boyhood was spent, mostly, in Hawaii and the Washington area. He graduated from Southwest Texas University. He married Rosemary Lindsey on 13 Oct 1979. Roger was a fluid control engineer, working on off-shore oil drilling platforms. They had no children. Roger was killed on April 26th 1987 in a tragic and senseless boating collision on the Neiches River in Beaumont, Texas.

The introduction to the immediate family has been made, so the time has come to turn to the Metts ancestors.

Standesamt München, Ruppertstrasse

betrifft:
Geburtsurkunden

Birth Certificate

Virginia Lee Metts

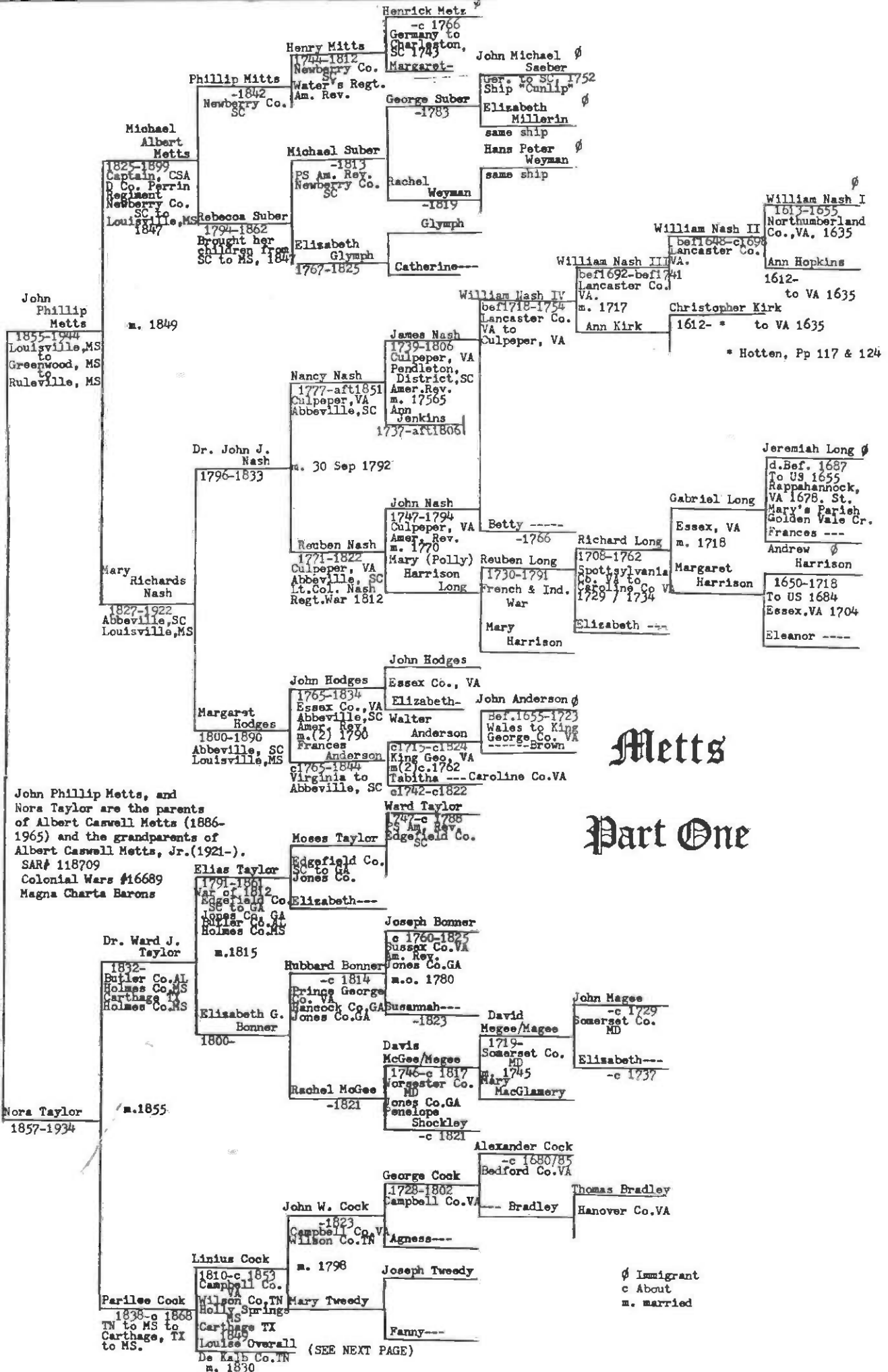
Munich, Germany
1946

Am 10.11.1946 nachmittags 12 Uhr 01 Min. wurde im 9^o th General Hospital (Krankenhaus Schwabing, München, Kölnerplatz 1) das Kind weibl. Geschlechtes Virginia Lee Metts geboren.
Vater : Albert Caswell Metts geb. 24.4.1921 zu Clarksdale, Miss. Captain in der Amerik. Armee.
Mutter : Elizabeth Lee Metts geb. Gray geb. 16.7.1926 zu Newport News, Va.
Heimatadresse der Eltern: 150 Cherry Street, Clarksdale Miss.
Die Ehe der Eltern wurde am 2.1.1944 zu Clarksdale, Miss. geschlossen.
Wir bitten um Ausstellung von 3 Geburtsurkunden.
München den 20.11.1946

J. G. Grouen

Table of Contents

Title Page-----	i
Preface	iii
Introduction	v
Table of Contents	vii
METTS - Part One Chart-----	1
Metts	3
Suber	41
Nash	53
Long	65
Hodges	73
Taylor	81
Bonner and McGee	93
Cock	99
OLIVER - Part Two Chart-----	105
Oliver	107
Callaway	141
Shivers	153
Cowan	163
Godwin	167
Bridger	173
Pitt	181
Henderson	187
Brockman	191
Madison	193
Lea (Leigh)	195
Major and Mason	207
Herndon and Diggs	213
PILLOW - Part Three Chart-----	233
Pillow	235
Scales	257
Allen	271
Porter	275
Bethell	281
Stubblefield	285
Carter	289
Kaigler	295
Johnson	303
GRAY - Part Four Chart-----	311
Gray	313
APPENDICES -----	331
A. American Wartime Service	333
B. Death of General Hodges	335
C. Elizabeth Hodges - Mother of John Hodges	351
D. Frances Anderson Hodges of Abbeville	355
E. A Visit to Rockingham County, NC, 1988	367
F. Pedigrees to Medieval Ancestors in Europe	375
G. Scales Mail - Martha Jane Kaigler Scales	395
H. Willie Loves Lizzie - William Reese Pillow	413
INDEX -----	483



Metts

Part One

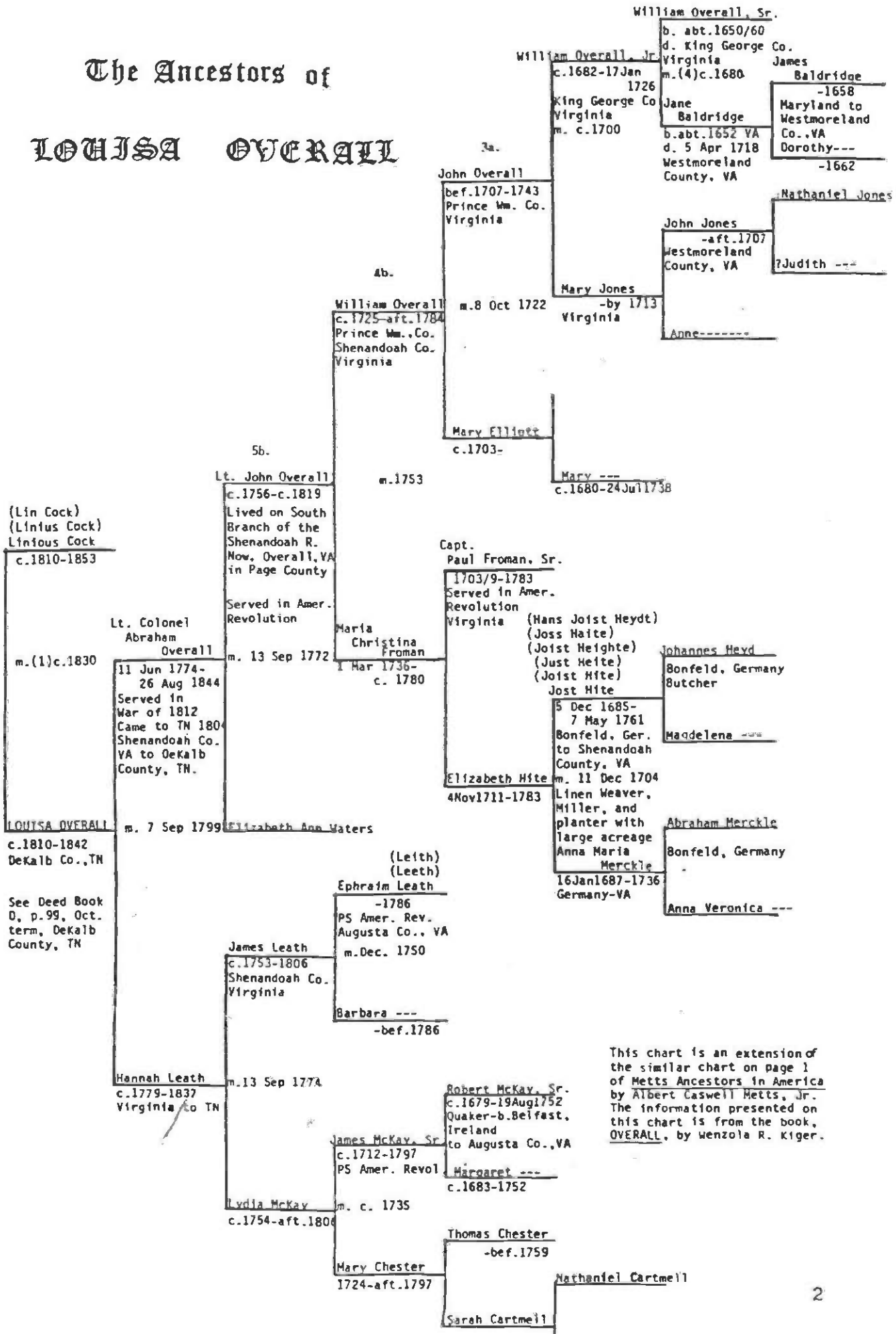
John Phillip Metts, and Nora Taylor are the parents of Albert Caswell Metts (1886-1965) and the grandparents of Albert Caswell Metts, Jr. (1921-). SAR# 118709 Colonial Wars #16689 Magna Charta Barons

(SEE NEXT PAGE)

♂ Immigrant c About m. married

The Ancestors of

LOUISA OVERALL



This chart is an extension of the similar chart on page 1 of Metts Ancestors in America by Albert Caswell Metts, Jr. The information presented on this chart is from the book, OVERALL, by Wenzola R. Kiger.

Metts

The first Metts in America came from Germany. He was a Palatine. He came from the Lower Palatinate, sometimes called the Palatinate of the Rhine. It included Mainz, Katzenellenbogen, Wurttemberg, Baden, Alsace, Lorraine, and Treves. Many Lutherans lived in this area. The Upper Palatinate was Bavaria, where most of the people were Roman Catholics.

The Thirty Years War (1618-1648) had left Europe in turmoil. Voltaire said that Germany was doomed to eternal poverty. By the early 1700s, Louis IV, the Catholic emperor of France was fighting to seize the Palatinate. Frederick the Great, the German ruler, cared little for the German people. He spoke French and his only interest was continual warfare. The War of Spanish Succession (1702-1713), with France against England, Germany, Austria and Holland, gave Louis IV the Palatinate. In 1732 the public exercise of Protestant worship in France was forbidden on pain of torture, the galleys, or death. Lutherans were persecuted until they left their homes.

Good Queen Anne, of England, was a devout Protestant and offered to help the Palatines. Thousands left for England, where they lived in London as best they could. With no money, they lived in make shift shelters. They spoke no English. Queen Anne and Parliament decided to help them sail for America. Any sea captain who took a German to America was paid five pounds and the German received twenty five shillings.

In America, the Saxe Gotha Tract, a large area east of the present location of Columbia, SC, was set aside for land grants. Procedures were established. The immigrant went before the King's Council where a written petition was presented. The request stated that the person was a Protestant Palatine and requested land according to the size of his family. When the petition was approved, the Council ordered a survey. The survey was made and a plat, or map of the land, was produced. Then, the land grant was given to the German. These papers are on file in the S. C. Archives in Columbia.

German Palatines sailed from England and also from other ports in Europe. Those from England had their passage paid by Queen Anne. Others, such as those from Rotterdam were often indentured for their passage and had to work and repay the debts before they could petition for land grants.

Saxe Gotha was considered to be far inland. When the first settlers went to their land grants, many were killed by Indians. Many moved over to the Dutch Fork area which is now Newberry County.

THE METTS NAME

There are family legends that the first American Metts came from the city of Metz. This might be true since the ancient walled city is in Alsace, part of the Palatinate and one of the earliest areas to fall to Louis IV. In German, the word means "a woman of bad character". It may have been given to the city because of the wicked life of the people. Cities were given female gender. Often, people were given names of old cities or places.

Early ship passenger lists show a number of Metz passengers. The change of Metz to Metts is a natural Americanization. Some went to Pennsylvania. A large colony went to North Carolina. Today, in the United States, a computer

listing shows 712 families named Metts. Of these, 153 are in South Carolina, 76 in Florida, and 26 in Mississippi.

In colonial South Carolina, there were several Metts families which do not seem to be kin to each other or to us. Their descendants still live in South Carolina. One family, which, generally, came to spell the name MEEITZE was started by a Hessian soldier named Jost Mutze. He deserted from the English Army at Charleston. He was pursued until he reached Saxe Gotha and found refuge among the other Germans. He became a famous Lutheran minister and came to be called Meetze. He would not be related to our Henry Mitz.

Next, The Christopher Metz family in the Edisto River area was clearly separate. Christopher can be documented from ship to land to census listings as a family apart from the other Metts families.

After elimination of the Jost and Christopher families, the most numerous group with our name lives around the town of Little Mountain, in Newberry County. In January, 1981, my wife, Betty, and I were in South Carolina looking for family information. At the Newberry library, we studied card files of all cemeteries in the county. We found very few Metts names. Then, we drove all over the county, including the Heller's Creek area. When we got to Little Mountain, my wife pointed out a pretty little church. It was the Mount Tabor Lutheran Church. We went in to a warm reception by Pastor Herlong. He gave me their 1980 church directory. They had 19 families named Metts. We were taken to meet Calvin Efird Metts, a true gentleman. We had a long talk with him and his lovely wife, Ruth. He took me to several of the old burial plots in the fields, nearby. I met his older brother. In the old days, those men were buried on their own land where they had worked. Calvin pointed to various farms that are still owned by members of the family. Each farm is well kept. There are many cows, all with calves. The homes are modern and comfortable. They are very religious hard working people. I was proud.

Calvin collected the information that they had and gave it to me. I do not know exactly where the "Little Mountain Metts" clan ties into the family, but I believe that they descend from Henry Mitz, as do ours. They are all so similar in names, characteristics, religion, and location that they have to be kin.

The remaining group of Metts families lived around Heller's Creek, north of Newberry. This is our direct line.

THE 1859 METTS GENEALOGY

Henry Richard, who we will call HRM, is a cousin, but not a member of our direct line. He was born in 1816. HRM was intelligent and well educated. His early life was spent on Heller's Creek at the old Metts homestead. In 1859 he wrote a valuable paper called, Genealogy of the METTS Family. This document has been passed from hand to hand for generations. My copy is hard to read but completely legible. He writes about Charles Metts who died about 1785 and Henry Metts who died in 1812. HRM could not have known his grandfather or his great grandfather. But, the father of HRM, George, would have known them. HRM had the great advantage of living at the Heller's Creek home as a child and of being able to talk to people who remember all the folk he described. The first five paragraphs by HRM are:

GENEALOGY OF THE METTS FAMILY by Henry Richard Metts - 1859

Between the dates of 1760 and 1765 there was a considerable emigration of Germans, mostly from the River Rhine, who settled in the

fork of Broad and Saluda Rivers in South Carolina, assuming the name of what is now known as "Dutch Fork" and embracing a large portion of Lexington and portion of Newberry Districts.

Among emigrants was Charles Metts—at that time this family spelled Metts "Meetze"—the great-grandfather of this writer, who settled in the upper part of the Dutch Fork, this being the lower part of Newberry District on what was originally known as "T"Pen Creek, but now as Heller's Creek, about one mile and a half above its confluence with Broad River on the south side and immediately on the said creek. Here was the first settlement of this family of Metts. No signs of the settlement are now visible and only one or two old mulberry trees point out the spot.

The grandfather of this writer changed the settlement and moved it about one half mile north of this place, where the location is still settled and belonged to the descendants of Charles Metts until 1835, when it passed out of the hands of the Metts family. George Metts, the father of this writer, and the last of the Metts family that owned this place, as I have said, sold it in 1835 and moved to Laurens District in May 1857.

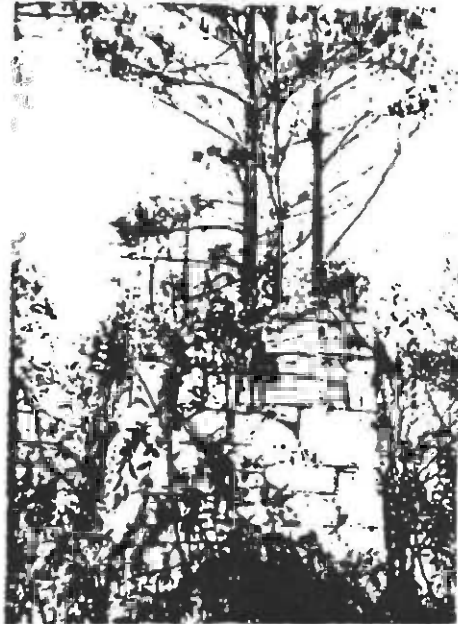
This writer visited the name of his forefathers and the home of his youthful days and, also, the burial ground of the Metts family and their kindred—viz: The Souters and Cromers. It is a lovely spot in the pine thickets on the south side of Heller's Creek about one half a mile due west from the Metts home on lands belonging to John F. Cromer, deceased lately.

Charles Metts died about the year 1785 at what age is not known nor is anything known of his parents, or ancestors. He left one son and two daughters - those daughters married Souter and Cromer, hence the connection of these families with the Metts family. Henry Metts, the grandfather of the writer, became possessed of his father's home and retained it until his death which took place in October 1812 (dying in his sixtieth year of age), leaving two daughters and six sons.

The old genealogy traces the family to 1859. Then, family members continued the outline partially.

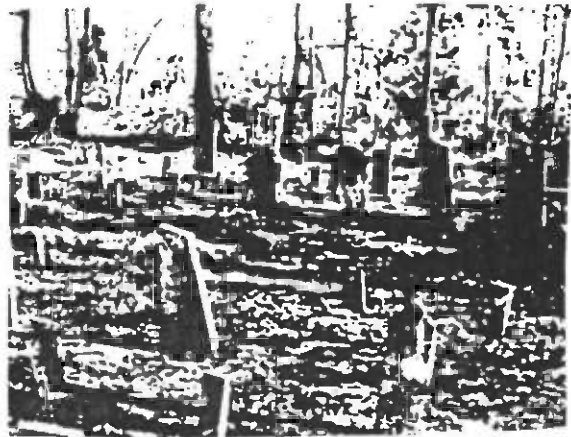
When I went to Newberry County in 1981, one of my objectives was to check the accuracy of the HRM genealogy. I went to Heller's Creek. A young man who lives there helped me find the locations. The Broad River is at a higher level, today, so the first mile of the old Heller's Creek is wide and deep, but it soon becomes a very small stream. The first homestead mentioned by HRM is under water. Now, the land is owned by a paper company and interlaced with logging roads. A few small fields are planted, but most of the property has small pine trees and brush.

We found the ruins of a very old house exactly where HRM said that Henry built the second homestead. All that stands is a massive fireplace with trees growing through the stones. It is near Heller's Creek, on the south side,



high enough to avoid flood and close enough to carry water. Around about are traces of out buildings and barns. Piles of stones - no more.

Almost exactly a half mile west is the old Cromer cemetery. Closed by an iron fence, the graves are neatly kept. Pine woods surround the tombstones and there are many unmarked graves. The grave of John F. Cromer, who died on 11 Oct 1856, the man mentioned by HRM, is marked and easy to read. This proves that I was at the exact spot visited by HRM. There is no stone for Charles Metts. This comes as no surprise because there was no granite in this area when Charles died. Hard stone was brought in later. The stone used earlier erroded and melted away.



Documents found since the trip to South Carolina prove absolutely that the home of the family was on Heller's Creek. After investigation, I have confidence in the old genealogy. The only points which are not correct are minor. The spelling of the name that he must have been told of was a common error. The immigration of Charles that he states is followed by another statement that he knew nothing of his parents or ancestors.

HRM carefully avoids mention of the wives of Charles and Henry. Why? Germans have a way of not telling about some things. HRM was in a position to find out the names from someone who knew them. He did not hesitate to say that the girls married a Souter and a Cromer! No documents have been found which give any answer. HRM names Charles as his great grandfather. I believe that this is an error. I think Charles may have been the older brother of his grandfather, Henry Mitts. Although I do not think that Charles is a direct ancestor, his name will be discussed in more detail, later. HRM believed what he was told. Charles was older than Henry. As head of the family, people may have thought that he was the father.

The entire HRM genealogy would be of interest to serious students of the family history. In the last paragraph, HRM writes, "Now, what more can I say of the Metts family, except they were an honest, upright, and industrious family of people, good at composition and law abiding citizens."

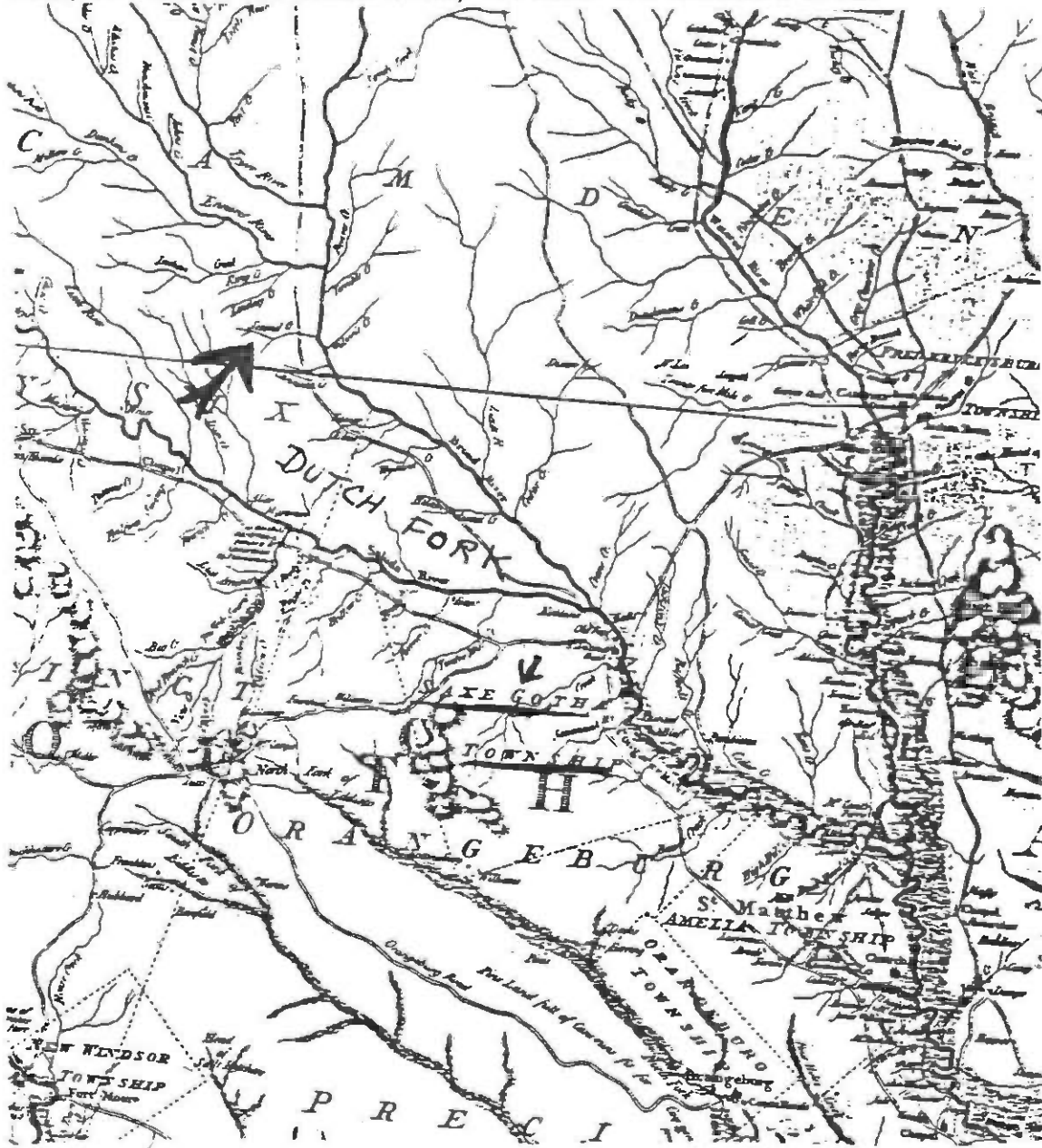
GEOGRAPHY

In the early 1700s, South Carolina had no western boundary. Savage Indians determined the extent of colonization. The old frontiersmen were the real pioneers. They scouted as far as they could go and lived off of the land by hunting and eating whatever nature provided. South Carolina wilderness was beautiful country with uncut forests and open grassland. Buffalo roamed the woodlands in those days. Deer were plentiful as were all kinds of American wild animals. The weather was never too cold or too hot. Charles Town (Charleston) was a small village with a fine deep harbor protected from the open sea. Then, as today, marshes and low land extended inland for miles before reaching the hills.

Saxe Gotha Township and the farm of Henrick Mitz were on the Congaree River near where Fort Jackson is today. Henry Mitts, his son, lived northeast

of Newberry near where Highway 34 crosses the railroad today. Henry's son, Phillip Mitts, lived several miles east of the town of Newberry.

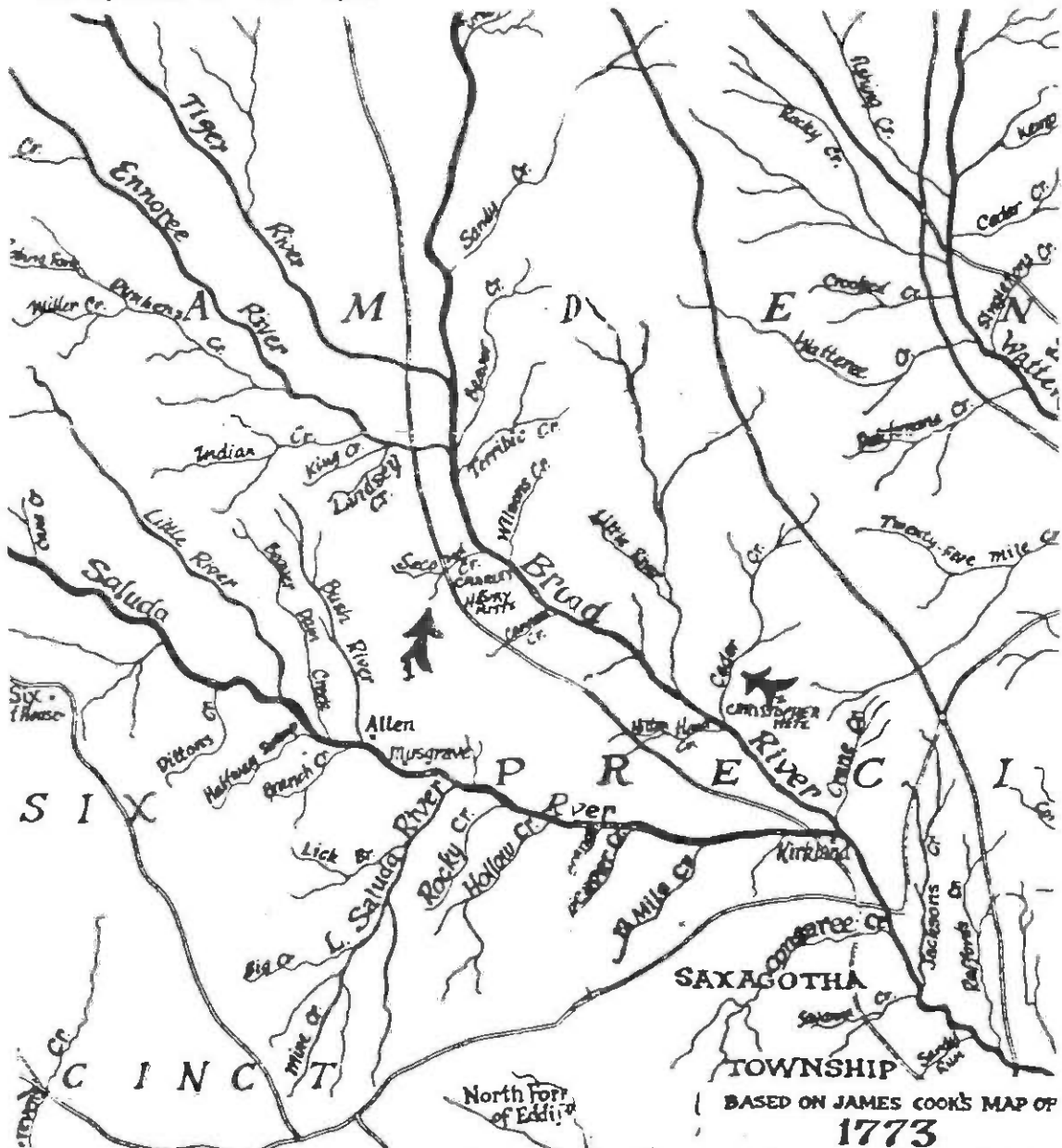
This map was drawn in 1776. An arrow has been drawn at Second Creek. RHM said that this creek was once called "T" Pea Creek. Probably, he meant "Tepee", an Indian tent. Later, the stream became Second Creek in entirety. Even later, the part near the Broad River became Heller's Creek and, further back, one branch was Second Creek, the other was William's Creek.



The Heller name came from a man who built a mill on the creek. Another map, dated 1773, is on the next page. It shows Saxe Gotha Township and Second Creek. The fork of the Broad and Saluda Rivers is shown clearly. The area between the rivers was and still is called "The Dutch Fork".

The reason for the name "Dutch Fork" is that the German's word for "German" is "Deutsche". When pronounced, people thought it sounded like "Dutch". They were not from Holland, but the spelling remained unchanged.

Again, as with the surnames, we see "sounds like" spelling. You will see Saxe Gotha spelled several ways.



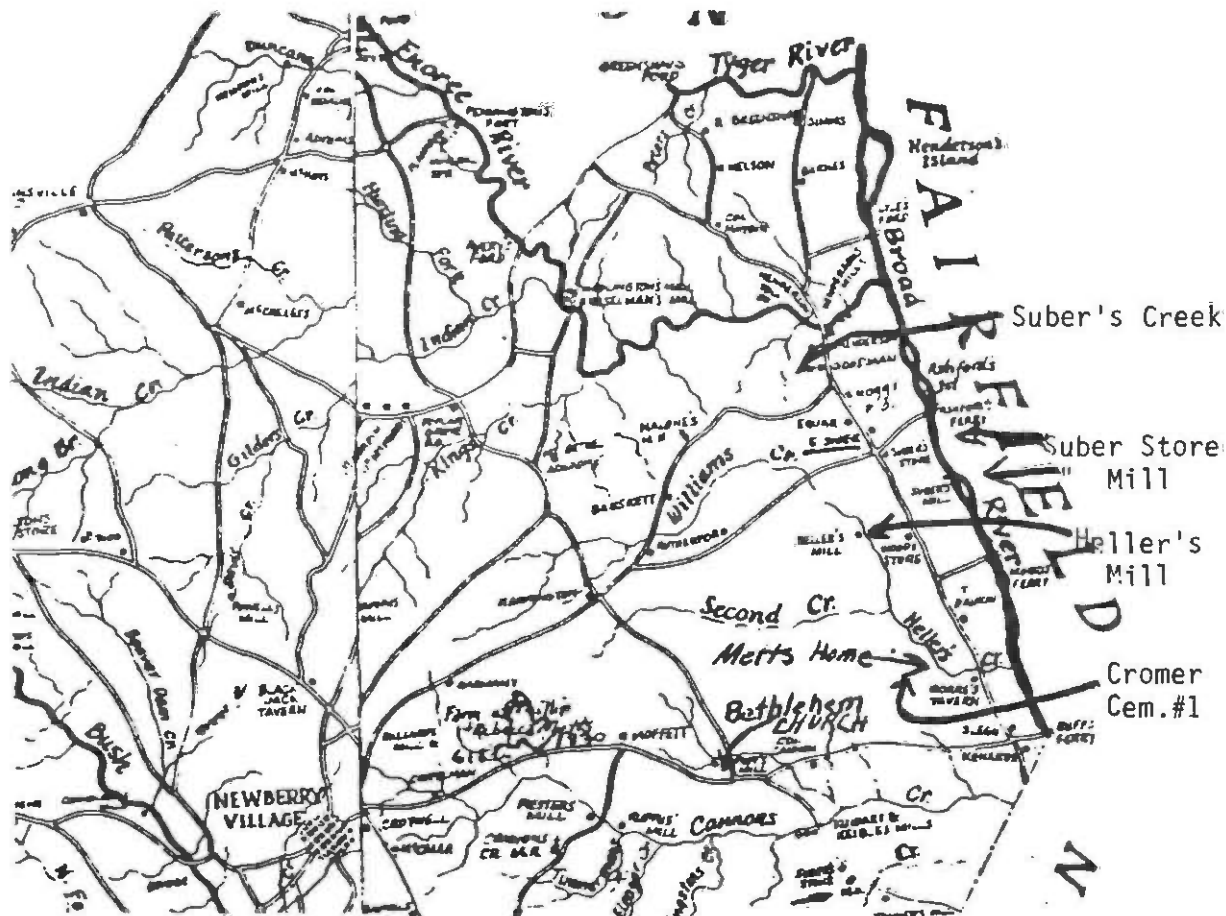
Now, there is the problem of county designation. Surveyors located land grants by county. The area below the Congaree River was called Craven County. (not to be confused with the Craven County in North Carolina where another Metts family settled) Above the Congaree River, there was Berkeley County. With no western borders, the confusion came about the line west of the junction of the Broad and Saluda Rivers, the location of Columbia, today. Most surveyors rightly put Heller's Creek in Craven County, but others put it in Berkeley County.

This next map was drawn in 1820. For the first time, we see Newberry County. Also, Heller's Creek is shown and some added notes about Metts and Suber locations.

When the frontiersmen pushed west, they followed beaten trails. The numerous animals moved about during the year in search of food. Their trails followed the path of least resistance although not always the shortest route.

Indians followed the animal tracks and they became trails. When the settlers moved in, their horses and wagons turned the trails into primitive roads. The settler was quite different from the frontiersman. Settlers were farmers looking for homes. The Indians slaughtered many of them. Half of the early German settlers were killed. This caused their move into the Dutch Fork where two wide rivers offered some protection.

The family move to Mississippi was accomplished over roads as described, above. The move will be discussed later. They went from South Carolina over to Winston County, in central Mississippi. The next generation went to Greenwood, MS, and the generation following, to Clarksdale.



Having taken a quick look at the land of our Metts ancestors, we come to the story of the first Metts to become an American.

HENRICK METZ

b. before 1718 - d. before 1766

The story of Henrick starts in Charles Town, South Carolina. In 1743, the records of St. Phillip's Parish show that on August 21st, Adam, the son of Henrick and Margaret Metz was born. On the 28th of December, Adam was baptized by Mr. Barden. Henrick is the German name for Henry. Charles Town became Charleston, and St. Phillip's Parish is there, today. The St. Phillip's Church where Adam was baptized was built in 1710, burned and rebuilt in 1835. It has been said that the history of Rome was written from grave stones and should

all other records be lost, the history of Charleston might be written from the inscriptions on the tombs in old St. Phillip's.

If this were a novel, much could be written about the next four years, but, all we know is that Henrick paid off his debts and that he and Margaret ended the period with three children. Henrick Metz became Henry Mitz. Then, Henry went to the King's Council to present his petition. The very dim copy is hard to read, so it is reproduced, partly, with a "translation" superimposed.

P. 26

JOURNAL OF THE MINUTES OF COUNCIL

Petition of
Henry Metz a foreign
Protestant for land &
Bounty

The time of his
servitude expired

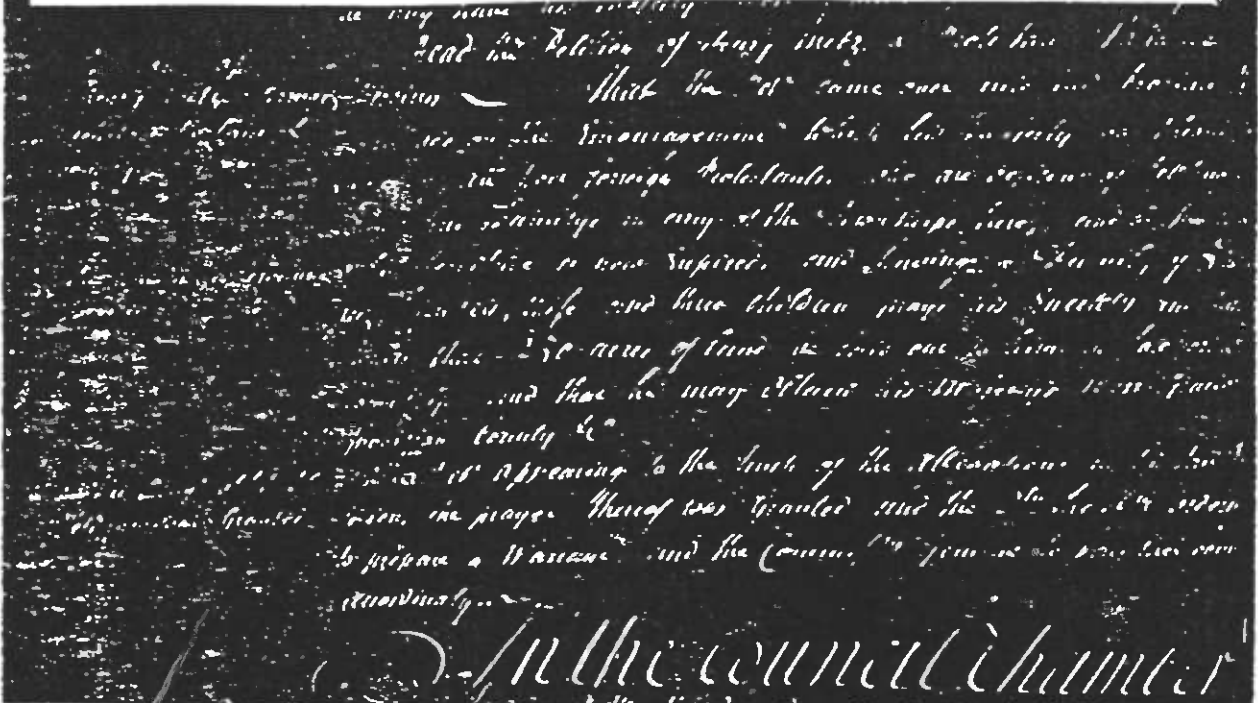
The prayer of ---
Petitioner was Granted

Read the petition of Henry Metz, a Protestant Pallatine Showing--- That the petitioner came over into this Province 4 years ago on the Encouragement which his Majesty was pleased to --- on all poor foreign Protestants, who are desirous of settling --- and Family in any of the Townships here, and as the time of his servitude is now expired, and having a Family of 5 persons, viz himself, wife, and three children, prays his Excellency and their Honors that 250 acres of land be laid out to him, in Saxe Gotha Township and that he may obtain his Majesty's most gracious provision bounty etc.

The petitioner appearing to the truth of the allegations in his said petition, the prayer thereof was granted and the Deputy Surveyor ordered to prepare a Warrant, and the Commissioner General to pay the bounty accordingly.

IN THE COUNCIL CHAMBER
Friday A.M. the 30th day of January 1746.

Notes: The copy of the petition is legible. The name is clearly Henry Metz. This puts him as coming to this country in 1742. Adam, in Charleston was born in 1743. He would be one of the children claimed here. This shows that Henry work off the cost of his passage. It shows him, clearly, to be a Protestant Pallatine. This petition resulted in the land Grant. There is much information here to support my study and nothing to contradict it.



The Journals of Council (#15, p. 39 June 1747 - July 1748.) show that his petition was considered and that, since no land was available in the Saxe Gotha Township, they let him choose land two miles from the town. On pp. 372-3 of the same report, he is given 250 acres. Next, the survey was ordered which resulted in the plat.

This land is on the north side of the Congaree River a few miles east of where Columbia, SC, is today. An interesting point is that the Kaiglers, Pillow ancestors, lived a short distance away on the other side of the river, Henry's land plat is below:

South Carolina
 Pursuant to a Warrant from his Excellency
 James Oglethorpe Esq. bearing date
 the 29 day of January 1746 and a Survey
 thereon from George Hunter Esq.
 Surveyor General of equal date
 therewith together with an order
 of Council of the 6 November
 1747 I have measured and laid
 out unto Henry Metz a tract
 of Land containing two hundred
 and fifty acres situate lying and
 being near the upper part of damaged
 Township in the Province aforesaid and bounding
 and bounding to the Northward on Lands laid out to Martin
 Chapman to the Northward part on vacant Land of front on
 Land laid out to Solomon Cole to the Southward on Land laid
 out to the said Solomon Cole and to the Southward on Charles
 Congaree river and hath such shape form and extent
 as by the above plat certified the 23 day of December 1747
 by me Geo. Oglethorpe

The next document was the land grant from King George the Second of England. It is on the next page.

It seems that Henry Metz moved to his 250 acre farm and worked for the rest of his life. He died before 1766. We know this because his son, Adam, who had been born in Charleston, and Adam's wife, Barbara, sold 50 acres of the 250 to a man named Kommerlander. The sale document says that the land belonged to Henry and that he was dead. When he left Charleston he had three children. We will guess that at his death they had five sons, since Adam got 50 of the 250 acres. We cannot guess whether he had any daughters. The old Germans did not leave land to daughters. They usually got their furniture, a horse, a slave, and some money, but no land.

The information about Henry Metz gives a fair picture of his life. The next step has to be developed from information collected from several sources. Since there is no direct proof of the next generation, some circumstances will be discussed.

SOUTH-CAROLINA

GEORGE the Second, by the Grace of God, of GREAT-BRITAIN, FRANCE and IRELAND, KING, Defender of the Faith, &c. To ALL TO WHOM THESE PRESENTS SHALL COME GREETING: KNOW YE, THAT WE of our special Grace, certain Knowledge and mere Motion, have given and granted, and by these Presents, for us, our heirs and successors, DO GIVE AND GRANT unto *Henry Stitz his*

heirs and assigns, *all that Parcel or Tract of Four hundred and fifty Acres of Land situate lying and being in the upper part of the Township in the Province aforesaid and bounding and bounding to the North towards a certain land laid out to Martin (Hepburn) to the North Eastward and part on land laid out to Solomon Tivolo to the South Eastward and land laid out to the said Solomon Tivolo and to the South Eastward on a new Township bearing the name*

And with such shape, form and marks, as appears by a plat thereof, hereunto annexed: Together with all woods, under-woods, timber and timber-trees, lakes, ponds, fishings, waters, water-courses, profits, commodities, appurtenances and hereditaments whatsoever, thereto belonging or in any wise appertaining: Together with privilege of hunting, hawking and fowling in and upon the same, and all mines and minerals whatsoever; saving and reserving, nevertheless, to us, our heirs and successors, all white pine-trees, if any should be found growing thereon; and also saving and reserving, to us, our heirs and successors, one tenth-part of mines of silver and gold only: TO HAVE AND TO HOLD the said Tract of *Four hundred and fifty* acres of land, and all and singular other the premises hereby granted, with the appurtenances, unto the said *Henry Stitz*

his heirs and assigns for ever, in free and common Socage he the said heirs or assigns yielding and paying therefore, unto us, our heirs and successors, or to our Receiver-General for the time being, or to his Deputy or Deputies for the time being, yearly, that is to say, on every twenty-fifth day of March, at the rate of three shillings sterling, or four shillings proclamation money, for every hundred acres, and so in proportion, according to the quantity of acres, contained herein; the same to grow due and be accounted for from the date hereof, *Provided always* and this present Grant is upon condition, nevertheless, that *he* the said

heirs or assigns shall and do, within three years next after the date of these presents, clear and cultivate at the rate of one acre for every five hundred acres of land, and so in proportion according to the quantity of acres herein contained, or build a dwelling house thereon, and keep a stock of five head of cattle for every five hundred acres, upon the same, and in proportion for a greater or lesser quantity; *And* upon condition, that if the said rent, hereby reserved, shall happen to be in arrear and unpaid for the space of three years from the time it becomes due, and no distress can be found on the said lands, tenements and hereditaments hereby granted, that then and in such case, the said lands, tenements and hereditaments hereby granted, and every part and parcel thereof, shall revert to us, our heirs and successors, as fully and absolutely, as if the same had never been granted. *Provided also*, If the said lands hereby mentioned to be granted, shall happen to be within the bounds or limits of any of the Townships, or of the lands reserved for the use of the Townships now laid out in our said Province, in pursuance of our royal instructions, that then this Grant shall be void, any thing herein to the contrary contained notwithstanding.

Given under the Great Seal of our said Province.

WITNESS *James Glen Esq. Captain General*

Governor and Commander in chief in and over our said Province of South-Carolina, this

thirteenth Day of *July*
Anno Dom. 1748 and in the *Twenty second* Year of our Reign.

James Oglethorpe

Signed by his Excellency the Governor in Council

And hath thereunto annexed a plat representing the same, certified

John Brailford Esq.

By *Jos. Quarter Esq. Surveyor General*
the 22 day of Decem. 1747

Recorded 20 July 1748

THE SONS OF HENRICK MITZ

Richard Henry Metts, in his genealogy, states that Charles was his great grandfather and that Charles was the father of Henry Mitts. He says that Germans immigrated between 1760 and 1765, but avoids a direct statement that Charles came between those years. Later, he says that "Charles Metts died about the year 1785 at what age is not known, nor is anything known of his parents or ancestors".

This writer believes that Henrick Mitz had five sons: Charles, Adam, Henry, John and George. Thus, Charles would be a brother (or half-brother) of Henry, the grandfather of RHM. There are a number of reasons for this conclusion, although no hard proof has been found.

During the 1760-65 period, the ship loadings were well documented, particularly for non-English immigrants. The name, Charles Metz, by any spelling, is not to be found. Henrick came earlier, about 1743, when many immigrants were not documented. His ship listing has not been found, but we know his arrival date from his petition for land. RHM said that Charles was an immigrant. He may have come with Henrick and Margaret as a child.

If Charles had come, later, as a grown man, he would have made a petition for a land grant in his own name. Every German knew how to do that, but Charles had no land grant. He bought his farm on Heller's Creek (10 October 1765) with 500 pounds, a large sum of money in those days, right after the death of Henrick, who died just before 1766. Charles bought the land, 200 acres, from John George Infinger. Oddly, he had John Stockman handle the deal for him and gave 100 of the acres to a mysterious Fattentine Vitrep, whose name cannot be found on any other record or document. Why he or she got the land is not explained.

When Charles died in 1785, the same land, the mysterious 100 acres, was sold by George Sligh to Henry Mitts. Henry owned other land nearby, which he had bought. Both Charles and Henry had money - immigrants did not. The record of the land transaction is very hard to read. It's importance is the interaction between Henry and Charles on Heller's Creek. Before turning from Charles, there are a few interesting points that might tell a little more about him. There is a record of his sale of provisions for Turner's Fort, a blockhouse used to fight the Indians. In 1764, Charles was paid 9 pounds, 14 shillings 4 pence by the Colony of South Carolina. If grown, his age would be no less than Adam's and probably more. If more than 21 in 1764, he could have been brought from Germany as a child.

In 1789, a company called Evans Winn & Co. sued Charles. He was summoned four times to come to court under four different names: Mitts, Mitz, Mittz and Miltz. He never appeared, however, because he had been dead for four years! No one bothered to tell the plaintiffs.

RHM says nothing of Charles' wife. He says Charles had a son, Henry, and two daughters married to men named Souter and Cromer. He may have. There were several men named Henry Mitz, heads of households in the early 1800s.

Now, back to the sons of Henrick. The U.S. Census of 1790 was the first one taken. The Heads of Household were counted, door to door, so when names were next to each other, usually, the people would be neighbors. There were six Metts names in South Carolina. One was Christopher. Another was East (Jost). We have identified these earlier as no kin. The other four were Henry on Heller's Creek; and George, Adam, and John in North Orangeburg. The later three are listed side by side. Charles had been dead for five years. Henry, George, Adam, and George had families about the same size.

We know that Adam married Barbara from the land sale document for his fifty acres. Adam was born in 1743, Henry was born in 1752. He had eight children. Five of the eight were named **Henry, John, Adam, George, and Barbara**. Can this be a coincidence? Therefore, it is concluded that Henrick Mitz had five sons and Henry Mitts (1744-1812), of Heller's Creek, was one of them. Some proof is lacking to this point in the story, but after this, the history is documented.

HENRY MITTS

b. 1752 - d. October 1812

Militia Soldier in the American Revolution

Henry Mitts was born and died in South Carolina. Many documents contain his name and a reasonable description of his life can be written. His parentage was discussed to establish Henrick and his wife, Margaret, as his father and mother. The date of his birth is not proved. The old family genealogist, Henry Richard Metts, said that Henry died in his sixtieth year in 1817, hence, a birth year of 1752. With the genealogy are three more pages of outlines of the family, obviously made by family members over the years. The outline gives his birth as 1744, reason unstated.

The old Metts genealogist, Henry Richard Metts, in 1859, wrote that Henry's "death took place in October 1812 (dying in his sixtieth year of age)". Using this best evidence, he was born in Saxe Gotha on the 250 acre farm of his father. He was a child during the long years of building a home in the wilderness, clearing the farm, and living in constant fear of Indian attack. He did not go to school or learn to read and write. It may be said that he was illiterate, but he was not ignorant. His life was successful, though hard.

A long time genealogist in South Carolina, Lee R. Gandee, wrote that no Metts records survived the Civil War, but he believed, "The family seemed to have no legal entanglements and to keep rather out of sight. They were old-believers, devout Lutherans, farmers who practiced the old ways, believed in witchcraft, and held to themselves". He may have been right because the old Germans lived apart. Probably, no one will ever know the name of Henry's wife. We can identify his children. Documents in Newberry County, in Columbia at the South Carolina Archives, and in Charleston have been studied to find the general story of his life.

Brother Charles must have been older than Henry. He moved to Newberry County and bought the 200 acres on Heller's Creek in 1765. Evidently, Henry followed Charles. No land grant or purchase document has been found that records Henry's purchase of his land on Heller's Creek, but in 1772 a man bought land next to Henry's farm. In 1773, a purchase by a Gartman, next to Charles shows that both Henry and Charles lived on Heller's Creek.

Again, father Henrick died in Saxe Gotha about 1765, Soon after his death, both Henry and Charles acquired land on Heller's Creek. In 1778 and 1779, Henry's name appears on a jury list in Newberry County. Henry's children were being born before he became involved in the American Revolution, but his service will be discussed before the family.

Most Americans think of the American Revolution in the terms presented to them in school - Bunker Hill, Washington crossing the Delaware, and Yorktown. But, there were other sides to the Revolution that many people never have considered. While the northern colonies were eager to fight, many of the southerners had no quarrel with England. The Germans loved Queen Anne as their savior. Their problems were on the frontier - food for their family and protection from the Indians.

150

Henry Miller
for Military Duty in the
fall of Charleston in the
Regiment of Anderson's
Artillery

Open warfare broke out between the Tories - loyal to England - and those supporting the Revolution. The protection of British troops and authority disappeared. Bands of renegades under the colors of either side pillaged the country. In South Carolina, groups of "Regulators" were organized to try and maintain order.

Then, the English encouraged the Indians to renew their attacks upon the frontier. Weapons were provided to the Indians and advisors stirred up trouble. Of course, the Indians were smart enough to realize the

Jan 22 15
M 3 5

Three Pounds, five
Shillings
E. P. H.

State of S. Carolina

To Henry Miller

for Military Duty in Waters Regt. since the fall of Charleston of
Anderson's Regiment and to Comd. 22 15
3 5

State of S. Carolina
Newberry County
Gentlemen Please to Deliver to
Mr. William M. Greer My Indent
as may appear to be due me from this State for
Duty done in the Military Service in Col. L
Waters Regiment - and this shall be your
Sufficient Receipt for the same

Witness by me this 11th June 1787 Henry Miller
G. R. D.

To the Commissioners of
the Treasury of S. Carolina

opportunities presented by the war. The event that brought the South Carolina frontier strongly to the American cause was the fall of Charleston to the English on 12 May 1780. Now, the war was close to home - South Carolina.

Henry Mitts joined the militia in Water's Regiment. Colonel Philemon Waters was a neighbor. He had served in the Continental Army since the war began. He enlisted his regiment from Laurens and Newberry Counties. There is no way to describe the service of Henry Mitts, other than to present the documentation of his service. These records are in the South Carolina Archives in Columbia.

Henry was the father of eight children. They are listed in the outline with the HRM genealogy as follows: John, Phillip (our ancestor), Henry, David, Adam, George, Barbara, and "another daughter". This cannot be the correct order of birth. Only three birthdays are known: Barbara on 10 Aug 1778, Henry in 1782, and George on 28 Jul 1790. In the first U.S. Census, Henry Mitts had 4 sons under 16 years old and two women in the household. One would be daughter, Barbara and the other may be his wife. By 1800, he had two sons under 10, two sons between 10 and 16 years, two sons 16 to 26 years, and one woman 16 to 26 years (Barbara). He had one "free person". This means that he had no wife in 1800. Seven children were at home.

The story of Phillip Mitts, our ancestor and son of Henry, will be told later. Since the other children are not in our direct line, discussion of each will be brief. John married Mary M. Koone and had eight children. Their son, Henry married Sara Caroline Vance and moved to Mississippi. John has many descendants in SC, TN, and MS.

Henry, son of Henry, was born in 1782 and married Rebeccah Lake. When she died, he married Missouri Lake, a sister. There were six children.

Henry's sons David and Adam both died young and neither was married. When Adam died, he owned 90 acres of land. David Lightsey bought the land and the money was divided among Adam's living brothers and sisters. The documents are in Box 20, Package 12, at the Newberry courthouse. Documents of this kind prove the validity of the old HRM genealogy.

George Metts was born in 1790. He is the father of HRM. George married Lucy Strother and Lucretia Holland. Their five children produced many outstanding and well educated South Carolinians. George was the last owner of the old homestead on Heller's Creek. He sold it in 1835. At that time, HRM was 19 years old.

The daughter of Henry, Barbara, was born in 1778. HRM listed her next to last, the last being an "unnamed daughter". Maybe, it was because she was a girl, but Barbara was far from last, in more than one way. She was big sister in every way! Her husband was a lawyer named Andrew Wicker. She married him in 1805 and they moved to Mississippi in 1818 - long before any of the others. Andrew was the only well educated person in the entire "bunch". He wrote the legal documents and rode herd over the family business. There were legal battles, particularly when John died. Andrew was a leading participator.

The old homestead on Heller's Creek must have been a busy place during those years. HRM described the family, "Now what shall I say about these six sons, their father and grandfather. From tradition, and the writer's own knowledge they were honest, industrious, peaceable, quiet, and thrifty family. None of them ever occupied high public trust, they never sought office, but most of them were what was known as leading citizens of the neighborhood."

Henry Mitts was a strong and hard working man who served his country during the American Revolution. His service and lineage to this writer has been proved to and approved by the National Society of the Sons of the American Revolution. Henry died in October 1812.

PHILLIP MITTS

born before 1790 - died 16 May 1842

Phillip Mitts was born at the old homestead on Heller's Creek. He was born on a farm and died on a farm, following a plow all the days of his short life - less than sixty years. He married a strong and capable woman, Rebecca Suber, about 1814. Her family lived near the Metts homestead on Heller's Creek. The story of Rebecca's family will be discussed in a separate chapter on the Suber surname. The U.S. Census of 1790 shows four sons in father Henry's household. Phillip was one of them. He helped build Henry's estate and must have saved his own dollars for the day when he would buy his farm.

No document remains to show the settlement of Henry's estate when he died in 1812. Rebecca's father died in 1813, leaving her one hundred dollars. Older brother, John must have taken control of the Mitts homestead. Regardless, Phillip married and started his family. David William Metts was born in 1815, the first of seven children. David's descendant, George Pierce Metz, of Louisville, MS, is a student of the family history and will write a book about the family in Winston County, MS. David served as a Colonel in the Confederacy.

Our ancestor is Phillip's son, Michael Albert Metts, and his life will be covered later. He was born in 1825. The other five children are not discussed in their order of birth. Martha Caroline was born 13 Jun 1817. She married Giles C. Linch, a lawyer who would take a leading role in all family business. Lemuel P. Mitts was another son. Susannah Mitts married Thomas Carroll. Elizabeth G. Metts married John C. Doss. One of her descendants is Mrs. E. G. (Sarabay) Jordan, of Austin, Texas, former Librarian of the Texas State Genealogical Library. The seventh child was Rebecca A. Metts. She died young, about one year after the death of her father, Phillip.

Finally, with a wife and family, Phillip was able to buy his own land. The year was 1830. On January 16th, he paid Thomas Boyd \$375 for 93 acres on Cannon Creek. The next day he paid David Chalmers \$660 for 100 acres joining the 93 acres. Also, he acquired 425.4 more acres for a total of 618.4 acres. The land is several miles east of the town of Newberry. This land had much better soil than the farm on Heller's Creek. A copy of the plat is on the next page.

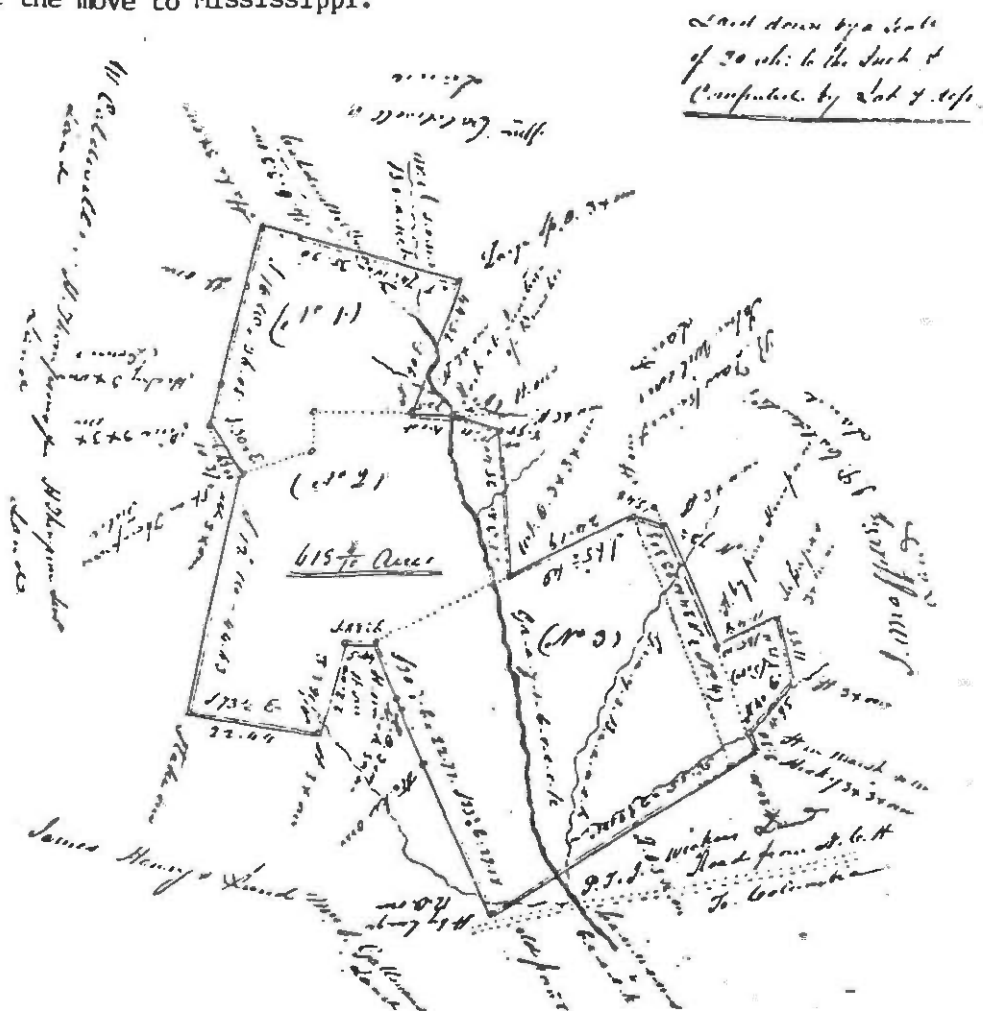
Several years ago, cousin George Metz, of Louisville, MS, mentioned earlier, went to Newberry with his wife researching family history. They went to the farm that Phillip had owned. An old man pointed to an old abandoned house and said that it was called "the Metts Place". They stored hay in the old house. It had been struck by lightning and was partly burned.

In 1835, Phillip's brother, Adam died. As stated earlier, he had not married, so he left his estate to his brothers and sisters. Phillip received his share, \$358.81 $\frac{3}{5}$. Dollars were valuable in those days so pennies were divided into fifths.

It seems that, in the old days lawyers were no better or worse than they are today. Family problems were taken to court and lawyers got their money. In 1835, we see David Lightsey, Henry Mitts, Phillip Mitts, and George Metts versus Lemuel Glymph, administrator of John Mitts, deceased. Glymph was the guardian of John's children. Teamed with Glymph were Andrew and Barbara Wicker (Phillip's brother-in-law and sister) and John A. Wicker and wife. (Box 20, Bill 1835/Box 38-Newberry). Remembering that the old Metts homestead was sold in 1835, there is little doubt about the subject at stake.

Later, in 1842, in court again (Bx 28, Bill 1843/Bx 41, Order 1883/Bx 89) we see David W. Mitts versus Rebecca, Lemuel, Susannah, Michael Albert,

Elizabeth G., Rebecca A., and Martha Caroline Linch. This is the year that Phillip died. David has his entire family on the other side. He was the first to make the move to Mississippi.



The farm of Phillip Mitts

The Phillip Mitts family were Lutherans, members of the Bethlehem Lutheran Church near Pomaria, SC, in Newberry County. This church is near the old Metts homestead. My wife, Betty, and I visited the church and cemetery on our way to Heller's Creek. Of course, the church is rebuilt. The S.C. Magazine of Ancestral Research, Winter, 1977, pp.16-24, has some early records of the church. Phillip's sister, Barbara and husband, Andrew Wicker, were very active members. Several of Phillip's in-laws were active. The records are for 1815-1832. On page eleven is the entry, "Martha Caroline, Daughter of Philip Metz and wife Rebekah born 13th of June 1817. Sponcers A. Wecker & wife.". The spelling is bad, but there is no doubt about who they are.

When Phillip died on 16 May 1842, Giles C. Linch, the lawyer and son-in-law took over. There are about 15 pages of detailed handwritten documents to handle the business. Rebecca sold the farm on 20 Nov 1846. She sold it to Job Johnston for \$1,855. She signed the document with an "X". Phillip's estate was settled in 1845. Each child received \$570.29 and his wife, Rebecca got \$1,924.42. The total was \$3,848.85. When daughter Rebecca A. died in June 1843, her share of Phillip's estate was divided among the family. The sums above may seem small in these inflated times, but Phillip died a very wealthy man. In addition to the 618 acres of good farming land, he owned 20

slaves, horses, hogs, cotton, corn, tools, and many household items. A small part of the inventory is below:

hacks in barn	1 00
three pair plough gear	1 25
wagon saddle & blanket	1 25
18 days salt at 18 ct per bag	3 24
horse, 2nd hand	5 00
horse, ball	21 00
horse, harness	12 00
horse, for	12 00
collar	2 50
horse, cow and calves	50 00
sheldon head of cattle	35 00
head & grubbing bar	5 00
two club axes	2 30
Man, man, May	100 00
Man, man, June	600 00
Woman, Hester, Cadon, Hester	700 00
Woman, Kelly, Hester	500 00
Girl, Harriet	325 00
Girl, Abigail	275 00

Girl, Eliza	250
Boy, Mark	150
Boy, George	150
Woman, Loretta, Child, Peter & Joseph	400
Girl, Malinda	350
Girl, Caroline	280
Girl, Rosanna	250
Girl, Nancy	200
Boy, Wesley	150
something more	
Sum:	2650

We certify the foregoing appraisal of the Estate of Phillip Metts, deceased as shown to us by G. L. Lynch, Adm'r is just and true to the best of our knowledge and belief.

Barney Thayer
James H. Caffery
Julia S. Caffery

Phillip was the last ancestor with the Metts name that signed his name with a mark.

his
Philip P Metts
mark

The family was left with decisions to make for the future. Legal action forced division of the estate. The farm was sold. There is an interesting point to make, here. We see the changing times. In old England, then Virginia and with the move west, there was the old English law of "primo genitor" which left all of the inheritance to the oldest son. The intention was to keep estates intact. Wives got next to nothing. Now, here, we see Rebecca taking her place as the head of the family. She had a lawyer son-in-law on her side. The oldest son, David, set out for Winston County, Mississippi. The family planned to follow him, so plans were made for the wagon train to leave in 1847. Other families joined the Metts family for the big move. Our ancestor, Michael Albert Metts, was to "pilot" the convoy. Wagons, slaves, animals, food, and money were organized and Phillip's wife, Rebecca Suber Metts would head westward.

The story will return to South Carolina to give the family history of the Saeber-Suber-Weyman-Miller-Glymph ancestors of Rebecca. (Please see the chart). Later, the story goes back to South Carolina again for the Nash and Hodges ancestors. Then, the Kaiglers will be the last of the South Carolina kin. This is an appropriate time in the story to recognize and express appreciation to four South Carolina friends who are great genealogists and generous contributors to this history.

Glenda Bundrick of Newberry and Betty Bundrick of Columbia have searched and found every paper with any spelling of Metts and sent them to me with

their expert interpretation and evaluation. Dr. Andy Suber, of Columbia, is the head of the Suber clan. When his book comes forth, we will have a great reference. Carol Speers is the Probate Clerk in the Abbeville Courthouse. That's where the Old 96th District was administered. Carol knows where the papers are and has helped greatly. Let me thank each of you before taking the Mitts-Metts convoy to Mississippi!

MICHAEL ALBERT METTS

born 4 Jan 1825 - died 6 Jun 1899
Captain, Confederate States of America

The move westward from Newberry County, SC, to Winston County, MS. would have followed one of the old immigration routes beaten through the forest by thousands of wagons. An article in the Winston County Journal, April 9, 1959, discussed the early settlers of the county. It said, "Piloted to Mississippi by M. A. Metts, they were the Livingstons, Kinards, Longs, Richardsons, Priscocks, Lynches, Bakers, and Subers.". The date of the move was 1847. The family settled in the northwest corner of the county where they remained until just before the War Between the States. The farm was near the Antioch Baptist Church. Many of the Lutherans became Baptists when they found no Lutheran churches in the area. Rebecca Suber Mitts, wife of Phillip, came along and lived with her son, Michael Albert. He had been born at the old homestead on Heller's Creek, then at the age of five, moved to Phillip's new farm near Newberry. In 1847, he was 22 years old. In Louisville, MS, he met and married Mary R. Nash on November 14, 1849. She was living near Louisville with her mother and step-father, William P. Leech. Her mother was Margaret Hodges who married her father, Dr. John J. Hodges. The Nash family will be discussed in the chapters on Long, Nash, and Hodges. (See the chart)

Michael Albert was a leader with political ambition from the beginning. He was educated. He decided to spell his name Metts instead of Mitts. The war clouds were forming and the South would be a suffering land for all the days of his adult life.

The story about the family in Winston County will be written by our cousin, George Metz. In order to avoid encroaching upon his prerogatives, this book will give emphasis to our direct line, Michael Albert, his mother, and her son, John Phillip Metts.

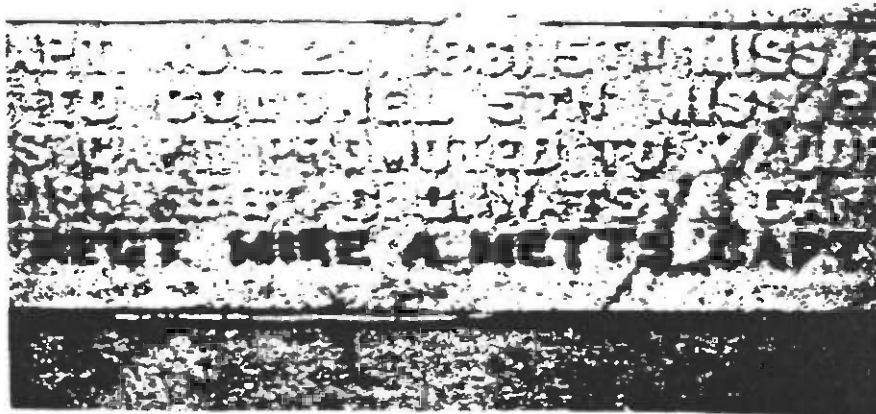
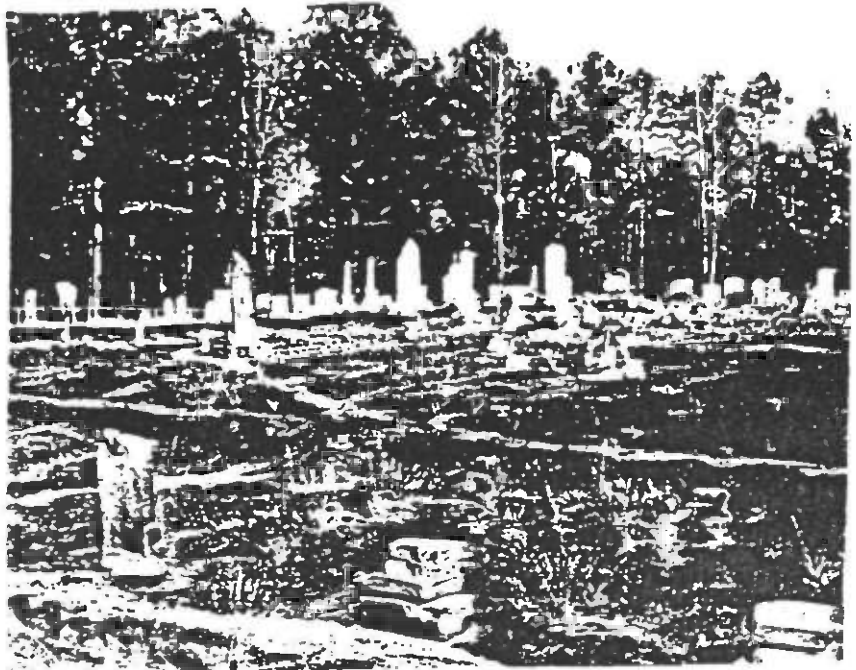


Rebecca Metts died on August 26, 1862 at the age of 67 years, 11 months, and 10 days. She is buried in the cemetery of the Antioch Baptist Church. I visited the grave. Beside the beautiful old stone are the graves of two little children: Renanra Metts; d. May 24, 1854, age 1 yr., 2 mos, 23 days; and Margaret R. Metts, died June 23, 1854 - age 3 mos., 26 days.

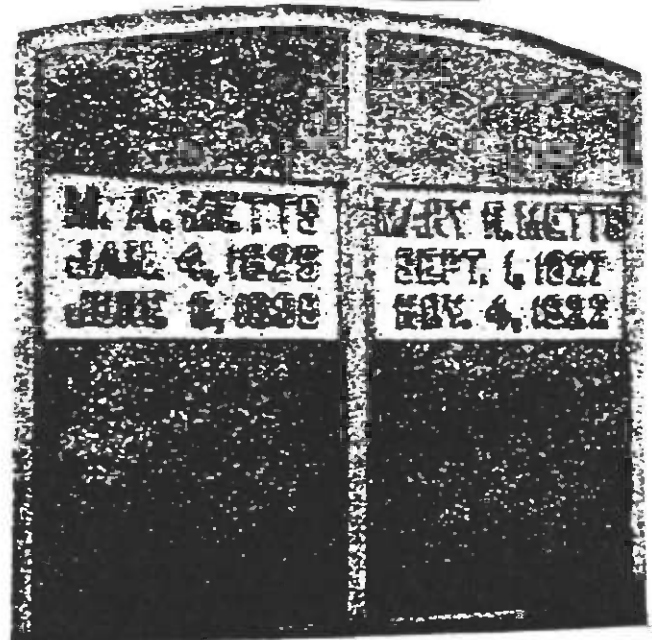
As I stood in that churchyard and looked at those graves, I thought of that bare clay Mississippi hill where the old family tried to raise cotton. Not even grass grows on that ground devoid of topsoil and eroded by the ages. The gaunt old church and the

empty countryside may explain why the family went to Louisville and to public service.

Today, the little town of Louisville is quiet and peaceful. During my visit in 1981, I went to the Confederate monument in the center of town. After getting permission from a city official in the furniture store, I put brown chalk upon the name of Captain M. A. Metts on the Georgia marble pedestal and took the picture below. Then, I went to the barber shop nearby. Five good ole boys were



sitting around talking to the barber. When this stranger came in, there was silence. The chair became empty, I sat, and the haircut was started. At last, the barber asked, "What's your name?" I said, "Albert Metts". He said, "We have an Albert Metts. He got his 22nd pin on Sunday". That meant that he had not missed Sunday School at the Baptist Church for 22 years! When I said that the old gentleman was my cousin, they all started talking and I was no longer a stranger. My wife and I visited Albert and my cousin John. Later, we had long talks with George Metz. We visited the graves of Michael Albert, Mary, and the other relatives in the Masonic cemetery in Louisville. Back



in the 1860s, when the war came to Louisville, Michael was the sheriff of the county. He continued to hold that position after he became a Confederate Captain and went away to war. The story of his part in the war is told in a very old newspaper clipping that was given to me by my Aunt Nora Turner when I was a child. This old item has been copied in other publications over the years.

ROSTER OF COMPANY D., PERRIN'S REGIMENT OF CAVALRY

Through the courtesy of our esteemed friend, Mr. B.F. Quarles, of Meridian, we are enabled to reproduce the roster of Company D. Perrin's Regiment during the Civil War, which will be found below, including a letter from the late J.H. Cornwell, which will prove of interest to many of our people.

(The letter was written in Plattsburg, MS, on 30 Dec 1907. Parts of the letter are below.)

My Dear Comrade and Brother:

I am glad to comply with promise made you when in our city. Enclosed please find roster of your company together with a short sketch of its history and part taken in the grandest struggle that ever occurred in American history, when the South's heroes made a fame as broad as the heavens and as solid as the earth, the story of whose gallantry, endurance under the most adverse conditions, and achievements has been read around the world.

————Very many since the sad end of the tour have crossed over the river and are now resting under the shade of the trees on the other shore and are sleeping that blessed sleep from which I trust they will never wake to weep. May that everlasting peace that comes alone from God be with them in the quietude of their slumbers in the honored graves they fill. Along down down the swiftly gliding years of time a few only of their comrades are left to pay tribute of love to their memory ———.

(The letter is followed by the history and roster, part below.)

Officers and Privates of Capt. M. A. Metts Company

Shortly after Grierson's raid passed through Louisville in the spring of 1863, a company——was organized — as state troops and was called into service by Gov. Pettus with the following named officers: Mike A. Metts, Capt.;—— This company was ordered to a camp of instructions in Leake county, at a church called Blue River, where it remained with several others of same kind and was drilled under the instructions of Capt. R.O. Perrin. In June the command was marched under orders from the Governor to Jackson, Miss., and was at that city when Vicksburg fell. The army then moved from Jackson to Morton.—the company was disbanded—on 6 Oct 1863. Most of the company re-enlisted, and after a brief stay at home they rendezvous at Macon, Miss., where a regiment was formed for Confederate service, with the following officers and staff:——

Capt. Metts' Company with the balance of the regiment was ordered from Macon to Canton, and was there ordered to report to Gen. S.W. Ferguson and was attached to his brigade.

The command with the balance of Gen S.D. Lee's corps, after serving in the campaign from Vicksburg to Meridian in the spring of 1864 was ordered in May to join the Army of Tennessee under J.E. Johnson, and on the 17th of May, Perrin's Regiment engaged Wilder's white horse brigade at Kingston, Ga., and put them to flight, and captured Maj. Grant and several soldiers. Col. Earle of the second Alabama, was killed the same day on another part of the field. Capt. Metts' Company was in the fights at Marietta, Kennesaw, Lookout Mountain, Good Hope Church, Peachtree Creek, Atlanta, etc. In the fight at

Atlanta, Ferguson's Brigade captured a great many horses, wagons and men. The army fell back by the way of Robertsville, S.C., Savannah, Ga., Atlanta, McDonough, Macon, and Milledgeville, where they had a skirmish with the Federals, who burnt the bridge at Milledgeville. They had several skirmishes near Louisville, Ga., one at the house of a Mr. Jones where they captured a lot of fine wine and all got jolly. Another at Maj. Gobert's, and another the next day at Gambell's quarters. They were in the fight at Bethel church in Burke county, and at Savannah. They next met a detachment of Federals between Lexington and Highpoint on the R.R., and had an engagement with them. The command was then ordered to North Carolina. They went as far as Greensboro, and on their retreat they had a skirmish on the Yadkin river near Salisbury. The company was in active service until the close of the war. They fought their last fight at Trenton, N.C., about the first of May, 1865. They were in Jeff Davis' train, and passed through Unionville and Abbeville S.C., and crossed the Savannah river at Petersburg to Washington, Ga., where they surrendered and were paroled at Forsyth on the 9th day of May, 1865.

The following are the names of Co. D, Perrin's Regiment Volunteer Cavalry:

Mike A. Metts, Captain;
John Quarles, 1st Lieutenant;
John Stevens, 2nd Lieutenant;
Thomas P. Metts, 3rd Lieutenant;

B. F. Quarles, 1st Serg. Captured near Adairsville, Ga., in 1864, and remained in prison until close of war.

(The roster goes on to list 113 men with details about many of them. Many were killed, wounded, captured, or became ill. One of the privates was George Y. Metts. We are fortunate to have this complete story of the service of Michael Albert Metts.)

When I was a child, my grandfather, John Phillip Metts, was a great story teller. There was no television in those times. I did like to sit and listen to the tales. John P. was called "Pops" by the grandchildren. He said that Michael Albert, his father, was famous in the Louisville area. He was the hero of the war and an important man. Once upon a time, Mike was riding with a group of men. His horse was at a full gallop. A deer ran across the fields ahead. Mike drew his rifle from the holster and fired without slowing the horse. The deer fell, shot through the heart. That gave the good ole boys at the barber shop something to talk about!

The longest street in Louisville is Metts Street, named for Mike. It was the first street paved with brick. His old house is gone and a newer large home is on the old lot. Other houses, still standing, belonged to his children.

Mike and Mary had a large family. George Metz will include the children in his book, but some coverage is needed for continuity. In my search for information, I received a long and very interesting letter from Ruth Burkhalter. She was 72 years old in 1983 and knew my great grandmother, Mary. Excerpts from her letter are below.

2119 South Butterfly Circle
Gretna, LA 70053
May 20, 1983

Dear Cousin Albert,

—I will give you what I recall— My mother was Lula Hodges Metts Jacoway. She was the daughter of Michael Albert Metts and Mary

Richards Nash, your great grandparents. It is my understanding that Lula was the last born of thirteen children. I have heard that there were two sets of twins in the thirteen, and about half of these children were born before, and the other half after the Civil War.—

——I do remember Grandma Metts in Louisville, her old house, her hospitality and pleasant manner with a sense of humor. She was a petite ninety year old lady, very active until shortly before her death, after a fall from the back porch which resulted in a broken hip.

I remember knowing the following children of Michael Albert and Mary - Lemuel, John (your grandpa), Nan (this would be Antoinette), Michael, Robert, Molly Gully, Kate Woodward, and Lula Jacaway.

I recall a family reunion to celebrate Uncle John's 85th birthday at "Little Nora's" home (Nora Turner), in a beautiful garden setting. It was always hard to find a gift for Uncle John, so he received many bottles of wine and whiskey.—Ordinarily, Uncle John would break out a bottle or two of the gift spirits to liven up the party, but he didn't mention this habit this time and finally one of the cousins whispered a reminder to Uncle John, "When are we going to have a little toddy, Uncle John?" Uncle John boomed, "You young whipper snappers can drink all of it you want - not me! - I'm on the wagon. That's what killed Lem."——

There was an uncle we called "Uncle Bud"——His wife was Aunt Ida. He was crippled with arthritis, and they ran the Winston County poor farm. They lived in a breezy old grey house, full of the family's cast off furniture (Beautiful Antiques). In the big front room, there was a baby grand piano. Everybody played it somehow or other, and we danced and sang. We swam in the lovely little springfed pool in the woods. The children from all over Mississippi loved to visit there every summer. Uncle Bud and Aunt Ida were real grand, He had a wonderful wry humor and played jokes on us.——

My mother, Lula, told us her mother, Mary, would serve supper, and get the little children to bed, then take extra food and blankets to the jail (which was under her husband's jurisdiction) to be sure the prisoners were not cold or hungry. It seems the Metts' were charitable people - and in this moment's insight, some of this may have been part of my motivation to become a professional social worker.——

Sincerely,
Ruth "Metz" Burkhalter

The picture on the left, below, shows Kate Woodward's family. The other picture has Franki, Ida, Mike (Jr.), Victor, Albert, Bob, Lemuel, and Hattie.



This picture is not very clear, but it shows Mary Richards Nash Metts with six of her children. On the left is Robert (Bob), then Lemuel (Lem), next is Mary Richards Nash Metts, Kate Woodward, John Phillip (our ancestor), Michael Albert (her son, called Mike after his father), and Molly Gully.



Years later, this picture shows Kate Woodward, John Phillip, Molly Gully, and Michael Albert, Jr.

Captain Michael Albert Metts died just before the turn of the century, about midnight, 5 Jun 1899. The U.S. Census of 1850 shows M.A. Metts, Jr., Mary, Rebecca, and a young lawyer, John Wilson. In 1900, the head of the household is Mary R. Metts. Living in the house are Lemuel B., Mike A., Robert L., Ida L. (daughter-in-law), Albert O. (grandson) and four black servants. Kate Woodward's family is next door with eight children. Mary lived a long and happy life until 1922.



Little has been said about Michael Albert's career other than the war service. His obituary in the Louisville Journal explains why he was considered to be a patriot and an outstanding citizen. My grandson, born on June 27, 1981, was named Michael Albert Metts after his great, great, great grandfather.

CAPT. M. A. METTS DEAD

After an illness of one week Capt. M. A. Metts, one of our county's oldest citizens, died at his home in our town about midnight June 5, 1899. He had been in failing health for something like a year, having been confined to his bed several weeks during the winter but had recovered sufficiently to be out and on our streets a few times, when last week he was taken more severely than ever, and notwithstanding all the medical aid that could be brought to bear he passed to the great beyond without a struggle, in the 75th year of his age. In the demise of Capt. Metts our county has lost one of its most prominent citizens; a man who was always active in everything pertaining to the interest and welfare of his county, a man of considerable influence for many years. Having been several times honored with the highest official positions in the gift of the people of his county. He represented his constituents in the lower house during the dark days of reconstruction; was then elected Sheriff, and then State Senator. His last official position was Postmaster. In each position he bore the distinction of having filled them with efficiency and honor. Intellectually, he was one of the ablest and most evenly balanced men our county has ever claimed; his council upon any question being respected by all. He was a devoted member of the Louisville Baptist Church, and a member of the Webster Masonic Lodge for many years. He leaves a devoted wife and eight children, all of whom, except one, (Mrs. Lula Jacoway) was at his bedside when the end came.

His remains were borne to the Masonic Hall where Rev. D. W. Babb officiated appropriately, after which the Masonic fraternity took charge and paid the last sad rites in the presence of a large concourse of friends.

To the sorrowing ones, the Journal offers tenderest condolence.

Capt. M. A. Metts *Dead.

After an illness of one week Capt. M. A. Metts, one of our county's oldest citizens, died at his home in our town about midnight June 5, 1899. He had been in failing health for something like a year, having been confined to his bed several weeks during the winter but had recovered sufficiently to be out and on our streets a few times, when last week he was taken more severely than ever; and notwithstanding all the medical aid that could be brought to bear he passed to the great beyond without a struggle, in the 75th year of his age. In the demise of Capt. Metts, our county has lost one of its most prominent citizens; a man who was always active in everything pertaining to the interest and welfare of his county; a man of considerable influence for many years. Having been several times honored with the highest official positions in the gift of the people of his county. He represented his constituents in the lower house during the dark days of reconstruction; was then elected Sheriff, and then State-Senator. His last official position was Postmaster. In each position he bore the distinction of having filled them with efficiency and honor. Intellectually, he was one of the ablest and most evenly balanced men our county has ever claimed; his council upon any question being respected by all. He was a devoted member of the Louisville Baptist church, and a member of the Webster Masonic Lodge for many years. He leaves a devoted wife and eight children, all of whom, except one, (Mrs. Lula Jacoway) was at his bedside when the end came.

His remains were borne to the Masonic Hall where Rev. D. W. Babb officiated appropriately, after which the Masonic fraternity took charge and paid the last sad rites in the presence of a large concourse of friends.

To the sorrowing ones the Journal offers tenderest condolence.

JOHN PHILLIP METTS

Born 19 Jul 1855 - Died 2 Feb 1944

John Phillip Metts was the oldest son of Michael Albert Metts and Mary R. Nash. John was born on the farm in northeast Winston County, MS. He was one of thirteen children. Two of his sisters died and were buried beside their grandmother in the Antioch Baptist Church cemetery the year before John was born. When he was about five years old, the family moved to Louisville where the big frame house was built. His stories about his youth centered about the old house, the slaves, and the boyhood pranks that he proudly described.

The career of John's father was discussed earlier. When the War Between the States started, his father was Sheriff of Winston County, where he remained until the early part of 1863. John was seven years old when his father went to war. He became the man of the family. As the Lost Cause became a reality, life in Mississippi became harder. Clothes were woven by hand. Peach seeds became buttons. Food was scarce.

After the war, his father continued to serve as Sheriff, Legislator, and Senator of Mississippi. Later, John served for a short time as deputy Sheriff. Then, when about 25 years old, he took a job with the Goyer Company of Greenville as a drummer. In those days, a drummer was a traveling salesman. In John's case, he sold wholesale groceries. In those days, families bought flour and sugar by the barrel. John drove wagons pulled by many mules. He took orders as he delivered the products to the grocery stores. He worked for the same company for many years. His travels took him to Kosciusko, Mississippi. There, he met a young widow, Nora L. Taylor Boyd. She was about twenty-five years old and had two little daughters. John married Nora in 1882.

Nora L. Taylor Metts was born 15 Jun 1857, in Carthage, Texas, and she died at the age of seventy-seven years in Greenwood, Mississippi on 9 May 1934. She was a kind and gentle person. All of her many children and grandchildren loved her and knew her well. Nearly all of them lived in the vicinity of her home, which was the gathering place for the family. Every Sunday afternoon, the roll could have been called and most of the first cousins would have answered, "present". She loved little children. When times were hard and money was scarce, toys for children were scarce also. But she knew an endless number of ways to make children happy. There were the string games. A small string would become a "Jacob's Ladder" or a "Crow's Feet". Pieces of paper would become a crown for the king, or an airplane, or an army of Confederate soldiers. She was always very quiet. Her voice was never raised in anger. The worst thing she was heard to say was to call her husband a "Hun". This was in reference to his German blood. The only person she hated was the Kaiser - old Kaiser Bill. She held him personally responsible for World War 1.

One would believe that all these children and grandchildren would know a great amount about Nora's ancestors and background. The opposite is true. Maybe it was because she seldom said anything about herself. To say that she was unselfish is an understatement. All remember her with her long hair, black turned to grey, reaching to the floor. She was small, thin, with green eyes and an olive complexion. Every morning, she would sit before her vanity and brush her hair for a long time, then roll it into a large ball upon her head. But fifty years later, when this family history was prepared, nothing about Nora had been recorded and, in the entire family history, this one person was the hardest to trace. It may be that the reason is that she was so good. The bad are easy to find!

The start was made with her grandchildren, now grown elderly. The little things remembered were collected. Gradually, these seemingly useless little clues lead to the documents which prove her life story.

The parents of Nora L. Taylor were Dr. Ward J. Taylor (b. 1833 in Butler County, AL) and Parilee Cock (b. Wilson County, TN). Their parentage and lives will be discussed later.

Nora's father went to Texas in about 1855, six years before the war. He may have been going to find his uncle, Ward Taylor, but he found Nora's mother, Parilee Cock, a farmer's daughter in Carthage, Texas. Ward and Parilee were married on 12 Sep 1855 at the home of a friend in Carthage. Dr. Taylor did not practice medicine in Texas. He was a farmer and not a very successful one. Evidently, Ward was a very ill person. That may be the reason that he did not practice medicine. He and Parilee were involved in real estate in Carthage. They are shown in the U.S. Census 1860 (pp. 118-9). Nora is a little girl three years old.

During the War Between the States, Ward joined Captain T.D. Sedberry's Company of Waterhouse's Regiment of Texas Volunteers for three years. He is listed as 30 years old. Later, the unit was redesignated as Company "F", 19th Texas Infantry. Ward was a Confederate private. After a few months, he was discharged for disability for "hemoptysis and an organic disease of the heart". Hemoptysis means "expectoration of blood from some part of the respiratory tract". This may explain the sad events before and later. With no proof, he may have had tuberculosis. Highly contagious, it may explain the mysterious disappearance of his wife, Parilee. No trace has been found of her, but we know that Ward left Texas and returned to Mississippi. (Ward Taylor's records are in the U.S. Archives - 50685267, -5352, & -5431.)

After the war, in 1867, Dr. Ward J. Taylor is back in Holmes County, Mississippi, where his father had lived. Ward was appointed administrator of his dead father's estate and we find him married to a new 21 year old wife named Kittie Courts.

Going back in time to 1862, Nora had a brother named Caswell. She was six years old. Family legend says that Nora went to school in Holly Springs, MS. Her great uncle, Caswell Cock, lived in Holly Springs. Tombstone records show no Parilee in Carthage, Panola County, Texas, nor in the Holly Springs, MS, area, nor in Holmes County, MS. Caswell was Parilee's son. Did Parilee die in childbirth? All we really know is that poor little Nora lost her mother and got a new stepmother that was only ten years older than she. At age 14, Nora was living in Goodman, MS.

Nora's life was to be filled with tragedy after tragedy - more than enough to balance the happiness she must have enjoyed. The town of Goodman is a beautiful little cluster of buildings in the wooded hills of Mississippi. If you were to take away the paved streets and the automobiles, and replace them with a few mules and wagons, you might see the place where Nora lived as a child. Her father was not wealthy, but he was a doctor. Nora's father and her stepmother, Kittie, had a little boy named Wardie and a little girl, but both of them died very young. There is a beautiful stone in the cemetery across from the "Little Red School" near Lexington. It tells the sad story: LITTLE WARDIE / Son of / W. J. & Kittie Taylor / Born Oct 20 1868 / Died Sept 27 1874 / Infant daughter of / W.J. & Kittie Taylor / Born & Died July 11 1870

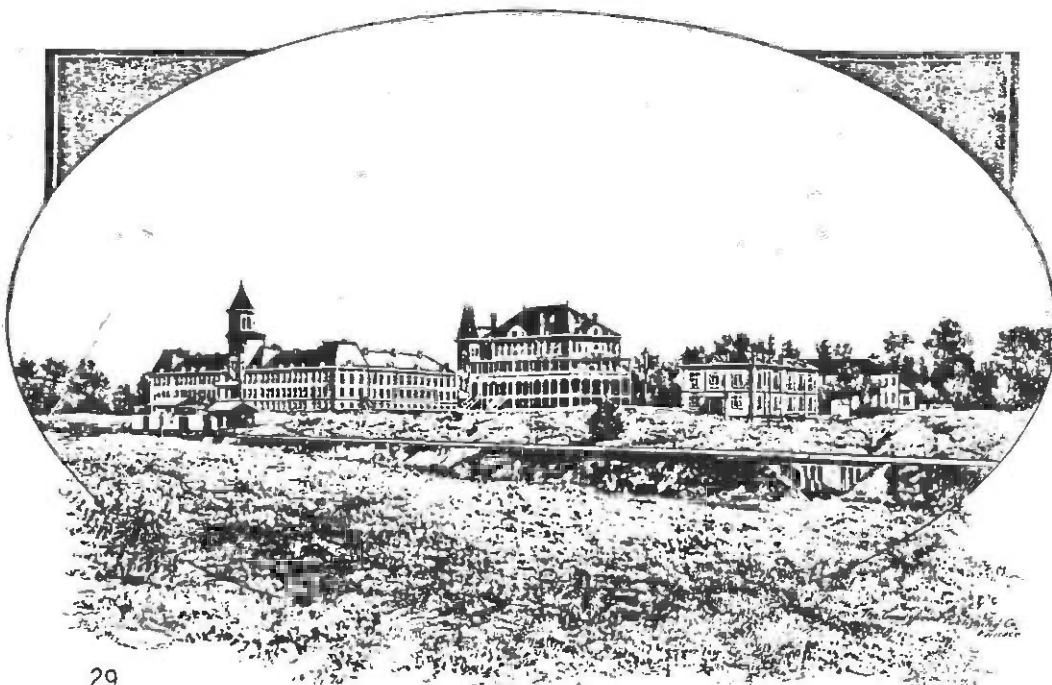
These were tragic events in the life of a girl in her late teens. But, they were only the beginning. Her brother, Caswell, ran away from home and disappeared. Nora was educated. She read and wrote well. Her son said that she was educated at Holly Springs, MS.

Nora married a man named Charles Boyd. They lived in a larger town, about twenty miles from Goodman, called Kosciusko. Her first child was Mabel (to become Mrs. W. L. Anthony). When Mabel was very small, Nora became pregnant with her second child. One day, Charles Boyd came home. Nora was sitting on the porch with little Mabel. Charles went into the house and a shot rang out. He had killed himself. No one knows the reason. When the baby was born, it was a girl. Nora named her Charles Boyd.

The next event was a happier one. Along came the drummer named John Phillip Metts. John married Nora. Little Charles Boyd changed her name to Lolla Boyd Metts. Nora and John had six children: Mary (1884), Albert (1886), Wardie Lee (1889-1895), Phillip (1891), Nora (1895), and Edmund (1900). The family moved to Greenwood, MS, in 1888 after Albert was born. They lived on Claiborne Street on the bank of the Yazoo River.

Three more tragic events were to follow. Little Wardie Lee died when she was only six years old. Phillip was named for his great grandfather, Phillip Metts, who died in South Carolina in 1842. Young Phillip, only 10 years old, was in a houseboat on the river with another child from Greenwood. The other child found a pistol and was handling it when it fired and hit Phillip in the head. He died. Next, young Edmund lived to be sixteen. He was swimming in the river near his home. He dived into the water and struck bottom. His neck was broken. They took him to his home where he lived for several months. His poor mother nursed him until he died.

Life in the old frame house went on. Albert was an outstanding baseball player. That skill paid his way through Mississippi A & M College (Miss. State). He lived in the old dormitory which came to be called "Old Main". When I was preparing to enter West Point, I went to Mississippi State for a year and lived in the same dormitory that my father had occupied. The old picture of the college is from **Biographical and Historical Memoirs of Mississippi**, Vol II, recently republished by The Reprint Company of Spartanburg, SC. The original was published in 1891 by Goodspeed Publishing Co.



Albert's younger sister, Nora, named after her mother, graduated from Mississippi State College for Women at Columbus, MS. The family continued to assemble at the home on Claiborne Street. The big event of the year was the celebration of the birthday of John Phillip Metts. A day long party, usually on the bank of the river, would be the occasion for the entire family to get together. The Metts clan from Louisville, MS, would arrive with all the little second cousins. Barbeque of entire animals would be done by the men through the day while beer and whiskey would disappear. The women did their share back at the house, using the two large wood stoves in the kitchen. The children enjoyed these affairs most of all. On one occasion, little Bob Metts, from Louisville, drank an entire case of CocaCola while everyone counted.

The next tragedy has a grim humor involved. The family was assembled for Christmas dinner. Everyone was busy. In those days in Mississippi, the children were given fireworks for Christmas to celebrate the New Year. The reason behind this custom was that Vicksburg had fallen just before the 4th of July, so no one in Mississippi celebrated that day. Instead, New Year was the day for fireworks. The cousins were in the front yard "shooting off" the fireworks. One cousin was firing roman-candles up upon the shingle roof to see the burning balls come rolling down. One did not roll. The house burned to the ground with the family watching. All the Christmas presents, the food, and all the worldly possessions of poor Nora went up in smoke. Albert threw an old swing through the screen - the only thing saved. The two wood stoves were sitting in the ashes with burned turkeys in the ovens. Michael Albert's sword was burned. Well, there was no insurance, so the children built and paid for a new brick home on the spot. The family meetings continued.

Nora L. Taylor Metts died of a general breakdown from old age. She went into a coma and quietly passed away on 9 May 1934. Her grandsons were her pallbearers.



After Nora died, old John Phillip lived for ten more years. He was over six feet tall, very fair, bald, and thin. His eyes were bright blue. He wore an imposing mustache. It was heavy and white. He loved his kin and was very proud of his name. His stories were interesting and often exaggerations but a little boy could spend hours listening to him tell about the "olden times" when he was a boy in Louisville. He said he was Dutch - back to the old error

so common in South Carolina. In fact, he was part German, about half. To the kin who came to his birthday parties, he was the head of the family and was respected. He died at the home of his daughter, Nora, in Ruleville, MS, on 2 Feb 1944. He was 89 years old. The last years of his life were spent at his daughter Nora's home. She cared for him to the end. In the old days, children did not put their parents into nursing homes as is done so often, today.

At this point, as the writer, I wish to add a few remarks. Probably, there are errors throughout this book, but I have tried to base the information upon valid documents. Even there, the problems are many. Gross errors are found in many of the basic documents. In the Metts family, my father did not know the correct names of all of his brothers and sisters. He gave incorrect information for use in a book about his life - not done intentionally, but because he did not know the truth. My own birthday in all my army records is 24 April 1921, because that was the date given me by my parents. I was born on 24 April, as proved by my birth announcement in the local newspaper. However, my Mississippi Birth Certificate states that I was born on April 4, 1921! How can this happen? Well, if you were born in Mississippi, you might understand. The death certificate for my grandmother, Nora, made out by her oldest child is wrong. My father's death certificate has several errors. I hope that the major errors are corrected in this book.

For basic information - gravestones for the following persons are located as noted:

Antioch Cemetery - Winston County, MS

Rebecca Metts - d.25 Aug 1862 - Age 67 yrs. 11 mos, 10 days.

Renanra Metts - d.24 May 1854 - Age 1 yr., 2 mos, 23 days.

Margaret R. Metts - d.23 Jun 1854 - Age 3 mos., 26 days.

Masonic Cemetery - Louisville, MS.

M. A. Metts 4 Jan 1825 - 6 Jun 1899.

Mary R. Metts - 1 Sep 1827 - 4 Nov 1922.

Wardie Lee, Dau. of J.P. & N.L. Metts - 14 Feb 1889-23 Aug 1895.

Phil Nash, son of J.P. & N.L. Metts - 3 Feb 1892-10 Apr 1902.

Kate Metts Woodward - 24 Dec 1858-17 Dec 1936.

Robert Lowery Metts 1872-1943.

Lemuel B. Metts - Miss.Pvt.Co.F.1st Reg. Spanish Am. War
24 Jun 1860-12 Jan 1936.

Ida Watson Metts - 1876-1935.

Mike Albert Metts (Jr.) 1866-1934.

Margaret Long Hodges Leech - Wife of Wm P. Leech 10 Jun 1800-10
Feb 1889. This is mother of Mary Nash Metts.

Next, having discussed John Phillip and Nora L. Taylor Metts, it is appropriate to insert a listing of all their descendants, prepared in 1982. It follows:

The Descendants of
NORA L. TAYLOR (1857-1934)

m. (1) Charles Boyd

- A. Mabel Boyd b. 28 Nov 1877 d. 18 Jul 1944
m. 14 Oct 1897 William Lonell Anthony
1. Ruth Haydn Anthony b. 24 Jul 1898
m. John W. Fergeson
a. Ruth Linn Fergeson
m. John William Carter
(1) Ruth Linn Carter
m. 27 Dec 1981 James McKee
(2) Elizabeth Wiggins Carter
m. Hildon Howard Sessems, Jr.
(3) Jeffee Anthony Carter
m. Harold Hughes Kent, Jr.
(a) Mary Hayden Kent b. 1980
(b) Harold Hugler Kent III b. Dec 1981
2. Nora Elizabeth Anthony
m. Richard Russell Span no issue
3. Mabel Boyd Anthony
m. James Tate Kirkland
a. James Tate Kirkland, Jr. (Navy Cmdr, Ret. Dallas, TX)
(1) James Widener Kirkland
(2) Julie Kirkland
4. William Lonell Anthony, Jr. (Twin)
m. Laurie Knox
a. William Lonell Anthony
m. Annette Forsythe
(1) William L. Anthony, 3d
(2) Charlotte Anthony
(3) Kathy Grace Anthony
b. Laurie Knox Anthony
m. Clyde McGee
(1) Laurie Montgomery McGee
(2) Ann Carlyle McGee
(3) Clyde McGee, Jr.
5. John Metts Anthony (Twin)
m. Frances Pryor
a. John Metts Anthony, Jr.
(1) Elisabeth Anthony
b. Mary Pryor Anthony
m. Joe Anthony Sherman
(1) Joe Anthony Sherman, Jr.
- B. Lolla Boyd b. c.1881 d. 11 Oct 1956
m. 27 Apr 1899 Reubin Lee Sims
1. Charles Wright Sims b. 10 Apr 1901 d. 8 Mar 1967
2. Mary Elizabeth Sims b. 30 Aug 1906
m. 16 Jun 1930 Robert Parker Parish, Jr.
a. Lolla Boyd Parish b. 6 Sep 1937 d. 25 Nov 1951
-

NORA L. TAYLOR

Married (2) John Phillip Metts (1855-1944)

- C. Mary Metts b. 1884
m. Dr. Edward Elson Bullock
1. Martha Wolford Bullock
m. L. R. (Ned) Kimball
a. Ken Kimball
m. Claudie Johnson
b. Martha Kimball
c. Leigh Kimball
d. Helen Kimball
2. Edward Elson Bullock, Jr. b. 1 Jul 1910
m. 16 Mar 1941 Ida Lee Downing b. 21 Jan 1910
3. Mary Metts Bullock
m. Lauton Terry Stevens
a. Lauton Terry Stevens, Jr.
m. Caroline
(1) Susan Stevens
m.
b. Nora Terry Stevens
m. Chester Harvey
(1) Sara Stevens Harvey
4. Calhoun Wilson Bullock b. 26 Oct 1914 d. 29 Sep 1980
m. Edith McQuirter b. 11 Aug 1917 Memphis, TN
a. Dr. Calhoun Wilson Bullock, Jr. b. 3 Oct 1940 Cleveland, MS
m. Mary Elizabeth Grabiell b. 15 May 1938
(1) Julie Catherine Bullock b. 26 Apr 1969 Weisbaden, Germany
(2) Mary Jo Bullock b. 30 Aug 1971 Weisbaden, Germany
b. Evelyn Hunt Bullock b. 22 Aug 1944 Jackson, MS
m. Steve Alphonse Quave b. 13 May 1941 Biloxi, MS
(1) Matthew Lazrus Quave b. 13 Dec 1978 Vicksburg, MS
(2) Daniel Stephen Quave b. 26 Dec 1980 Cincinnati, OH
- D. Albert Caswell Metts b. 6 Sep 1886 d. 23 Feb 1965
m. 19 Aug 1915 Gladys Marie Oliver b. 22 Jun 1893 d. 20 Jun 1950
1. Albert Caswell Metts, Jr. b. 24 Apr 1921
m. 2 Jan 1944 Elizabeth Lee Gray b. 16 Jul 1926
a. Virginia Lee Metts b. 18 Nov 1946
m. 30 Nov 1968 David Wendell Kennamer b. 14 Sep 1942
(1) Charles Albert Kennamer b. 9 Mar 1973
(2) John David Kennamer b. 27 Jun 1979
b. Albert Caswell Metts, 3d b. 6 Mar 1951
m. 12 May 1979 Patricia Coy Jurgens b. 17 Mar 1954
(1) Michael Albert Metts b. 27 Jun 1981
(2) Stephen James Metts b. 11 Aug 1984
c. William Roger Metts b. 30 Dec 1952 d. 26 Apr 1987
m. 13 Oct 1979 Rosemary Lindsey b. 6 Oct 1954
2. Elizabeth Pillow Metts b. 4 Nov 1922
m. David Chambers
a. Elizabeth Pillow Chambers b. 20 Nov 1944
m. 11 Oct 1981 William George Steffy
b. Joyce Ann Chambers
m. Dennis Stockard
(1) Shawn Stockard
(2) Lance Stockard

3. John Pillow Metts b. 19 Mar 1927
m. (1) 15 Dec 1950 Mary Charlotte Gee b. 1925
a. Martha Gee Metts b. 8 Dec 1952
m. 24 Feb 1974 John Clark Graeber b. 4 May 1952
(1) Charlotte Gee Graeber 3 Sep 1976
(2) John Clark Graeber, Jr. 25 Sep 1979
-

- John Pillow Metts b. 19 Mar 1927
m. (2) 21 Sep 1962 Priscilla Odom McCain b. 1927
b. Elizabeth Ryan Metts b. 11 Dec 1964
E. Wardie Lee Metts b. 14 Feb 1889 d. 23 Aug 1895
F. Phillip Metts b. Feb 1891 d. 1896
G. Nora Catherine Metts b. 2 Oct 1895 d. 28 Aug 1962
m. 18 May 1913 James William Turner b. 24 Jun 1880 d. 28 Dec 1944
1. William Wade Turner b. 10 Mar 1917
m. 26 Feb 1944 Nell Moore b. 11 May 1919
a. William Wade Turner, Jr. b. 8 Oct 1945
m. (1) Marsha
m. (2) Lenore Sowell b. 18 Jun 1950
(1) William Wade Turner III b. 1 Nov 1973
b. Nancy Matilda Turner b. 7 Sep 1947
m. James Zebedie Whatley
(1) Kimberly Ann Whatley 26 Feb 1969
c. James Michael Turner b. 10 Aug 1948 d. 10 Oct 1978
2. Edd Metts Turner b. 1919 d. 1988
m. 1 Jan 1945 Marion Julian Hardy b. 1910
a. Marion Julian Hardy, Jr. b. 1946
m. 27 May 1967 Beverly Ann Baugh b. 1948
(1) Marion Julian Hardy, III b. 1969
(2) James Matthew Hardy b. 1975
(3) James Turner Hardy b. 1980
b. James William Hardy b. 1948 d. 1965
c. Edd Metts Hardy b. 1953
m. 5 Aug 1972 Sharon Louise Hall b. 1954
(1) Lesley Babbs Hardy b. 1974
(2) Edd Metts Hardy, Jr. b. 1979
H. Edmund Metts b. Feb 1900 d. 1916

ALBERT CASWELL METTS
6 Sep 1886 - 23 Feb 1965

Albert Caswell Metts was the second child of John Phillip Metts and Nora L. Taylor. Albert was born in Kosciusko, Mississippi, where he lived until he was two years old, when the family moved to Greenwood, MS. They lived in a large frame house on Claiborne Street overlooking the Yazoo River. He learned to swim in the river and was an outstanding athlete. He was educated in the public schools. When he graduated from high school, he was given a baseball scholarship to Mississippi Agricultural and Mechanical College, now Mississippi State University. He told an interesting story about his college life. The students were in the R.O.T.C. and wore uniforms. The unit was sent to the World's Fair in Chicago. When they arrived, they noticed that the other military schools had much nicer uniforms. This may have lead to their next actions. Airplanes had not been invented, but there was a large hot air balloon which was tied to a long rope. People paid to ride up into the air to look at the fairgrounds. Well, the boys were armed with the old Enfield Rifle. It fired a rather large bullet. From a distance of about a thousand yards, several boys, including Albert, went into a prone position and shot holes in the balloon. It sagged and slowly came down. He was famous in Greenwood, MS, for that heroic deed! His baseball ability also made him well known.

After college, Albert became a cotton buyer - his life long occupation. A cotton buyer knows how to class cotton by length of fiber and grade, how to price it, and how to market the bales. He was well qualified. He learned by doing, on the job, working in offices in Greenwood. On the side, he played professional baseball with the Greenwood team.



He met Gladys Marie Oliver in Greenwood. His family was poor. Her's was wealthy. She was a member of the Pillow family, owners of extensive cotton land around Greenwood. That family will be described in a separate part of this book. Her father, John Madison Oliver, was an aristocratic and wealthy man. He owned the first telephone company in Georgia. Albert and Gladys were married in Gainesville, Georgia, on 19 Aug 1915. She had never attended public schools. Private tutors taught her and her brother William in her summer home in Gainesville and her winter home in Florida. She went to Agnes-Scott, a girl's school, to prepare for college. Then, she went to Brenau College in Gainesville, where she majored in music. She became an accomplished vocalist, ballet dancer and pianist. After college, she auditioned before and was offered a contract with the Metropolitan Opera Company in New York. Instead of following a career, she married. After the wedding, they started housekeeping in a nice new house near the home of Albert's parents.

Several years passed before the couple moved to Clarksdale, MS, and bought a little shingle house in town. Albert went into the cotton business. For the rest of his life, he was his own boss, being free on his own terms.

When the Great War, now called World War I, came along, Albert's college training had prepared him for service. In 1916, he joined the National Guard and was commissioned as a captain in the 1st Mississippi Regiment. On 1 Dec 1916, he was given orders and the authority to enlist Battery C, 140th Field

Artillery. War was declared on 6 April 1917. Captain Metts mustered Battery C. He had enlisted 136 men and 133 answered the muster.



Several months later, Captain Metts became Major Metts and on August 7th, he was ordered to Jackson to take command of the 140th Field Artillery Regiment. He organized the headquarters which commanded units in Mississippi. The regiment had no colonel. Units of the regiment were inducted into federal service in August. Major Metts ordered the regiment to assemble at Camp Sweb Taylor at Jackson, MS. After the regiment was formed, Major Metts was sent to Fort Sill, Oklahoma to attend the School of Fire. After the organization had been completed, he resigned and went back to the cotton business in Clarksdale, MS.

In the book, Military Annals of Leflore County, Mississippi, Battery C, 140th Field Artillery, World War I, by Vivian Loggins McLemore, Teresa Loggins Oden, Sarah Willis Loggins, and Eleanor Loggins Charlton, the story of the Artillery Battery is told in detail.

Albert may have returned home to get his family started. In 1919, a baby girl was born.

She was given the name, Alberta, although she was born dead. The baby weighed over ten pounds and the delivery was long and hard. Alberta is buried beside her parents in the Odd Fellows cemetery in Greenwood, MS.

The next child born was this story teller, Albert Caswell Metts, Jr., named for his father. The date was 24 Apr 1921. Eighteen months later, Elizabeth Pillow Metts was born - 4 Nov 1922. She married David Chambers on 2 Oct 1943. He was a civilian instructor, teaching flyers at a small airfield near Clarksdale when they were married. During the war, he left that position to become a commercial airline pilot, his life occupation.

The fourth and last child was John Pillow Metts, born 19 Mar 1927. He married Mary Charlotte Gee on 2 Dec 1950. They were divorced. Later, John married a second time to Priscilla Odom McCain.

The names of children and grandchildren are given on the schedule before this article.

The cotton business prospered in the good times following the war. The little home in Clarksdale was sold and a big new home was bought. Out Maple Street and beyond the city limits, the large stucco two story home stood on a ten acre plot. About two acres were in grass and large trees. A vegetable garden and orchard were along the side. Behind, was a pasture with barns and cows.

During the period until 1929, prosperity made life enjoyable in Mississippi. There was a big, black, new Buick every year. Four negro servants took care of the yard, furnace, cooking, housekeeping, and nursing. Gladys had difficulty with the birth of her last child. She blamed the doctor, not John. She would never regain her health. During those years, she had a full time white nurse to care for her.

The good life ended with the great crash of 1929. Cotton was bought on margin and the family fortune turned into a large debt. Albert refused to take bankruptcy - as a matter of pride - and repaid all debts during his life. In 1929, almost everyone was in the same situation. That helped. The first thing

to go was the Buick. No one could buy the house, so we stayed for three more years. The servants stayed for a while because they had no place to go. That means they had to be fed along with the family. Eventually, they all left except for one. Albert's life was not easy. The vegetable garden was valuable.

As time passed, the cotton business improved, the big house was sold, and the family moved to a smaller three bedroom home on Cherry Street. It was very near the public school. Hard times may have caused some improvement in the physical condition of Gladys. Her interest in music was renewed and she directed the choirs of several Protestant churches for many years. Her soprano voice was appreciated in Clarksdale.

Albert, Jr., finished public school, went to Mississippi State College for one year, then to West Point. Elizabeth went to Mississippi State College for Women. World War II started and John entered the Merchant Marine Academy and, later, joined the Marine Corps. After the war, he went to the University of Mississippi.

After the children were gone, Gladys had increasing problems with angina, a heart disease. She had been a beautiful young girl with bright blue eyes, dark hair, and a very fair complexion. As she grew older, she gained weight and suffered from arthritis. Then, the heart problems started and ended her life at the age of fifty-seven. She died 20 Jun 1950 in Clarksdale. She had been born in Greenwood, 22 Jun 1893.

Albert lived alone in the house on Cherry Street for the rest of his life. After the loss of his fortune in 1929, he seemed indifferent about regaining any more than was needed for his family. He took pride in being completely independent of his children to the end. He enjoyed hunting and fishing all of his life. He was always kind and understanding with the children and grandchildren. He had many good friends in Clarksdale. Gladys and Albert are buried along with Alberta in his lot in the Odd Fellows cemetery in Greenwood, MS.

ALBERT CASWELL METTS, Jr.
born 24 Apr 1921

A detailed description of my military career will be avoided, since this is a book about ancestors. Instead, these facts may tell the story enough to complete the direct line.

1. Born, at the Metts home, Clarksdale, MS, 24 Apr 1921. Many records show the wrong date of 4 Apr 1921.
2. Attended public school, Clarksdale, MS, graduated 1939.
3. Mississippi State College, 1939-40, Chemical Engineer, PiKA, Phi Eta Sigma
4. U. S. Military Academy, West Point, NY, June 1943, BS.
5. Syracuse University, 1953, MBA.
6. Thirty years service, Infantry, Colonel.
7. Campaigns - 4 Europe, World War II, 5 Korean War, 3 Viet Nam War.
8. Decorations - Combat Infantry Badge, 3 Distinguished Unit Citations, Silver Star, 2 Bronze Stars, 2 Purple Hearts, French Croix de Guerre, others.
9. Faculty, San Antonio College, after Army Retirement.
10. Graduate, Army Command and General Staff College and Army War College.
11. Lived in Clarksdale, MS; West Point, NY; Camp Shelby, MS; Italy; Germany; Charleston, SC; Korea; Ft. Benning, GA; Syracuse, NY; Arlington, VA; Ft. Leavenworth, KS; Hawaii; Arlington, VA; Carlisle, PA; Arlington, VA; and, San Antonio, TEXAS.

I married Elizabeth Lee Gray, called "Betty", on 2 Jan 1944. She was born in Newport News, Virginia, on 16 Jul 1926. As a child, she moved with her family to Hempstead, New York. This is a town on Long Island, near New York City. The Gray family story is told in a separate chapter of this book.

Betty and I met at West Point. She had come on a visit with her older sister. During my years as a cadet, we were together as much as the rules at West Point allowed. We were engaged on 24 April 1943. The diamond in her engagement ring was my grandmother's, given to her by John Madison Oliver. After graduation, we waited for six months before making the decision to marry regardless of the war. World War II had begun and, when we married, no end to the war was in sight. As an Infantry lieutenant, there was no doubt whatever about my future. We married in Clarksdale, MS, at the Methodist Church. After the wedding, we went to New Orleans, the Biloxi sea shore, and on to Camp Shelby, MS.



Our first home was a converted garage in Hattiesburg, MS. We were fortunate. Ninety thousand soldiers were at Camp Shelby. Hattiesburg was a small town. In six months, I was on orders to ship out - destination a secret. Betty went to her parents home on Long Island, NY. I went to Italy. Years later, she came to Europe with the first dependents. The Army was not ready for wives. We took over a German house in Trostberg, Bavaria. As a Captain, Constabulary Commander, I had 155 soldiers, 300 German Police, 36 Jeeps, 10 armored cars, and 12 trucks. The closest American woman, besides Betty, was over thirty miles away. There were no American stores of any kind. We ate the same food that the soldiers were issued.

On a short leave to the United States right after the war ended, I had arranged for the next big event to take place. Our first child was due to be born in November, a month when the snow is deep in Bavaria. The nearest hospital was in Munich - a round trip of over a hundred miles. Early visits to the doctor were made by jeep. I was worried and so were my 155 American soldiers, most of whom were about the same age as Betty. They would do anything they could to help her. They knew that she liked the old German beer mugs, so on their patrols, they searched for and found many of them and gave

them to her. When the day was getting near, a week early, Betty was loaded into an eight ton armored car and slowly driven to Munich by Kapalinsky, my eighteen year old driver. Virginia Lee Metts was born on 18 Nov 1946. When notified of her birth, her grandfather sent a cable: "You must plan to have 47 more children since you are naming them after the states." He had chosen the name, Helen Marie, for both grandmothers. Virginia Lee, called "Ginny", married David Wendell Kennamer, II and has two sons, Charles Albert and John David.

After Germany, we lived in Charleston, SC, for three years while I taught at The Citadel, The Military College of South Carolina. Then, the Korean War started in 1950.



Betty was pregnant. I left on 24 hour notice. We packed out and moved her to Tulsa, OK, where her sisters lived at that time. I was fighting in Korea when Albert Caswell Metts, 3d was born. His grandfather got on the Greyhound bus and went from Clarksdale, MS, to Tulsa with one purpose in mind. He named the child after himself, gave the nurse a box of candy, and went home.

Here, I will tell the only personal war story in the book. In Korea, my company had just come out of the famous Battle of Chipyongni, where the 23rd Infantry had been surrounded for days by armies of Chinese. After a day or so, we were sent into a quieter sector, fighting North Koreans. Life was easier, pushing north a mile or so each day.

I knew that the baby was due and I was worried. Days would pass before a letter would come. In my thirty years in the Infantry, I would not dig fox holes. I hate a hole in the ground worse than an automobile seat belt. Maybe that's why I was shot in the face twice. I want to see what's going on. Well, that day I was worried, so I go an entrenching tool (shovel) and started digging into the hard ground. After an hour or two, my First Sergeant came over and said, "Captain, sir, have you looked around?". I climbed out of the hole and saw dirt flying all over the mountain side. Two hundred soldiers decided that we were to have serious trouble if Captain Metts was digging in. The baby was born 6 Mar 1951.

The third and last child, William Roger Metts, was born on 30 Dec 1952, at Fort Benning, GA. For the first time, I was just outside the door, but Betty asked the doctor several times to call the golf course and tell me that we were having a child.

An entire book could be written on the immediate family, but there are many ancestors to search out. In 1985, Virginia Lee, Ginny, and her family are living in the Washington, D.C. area where she spent most of her childhood. Albert and his wife have Michael Albert and Stephen James. They live in San Antonio.

The Metts direct line has been traced from old Hendrick down to the youngest. Now, we turn to the Metts wives and chapter by chapter bring each surname back to the Metts they married. The next chapter will tell about the ancestors of Rebecca Suber, the wife of Phillip Mitts. She was the great lady that moved her family from South Carolina to Mississippi. Her tombstone is in northeast Winston County, Mississippi, in the Antioch Baptist Church cemetery.

Suber

Phillip Mitts married Rebecca Suber in Newberry County, South Carolina. She was born in 1794, on the old farm of Michael Suber, a few miles north of the old Mitts homestead on Heller's Creek. She died in Winston County, MS, in 1862. Her family, the Subers, were a numerous and well known family in Newberry. The study of this very interesting family continues as the various members are traced. Dr. Andy Suber, of Columbia, SC, is the leading researcher. He is confronted with the usual genealogical problems. For example, there were three Rebecca Subers living in Newberry County at the same time. There were many documents with that name included. The question for the researcher concerns selection.

Compared to the Metts ancestors of the same period, the Subers were wealthier, owned more land, were more numerous, and were better educated. Some of them could read and write. Our Rebecca could not. With the help of Dr. Suber, we find that she is of the fourth generation in America, descending from John Michael Suber, who came to America in 1752. The Subers are Lutheran Palatines from Germany. As explained earlier, we will start with the immigrant and trace this branch of the family back to the Metts line.

JOHN MICHAEL SUBER

The German word closest to Saeber is saber, which means sword or sabre. That may be the basis of the name, but it soon became Suber. The first evidence of the arrival of John Michael in America is in the Journal of the Proceedings of his Majesty's Honorable Council of the Province of Carolina the 7th day of November 1753. The petition is on the next page.

So, here we have the story of his move to America. Note that he names his children with the oldest, Elizabeth, aged 10. He says nothing about a wife. From the age of Elizabeth, we guess that John Michael was born about 1730. He must have paid for the passage because he sailed from Rotterdam, not England, and nothing is said about an indenture.

As stated earlier, the old Germans may not have been able to read and write, but they were smart, shrewd, and even devious at times. John Michael shipped from Rotterdam on the ship Cunliff with children but no wife. On the same ship was Elizabeth Millerin, a widow with her son, Hans Michael. Also, on the Cunliff was Hans Peter Weyman. Well, John Michael married Elizabeth on the boat, but they kept their secret for a very good reason. As two families, they would get more land under the land grant system. Therefore, there are two sets of documents which lead to two farms, side by side. Hans Peter Weyman will be discussed later, when his daughter, Rachel, marries the son, George, of John Michael and Elizabeth.

Elizabeth Millerin has an "in" on the end of her name because she was a widow - an old German custom. Probably, the name was Muller, which means miller - a person who grinds grain. This would have been her other husband's name. Her son, Hans Michael, became Michael Miller and applied for his own land grant and got it. The petition of Elizabeth will be on the page after that of John Michael Suber (Michael Saeber). Note that Elizabeth does not mention her husband.

the petition of Michael Saaber humbly
 that he petition for bounty for shipping
 his family from the 4th of Feb^r 1752 to the 7th of Nov^r 1752

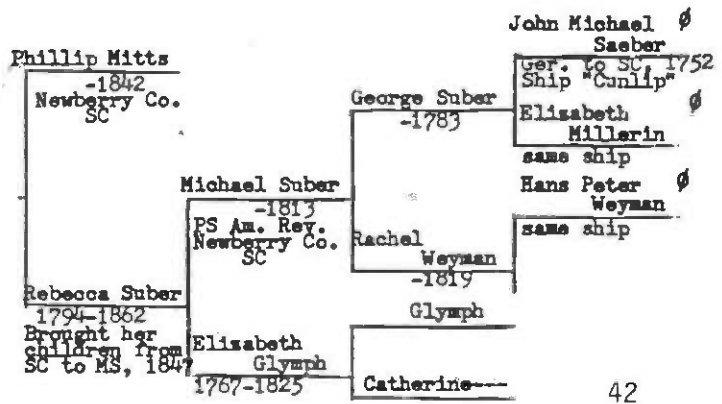
554
 Beginning from the 4th of Feb^r 1752 to the 7th of Nov^r 1752
 Family took shipping at Rotterdam on board the Cunlif Capⁿ for Cleaver command
 he had come from his native Country on the Encouragement
 he had been given to Foreign Protestants. He is by ship's
 lines and Severance discharged from the ship, and is desirous to
 settle in this Province and in such part as he can find, and to
 maintain his Family. He has three children viz Elizabeth
 aged ten years, Hans Erick 9, and Comrade aged 3 years, and
 never had any land in this Country and humbly prays his Majesty
 and their Honors to order the Surveyor General to lay out to the Petitioner
 200 acres of land free of charges and that he may have his
 Majesty's Bounty of Provision, and the Petitioner is in duty bound
 shall ever pray. Charles Jover Nov. 4, 1752 Michael Saaber
 This Petition being considered, and the Petitioner appearing &
 Licensing allegiance to his Majesty and to the truth of his Petition
 the Truth thereof was Granted and the Deputy Secretary ordered to pre-
 pare a Warrant and the Surveyor General to lay out the 200 acres prayed
 for, then so a Grant may issue to him for the same and that
 the Commissioner General do pay the Charges and Bounty.

Description	Reference
Petition of Mich. Saaber to Council 7 Nov. 1752	Council Journal Vol. 20, part 2 pp. 553-554

The Petition of Read the petition of Michael Saaber humbly
 Mich. Saaber for his getting forth--That the Petitioner and family took shipping
 Bounty
 Page 554.
 Beginning from the 4th of February 1752 to the day of A. D. 1752
 the 7th day of November 1752.

Family took shipping at Rotterdam on board the Cunlif Captain Joseph Cleaver Commander
 The Petitioner came from his native Country on the Encouragement
 he heard was given to Foreign Protestants. He is by
 and Severance discharged from the ship and is desirous to
 settle in this province and in such part as he can find, and to
 maintain his family. He has three children viz. Elizabeth
 aged ten years, Hans Erick 9, and Comrade aged 3 years, and
 never had any land in this country and humbly prays his Majesty
 and their Honors to order the Surveyor General to lay out to ye Petitioner
 200 acres of land free of charges and that he may have his
 Majesty's Bounty of Provision, and the Petitioner is in duty bound
 shall ever pray--Charles Jover Nov. 4, 1752 Michael Saaber
 This Petition being considered, and the Petitioner appearing
 Licensing allegiance to his Majesty and to the truth of his Petition
 the Truth thereof was Granted and the Deputy Secretary ordered to pre-
 pure a Warrant and the Surveyor General to lay out the 200 acres prayed
 for, then so a Grant may issue to him for the same and that
 the Commissioner General do pay the Charges and Bounty.

At this point, study the partial chart of the Metts family:



The Petition of
Ex. Millerin

came here on the encouragement given to Foreign Protestants No. 1 in Family right

Prays for land and the Bounty

The prayer granted

Order to the Deputy Surveyor General

The Commissioner General to pay the Charges and Bounty

Read the Petition of the above entitled Elizabeth Millerin setting forth that she shipped herself in Rotterdam on Board the Cunliff Capt. Joseph Cleator Commander bound to this place on the encouragement given to Foreign Protestants and has payed her passage to include Charles and Laurence, and is desirous to settle in this province. The Petitioner has one son named Hans Michael aged five years and never had any land in this country and therefore she humbly prays his Excellency and their Honors to give an order to the Surveyor General to lay out or cause to be laid out to the Petitioner 100 acres of land free of charge and that she may have his Majesty's Bounty of Provisions and the Petitioner is in duty bound shall ever pray
The said Petitioner being considered and the Petitioner was appearing and swearing to the truth of the allegations and her said petition the prayer hereof was granted and the Deputy Secretary ordered to prepare a warrant and the Surveyor General to lay out the 100 acres of land prayed for that so a grant may pass to the Petitioner for the _____ ordered also that the Commissioner General do pay the Charges and his Majesty's Bounty to the Petitioner
The said Petitioner being considered and the Petitioner was appearing and swearing to the truth of the allegations and her said petition the prayer hereof was granted and the Deputy Secretary ordered to prepare a warrant and the Surveyor General to lay out the 100 acres of land prayed for that so a grant may pass to the Petitioner for the _____ ordered also that the Commissioner General do pay the Charges and his Majesty's Bounty to the Petitioner

Reference - S. C. Archives
Council Journal
3 Nov. 1752, p. 53

Page 513.
Beginning the 8th day of November 1752 including ending the 14th day of December 1753 A.D.
The 1st day of December 1752.

the Petition of
Elisabeth Millerin

came here on the encouragement given to Foreign Protestants No. 1 in Family right

Prays for land and the Bounty

The prayer granted

Order to the Deputy Surveyor General

the Commissioner General to pay the Charges and Bounty

Read the Petition of Elisabeth Millerin humbly setting forth whereas she shipped herself in Rotterdam on Board the Cunliff Captain Joseph Cleator Commander bound to this place on the encouragement given to Foreign Protestants and has payed her passage in Rotterdam to include Charles and Laurence, and is anxious to settle in this province. The Petitioner has one son named Hans Michael aged five years and never had any land in this country and therefore she humbly prays his Excellency and their Honors to give an order to the Surveyor General to lay out or cause to be laid out to the Petitioner 100 acres of land free of charge and that she may have his Majesty's Bounty of Provisions and the Petitioner is in duty bound shall ever pray— Elisabeth Millerin

Charles Tolers the 1st day of December 1752.

The said Petition being considered and the Petitioner was appearing and swearing to the truth of the allegations and her said petition the prayer hereof was granted and the Deputy Secretary ordered to prepare a warrant and the Surveyor General to lay out the 100 acres of land prayed for that so a grant may pass to the Petitioner for the _____ ordered also that the Commissioner General do pay the Charges and his Majesty's Bounty to the Petitioner

The surveyors did their work and the land was granted in both cases. In SC Archives, Quit Rents, 1760-68, part 2, p.203, we read: By whom, John Michael Souber, 300 acres, 2 pounds, 8 shillings, 21 pence, Craven County, money received in Proclamation 1/12/9, 200 granted to himself & 100 to his wife Elizabeth Millerin, July 4th, 1754. Now, the land is theirs. The plat on the next page shows land on both sides of Second Creek (later Heller's Creek) in Craven County (now Newberry County).

Finally, John Michael and Elizabeth had to appear in court in Charles Town (Charleston) to get memorials on the land. Both were granted and entered in the book of records in sequence. Notice that Saerber is now spelled Souber.

A lot of detail has been presented to get these immigrants settled on Second Creek. The papers had to have been written by professionals - lawyers for a fee. But the end result is that we know that they came to locate as neighbors of the Metts family with a common origin.

Life for the family in the early years would be similar to that of the early settlers. Wild game was plentiful. Neighbors helped in the clearing of the woodland and building of a shelter. This family had children - his and hers - to help with the work. Other Subers, probably kin, were coming to South

Carolina, They are interesting, but this book deals with the direct line, which continued to grow.

Saeber became Souber, then Suber. Their family, in 1852 consisted of Elizabeth Souber, b. 1742; Hans Erick Suber, b. 1743; Conrad, b. 1749; and, Michael Miller, b. 1747, Evidently, while John Michael and Elizabeth were working on the land papers, they were also trying to increase their family. George Suber, our ancestor, was born - not in time to be included in the petition, so there were 50 acres less. But, he arrived soon after that 1752 date. Would you believe that George Suber asked for and was granted a land grant in 1774? The Surveyor-General signed off on 4 May 1773. He must have believed that George was an immigrant! If you subtract 21 years you will get 1752. They lost the race with the stork and lost 50 acres, but we gained an ancestor. After George, they had John and (John)Uriah. For this couple, Dr. Suber has identified 32 grandchildren.

Before leaving John Michael Suber, I wish to remark upon the fact that 133 years after the Cunliff crossed the Atlantic, I have four grandsons. One is named John and one is named Michael.

GEORGE SUBER

1752 - 1783

George Suber was destined to lead a very hard and short life. As discussed, above, he was born in 1752, just before his parents would move to the frontier to clear land and build their new home. Thirty-one years later, George was dead. He had written no will, so he may have met a sudden death by accident or violence. All that is known is that the inventory of his estate is on file at the Old Ninety-Six courthouse. (Box 87, Pack 2134.) The list of his property is interesting. Also, the names of the witnesses are the same as those found on various Metts documents. A part of the inventory is below.

An Inventory of The Goods & Effects, of the Estate of George Suber Deceased - Duly Appraised by our the Subscriber this 12th Day of December Anno Domini 1783

		160 5

The Kitchen furniture	2	7	10
1 Iron	1	11	6
2 Brass Books	1	8	6
1 Spoon	1	17	1
3 Flax & 1 Cotton wheel	1	8	6
2 old Sifters	1	13	2
1 maid & 2 Cows	1	5	8
1 Hackle	4	19	9
2 old Beds & Bed. Made	1	9	3
1 negro Talow named Chanah	1	9	3
1 negro Wanch	57	3	1
1 negro Talow named George	50	1	1
	17	16	1
	174	6	1

*Certified by us Michael Dickson
Conrad Suber
Christman Platt*

Due to the Estate

Box 87 - page 2/134

George Suber married Rachel Weyman, a very interesting woman. She must have been born about the same time as George, because her father came to America on the same boat, the Cunliff, as the Subers and the Millerins.

The Weyman petition for a land grant is similar to the others except that one line raises a question. Below, that line is copied, full size, from the petition.

He has a Wife and three children

— viz Eva 16 years, Sussanna 16, Johannes 13, and Nyna Regina, 8 years old, and never had any land in this Province.

It is very legible, saying, "He has a wife and three children viz Eva 16 years, Sussanna 16, Johannes 13, and Nyna Regina, 8 years old, and never had any land in this Province." Is Eva his wife? Is she only 16 years old? That is what it says! Our Rachel is not listed, so she came along later. Was Eva her mother? Why not? The old boy had strong young people to clear the land and plant the corn. It is easy to understand how George Suber met and married Rachel. Then, George was given a land grant. How? Who knows? Maybe he told them, in German, that he was a new arrival. Just as he turned 21, on 2 Mar 1773, he asked for 200 acres in Craven County (later Newberry) under the name George Schuber, and it was a "renewed" petition. That means that he had tried for it earlier. Did they turn him down because he did not seem to be 21 years old? Then, on 2 April 1773, one month later, he asked for 200 acres under the name, George Suber. These records are in the Council Journal. Well, the King's Council gave George 100 acres by land grant on 25 May 1774. George Suber died about the time that the American Revolution ended. No records have been found to show his participation in the war. We do not know how he died so young. He might have been killed in the war and no records tell about him. Or, he may have been too ill to be a soldier. We can guess. There are several

(322) *Bunney*

SOUTH-CAROLINA

GEORGE the *He* by the Grace of God, of GREAT BRITAIN, FRANCE and IRELAND, KING, Defender of the Faith, and so forth, do hereby give THESE PRESENTS, SENES APPEALS, COMMISSIONS, KNOW YE, THAT WE, of our special Grace, certain Knowledge and mere Motion, have given and granted, and by these Presents, for us, our heirs and successors, DO GIVE AND GRANT unto *George Suber his*

heirs and assigns, a plantation or tract of land containing *One hundred acres in Craven County in the Western part of Broad River, bounded on all sides by Decent Land*

And hath full shape, form and mark, as appears by a plan thereof, hereunto annexed; Together with all woods, waste-grounds, meadows and pasture lands, lakes, ponds, fish-ponds, marshes, water-courses, profits, commonages, appurtenances and hereditaments whatsoever, appurtenant belonging or in anywise appertaining; Together with privilege of hunting, hawking and fishing in and upon the same, and all manner and manner whatsoever; Living and retiring, as aforesaid, to us, our heirs and successors, all whose persons, if any there should be found growing thence; and also living and retiring, nevertheless, in us, our heirs and successors, one hundredth parts of silver and gold and silver only: TO HAVE AND TO HOLD, the said tract of *One hundred* acres of land and all and singular other the premises hereby granted unto the said *George Suber his*

heirs and assigns for ever, in fee and common service, the said *George Suber his* heirs and assigns yielding and paying to us, our heirs and successors, or to our Receiver-General for the same being, or to his Deputy or Deputies for the same being, yearly, that is to say, on the twenty-fifth day of March, in every year, the sum of three shillings sterling, or four shillings prodenarius current, for every hundred acres, and in full payment, according to the terms of a writ, contained herein; the same to be paid on the twentieth of June years from the date hereof; Provided always, and this present Grant is upon condition, as aforesaid, that the said *George Suber his*

heirs or assigns shall and do, yearly, and every year, after the date of these presents clear and discharge at the rate of *Three* acres for every hundred acres of land, and in no proportion exceeding the number of acres herein contained; And also shall and do cause a witness or witnesses to be set up or set upon the site of our Receiver-General for the same being, in our said Province, within *three* months from the date hereof; And upon condition, that if the said writ, hereof reserved, shall at any time be in arrears and unpaid for the space of *three* years from the time aforesaid, we, our heirs and successors, may at any time be found on the said lands, premises and hereditaments hereby granted; or if the said *George Suber his*

heirs or assigns shall neglect to clear and discharge yearly and every year, at the rate of *three* acres for every hundred acres of land, and in no proportion exceeding the number of acres herein contained, or if a witness or witnesses of the said writ, shall not be set up in the site of our Receiver-General for the same being, in our said Province, within *three* months from the date hereof, then and in any of these cases, this present Grant shall void, and determine and be utterly void; and the said lands, premises and hereditaments hereby granted, and every part and parcel thereof, shall revert to us, our heirs and successors, to fully and absolutely, as if the same had never been granted.

Given under the Great Seal of our said Province,
 WITNESSE *The Hon^{ble} William Bull, Esquire*
Secretary
 Governor and Commander in chief in and over our said Province of South-Carolina, this *Twenty fifth* Day of *May*
 Anno Domini 1774 in the *Seventeenth* Year of our Reign
William Bull (L. M. S.)
 Signed by his *Honor the Lieutenant* Governor in Council
Thomas Winstanley
 Secretary-General

And hath thereunto a plan thereof annexed, representing the same, certified by *Francis Premier* for Deputy Secretary-General
 May 4th 1773

No.	Description	Reference - S.C. Archives
6904	George Suber 1000. Broad River	Royal Grant Vol 22, pg. 322

interesting documents that show that Rachel provided food for men and horses of the militia and that she was paid. Her "mark" is shown on one of the papers.

During their relatively short marriage, George and Rachel Suber had six sons: our ancestor, Michael; Gasper; Leonard; Conrad; John; and, George. After George, Sr., died, Rachel married George Egner. He died in 1796, and Rachel became Rachel Suber Egner Peaster. He died before 1808. Rachel lived until 1819.

The Sons of the American Revolution have given George Suber credit for Civil Service for serving on a grand jury and a petit jury during the Revolution.

SOUTH CAROLINA

PURSUANT to an ACT of the GENERAL ASSEMBLY passed the 16th of March, 1783. We, the COMMISSIONERS of the TREASURY, have this Day delivered to *Rachel Suber* this one INDENTED CERTIFICATE, for the Sum of

One pound seven and six tenths
Two pence and six farthings for
rent & maintenance of her
Commissioners

the said *Rachel Suber* his Executors, Administrators, or Assigns, will be entitled to receive from this Office the Sum of *One shilling and six pence*

on the day of *the 20th of July* for one Year's Interest on the principal Sum of *One pound seven and six tenths* and her pence and the like Interest annually

The said *Rachel Suber* her Executors, Administrators, or Assigns, will be entitled also to receive, and shall be paid, if demanded, the principal Sum of *One pound seven and six tenths* and her pence

on the 20th of July 1783 And the said *Rachel Suber* his Executors, Administrators, or Assigns, may make any Purchase or any Public Sales of Confiscated Property, (except such as shall be ordered by the Legislature for Special Purposes) and this INDENT shall be received in Payment.

For the true Performance of the several Payments in Manner above mentioned, the PUBLIC TREASURY is made liable, and the FAITH of this STATE, pledged by the aforesaid ACT.

GIVEN under our hands at the TREASURY-OFFICE, in CHARLESTON, this *Twenty* Day of *July* One Thousand Seven Hundred and Eighty *Eight*

John C. Calhoun of the Treasury

£1. 7. 10 in above & also Check Book held
£1. 11. 10 receipt
£0. 1. 11 Annual Interest

No. 3403
 Mark *R*

The State of South Carolina, to Rachel Suber *Deb*
 N. B. Impressed by Thomas Hitchison }
 of Col Washingtons Cavalry, Eight }
 Pouches of Oats. June 25 1781. } *£ 6. 00*
 N. C. Delivered to James Kelly Captain }
 rations for 10 Men, and 10 Horses }
 forage. for one Time Dec 17 1781. } *9. 15*

State of South Carolina }
9th Dist Personally appeared Rachel Suber being duly }
 sworn, Layeth on her Oath, that she received no }
 payment for the above Account as yet }
 sworn to before me } *9. 15*
21. 7. 1815
Rachel Suber
 and

MICHAEL SUBER
died 1813

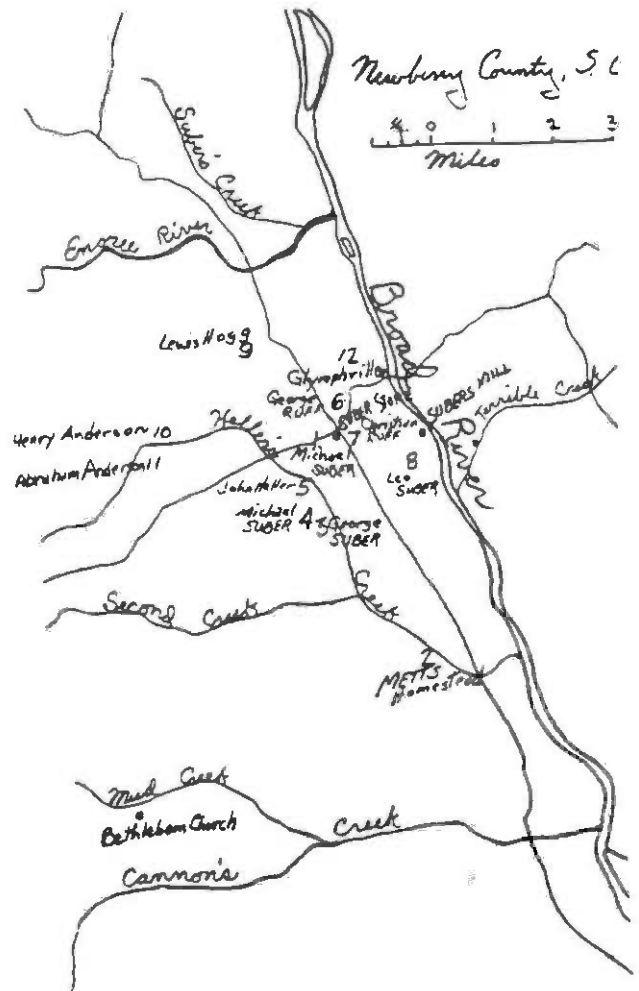
Michael was the first born son of George and Rachel Suber. The date of his birth is not known, but it must have been about or before 1770. He would follow in his father's footsteps, as a poor German farmer trying to make a living from the poor soil of Newberry County. This is an appropriate place to insert a sketch of the Heller's Creek area in Newberry County with the locations shown for Michael Suber, the Metts homestead, and other neighbors. Michael bought his farm a little north of where his father and mother lived. He was a teenager when his father died. As the oldest son, he would care for his mother until she remarried. Then, he would be free to get his own farm.

Michael may have been too young for the American Revolution. At any rate, there is no record of his service. There are "patriotic service" documents that show provision of food for men and horses. Of particular interest is Michael's "mark" and the names of Philemon Waters and Robert Anderson. Remember that Henry Mitts served in Water's Regiment and Robert Anderson signed Henry's papers. (See papers on the next page.)

Michael Suber married Elizabeth Glymph. She was born in 1767 and died in 1825. Research of the Glymph family has been interesting if not rewarding. A lot of time and effort has been expended trying to put the Glymphs on a chart. There are a number of documents. Some have more meaning than others. Margaret Thompson of Roanoke, VA, is the leading researcher on the Glymph name. Someday, she may find the paper that tells all. The key to the mystery seems to lie in finding out more about a lady named Catherine Lowe.

Glenda Bundrick, of Newberry, found an intriguing and complicated estate distribution paper. It indicates that Catherine is the mother of Elizabeth Glymph Suber. That is certain. Now the trail grows dim. Catherine's last husband was Lowe. She seems to have had at least four husbands! One husband was a Glymph, but which one? There are documents of all kinds. The estate document is on the next page. One paper places a Catharine Glymph in 1769 at a mysterious place in Dorchester County below the Congaree River called "Four Holes Swamp". This may be our Catherine. Next, there was a man named Abram Glymph in the American Revolution. He was born in 1748. He came from Heidelberg, Germany. He was 5'4 3/4", brown hair, black eyes and fair complexion.

Another man, John Abraham Glympff, age 28 came to America on the ship "Neptune" 13 Dec 1754. (born 1726) Is this the first Glymph or is the



The State of Catharine Towne du in ych (Wille) du

Paied Eman & Glump, last of Luna Estate	287.68 ²	Business Secretary of
Paied the heirs of Etina Tuben		
Paied Eman Tuben — \$57.54		
Paied J. Tuben — 57.54		
Paied Geo. J. Tuben — 57.54		
Paied P. Metz & Wife — 57.54		
Paied Geo. Egner & Wife — 57.54	287.68 ²	
Paied the heirs of John Glump		
Paied John Glump & Wife — 71.92		
Paied John Glump & Wife — 71.92	287.68 ²	
My own child	287.68 ²	
Paied John Miller	287.68 ²	
Paied John & Gallman & Wife	287.68 ²	
Paied Nancy Child	287.68 ²	
	51726.11	

You swear that the above returns exhibit a correct and true
 Estate of Catharine Towne du for 1827 to the best of your
 Knowledge

3403
 Rachel Tuben
 for Provisions & forage
 for Cont. Militia
 use in 1781.

Amo. \$ 7.10^{1/2}
 One pound seven Shillings
 the Pence farthing
 Sterling.

No Vouchers.
 27.10
 1.92.10
 11.38

St of S^c Carolina
 April 29 = 1781
 To Nations for 17 oxen @ 5/6
 To for wage for 17 Horses @ 3/4
 To Nations for 80 me. 2 mules @ 3/4
 To for 100 Horses @ 2/3
 St of S^c Carolina } Reasonably it paid
 the District } Tuben and Made both 4 days
 that he never paid any part thereof
 sworn to before me
 this 11 Day of June 1783
 Waters J. J. Just. Magistrate
 Michel Tuben
 Mark
 St. Anderson

S^c Carolina } Gentleman please and deliver my
 96 Indits } Indits to Capt. Lewis Hogg and his
 receipt shall be yours
 To the Pub. Treas. of S^c State
 Certify by me this 27 June 1786
 Michel Tuben
 Mark

revolutionary soldier the first? There is another story of a Glymph with the same name who they say was hanged by Tories. Another story tells of a Glymph who chased thieves on his horse and was never seen again. What may seem simple becomes complicated when names and events are put upon a calendar. They do not fit. Until someone can tell which Glymph married the popular Catherine, this line has to remain in limbo. We know that Catherine Lowe had a daughter named Elizabeth Glymph (1767-1825) and that she married Michael Suber of Heller's Creek. Michael and Elizabeth had five children. They are named in Michael's Last Will and Testament.

WILL OF
MICHAEL SUBER

In the Name of God Amen

I Michael Suber of the district of Newberry and State of South Carolina being now labouring under a Disease but of Sound mind and disposing memory blefsed be to God for the Same. Calling to my recollection The Mortality of my body and well knowing that it is appointed for all men once to Dye Do make and ordain this my last Will and Testament in the Manner and from here after Mentioned

First I recommend my Sole into the hand of my God the giver of All things and my body to be Buried in a decent Christian like manner at the Discretion of My Executors here after to be Named and as to What Worldly goods that it has pleased God to blefs me with I give and bequeath in the Manner and form following.

Imprymis I give and bequeath unto my Dearly beloved Wife Elizabeth Suber all my Estate both Real and personal Except that tract of Land which I purchased of Henry Lomanick that Contains Sixty two acres which Said Tract of Land and the apurtenances thereunto belonging I give and bequeath to my son John George Suber to him and his heirs for ever the whole of which Estate It is my will and desire for her (Viz) my wife Elizabeth Suber to have and Enjoy the rest of my Estate during her Natural life or widowhood, but upon her death or marriage I give the tract of Land where I now live to my three Sons Viz Abraham Emanuel & John Thomas Suber to be Equally divided between them.

Imprymis I give and bequeath unto my two Daughters (Viz) Susanah Ignor and Rebecah Suber the Sum of one hundred dollars to be paid by my Wife out of the Sales of Such part of my Stock etc. as She may think proper to Spare. And at the death or Mariage the balance of my Estate I wish to be Equally Divided between the then Living Children.

Lastly I do nominate and appoint my Dearly beloved Wife Elizabeth Suber and my Well beloved Son in law George Ignor Executors to this my last will and Testament. In Witnefs where of I have here unto set my hand and Seal this twenty third day of January In the year of our Lord one thousand Eight hundred and thirteen.

Signed Sealed and Delivered

In the Presents of us.

Richd Huson

Samuel Johnson

Benj, Buchanan

his

Michael X Suber (SEAL)

Mark

Recorded in Will Book "E" page 119

Proved March 1 - 1813

(Recorded Date Not Available)

Samuel Lindsey Ordinary of Newberry District

Box 18 Pkg.39 Est.No.424

One of the children was Rebecca Suber, one of the most important of our many ancestors. She married Phillip Mitts. Her life was discussed in the Metts chapter. She is best remembered as the old widow who settled the estate of her dead husband, Phillip, and took her family from South Carolina to Mississippi in 1847.

The children of Rebecca Suber and Phillip Mitts were Lemuel P.; Martha Caroline, who married Giles Linch; Elizabeth G., who married John C. Doss; Michael Albert, our ancestor; David William, who married Mary M. Roland; and, little Rebecca A. who died before the family moved to Mississippi. The names are not in order of birth. David was born in 1815, Martha in 1817, and Michael, in 1825.

Now, having traced the ancestors to Michael Metts, the next chapter will be devoted to his wife, Mary R. Nash Metts.

Nash

Michael Albert Metts married a petite beloved lady named Mary Richards Nash. She lived for 95 years. Born in Abbeville, SC, her father died when she was a little girl. In a matter of days her mother married again to a worthless man. He took them to Winston County, MS. Later, she married Michael Albert and they raised a large family. She came from a good family - NASH.

The Nash name can be found in England back to the twelfth century. Some Nash members married into noble families. The name was spelled several ways in old England, but, in America, the one spelling, Nash, has prevailed. The name came from the ASH tree. Ash wood was used for bows.

Many men named Nash came to colonial Virginia. The first William Nash came in 1635. In The Original Lists of Persons of Quality; 1600-1700, Hotten writes, "7 August, 1635. Theis underwritten names are to be transported to Virginea, imbarqued in the Globe, of London,—." One of the names is " Wm Nash, 22 Years". Virginia, in 1635, was a new colony. Her very existence was uncertain. Northumberland County was not established until 1648 from the Chickacoan Indian District. The area is isolated by bodies of water so that it is almost an island. It is over 50 miles northeast of Jamestown across the York and Rappahannock Rivers. We do not know that William Nash went directly to Northumberland County in 1635, but remember that the population around Jamestown was very small and there were very few people besides Indians. We do know that, in 1653, a William Nash appeared in Northumberland County as a witness in court on 26 Feb., and in an indenture action; then, in court, Order Book #2, 26 Feb. 1653/4, p. 22, states, "According to sufficient proofs—there is due to Mr Wm Nash 700 acres of Land for the transportation of these persons following into this colony". The list starts with "Himselfe twice", then, "Ann his wife", and eleven more persons.

The rules for land grants were pretty loose, but the action proves that he had become a landowner, an important man. Soon afterward, in 1654, a man named John Ingram wrote his will and named William Nash as his executor. After Ingram died, his wife, Jane, married Thomas Hopkins, who had a sister, Ann Hopkins. This lady married three times. The first husband was Mr. Mallet. The second was **William Nash**, and the third was John Meredith.

William Nash was back in court on 20 July and, again, on 20 November. He was active in public affairs. His wife, Ann Hopkins, should be the subject of further research. There should be an old father back in Jamestown. William went to court again on 20 Aug 1655 and appeared before the Council. Then, on the 20th of November, he was dead. In order book #2, p. 33, the Northumberland court ordered "The court doth order the Executor of the last will and Testament of Mr. Wm Nash decd shall have the power to receive and pay debts—the will being already proved until Mrs Nash her returne from her voyage from England or order from her."

In the year 1668, the Lancaster County deeds, p. 48, show that John Meredith gave his Sons-in-law, Thomas and Will Nash one man called Thomas Elston. This is important! Remember that William's wife, Ann, married John Meredith when William died. This proves that William and Ann had sons named William and Thomas, and that they are in Lancaster County, which is next to and south of Northumberland County.

Back to the Lancaster County orders, the court, on 8 Sep 1669, p. 119, "Eliz., Widd. and Relict of Toby horton decd., is to have her thirds; one third to be given to Will Nash long since decd. and unto his youngest sonne since also decd. and so ye Est. to his Mother and the other 2 parts to his surviving brothers, to be equally divided between them; Thomas Nash one of the Sons of Will. Nash decd. being an orphan chose John Carter, boate wright, guardian; Will. Nash, another son, chose Will Edmonds guardian."

Cousins, the item, above tells a lot, if you can translate it! A relict is a widow, but it can mean, also, one who has no one left. The "Will long since decd." is our William Nash who died in 1655. We see the William Nash II as a young man. In 1672, he must be grown, because he bought 200 acres in Lancaster County. Thomas Nash died in 1675 and left his estate to his only brother, William, who must have continued farming in Lancaster County. About one generation later, in 1713, a young lady, named Frances Chilton, of Lancaster County, was placed in care of William Nash III until she became 18 years old. He was listed as a member of Christ Church in Lancaster County in 1716. William married Ann Kirk on 10 Feb 1717.

Now, the documentation shifts to the Great Fork of the Rappahannock River.

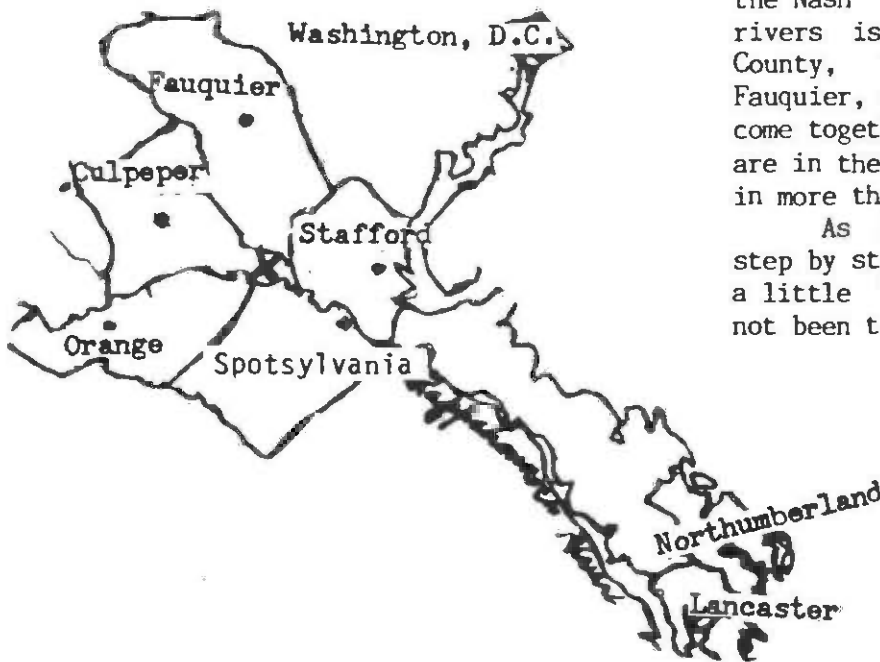
Here, we see that several counties converge. The X is the land owned by the Nash family. The fork of the rivers is really in Culpepper County, but Stafford, Orange, Fauquier, and Spotsylvania Counties come together at the fork. Papers are in the various courthouses, some in more than one.

As information is documented step by step, the reader will become a little bored, but this line has not been traced before.

We have to be certain that there is a link between these men named William Nash as they move across the state of Virginia. The first indication was that William Nash was a witness for a man named Pollard, of Lancaster County. William appeared in Orange County.

Then, William Nash bought 200 acres for 30 pounds, in St. Mark's Parish, on the north side of the German Road in the Great Fork in 1738. Three years later, this transaction provides the link to Lancaster County. On pages 360-66, 25/6 March 1741, "Thomas Pollard of St. Mark's Parish, Orange County, to William Nash of same. Lease and release; for 219 acres in Lancaster County, being the land bequeathed to Wm Nash by his late father Wm Nash of Lancaster County, and also 1800 pounds of tobacco." This proves that we have the right William son of William.

In 1750, William Nash sold 200 acres of the 400 acres, above, bought in 1741. He is described this time as "of Culpepper County" and the deed states



"Betty, the wife of William, relinquished her right of dower." The price was 37 pounds. The other 200 acres were sold in 1753 for 20 pounds. Now, we have proved that we have William with a wife named Betty. Pollard sold his 200 of the same acres in 1758 for 50 pounds (30 pounds profit!). The deed refers to William as "late of Culpeper, deceased."

The Metts chart at the beginning of Part I shows the Nash line up to William 4th: and his wife Betty. Based upon the facts listed, we can conclude that:

I. William Nash was born in 1613. He came to America in 1635. He was married to Ann Hopkins. He died in 1655. Ann remarried.

II. William Nash, Jr. was born before 1648 and died after 1675. He lived in Lancaster County.

III. William Nash, 3rd was born before 1692 and died before 1741. In 1717, he married Ann Kirk.

IV. William, 4th was born before 1718 and died in 1754. He married Betty— before 1738.

William, 4th, and Betty had their first child, James, on 6 Jul 1739. William, 5th came on 2 Feb 1741. When this birth was recorded, William was listed as "son of William and Elizabeth later of Culpeper Co.". In Slaughter's History of St. Mark's Parish, p. 45 says that William Nash witnessed the first will recorded in Culpeper on 1 Sep 1748. He was in the same place all of the time, but was recorded in Orange, Spotsylvania, Fauquier, and Culpeper Counties. When William, 4th died, his will was recorded in Will Book A, pp. 102-3, Culpeper. There is this statement:

"We the subscribers have appraised the estate of William Nash, dec., this 8 March 1754. Includes 8 Negroes valued at 235.0.0. pounds. Total Valuation 277.14.9 pounds.

Joseph James
Reuben Long
Antho. Haynie

16 May 1754. Returned and OR."

The 277.14.9 means 277 pounds, 14 shillings, and 9 pence. The signature of Reuben Long was by the father of Polly Harrison Long, who will marry William Nash's son John Nash.

Pages 188-9 of the same Will Book A shows the settlement of the estate. He died leaving a wife, Betty—, no will, a list of debts, and children. According to the laws of that time, Betty paid the debts from the estate. That list is on page 262 of the Will Book. Then, she was appointed guardian of her own children on 20 August 1762. On 18 August 1763, she was given 20.14.2 1/4 pounds for expenses boarding four orphans of William Nash, dec. On 19 August 1764, she went to court again to explain receipts of 68.14.10 3/4. Her last visit to court was 15 August 1765. Poor Betty Nash died in 1766. A widow's life was not easy. These tedious lines prove that William and Betty are the parents of John and James Nash. Both of these sons are our ancestors. John's son Reuben married James' daughter Nancy, his first cousin. Betty Nash had no will. Recorded in Will Book B, p. 6, is:

Inventory and Appraisal of Estate of Betty Nash, decd., made 25 Oct., 1766 by Reuben Long, John Leavel, Samuel Stigler—

Estate Division: equal shares to William Nash, Robert Sanders and wife, Elizabeth Nash, John Nash, Leanna Nash, Elijah Nash, Mary Nash.

Division dated 17 July 1767. Presented by Edward Walkins and Samuel Clayton, Jr.

Recorded 20 April 1772 (Inv. and division)

Strangely, when the Division of Estate of Betty Nash by James Nash, Admr., was made on 19 Oct 1772, the list of legatees had additions and differences. There is no explanation. The legatees are **James Nash**, William Nash, Robert Saunders, and wife Ann, James Saunders and wife Elizabeth, Bryant Thornhill and wife Leanna, **John Nash**, Elijah Nash, Nathaniel Robertson and wife Mary. The list was recorded 16 Nov 1772.

John Nash is on both lists. In 1772, he is 25 years old. The documents above give a general listing of the children of William and Betty Nash. In later years, the Bible of Abner, son of John Nash, records the birth of John's oldest brother, James.

JAMES NASH married **ANN** ———
 6 Jul 1739-13 Dec 1806 9 Dec 1765 20 Feb 1737-after 1806

James Nash was born on Orange County, VA, (or Culpeper, or one of the other counties around the farm in St. Mark's Parish in the Great Fork of the Rappahannock!). His father had moved west about a year before he was born, the oldest child. He became the head of the family at the early death of his father. He was executor of his father's estate, which was divided into many parts. As head of the family, he indentured his younger brother, Elijah, to a cabinet maker to learn a trade. The contract is interesting because it puts every detail into writing. Elijah's case is very sad, however. He was killed in action in the American Revolution. His will is on file in Virginia - a pitiful document. He never married. William, the second son, married Mary Morgan Bradford. They had children, but no daughter named Nancy. There were four brothers.

James married Ann on 9 Dec 1765. They had children named Larkin, James, George, Valentine, and Nancy, born in 1777. James Nash was 37 years old when the American Revolution started. He served as a private in the Artillery in Virginia. His service is documented in the U.S. Archives. Also, he is listed by Brumbaugh in Revolutionary War Records, Vol. I, VA, p.208, and by Gwathmay in Virginians in the Revolution, p. 577. The U.S. Archives records are below:

3911

Nash, James

Virginia.

(Revolutionary War.)

Private Private

CARD NUMBERS.

1	39169957	20
2		21
3		22

N | art | Va

James Nash
Sol. Art

Appears in a _____ Book _____

under the following heading: _____

"A List of State Soldiers and Seaman who have received Certificates for the balance of their full pay. Agreeable to Act of Assembly passed November Session 1781."

(Revolutionary War.)

By whom drawn John Kay

Time May 13 1783

Sum \$ 81.15.4 D.C.

Remarks: _____

The service of and lineage to James Nash has been proved to and approved by the National Society of the Sons of the American Revolution.

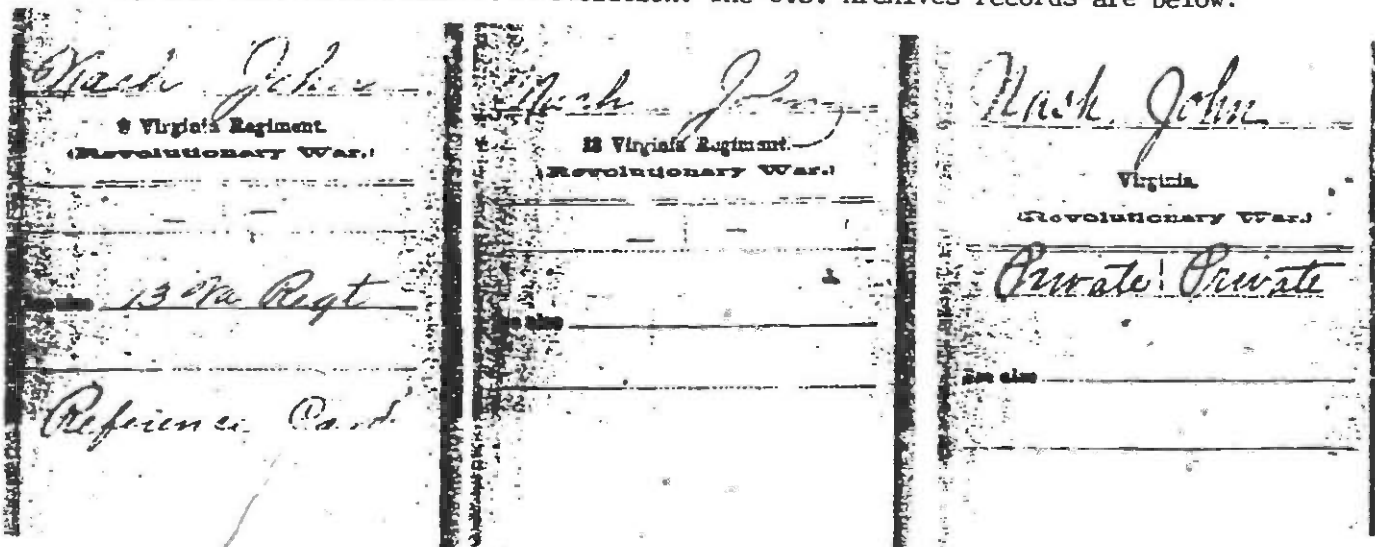
The name of James Nash is on the Culpeper, VA, list of taxpayers for 1783. Soon afterward, the Nash move to South Carolina started. James took his family to the Pendleton District (now Anderson County). This is west of Abbeville. The family is in the 1790 Census of SC. He was given two land grants by South Carolina. In the 1790 Census, he was number 526, In 1800, he was number 517 They spelled his name wrong - Gnash -, but we have the right man. (1790 - 00101-00001-09 1800 - 20010-30010-01)

The James Nash family lived on Hen Coop Creek. He was called James Nash, Sr., when he sold land to Jehu Orr on 3 Aug 1799. James, Jr. and Valentine Nash witnessed the deed. James died in the Pendleton District, SC. His will mentioned his wife, Ann. He left his son, Larkin, two slaves. James got two; George got one;and, Valentine got two. **Daughter Nancy was given "negro boy Ben and girls Lydia and Sarah"**. Negro Tom was to be free to go and live where he chose and enjoy the profits of his own labor. Wife Ann, Larkin and George were executors. The will was proved 19 Jan 1807. James had a brother, John Nash, who moved to South Carolina, too. He lived at Abbeville.

JOHN NASH married **MARY (POLLY) HARRISON LONG**
 16 May 1747-20 Oct 1794 2 Jan 1770 15 Apr 1754-1820/1822

John Nash was born in Culpeper, VA. He is a younger brother of James Nash. John married Polly Harrison Long just before she was 16 years old. He was 22. The dates and many more to be stated, come from the Abner Nash Bible, printed by the Mississippi Genealogical Society, Vol. II, p. 58.

The couple lived in Culpeper County and were there when the American Revolution started in 1776. John served his country and his service is well documented as being in the 9th Virginia Regiment and in the 13th Virginia Regiment, both being in the Continental Line. His records are in the U.S. Archives and most general references of Revolutionary soldiers include his name. He is listed by the NSDAR. Also, he has been proved to and approved by the Sons of the American Revolution. The U.S. Archives records are below:



During the Revolution, Polly would have remained on the farm. The Virginia tax list for 1783 shows John paying taxes in Culpeper. He had 4 slaves. His father-in-law, Reuben Long is listed also with 16 slaves.

There has been confusion concerning the children of John and Polly Nash in various NSDAR applications. Therefore, the following listing is given with dates from the Abner Nash Bible: (This Abner Nash was John's son.)

born

Reuben 25 Jun 1771
 Abner 21 Jul 1773
 Ezekiel 11 Feb 1776
 Theodosia 10 Feb 1779
 Betty Evans 11 May 1781
 Nimrod 27 Jan 1784
 Melinda 7 Jun 1786
 Lusinda 10 Aug 1790
 Mertilday 4 Jun 1793

married

Nancy Nash, 1st cousin
 Elizabeth Piles
 Elizabeth Norris (m. Pope)
 (1) Petty (2) Cox
 William Glover
 Elizabeth Connor
 Thomas Tarrant
 Major Cain Broyles
 Joshua Halbert

The names were taken from Abner's Bible, but spelling of several names were changed to conform to the will of John Nash. He could read and write, so it is assumed that his wishes concerning spelling should be considered.

The marriages conform to a Nash genealogy written in 1876 by Ira Norris Nash, son of Ezekiel Nash. This genealogy was provided by Mr. Steve Nash of Starkville, MS. The material is included in detail because John Nash is an excellent choice by any Metts descendant planning to join the NSDAR or the SAR.

Looking at the dates of birth, one might wonder how that could happen with John off to war. Well, the answer is that soldiers of the Revolution did get home from time to time. His service in the 9th Regiment, then the 12th Regiment may show one visit home.

After the war, land grants were given to the returning hero. That may explain John's move with his big family to South Carolina. By now, the reader has seen a few of these large families. The family farms were not large enough to be divided among all the children. The South Carolina index to land grants between 1794-1800 shows John Nash with three. By 1790, when the first U.S. Census was taken in South Carolina, John Nash is listed in the Ninety-Six District, Abbeville County. In his home are 3 men, 16 or over; two boys under 16; five females; and 4 slaves. These figures check with the family listing, so we have the right John.

John Nash is given special attention in this family history because he deserves respect and admiration. He was a patriot and raised an outstanding family. He was deeply religious, a Baptist. He and Polly were members of the Turkey Creek Church. Ezekiel was a member, too.

Just before 1790, the preacher was moved to another church and John Nash agreed to meet with the church to enable them to keep up their services on the Lord's day. He served in many offices beside preaching occasionally until his death in 1794. (South Carolina Baptists, 1670-1805, Townsend)

When John died, he left a will, clearly written, and signed. (Box 70, Pack 1720, Abbeville Courthouse)

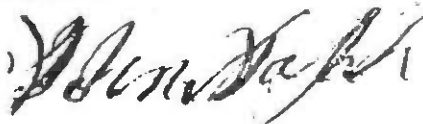
In the name of God. Amen: I John Nash of the County of Abbeville and State of South Carolina being very sick and weak in body but of perfect mind and memory thanks be given unto God. Calling unto mind the mortality of my body and knowing that it is appropriate for all men once to die do make and ordain this my last will and testament that is to say principally and first of all I give and recommend my Soul unto the hand of Almighty God that gave it and my body. I recommend to the earth to be buried in a decent Christian burial at the discretion of my Executor is willing doubting but at the general resurrection I shall receive the same again by the mighty power of God. And as touchin such worldly estate wherewith I have pleased God to bless me in this life. I give demise and dispose of the same in the following manner and form.

First I give and bequeath to Polly Harrison my dearly beloved wife my whole Estate both real and personal during her natural life or widowhood and after her death or marriage I give and bequeath to my three sons Abner Ezekiel and Nimrod all that tract of Land whereon I now live Containing 401 Acres to be equally divided amongst them and the remainder of my Estate both real and personal I leave to be equally divided amongst my four Sons Reuben, Abner, Ezekiel and Nimrod and five daughters Theodosia Betty Evans Melinda Lusinda and Mertilday I likewise Constitute make and Ordain My beloved wife Polly Harrison and my three Sons Reuben Abner and Ezekiel my Executors of this my last will and Testament And I do hereby utterly disallow revoke and disannul all and every other former testaments Wills Legacies bequests and Executors by me in anywise before named willed and bequeathed ratifying and Confirming this and no other to be my last will and testament In witness whereof I have ?????????? my hand and Seal this twentieth day October in the year of our Lord one thousand seven hundred and Ninety four

Signed Sealed Published Pronounced and declared by the said John Nash as his last will and testament in the presence of us who in his presence and in the presence of each other have hereunto Subscribed our names

/s/ John Nash

his
 William X White John White James Smith
 mark

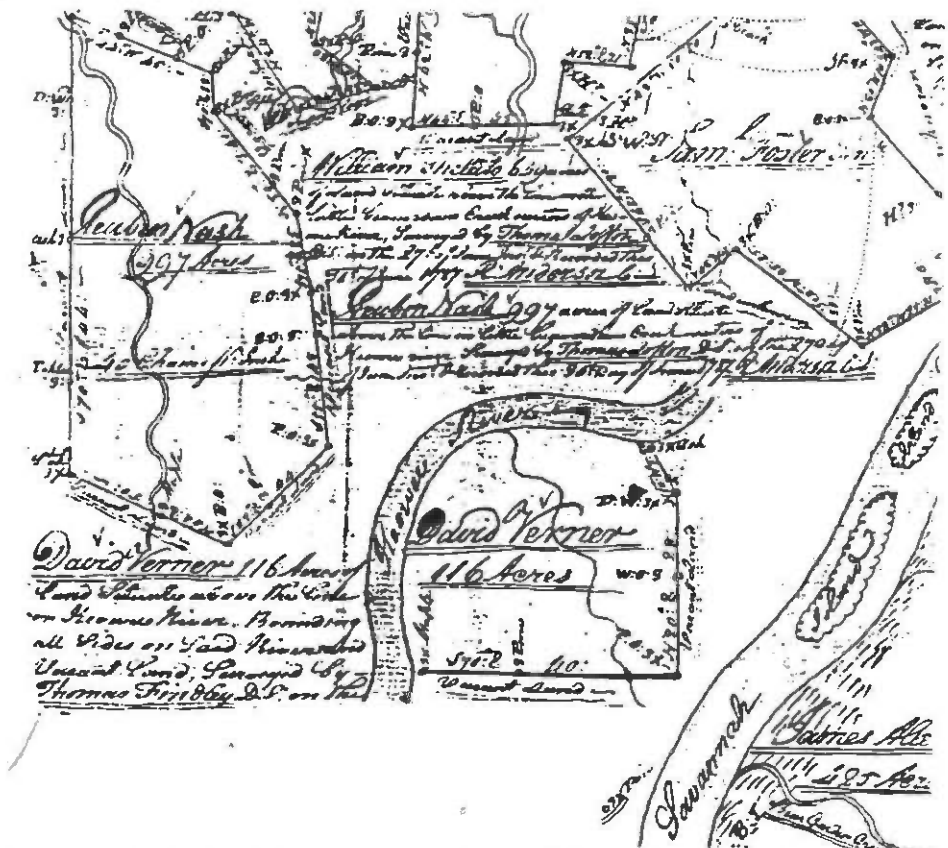


When John died, the Abbeville Court appointed five "free holders" to appraise and inventory the estate. Of interest, at this point, one of the men was James Hodges. Remarks will be directed to this fact when John's grandson enters the family history. The list of John's property is long. Each generation seems to have collected more tools, household items, cattle, slaves, and horses. Although the year is 1794, the value of items is stated in English pounds, shillings and pence.

The line from John to this writer is proved with the Sons of the American Revolution. The NSDAR has approved it to Ed Metts Turner Hardy, first cousin of this writer. Reuben Nash, the oldest son of John is our ancestor.

REUBEN NASH **married** **NANCY NASH**
 25 Jun 1771-4 Apr 1822 30 Sep 1792 1777-after 1851

Named for his grandfather, Reuben Long, Reuben Nash was born in Culpeper County, VA. He was almost grown when the family moved to Abbeville County, South Carolina. He was a hard working and ambitious young man. He wasted no time in learning how land was acquired. He must have gone with his father to draw for land grants. In 1786, John got one land grant and Reuben got two, at age 15. He must have been large for his age! Did he tell them that he was 21? Then, in 1788, John got two land grants and Reuben got three. Again, in 1794, Reuben got one more, the sixth. The plat, below, shows, as the dim writing explains, "Reuben Nash, 997 acres of land situate above the line on Little Beaver Dam Creek waters of Keowee River—recorded this 30th day of June 1787."



Today, this land is near Clemson University in far western South Carolina. In fact, the Keowee River is now Lake Keowee and the property is

under water, probably. From the 1787 date, this property will be only two of the six land grants. Reuben was well off. Also, he owned and operated a store.

Nancy Nash married Reuben on 30 September 1792. She was his first cousin. Her father was James Nash, who moved from Culpeper, VA, to the Pendleton District of South Carolina. James was the older brother of John Nash, the father of Reuben. This means that James and his wife, Ann, are our ancestors as well as John Nash and his wife, Polly. This relationship was discussed in the Nash family papers provided by Steve Nash, but the legend had to be documented. The family legend about Nancy and Reuben came from several of the very old papers provided by Steve Nash. The old genealogy said that they were cousins. Then, in the will of James, discussed earlier, **remember that he left three slaves to his daughter, Nancy. The slaves were Ben, Lyddia, and Sarah.** Nancy was 30 years old when the will was proved in 1807. When Nancy's husband, Reuben Nash, died 15 years later, the inventory of his property listed the house slaves before the household items. The field hand slaves were listed at the end along with the live stock. The list of house slaves has eight names. They are: Ben \$800; Boys, Armsted \$400, Pierce \$400, Servia \$225, Orange \$225; Child, Harry \$150; Woman, Sarah \$10, Caroline \$250.

Lyddia is not there - dead? sold? given away? free? Probably, Ben and Sarah are the parents of the rest. The low price on Sarah would have been set by the kin who did the inventory to make certain that she stayed with Nancy. The slave records and tax schedules give answers, sometimes, when no other evidence can be found.

Reuben Nash and Nancy had four children. They were Dr. John J. Nash, our ancestor, born 6 Nov 1793; Mary Ann, born 18 Mar 1795; Valentine, born 3 Dec 1796; and Nancy Adeline Ophelia Nash, on 28 Aug 1815. What they lacked in number of children, they made up in names. Mary Ann was called Polly. Polly is the universal pet name for Mary. The little girl was called Nancy A.O. Nash. Valentine was a boy (not born on 14 Feb.). Well, here we have more clues for the detective! These names are unusual enough to stand out.

If complications have been evident, the plot thickens as we proceed. Polly married Mr. Richardson. Nancy A.O. married another John Nash, a cousin, and moved to Leake County, MS. Dr. John J. Nash married Margaret Hodges and his brother, Valentine, married Mary Anderson Hodges, Margaret's sister, of Abbeville, and moved to Columbus, MS. More will be written about the Hodges connection, later.

Nash's Regiment.		S. C. Vols.
Reuben Nash		
Lt Col.	Lt Col. Reuben Nash's Reg't South Carolina Volunteer Militia Inf.	
(War of 1812.)		
Appears on		
Field and Staff Muster Roll		
for <i>9 months</i> to Feb 9, 1814.		
Roll dated <i>H. Hawkins</i>		
Commencement of service <i>Feb 9</i> , 1814.		
For what time engaged, <i>6 mos</i>		
Present or absent, <i>Present</i>		
Remarks:		

Nash's Regiment.		S. C. Vols.
Reuben Nash		
Lt Col.	Lt Col. Reuben Nash's Reg't South Carolina Volunteer Militia Inf.	
(War of 1812.)		
Appears on		
Field and Staff Muster Roll		
for <i>May 13 to July 13</i> , 1814.		
Roll dated <i>Camp near H. Hawkins</i>		
Commencement of service <i>July 13</i> , 1814.		
For what time engaged, <i>6 mos</i>		
Present or absent, <i>Present</i>		
Remarks:		

Nash's Regiment.		S. C. Vols.
Reuben Nash		
Lt Col.	Lt Col. Reuben Nash's Reg't South Carolina Volunteer Militia Inf.	
(War of 1812.)		
Appears on		
Field and Staff Muster Roll		
for <i>Feb 9 to May 13</i> , 1814.		
Roll dated <i>Camp near H. Hawkins</i>		
Commencement of service <i>May 13</i> , 1814.		
For what time engaged, <i>6 mos</i>		
Present or absent, <i>Present</i>		
Remarks:		

Reuben Nash was an outstanding soldier and patriot as well as a successful business man. The War of 1812 was called the Creek War in western South Carolina. The problem with the Indians was caused by the English. They encouraged and advised the Indians to rise up against the settlers. Militia units were formed for protection. Reuben was a Lieutenant Colonel commanding a regiment given his name, Nash's Regiment. His records in the U. S. Archives are on the previous page. They show little detail, but many years later, in 1851, Nancy Nash, Reuben's widow, asked for bounty land. Her statement, below, tells about Reuben's service. It shows, also, a very smart old lady. Her dates are exact with the Abner Nash Bible. She refers to Reuben's Bible. It has not been found.

State of Mississippi }
 Chickasaw County. } On this the 29 day of Aprile
 1851. personally appeared before me an acting Justice of
 the Peace within and for the County and State aforesaid
 Nancy Nash Aged 74 years, a Resident
 of the County and State aforesaid who being duly sworn
 according to law, declares that she is the widow of
 Reuben Nash deceased, who was the Colonel
 of the Abville Regiment, commanded by himself
 in the war with the Creek Indians declared by the
 United States on the 18th day of June 1812.
 That her said husband was drafted at Abville District
 in the State of South Carolina. ~~for~~ or about March
 4. 1814. for a term of six months, and continued
 in actual service in said war for the term of six
 months, and was honorably discharged at Fort Mearns
 on the — day of August ^{or September} 1814. She
 further states that she was married to the name
 Reuben Nash in South Carolina on the 30 day of
 September 4. 1792 by one Mr. Elijah Brown Justice
 of the Peace and that her name before her said marriage
 was Nancy Nash - that her said husband died at
 Abville District, S. Car. on the 4. day of April 4 21
 1822 and that she is still a widow
 She makes this declaration for the purpose
 of obtaining the bounty land to which
 she may be entitled under the Act passed
 September 29th 1850 -

Nancy Nash }
 Sworn to and subscribed before me on
 the day and year above written ^{at Abville}

Justice of the Peace
 When Reuben Nash died in 1822, he was only 51 years old. Nancy was
 younger, but she never remarried. His death may have been an accident or

sudden illness. He left no will. This is out of character for this man. After he died, the machinery of government took over. His two sons John J. (aged 29) and Valentine (aged 26) sued for a letter of administration. The resulting inventory shows a wealthy man. Sixteen slaves, pages of furniture and farm equipment, and farm animals were accounted for. The biggest problem seems to have been little Nancy A. O. Nash, aged 6. The other children were adults. Bureaucratic papers appointed Nancy guardian of her own child. Every year, she had to go to court, 1822, 1823, 1824, 1825, 1826, and 1827. Nancy was smart. She kept a slave named Bess. In return, she took care of her own child and whatever was required for a little black son of Bess - named Orange. In 1827, Nancy A.O. was 12 and her mother gave her a little black girl named Caroline.

When, why, and how Nancy pulled up stakes and headed for Mississippi is not known. Maybe she was tired of the boys at the courthouse. In Mississippi, she lived her life out in the home of John Brownlee. John's wife was Diadema (or Jidonia or both names) Nash. She was the oldest daughter of Abner Nash, Reuben's brother. The Brownlees lived in Houston, Chickasaw County, MS.

DR. JOHN J. NASH	married	MARGARET HODGES
6 Nov 1793-c.15 Feb 1833	c.1820	10 Jun 1800-10 Feb 1899

Our ancestor, Dr. John J. Nash is the son of Reuben Nash and Nancy Nash. The fascinating study of genealogy involves detective work in looking for information and the determination that some of the information is false. Seldom is the story complete. Facts are waiting to be found. Constantly, there is the challenge of bad information. Books by reputable experts are dead wrong, sometimes. You find the best evidence, think for a long time and give it your best shot. The great mystery of Margaret Hodges comes up in this part of the book. It has been solved.

Dr. John was born in Abbeville and died in Abbeville when he was only 37 years old, probably from pneumonia. He left no will. Now, let's start with the evidence we have. John's birth date is from the Abner Nash Bible. His parentage was proved earlier. Several reference books and his death administration papers call him Doctor Nash. This is logical. His father owned many books, was educated, and wealthy. Dr. John married Margaret Hodges. Here, the search became tedious. There are a lot of Hodges reference books. One says Dr. John married Mary Hodges - WRONG!- his brother, Valentine, married Mary. Another book says that Margaret married a "Leech or Leach" and gave a strange date. The old Nash genealogy was written by Ira Norris Nash, son of Ezekial Nash, Reuben's brother, in 1876. He states, "Dr. John Nash-married a Miss Hodges". Further, "Col. Metts of Winston - now in the Legislature married Mary Nash, daughter of John Nash and Margaret Hodges. They live near Louisville."

The death certificate of Mary R. Nash Metts lists her parents as John Nash and Margrette Hodges. These documents are supported strongly by family legend. In the search for the truth, queries were placed into genealogy magazines with no results. Then, in Washington, at the NSDAR library, there was an old document from Hodges origin that named Dr. Nash. The paper had been there for many years, sent to them by Frances C. Ebaugh. The librarian checked and found that the lady is still alive and provided her address. She is in her 80s and lives in Florida. She provided the information that solved the mystery and gave valuable information about the family. She wrote that Margaret Hodges had married Dr. John J. Nash and they had six children. Then, when John died, she married William P. Leach (an awful sorry man, so they say). They moved to and lived about two miles from Louisville, MS. She is buried in the same Masonic cemetery as Michael Albert Metts and his wife, Margaret's daughter.

Cemetery records confirm this statement. My wife and I were in the cemetery and had no way of knowing that she was buried there.

STATE OF MISSISSIPPI

MISSISSIPPI STATE BOARD OF HEALTH
OFFICE OF PUBLIC HEALTH STATISTICS
VITAL RECORDS
MISSISSIPPI STATE BOARD OF HEALTH

PLACE OF DEATH: Winston County, Miss State, Winston Registration District No. 967 File No. 18860
 Village: Winston Vol. No. 3768 Primary Registration Dist. No. 3768 Reg. No. 37
 City: Winston No. 3768 Ward 37
 FULL NAME: Mary Nash (If death occurred in a hospital or institution, give the NAME instead of street and number.)

(a) Residence: No. 3768 Ward 37
 (b) (Detail group of child) (c) (If death occurred in a hospital or institution, give city or town and state.)
 (d) of residence in city or town where death occurred (e) How long in U. S. (f) of foreign birth?

PERSONAL AND STATISTICAL PARTICULARS				MEDICAL CERTIFICATE OF DEATH	
SEX: <u>Female</u>	COLOR OR RACE: <u>White</u>	SINGLE, MARRIED, WIDOWED, OR DIVORCED: <u>Widowed</u>	16 DATE OF DEATH (Month, day and year): <u>11/4 1922</u>	17 I HEREBY CERTIFY that I attended the deceased from <u>Feb 1st 1922</u> to <u>Nov 4th 1922</u>	
18 I am married, widowed, or divorced. HUSBAND of (or) WIFE of <u>John Nash</u>			18 That I last saw <u>her</u> alive on <u>Nov 4 1922</u>		
DATE OF BIRTH (month, day and year)			19 That death occurred on the date stated above, at <u>2 P.M.</u>		
AGE: <u>95</u> YEARS	Months: <u>2</u>	Days: <u>3</u>	The CAUSE OF DEATH* was as follows: <u>Arteriosclerosis</u>		
OCCUPATION OF DECEASED: <u>Retired</u>			CONTEMPORARY (Signature) <u>[Signature]</u>		
(a) Trade, profession, or characteristic kind of work			14 Where was disease contracted? <u>not at place of death?</u>		
(b) General nature of industry, business, or establishment in which employed (or occupation)			15 Did an epidemic disease break out? <u>not</u>		
(c) Name of employer			16 Was there an autopsy? <u>not</u>		
10 RESIDENCE (city or town, State or country): <u>Winston, Miss</u>			17 What was cause of death? <u>Arteriosclerosis</u>		
11 NAME OF FATHER: <u>John Nash</u>			18 Date of death: <u>Nov 4 1922</u> (Address: <u>Winston, Miss</u>)		
12 RESIDENCE OF FATHER (city or town, State or country): <u>Winston, Miss</u>			*State the Direct Cause of Death, or its death from Violent Causes (1) Means and Manner of Injury, and (2) whether Accident, Intoxication, or Homicide. (See system card for additional space.)		
13 MAIDEN NAME OF MOTHER: <u>Margaret Hodges</u>			19 Place of burial, Cremation or Burial: <u>Blount Memorial Cemetery, Winston, Miss</u>		
14 RESIDENCE OF MOTHER (city or town, State or country): <u>Winston, Miss</u>			20 Date of Burial: <u>Nov 22 1922</u>		
15 NAME OF DECEASED: <u>Mary Nash</u>			21 Address: <u>Winston, Miss</u>		
16 RESIDENCE OF DECEASED (city or town, State or country): <u>Winston, Miss</u>			22 Signature: <u>[Signature]</u>		
17 DATE OF DEATH: <u>11/4 1922</u>			23 Registrar: <u>[Signature]</u>		

THIS IS TO CERTIFY THAT THE ABOVE IS A TRUE AND CORRECT COPY OF THE CERTIFICATE ON FILE IN THIS OFFICE.

Albert B. Cole, M.D. | June 23, 1983 | David Lohman
 State Health Officer | | Deed Registrar
 STATE HEALTH OFFICER | | STATE REGISTRAR

When Dr. Nash died, his wife, Margaret, was only 33. Little Mary was only six years old. She has been called Mary Richards Nash by family members, but she may have been Mary Richardson Nash. Her father's older sister married a Richardson. Left with six little children, it is not a surprise to see her marry again when the opportunity presented itself. The death of the doctor may have come as a surprise. As was true with his father, he had no will so the Abbeville officials followed their procedures again. The papers are in Box 69, pack 1698 at the courthouse. The appraisal shows that he owned almost nothing. The items listed were worth about \$30. He owed John Hodges \$440 and G.W.Hodges \$172.36 as indicated in court judgements. Other debts were small in

comparison. At the public sale of his property, G.W.Hodges bought an axe. Mrs. Margaret Hodges bought a few household items: some pots, a spinning wheel, buckets, a cow and calf, 2 beds and furniture and hand irons. A James Roberson paid 6 1/4 cents for a set of bone geese, whatever that means. The total was \$18.56 1/4. George Washington Hodges and Margaret Nash did not pay for the items at the sale. Here, again, a widow is left with a large family, destitute. Fortunately, families helped each other in the olden times.

Margaret had six children by Dr. Nash. They were: Reuben Milton Nash, who married Erminia Benton Rain; John Nash; Valentine Nash; Bolivar Nash; our ancestor, Mary R. Nash, who married Michael Albert Metts; and Nancy Nash, who married Mr. Knox.

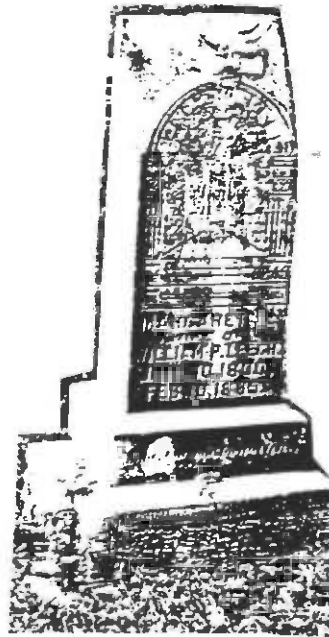
Margaret married William P. Leech soon after the funeral. They had twin daughters, Missouri Leech, who married George Dulin, and Kitura Leech, who married B. H. Richardson.

The remarriage of Margaret explains why the will of her father, John Hodges, calls her Margaret Leech. So the Margaret Hodges Nash mystery is solved. We are not kin to the Leeches! We are kin to the Hodges and a chapter will be devoted to that great family.

Our cousin, George Metz, in Louisville, Mississippi went to the Masonic Cemetery and found the grave of Margaret Long Hodges Nash Leech. She is buried near W.H. Richardson (1838-1918) and Kitty Richardson (1844-1935), her daughter by William Leech. Margaret's tombstone is shown below. The inscription reads, " MARGARET L.

wife of
WILLIAM P. LEECH
JUNE 10, 1800.
FEB. 10, 1889 "

The "L" is for "Long". John Hodges, her father named her after his first wife, Margaret Long.

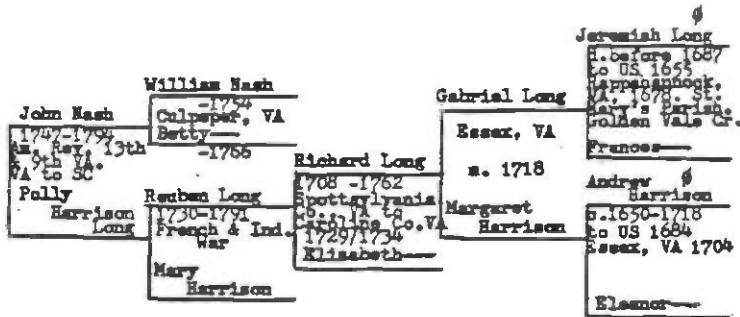


Long

The Revolutionary soldier, John Nash, married Mary (Polly) Harrison Long. She was the daughter of another soldier, Reuben Long. The family had been in America since early colonial days.

Looking back into the history of America, another short review is worthwhile. The first English colony in America was established at Jamestown in 1607. The Mayflower would not arrive at Plymouth until 1620, thirteen years later. For the new Jamestown pioneers, life was severe. Most of them died of starvation or by Indian attack. But gradually the numbers increased and the plantations were cut from the wilderness. One "ancient planter", an ancestor of ours on the Oliver branch of the family, was Lt Francis Mason, who arrived on the ship "John and Francis" in 1613. Another, Robert Pitt, came in 1637. The second Indian massacre came in 1642. In 1649, King Charles was executed and the Commonwealth was established in England. In that year, the Perfect Description of Virginia was written. It said, "There are about 15,000 English in Virginia and of Negroes brought thither three hundred good servants. About 29 sail a year trade with them and return home laden in March. Most of the Masters of Ships and Mariners also have plantations there and houses and servants— There are twelve counties in Virginia and 20 churches."

Edward Digges, another of our Oliver ancestors, was Governor of Virginia in 1655. That was the year that the first Long, Jeremiah, came to America.



In those days, land was given to people who could claim that they "transported" other persons to Virginia. That meant payment of passage or just encouragement. The five volumes of Cavaliers and Pioneers by Nell Marion Nugent, record the transcribed land records which tell who came when.

In Volume 3, page 312, we find, "HENRY HUBERD. (Hubert), 350 acs. Gloucester Co., at the head of Poropotank Cr., 25 Aug 1655, p. 362. Adj. Mr. Blunt Trans. of 7 pers; Robert Long, Jammy Long, Emma Brentt, Thomas Nash, George Mutford, John Harrison, Nich. Bridges." Probably, the spelling of "Jammy" is an error made by the copyist who transcribed the old dim handwritten records for the book and it should be "Jeremy" or Jeremiah".

In 1678, "Jeremiah Long bought of James Jackson and Susanna, his wife, 128 acres lying on the head of Golden Vale Creek." (Old Rappahannock Records 1677-1682, p. 230. and Genealogies of Virginia Families, Vol. II, p. 527.)

By August 12, 1687, Jeremiah Long was dead and his widow made the following deed: "I Frances Long of Rappahannock County and St. Mary's Parish, widow, out of the natural love and respect I have to my children, Richard, John, and Gabriel, Sara, and Ann, children of my loving husband Jeremiah Long,

deceased, out of the natural love and affection I bear to my children afore mentioned do by these presents give grant and confirm to my above said children seven head of female cattle, viz. 4 head of the oldest cattle, viz. Cowslip, Brindy, Filpale, and Lilly to my oldest children to them and their heirs forever, and to my youngest son Gabriel, I give a two year old heifer called Colly, her with all her future female increase forever and for the two remaining of the seven aforesaid, I give and bequeath as of all rights, they do belong to my eldest son Richard Long." (Old Rappahannock Record 1680-1688 p. 374.)

There is humor in the wording and in the names of the cows, but there is, also, information as to the names of the wife and children to include our ancestor, the second Long in America, **Gabriel Long**.

GABRIEL LONG married **MARGARET HARRISON**
1718

We do not know when Gabriel Long was born or when he died. Of course, he was born and did die. The most important thing he did between those two events was to marry Margaret Harrison. After he inherited the little heifer named Colly, he continued to live in Essex County, VA, on Goldenvaile Creek. There were many records of activity in Essex County, as will be evident later. But Gabriel Long is almost invisible. He must have lived a quiet and, perhaps, happy life on Goldenvaile Run (or Swamp or Creek!) On 8 Apr 1709, he paid Roger Prosser 1200 pounds of tobacco for "50 acres on the south side of Rappahannock River in the freshes thereof in St. Mary's Parish, on the south side of a swamp called Goulden vaile — north side of Goldenvaile run —" His brother, Richard, was a witness. He was still there in 1719 when another man bought land next to Gabriel's farm. Then, on 18-19 Feb 1720/21, Gabriel paid 1500 pounds of tobacco for 1 acre and a mill at Milk Tray point on the main run of Golden Vaile Creek. He served as a witness on a few land papers about the same time. His father-in-law's will, included later, tells most of what we know about Gabriel. His father-in-law was Andrew Harrison.

The Harrison name would be given to Long and Nash children for generations and for good reason. The Harrison family was widely spread through the eastern counties of old England. An emigrant before Andrew founded the family in Virginia which produced two presidents. Old Nash family legends say that the presidents are kin. Perhaps they were. Someone may wish to pursue the point back in England.

Andrew Harrison was evident as a head right for Cadwallader Jones in 1684 (Old Rappahannock O.B. 1683-86, p. 18.). In the Quit Rent Roll for Essex County, he owned 300 acres. Old Andrew was a real wheeler-dealer. He seems to have ignored poor old Gabriel and trained his grandsons to follow in his footsteps, buying and selling land.

In 1703 he bought 1149 acres and 80 perches on the Mattaponi River with Richard Long, Gabriel's brother, and Samuel Elliot. Later, the same year, they bought 813 acres and 120 perches in Essex County on Golden Vale. They divided the land. In 1710, he gave 330 acres to his son, Andrew, 200 acres to daughter, Elizabeth Munday, and 270 acres to son William.

When Andrew died in 1718, his will gave considerable information about the family.

Will of Andrew Harrison

of St. Mary's Parish in the County of Essex, being grown very aged and at this time very sick and weak in body, dated 28 April 1718.

My beloved wife **Eleanor** my executrix.

My son Andrew and my **son-in-law Gabriel Long** as trustees and overseers to assist her in the performing of this my last will.

I have already settled three of my children, viz. William, Andrew and Elizabeth on lands on which they now live, viz. to my son William 270 acres and to my son Andrew 200 acres and to my daughter Elizabeth 200 acres, all of which lands they are now possessed with and which I now give to them.

I have put into the hands of Wm Stannard bills and excha. for 65.12.6 pounds sterling for him to buy me two negroes; my loveing wife have the use of these negroes or that money dureing her natural life or widowhood and after her decease to my daughter **Margarett Long's three youngest sons viz. Richd. and Gabril and William**, to be equally divided as soon as they shall all come to the age of twenty years if my wife dye before. If my wife should dye before either of them comes to that age, my **son-in-law Gabriel Long** have the use of them till they come to that age, to give them schooling, that is to learn them to read and write and cost account.

To my daughter **Margaret Long** after the decease of my loveing wife one feather bed and bolster and pillows and rugg and blanketts.

Unto my son William after the decease of my loveing wife one feather bed and bedstead and all the furniture belonging to it.

Unto my son William a chest and all my wearing cloaths and the cloth which I have to make me cloaths on and my riding sadle after my decease.

Unto my son William after the decease of my loveing wife one ovell table.

Unto my son William after the decease of my loveing wife one large iron pot.

Unto my son Andrew after the decease of my loveing wife one feather bed and bolster and pillows and all manner of furniture belonging to itt, and one large iron pot.

The rest of my personall and moveable estate after the death of my loveing wife to be equally divided among my four children viz. William and Andrew and Elizabeth and Margaret.

Andrew (A H) Harrison

RICHARD LONG

Here, we have a very interesting man who lived in Virginia in extraordinary times. His grandfather, Andrew Harrison, trained him and gave him the funds to get started. It seems that the first land acquired by Richard was 340 acres and 70 poles, near Solomon's Garden, in St. Margaret's Parish, on the 13th of June 1729. This is recorded in a section between Caroline County surveys and Campbell County deeds along with random notes about physics, surveying and arithmetic. Later, he patented 1,165 acres in St. Mary's Parish, Caroline County, joining that tract of land called "Solomon's Garden". (Book 15, p. 286.) This was in 1734. It was a grant given by Sir William Gooch. High ranking officials often gave large grants to friends.

The next year, 1735, Richard found himself in dire need of a high ranking friend. Politics in those days were even worse than they are today. The King's justice was hard to enforce. Juries would find culprits guilty and fine them one pound of tobacco (1 penny). Feelings about politics were strong. A man named Gibson was running for the House of Burgesses in the summer of 1736. John Martin was a money lender as well as a politician. He threatened all the freeholders who were in debt to him before the election. Thirty three of these freeholders voted for Gibson, who won. Martin foreclosed on the thirty three. All lost much of their property and many went to jail because they could not

pay. Names on the list include Richard Long, Andrew Harrison (JR.), and Gabriel Long (JR.) .

In 1736, our Richard was in trouble again with his old enemy John Martin. The people of colonial Caroline County didn't worry about criminal warrants. They felt about the King's law in the same way as Robin Hood! Rebukes and fights lead to charges and countercharges until the dockets were clogged. John Martin brought suit for assault and battery against 26 freeholders - the same bunch with a few additions. He claimed that they beat up and intimidated his supporters and kept them from voting in the election for Burgess. The jury refused to award damages. Yes, Richard was one of the thirty six.

By 1740 Richard Long became Constable of Caroline County. This was a dubious honor because a constable was not popular. He resigned after a year because of requirements to persuade dissenters and the passage of tax acts. During the same year, he found his way into the history books for another indiscretion. The King called for soldiers to fight "Foreign Wars". George Washington's brother went and was a hero. Caroline County sent only one man - John Brooks, who left his mother, Phoebe, and was sent to Cartagena, then to Canada, where he deserted. Brooks came home to find Richard Long in his home enjoying his inheritance from his father with Phoebe. All kinds of trouble followed. (It might have been old Uncle Richard, but he was very old!)

Richard wrote his will on 11 Nov 1761 and it was proved in August of 1762. His wife, Elizabeth and son, Gabriel were executors. The estate went to his six sons, Gabriel, James, William, Andrew, **Reuben**, and John. Will Book D, 1761-1762, p. 29.)

REUBEN LONG 1730 - 1791

This brings us to an ancestor who was a patriot and a soldier. The service of Reuben Long in the French and Indian War is documented as a supplemental with the Society of Colonial Wars, # 16689 and his service in the American Revolution with the National Society of the Sons of the American Revolution, # 118709.

From the beginning, this man has been the subject of continuing research. He is very visible in many documents. Reuben Long of Culpeper was too good to be true, as will be shown in this chapter. After this chapter was completed, another book was compiled by this author - "MISCELLANEOUS RECORDS - Documentation of the Long and Nash Families of Culpeper, VA, and the old 96th District of SC". The book is in the NSDAR Library in Washington, D.C. It contains copies of the many and various primary documents that prove the statements made in this book about Reuben Long's military service.

Many mistakes are made in genealogy. Names often mislead those who are too eager to believe that they have found what they wished to see. We may fail to put the name to each test needed for proof. The age of the person, the time of the event, the location, and the events that followed have to be considered. Papers have to be searched and analysed to determine whether there were one or more people with the same name. Many have joined the NSSAR and the NSDAR on the Reuben Long name. A DAR Chapter bears that name. Do the members know whether they honor the old soldier or the young one who fought from Canada to Kings Mountain? Probably not! We begin with the story of the old soldier.

He is listed in the NSDAR Patriot Index under LONG, "Reuben: b 1730 dp 12-29-1791 m Mary Harrison 2 Lt PS VA."

Reuben was born in St. Margaret's Parish, Caroline County, Virginia at the Long home near Solomon's Garden. He is buried in Culpeper, Virginia.

When the first Englishman stepped ashore at Jamestown in 1607, an arrow tipped with deer horn, struck down and wounded Captain Archer. From that day until the American Revolution, every generation of Americans would know Indian fighting and war. The settlers on the western frontier were hit the hardest. The French and Indian War started in 1755. The French had gradually moved into the territory west of the colonies and conflict resulted. England sent General Braddock to drive the French from the Ohio Valley. That was easier said than done. The earlier years were an exercise in futility. A young officer, George Washington, was defeated severely in one battle. Virginia had many men killed and wounded. There were problems. In eastern Virginia, the wealthy plantation owners knew more about lace shirts and dancing than they did about fighting. In the militia, these land owners were the officers and the poor men were the soldiers. Meetings were social events where there was more food and whiskey than drill. Further, campaigns to the west were avoided because of the explosive presence of many slaves at home on the plantations. White ladies could not be left alone in the countryside. The story of Virginia participation in the French and Indian War is told in the Virginia State Library List of the Colonial Soldiers of Virginia, by H.J.Echenrode, Archivist. On page 56, the list reads, "Long, Reuben. H.S. 7,214." That means, "Hening Statutes at Large, Vol. VII, p.214." It is reproduced, below:

THE
Statutes at Large;
BEING
A COLLECTION
OF ALL THE
LAWS OF VIRGINIA,
FROM THE
FIRST SESSION OF THE LEGISLATURE,
IN THE YEAR 1619,
UNTIL THE PRESENT;
BY WILLIAM WALLER HENING.

VOLUME VII

By WILLIAM WALLER HENING.

*The Laws of a country are necessarily connected with every thing belonging to the people of it; and a thorough knowledge of them, and of their progress, would be of great use to every thing that was most useful to be known about them, and one of the greatest importances of literature in general, is owing to their knowledge of them.
Pocahontas's Bay, in Hist. Vol. 2, p. 149

SEPTEMBER 1756—304 GEORGE II. 315 P214

GENERAL LAND COUNTY.	CAROLINE COUNTY.	CULPEPER COUNTY.	LAW OF VIRGINIA.
<p>To Captain Peterkin Manky for his pay, and the pay of the guards conducting drafted soldiers to Fredericksburg. L 5 8 0</p> <p>To George Mann the balance of his pay as Sergeant and colonel of the 6th Virginia Regiment</p> <p>To Benjamin Phillips for his horse lost on the Shawnee expedition. L 10 10 00</p>	<p>To Henry Bacon, for provisions, James Cromley, do, Nathaniel Hill, do, James Cunningham, do, Daniel Smith, do, Jacob Hill, do, Robert Cunningham, do.</p> <p>To Robert Long, William Underwood, Thomas Yeat, Jan. John Morgan, Nathaniel Hill, Richard Parker, Alexander Proctor, French Strouther, Edward Bush, John Carr, William Throckmold, James Barr, William Lee, John Taylor, Samuel Pomeroy, John Hunter, William Day, Peter Wheeler, William Hopper, John Parker, James Gorder, John Thomas, Christopher Eicher, Mark Hardin, Samuel Hendry, John Bradley, Richard Park, Allen Miles, John Whitehead, Edward Rice, Thomas Baker, James Stewart, John Anderson, John Fayer, James Wilson, John, Francis J. Smith, William Robertson, John Harman, William Nott, John Carr, James Barrett, James Green, Peter Johnson, Jacob Reed, do, do.</p> <p>To Lieutenant William Muncher, from the 14th of May to the last of August, 1755, inclusive, being 109 days, at 2s.</p> <p>To Esau Charles Yancy, the same time, at 2s.</p> <p>To Sergeant Nathaniel Hill, the same time, at 1s. 6d.</p> <p>To Sergeant John Patton, do.</p> <p>To Colonel Robert Muncher, the pay of an ensign by order of Mr. President Bluff, to garden Frederick's Fort, the same time.</p> <p>To Richard Parks, going express to Winchester,</p>	<p>To John Muncher, 94 days, at 2s.</p> <p>To John Peyton, sergeant, Richard Duggitt, do. at 10s. each.</p> <p>To John Hollinger, John Field, Thomas Shugbater, Francis Brown, Anthony Strouther, Francis Strouther, John Fenton, William Baker, William Ed. Words, Robert Scott, James Cunningham</p>	<p>10 11 11</p> <p>5 4</p> <p>10 1</p> <p>3 6 11</p> <p>1 5 4</p> <p>2 1 8</p> <p>1 4 2</p> <p>19 10</p> <p>16 7</p> <p>10 18</p> <p>7 5 4</p> <p>7 5 4</p> <p>6 11</p> <p>1 1 6</p> <p>1,413 10 1</p>

This proves payment to Reuben Long for military service in September 1758. He had received pay, also, in 1756. (Boogher's Gleanings of Virginia History, p.70.). In 1756, Reuben was 26 years old.

In 1757, a severe Indian attack took place along the frontier. At the urgency of George Washington, several thousand Virginians were called into service. Two regiments were formed. The war continued with heavy fighting until 1763. On 20 August 1763, according to the County Court Minute Book of Culpeper County, Virginia, p. 442, "French Strother commissioned lieutenant, & Reuben Long, Thomas Grayson, & Thomas Oxford, ensigns, of militia under William Green, County Lieutenant, took severally the usual oaths."

From 1764 to 1774, there was no formal war on the border, but small raids by both sides continued. In order to end the trouble, in 1774, 14 companies, one from Culpeper, were called and the Indians were defeated. Now, another war was coming, - the American Revolution.

Going back to 1755, when the French and Indian War started, Reuben was 25 years old. He was married to Mary Harrison. (Books refer to Mary with a question about the last name, Harrison. No proof has been found other than the fact that her daughter was named Polly Harrison Long. Polly is the pet name for Mary.) The Reuben Long farm was on a mountain near Culpeper, VA. His neighbors were Robert Slaughter, Robert Coleman, Daniel Brown, Philip Rootes, and William Williams.

In 1755, Reuben's son, Gabriel, was 4 years old. This son would become a famous officer in the Revolution. He commanded a company from Culpeper throughout the Revolution, serving for most of the war under the command of the famous Daniel Morgan. Once, a spent "Minnie Ball" (bullet) hit Gabriel in the forehead right between his eyes. It went under the skin, but not into his thick Long skull. (I inherited that characteristic!) A scar left by the wound was his pride and joy for all the days of his life. One of Gabriel's lieutenants was a young man named Reuben Long, a kinsman, no doubt.

Our Reuben Long's daughter, Polly Harrison Long, our ancestor, would marry John Nash. In 1755, she was about 3 years old. Here, again, we see the situation that was common in early American wars. The soldier returned home from time to time during his service. Crops were planted. Children were born. Son, Evans, was born in 1759. He was a sergeant in the Revolution and married Lucy Apperson. There was a son named Anderson and one named Nimrod who married Ellen Williams. Daughters Fannie (Frances) and Peggy (Margaret) married Daniel Richardson and Robert Kaye. Lord knows where Reuben got some of these names. We can be thankful that he did not name a son Reuben. Maybe Polly had some relatives named Nimrod, or the children may not have been named for anyone. I have a grandson named Stephen James Metts. No Metts has ever had either name! Q.E.D.

The Long family were members of Little Fork Church in St. Mark's Parish. Dr. Philip Slaughter's genealogy book on the parish is valuable. The church played an important role in the life of the early settlers. Reuben was an active member.

The American Revolution started in 1776. Reuben Long, our ancestor was 46 years old. When the war ended, he was 52. His role as a Revolutionary soldier has been a clouded issue. This is an effort to resolve that question. First, as the devil's advocate, let's look at the negative side. My first question was caused by my own experience. I am 63 years old and a veteran of three wars, twelve campaigns in the Infantry, during thirty years. An Infantry Lieutenant serving in the field in a war must be young - a lot younger than 46 years. The NSDAR lists Reuben with PS - "Patriotic Service". He qualifies for that without a doubt. The Virginia Magazine of History and Biography, Vol XXVI, 31 Dec 1918, states that Henry Field was paid for Reuben Long 7 pounds, 7 shillings, and 6 pence for Straw furnished the Culpeper Battalion. This, alone, would qualify Reuben for PS status. But note the fact that someone else took payment for him. Where was Reuben?

Next, Heitman and Gwathmey are universally recognized authorities on American Revolution service. In Historical Register of Officers of the Continental Army and Historical Register of Virginians in the Revolution, the entries are identical: Long, Reuben, Sgt. 11 CL Sept. 26, 1776; Ensign Dec. 16, 1776; 2nd Lieut. June 1, 1777; reg. Designated as 7 CL Sept. 14, 1778; 1st Lieut. May 10, 1779; trans. to 3 CL Feb. 12, 1781; served to close of war;

died 1791. Served in Capt. Gabriel Long's Co., Morgan's Riflemen. Awarded 2,666 acres. The fact that the death date of 1791 is given identifies our Reuben Long.

The service data is valid and can be proved by reference to Records of the Revolutionary War, W.T.R. Saffel, pp. 268, 426, 504; The Virginia Magazine, Vol. II, No.3, p.252, Jan. 1895; Calendar of Virginia State Papers, Wm P. Palmer, M.D., 1875, pp. 302, 411, 324; and, Nineth Annual Report of the Library Board 1911-1912, VA State Library, p. 189. These references are clear and give service for a Reuben Long without age data. Then, what can be wrong?

The devil's advocate continues. Further research revealed that there was more than one Reuben Long! There was an old one and a young one. Here, the famous men, Heitman and Gwathmey made a common genealogical error. By including that death date, they telescoped the records of two men and gave our old Reuben more service than any one man could perform! The next step is to The Index of Revolutionary War Pension Applications, p. 699, where we find two Reuben Long pension applications. One, R6431, concerns a soldier, not our Reuben, which causes no confusion. The other, S46457, describes a soldier who was 19 years old when he enlisted in 1775. He was born in Maryland, called Culpeper his home during the war, and went to Sumter, SC, after the war, where he was alive in 1809, when he asked for a pension. His application is legible and tells of a hero, who was a lieutenant in the company of Gabriel Long, son of our Reuben. There are eight pages of records in the U.S. Archives.

Now, we will stop the negative reaction and look at the positive side. A careful study of young Reuben's records shows that most, but not all of the service listed by Heitman and Gwathmey was performed by the young Reuben. Also, recognize that an older man can perform many duties in a military unit that do not require marching from Canada to South Carolina as a platoon leader with a rifle and bayonet. After deleting every item claimed by the young Reuben, the remaining service comes to Ensign Dec. 16, 1776; 1st Lieut., May 10, 1779; trans. to 3 CL Feb.12, 1781; served to close of war; died 1791. Here, we have a reasonable record of service for an older man. He could have been in the militia until he went to the 3rd CL in 1781, late in the war, when service was easier. Most Virginia militia records have been lost. In order to get land, the Virginia soldier had to serve three years. After consternation and rationalization, this critical student is comfortable with this solution whether anyone else agrees or disagrees. Heitman and Gwathmey could have saved me this mental anguish by more careful work. Fortunately, Frances Ebaugh held her ground and, by doing so, brought out the truth, in my opinion.

Thank goodness, this completes the Longs and we can turn to the interesting story about the Hodges, who fall into our family history after Frances solved the last great Hodges mystery.

WILL OF REUBEN LONG

In the name of God amen I Reuben Long of the County of Culpeper & parish of St marks being weak of body but of perfect sence mind and memory blessed be almighty god and calling to mind the frailty of human life; do think fit to make this my last will and Testament in manner & form following————

Imprimis it is my will and desire thy my Just debts and funeral Expences be paid out of that part of my Estate which I lend to my beloved wife————

Item I give to my ^{son} Gabriel Long all that I formerly lent him which he has in his possession to him & his heirs forever————

Item I give to my son Evans Long all that I formerly lent him; and is in his pission to him & his heirs forever————

Item I give to my son Anderson Long all that I formerly Lent him and now in his possion to him and his heirs forever————

Item I give to my son Nimrod Long three young negroes named Joe, dinah & Alse; also choice of two feather beds with their furniture as also my desk and large Table; also one Sorrel Colt to wit the youngest I now have; and also first choice of two cows and calves and after the dec^e of my loving wife, I also give him all the land and plantation whereon I now live to him and his heirs forever————

Item I give to my daughter fanny Richardson wife of Daniel Richardson all that I formerly lent her and has in possion also one negro girl named Fanny, to her and her heirs forever————

Item I give to my daughter Peggy Kay wife of Robert Kay all that I formerly lent her & now in her possion to her and her heirs forever————

Item I give to my daughter Polly Harrison Nash wife of John Nash all that I formerly lent her and in her possion to her and her heirs forever————

Item the whole Residue and remainder of my Estate both real and personal, to wit the land & plantation whereon I now live also my household and Kitchen Furniture and plantation Tools, and stock and Furniture as I have already mentioned, also the following negros, Jonathan, George, Frank, Billey Easter, Phillis, Hannah, Seleney, Sharlotte, Edie, Winney, Seley & Abil also all my out standing debts I lend to my beloved wife Mary Long, during her natural life and if she shall see cause to lend any part of the aforesaid Estate or the increase thereof to any of her children I leave that to her discretion— and after the dec. of my s^d wife my desire is that all the said Estate Except as is before Excepted, and disposed of together with the increase thereof be Equally divided between my seven children as above namely Gabriel, Evans, Anderson, Nimrod, Fanny, Peggy, & Polly Harrison, to them and their heirs forever; and provide my son Nimrod should die before he Enters into Wedlock, my desire is that his Estate as above mentioned be Equally divided between the remain Six as above named to them and their heirs forever, and Lastly I do hereby constitute and appoint my beloved wife Mary Long Executrix and my beloved son Gabriel Long, my beloved son in law Robert Kay and my beloved friend Robert Coleman Jun^r Executors of this my last will and Testament disallowing disaproving and making void any and Every other will or wills made by me heretofore, Rattafieing & Confirming this and this only as my last will and Testament IN WITNESS whereof I have hereunto set my hand and seal this twentynineth day of Decm^r in the year of our lord one Thousand seven hundred and ninety one————

Signed seald and Deliverd In presents off)

Thomas Lindse X

George Bayn

Frans Apperson X

mark

Reuben X Long (LS)

his

Proved 18 Jun 1792

Hodges

The name is said to be derived from the name Roger. Hodge, Hogg, and Hogge were "pet" names in old England for men called Roger. Chaucer called a Roger "hightie Hogge of Ware" in The Canterbury Tales. The pole tax roles of the thirteenth and fourteenth centuries in England listed the names Hogge, Hogges, Hoggese, and Hoge.

In America, there were Hodges families in earliest colonial times. Paul Hodge was in Virginia in 1609. One John Hodges was "Colonel of the Archers" in 1622. Through the years, many famous men had the name. Their first names were John, William, Thomas and Robert in most cases and all trace their lineage to England.

These families named Hodges may or may not have been related. So many old Virginia records were burned that research becomes hard. We know that our John Hodges came from Essex County, Virginia, to Abbeville District, South Carolina, before the American Revolution. He brought a young son, also named John, with him. The son became a Revolutionary soldier at age 15.

It is doubtful that the work of any genealogist is perfect. Certainly, this writer has made mistakes. One serious mistake concerns the Hodges chapter in Metts Ancestors in America, written in 1984 and revised three times as new information was discovered. The Hodges story was not changed until now.

There are several family history books, written in South Carolina, that give information quite different from some of that presented in the earlier Metts books, which contested a story told in Moragnes in America and Related Families, by Howard and Quinn. This book has a detailed genealogy of the Hodges family. An old newspaper article is referenced to tell a vivid and interesting tale about an old John Hodges that would have been the first generation to come from Essex County, Virginia, to South Carolina. The story tells that he was a Revolutionary soldier, at home on leave when the Indians attacked. He was shot and killed in front of his family. Then, three of his daughters were tied and burned in the cabin. Another daughter, Dorathy, was taken and held captive for years. The article claims that the story came from General George Washington Hodges who said that he heard it "from his mother's own lips". The story was discounted because other errors in the book caused suspicion concerning accuracy. The book says that our Dr. John J. Nash, discussed earlier in the Nash chapter, married Mary Hodges. Actually, his brother, Valentine, married Mary. John Nash married Margaret. Further, the "General" above, was a Sergeant in the War of 1812.

As the years passed, following 1984, research continued and several important documents were found:

1. The "old newspaper article" mentioned above was found in the Caroliniana Library at the University of South Carolina in Columbia, SC. It turned out to be a fourteen page printed pamphlet which was the obituary of George Washington Hodges, son of John Hodges and Frances Anderson. A copy of the entire old 1876 document is at Appendix B with a further discussion.

2. The Revolutionary War pension request of young John Hodges, Jr., which is transcribed fully below, has this statement written in response to a question: "The applicant has no record of his age. he says it was burnt with a house in the State of South Carolina". This supports the story about the Indian attack when the house was burned and three girls were murdered.
3. The Indian story did not mention the wife of John Hodges, Sr. The will of Elizabeth Hodges, 6 May 1799, was found recently in the Abbeville, SC, courthouse. A copy of the original document and a discussion is provided at Appendix C. She is the wife of the first John Hodges and mother of the young soldier. Consider that the obituary did not mention a wife, so she would not have been present during the Indian attack or she would have been killed. Also, the young age of John, Jr., when he came from Essex County, VA, further supports the contention that the Hodges family came to South Carolina together and that the young soldier did not make the trip alone.
4. Elizabeth Hodges, wife of John, Sr., was the grandmother of George Washington Hodges. Elizabeth's will was not probated until 7 Oct 1816. The birth of George Washington Hodges was 3 Sep 1792. He was 52 years old when his mother died and 24 years old when his grandmother died. Surely, the mother or the grandmother of John Hodges, Sr., could have told the story of his Revolutionary service, his murder by the Indians, and the loss of the three daughters.

After consideration of the above, the story about the Indian attack is accepted as true and this change becomes a part of this family history.

The John Hodges family settled near the present location of Hodges, SC. The country was rich in wild animals and dense forest. Also, there were more Indians than settlers. Young John Hodges was only eleven years old when the American Revolution started. He had been born in Essex County, VA, in 1765. A volunteer at age sixteen, on 1 April 1780, John became a private in Captain Samuel Rosamond's company. Later, he served in Colonel Picken's Regiment. He fought in many battles. The U.S. Archives has a complete record of his service. Extracts are in a number of reference books. The best record is the actual request for a pension, made by the man himself. It is a long, hand written document, signed by John Hodges. Written on thin paper, both sides, there is "bleed-through" of the old ink, but all words can be read. Probably, this paper has never been transcribed and published. Spelling is transcribed exactly. In the old writing, "fs" is "ss". It has important historical value because the descriptions are first hand accounts.

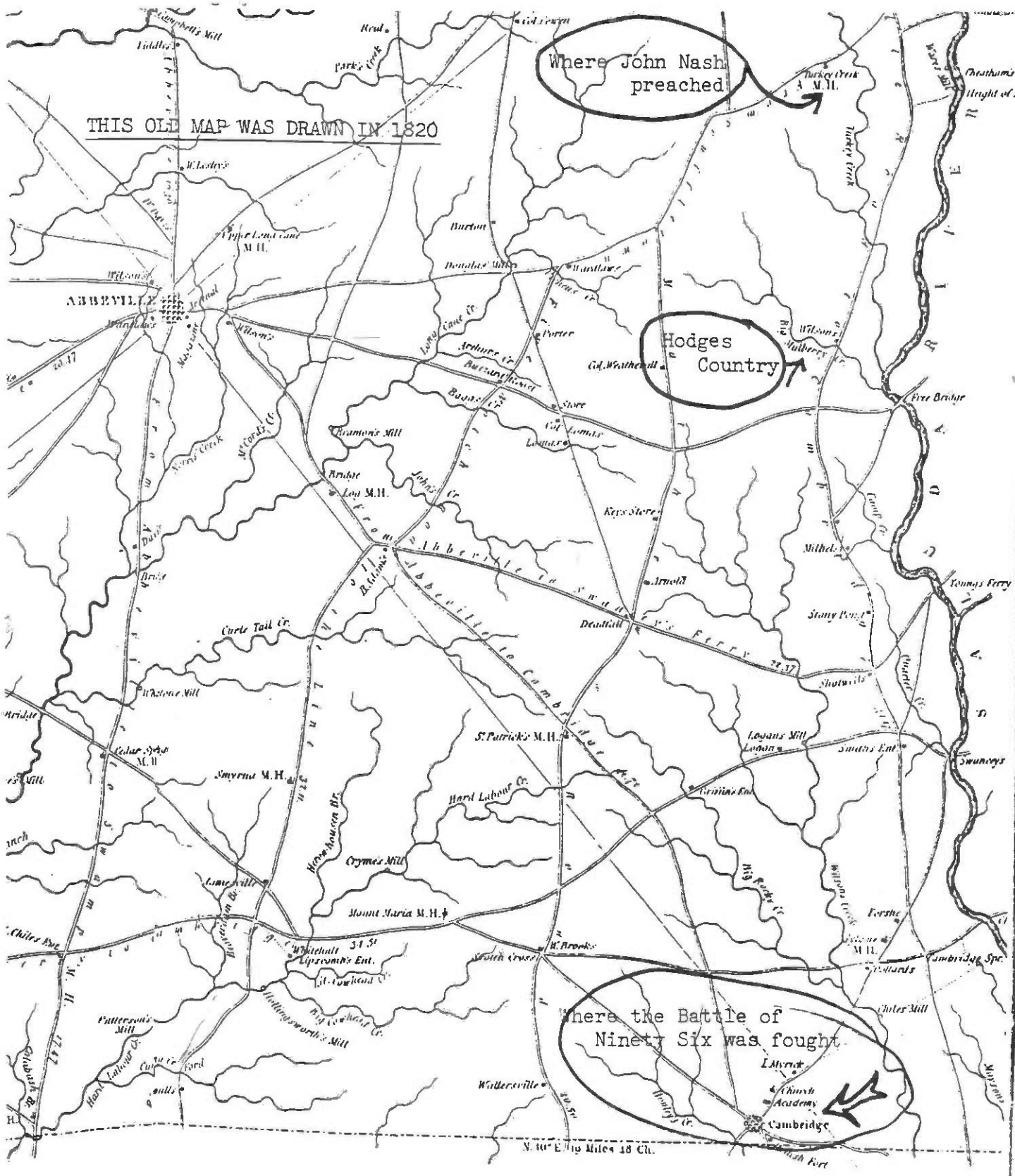
State of South Carolina)
 Abbeville District)

On this twentythird day of Oct^r 1832 personally appeared in open court before the Hon'ble Richard Gantt Presiding Judge of the Court of Common Pleas & General Sefsions [in old writing, an "f" was used when there was a double "s".] for the said State & District now sitting John Hodges a resident of Abbeville District in the State of South Carolina aged sixty seven years who being first duly sworn according to law doth on his oath make the following declarations in order to obtain the benefit of the act of Congrefs pafsed June 7th 1832.

That he entered the service of the United States at the age of fifteen as a volunteer and private on or about the first day of April One thousand seven hundred and eighty and was enrolled as such under the command of Capt. Samuel Rosamond who commanded a beat or militia company in the then District of ninety-six, now Abbeville in the State of South

Carolina that he was marched in the said company from Ninetysix District to a place called Beach Island in this State near Augusta in the State of Georgia where he was taken sick and left by his company under the care of one Capⁿ Tutt a regular Officer under whose care he soon recovered and under whom he done and performed service and duty for at least the period of one month and he returned home where he soon after rejoined Capt. Rosamonds company who had also returned from an attempt to aid Charleston but who had heard of the fall of that place in May seventeen hundred and eighty on his march to its relief and then returned to the aid of the upper country where from the time of the fall of Charleston the Tories had become formidable and dangerous to the friends of liberty by not only their own acts of murder rapine & plunder but by influencing inciting and exciting the Indians on the borders of South Carolina to every savage and rapacious act of cruelty and outrage towards the Whigs and they the Tories frequently themselves taking the lead in plunder and depredation these state of things existing at that time in full energy against the comparatively few friends of liberty in Carolina give to these friends almost constant and active employment in apprising in every manner they could this double enemy until a third enemy the British under Col Cruger affected a lodgement of their force in the District of Ninety six at a place called Ninety six or sometimes Cambridge which force together with their allies the Tories and Indians kept the surrounding settlements or country in a subjected state until the arrival of Gen^l Greene with his forces before Cambridge to which he laid seige and to which place the Whigs of the country flocked to aid the Beseigers in driving or expelling the British. The applicant was marched in Capⁿ Rosamonds company with all the Whig militia of the country who were all under the command of Col or Gen^l Pickens to succour and aid Gen^l Greene in his advances against Col Cruger at Cambridge or Ninety six and continued there in active employment against the Beseiged British under Gen^l Greene until he raised the seige in June/ 1781 / seventeen hundred and eighty one and marched his force as well as the force under Gen^l Pickens towards the Congaree River in this State at which place Gen^l Greene ordered Gen^l Pickens with his militia to the Orangeburg Post and the the upper part of South Carolina to check the Tories in that section of country accordingly the applicant in Capⁿ Rosamonds company was marched back to the District of Ninety six and then soon after discharged. The applicant at the seige of Cambridge lost a horse saddle and bridle appraised at one hundred dollars which fell into the hands of the British & and for which he never received one cent in any way towards the payment for his lofs directly or indirectly and from the best of his recollection he computes this tour of service and duty to be at least nine months.

The applicant John Hodges shortly after his return aforesaid with Capⁿ Rosamand from Greenes army volunteered his services for six months under a Capt. Samuel Moore, a partizan Officer of mounted men in whose company he performed active & constant duty for six months & towards the later part of his service he acted as Second Lieutenant of the company but how long he done Lieuⁿ duty in this compn he cannot recollect he however continued in this company until Capⁿ Moore was killed while alone and unattended by a skirmishing party of Tories under the command of the notorious William Cunningham who is in South Carolina to this day distinguished by the name of Bloody Cunningham but when Capt Moore was killed the applicant cannot tell but thinks it was in the year one thousand seven hundred and eighty one.



The pension application of John Hodges continues:

The applicant subsequently then volunteered his services for six months under Capⁿ Robert Maxwell a partizan officer of mounted men some time in the latter part of the year seventeen hundred and eighty one and he in Capⁿ Robert Maxwells company together with a number of other troops were ordered to march to the Cherokee country by Gen^l Pickens who in person conducted the expedition against the indians the army entered the Cherokee nation & arrived at Choata town where a battle was fought & terminated in the defeat of the indians a large number of whom were put to flight forty or fifty killed and about one hundred of them taken prisoner, Choata town burned, besides other indian villages, & their corn destroyed, after which the army returned to the settlement, where peace was restored by the over throw of the indians The applicant remained in the said Robert Maxwells company the full term of the said six months guarding the frontiers, & scouting from place to place to awe the enemies of the country until peace was restored to it by its British enemies & the applicant discharged from further service in the defence of his country.

Answers to certain Interrogatories

Answer to 1st Int.y- The applicant John Hodges was born in Essex County in the State of Virginia, and from the information of older branches of his family in the year/ 1765 / seventeen hundred and sixty five

Answer to 2d Int.y- The applicant has no record of his age.he says it was burnt in & with a house in the State of South Carolina

Answer to 3d Int.y- The applicant says he was living in the District of Ninety six now Abbeville District when he entered service of his country as a volunteer where he has since lived & where he now lives.

Answer to 4th Int.y- The applicant says he always volunteered his services that he never as drafted neither did he ever substitute for any person whatever.

Answer to 5th Int.y- The applicant says that Gen^l Greene is the only regular Officer he distinctly recollects & to the balance of the Interrogatory he refers to his declaration above for all his knowledge relating thereto

Answer to 6th Int.y- The applicant says he never received a written discharge, his discharges were always verbal.

Answer to 7th Int.y- The applicant is known to the Rev^d Hugh Dixon, Rev^d Thomas Rosamond, William Barmore Esqr, Samuel Agnew, James Agnew & the Rev^d James Willson all whom can testify as to his character for veracity and their belief of his services as a soldier of the Revolution. & who all live in his present neighborhood.

Sworn to and Subscribed)
the day and year aforesaid)

John Hodges

There are a number of other papers in the file. Some of them list John's children and they give a Mary Nash and a Margaret Leech. The old writing causes difficulty with the "E" or "A". The Mary Nash is the wife of Valentine Nash. The Margaret is the former wife of Dr. John J. Nash, who died in 1832. Margaret was married again to Leech. The file number in the U.S. Archives for the pension request is W. 10117.

The service of and the lineage of John Hodges to this writer were proved and approved by the Sons of the American Revolution. Of course, the best evidence of service is the file in the U.S. Archives. A few other references are: Roster of South Carolina Patriots in the American Revolution, Moss, p.451; Revolutionary Soldiers and Other Patriotic Records of Abbeville County, SC, Burns, pp. 17-18; National Genealogical Society Quarterly, Dec., 1933, p.132; and, South Carolina in the Revolution, Ervin, p.32.

The little town of Hodges, near Abbeville, SC, would be named many years after John settled there and raised a large family of twenty children. John Hodges married Margaret Long in 1786. They had two children, Lucy Wardlaw (b.1787) and Reuben B. (b.1790). After the death of Margaret, John married Frances Anderson in late 1790.

Frances came from Virginia to Abbeville in May 1790 with her family. Her father lived to be over 105 years old. At that age he could walk thirteen miles. Little was known about Frances until 1994. At Appendix D, the research is described where it was learned that her parents were Walter Anderson and his wife Tabitha. Their children were Samuel Anderson; Richard L. Anderson; Walter Anderson, Jr.; Susannah Wright; our Frances Hodges; Tabitha Davis; Sarah Hodges; and Lucy Pulliam.

Walter Anderson's father was John Anderson who came to America from Wales. He was a sailor on a sloop on the Rappahannock River in 1675. He sailed up the river until he could go no further and settled at the foot of the Blue Ridge Mountains on Carter's Creek below Watney Mountain. He died when Walter Anderson was a child.

Walter went to live with his mother's brother, William Browne. Walter married Ann Thornton and had a son John, named after his father. Ann died and he married Tabitha. They lived in Caroline County, VA, until they moved to Abbeville, SC. During the American Revolution, Walter was old, but he is given credit by the SAR for patriotic service. Again, details are in Appendix D.

The first child of John Hodges, Jr. and Frances Anderson was Matilda, born 12 Jul 1791. She married a man named Sharpe and was the mother of General Jacob Sharpe of the Confederacy.

The next child was George Washington Hodges, born 9 Sep 1792. He was a Sergeant in the War of 1812 and led a very active life after the war. For some reason, because of his name or by appointment, he was called "General" Hodges and the town got its name from him. He was John's 4th child. The others in order were:

5. Gabriel (1794) m. Phoebe Douglas.
6. Drusilla (1795) m. Donald Douglas.
7. Elizabeth (1797) m. Bowie.
8. Sarah (1798) m. (1) McGhee (2) Agnew.
9. **Margaret Long Hodges (1800) Married**
 - (1) Dr. John J. Nash, our ancestor.
 - (2) William P. Leech (in 1832, the year that Dr. Nash died.)
10. John Anderson (1801) m. (1) Malinda Dunlap, (2) Martha Amelia Foster.
11. Samuel Anderson (1802) m. Mary A. D. Connor.
12. Armstrong Jones (1804) m. Cecelia Moragne.
13. Frances (1805) m. Weatherall.
14. James (1806)
15. Mary 1807 m. Valentine Nash. (Brother of Dr. John J. Nash)
16. Benjamin (1808) m. Nancy---
17. Mahulda (1810) m. Chapman and/or McKellar.
18. Absalom Turner (1812) m. Julia S. ---.
19. Robert Henry Wardlaw (1813).
20. Lucy Wardlaw (1815) m. F. R. Davis.

Frances Anderson Hodges died on March 14, 1844, ten years after the passing of her husband, John, on Christmas Eve, 1834. John's will is in Box 33, Package 957 in the Abbeville Courthouse. It is a long document for one reason. Item by item, he left one slave, each, to almost all of his children. He named each child and each slave after asking God to forgive him for his sins. One little girl got two slaves - little slaves, I'd guess! Also, two boys, **namely, John and Armstead Jones got only thirty dollars apiece because their education had been so expensive.** Wife, Frances, was given all that she needed to manage that small army. She is the one who should have been called "General" Hodges!

Now a few more words are needed about what has been called the Hodges mystery. The Moragnes family history has been mentioned. This is an interesting book with a great amount of detail. The unfortunate problem is that the information about Mary and Margaret is wrong. That sort of error leads to repetition in other books. Greenwood County Sketches, by Margaret Watson, is another very interesting book about that area and the people, but it, also, has the very same errors. Then, 7500 Marriages from Ninety-Six and Abbeville District, S.C., p. 141, has Dr. John J. Nash being married to Mary Hodges (who really married his brother, Valentine) in about 1840. We know that Dr. John had been dead for eight years by that time. Their authority is PCR, Probate Court Records. I have a friend named Carol Speer, who was Probate Clerk, and now is Probate Judge in Abbeville. She searched and there is no such record. Well, from bad, the situation becomes ridiculous. Norman E. Gillis, an outstanding genealogist, now dead, published Mississippi Genealogical Notes I. On page 71, under "NASH", it says, "Mary B-Sept.1,1830 in Abbeville Dist., S.C. Married Mike A. Metts and lived in Louisville, Miss. (She was the granddaughter of Gen. Washington Hodges and niece of Major John Hodges, of Revolutionary fame.)" **Well!**, George Washington Hodges was **eight years old** when Mary was born in 1800. There was no General Hodges in the Revolution. Several of these books call John Hodges "Major". Why? Who knows? The truth is that John Hodges was the father of our Margaret, mother of Mary R. Nash, who married Michael Albert Metts. George Washington Hodges was Margaret's brother. Mary Hodges, daughter of John married Valentine Nash. How do we know?

When Dr. John J. Nash died, Margaret bought her household items back at the sale. This was discussed in the Nash chapter. The death certificate of Mary R. Nash Metts shows that her mother was Margaret (or Margrette). Michael Albert Metts and his wife, Mary, are buried in the Masonic Cemetery in Louisville, MS, - **and so is Margaret L. (Long) Leech. Her stone gives the dates June 10, 1800 - Feb. 10, 1889. This is the birth date of John Hodges' daughter Margaret. She is buried beside her daughter Kittie and Kittie's husband, William Harrison Richardson. Poor Margaret is the corpus delicti proving that she is not Mary Hodges!**

This explains how Michael Albert Metts met Mary R. Nash. She lived about two miles from Louisville, MS, with her mother and step-father, William Leech. The children of Margaret Hodges were listed in the Nash chapter, but will be given here, again, for emphasis and for use to persons who get copies of only this chapter.

Margaret Hodges, b. 10 June 1800 Abbeville District, S. C. m. (1) after the 1820 census, Dr. John J. Nash, a physician, who was b. 6 Nov 1793 in Abbeville District, SC, d. 17 Sep 1832, it was believed of pneumonia.

Issue 6 children, surname Nash:

1. Reuben Milton Nash, b. Aug 1825 d. 1 June 1850. m. Erminia Benton Rain, dau. of Daniel and Pheriba (Benton) Rain of McIntosh Bluff, Alabama. Their son Reuben Bolivar Nash m. Ann Manley, dau. of Starling and Martha

(Broughton) Manley of Monroeville, Ala., and were the grandparents of E.N. McGraw.

2. John Nash.

3. Valentine Nash.

4. Bolivar Nash.

5. Mary R. Nash, b. 1 Sep 1827, d. 4 Nov 1922, m. Capt. Michael Albert Metts on 14 Nov 1849.

6. Nancy Nash m. Mr. Knox.

The said Margaret Hodges, b. 10 June 1800, Abbeville District, SC, m. (2) William Leech.

Issue twin daughters, surname Leech.

7. Missouri Leech m. George Dulin and they are the grandparents of Miss Frances M. Knox whose aunt Rebecca Cable had a picture of Margaret Hodges years ago.

8. Kitura Leech m. B. H. Richardson. This is the couple that is buried beside Margaret Hodges in the Louisville, MS, Masonic Cemetery, with Michael Albert Metts and Mary R. Nash Metts.

This chapter ends the story for some cousins because the ancestors of my grandfather, John Phillip Metts, have been counted. Now, we turn to my grandmother, Nora Taylor Metts. The next chapter is about the Taylors.

NATIONAL SOCIETY

SONS OF THE AMERICAN REVOLUTION

ALBERT	CASWELL	METTS, Jr.
(First)	(Middle)	(Last)
Descendant of	WALTER ANDERSON	(No. 7) is the ancestor
who assisted in establishing American Independence while acting in the capacity of Patriotic Service by providing cattle, bacon, wheat, and oats to the Continental Army in Caroline County, Virginia.		

- 7th Gen. 1...Box 70...Package 3579...Abbeville County...SC...Deed by Walter Anderson, Sr., names Frances Hodges as his daughter.
- 2...George Harrison Sanford King, "King George County, Virginia, Will Book A-1, 1721-1752 and Miscellaneous Notes", 1978, 1st Edition, Pp. 5, 6, 7...Will, 1721, of John Anderson.
- 3...T.L.C. Genealogy, "Caroline County, Virginia Land Tax Lists, 1787-1799", 1991, 1st Edition, Pp. I, 5.
- 4...Ruth and Sam Sparacio, "Virginia County Court Records, Order Book Abstracts of Caroline County, Virginia, 1771-1772", 1992, 1st Edition, Pp. 34, 35...Also, copy of actual indented deed.
- 5...Netti Schreiner-Yantis and Florene Speakman Love, "The 1787 Census of Virginia", 1987, Volume 1, P. 740.
- 6...Baltimore Southern Book Company, "HEADS OF FAMILIES at the First Census of the United States Taken in the Year 1790 - SOUTH CAROLINA", 1952, P. 58.
- 7...Nell H. Howard and Bessie W. Quinn, "Moragnes in America and Related Families", 1st Edition, Pp. 389, 399.

References to ancestor's Revolutionary War services

Janice L. Abercrombie and Richard Slatten, "Virginia Publick Claims, CAROLINE COUNTY", 1991, 1st Edition, Pp. 37, 38, 42, 46, 53, 61, 68.

Taylor

The life of Nora Taylor, wife of John Phillip Metts, was discussed earlier along with the life of her husband. This chapter will contain the information that has been found about Nora's Taylor ancestors.

The name, Taylor, must have been given to people who make clothes. Many immigrants named Taylor came to America from England, Wales, and Ireland. Family legend has our Taylors coming from England. Probably, they did. Books and family papers tell of high born ancestors, but no evidence supports the stories. This chapter will begin with what we know to be true.

The first generation of record is Ward Taylor. Seemingly, out of nowhere, he appears in the official records of South Carolina and becomes owner of a large plantation near the Savannah River on Stevens and Turkey Creeks. Efforts to find his parents and origin have been futile. He is not included on any of the ship lists. Of course, many immigrants are not on the lists. Was he born in America? We do not know.



However, we do know that, in September 1767, Governor Greville Montagu, of South Carolina, approved the petition of Ward Taylor for 200 acres of land on the waters of Stevens Creek. Stevens Creek and Turkey Creek join and run into the Savannah River south of Abbeville, SC. Many official documents follow, too many to be copied here. A select few will be included with reference to the others. There is no question about whether we have the right Ward Taylor. All documents refer to the same location.

On Tuesday, 5 November 1771, "His Excellency the Rt. Ho. (Right Honorable) Lord Charles G. Montagu, In the Council Chamber"—considered petitions and ordered surveys, one being for Ward Taylor for 150 acres.

Then, on 4 August 1772, Ward's name appears for 200 more acres. No written petitions for these 550 acres have been found in the South Carolina Archives. In due time surveys were made and then land grants were issued. Every document mentions Stevens Creek or Turkey Creek.

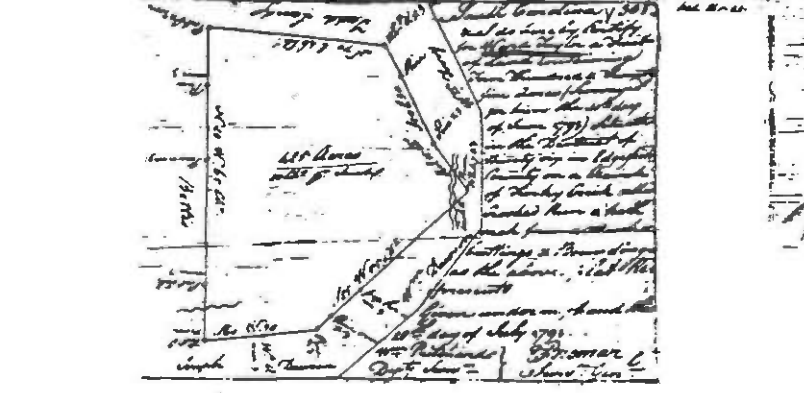
Three land grant documents exist for 200, 200, and 150 acres. Only one is copied since all are similar. On the next page is a copy of a land grant and the plat that the surveyor prepared to show the location.

Ward Taylor
 I have administered to the land with
 knowledge a tract of land
 lying between the 4th and 5th
 streets in front of the County
 a branch of the North River
 bounded on the north by the
 8th street of Thomas Brown's
 with the others on the south
 and West side of the same
 from the 11th day of Nov. 1771 to the 11th day of Aug. 1772



Ward Taylor
 I have administered to the land with
 knowledge a tract of land
 lying between the 4th and 5th
 streets in front of the County
 a branch of the North River
 bounded on the north by the
 8th street of Thomas Brown's
 with the others on the south
 and West side of the same
 from the 11th day of Nov. 1771 to the 11th day of Aug. 1772

Ward Taylor
 I have administered to the land with
 knowledge a tract of land
 lying between the 4th and 5th
 streets in front of the County
 a branch of the North River
 bounded on the north by the
 8th street of Thomas Brown's
 with the others on the south
 and West side of the same
 from the 11th day of Nov. 1771 to the 11th day of Aug. 1772



SOUTH-CAROLINA

GEOURGE the 3rd by the Grace of God, of GREAT-BRITAIN, FRANCE
 and IRELAND, KING, Do hereby shew that we do give and grant unto
 our loving and favoured Subjects, KNOW YE, THAT We of our special Grace
 certain Knowledge and mere Motion, have given and granted, and by this Present, do give
 and grant unto

Ward Taylor
 One hundred and fifty Acres
 Situate in Granville County, in a branch of the North River
 called *Ward Taylor's* bounded on the north by the
 8th Street of Thomas Brown's, on the south by the
 4th Street, on the east by the 5th Street, and on the west by the
 West side of the same

And that each Step, Foot and mark, as appear by a plat thereof, hereunto annexed: Together with all
 woods, under-woods, timber, and timber-wood, lakes, ponds, fisheries, waters, water-courses, profits,
 commonable, appurtenances and hereditaments whatsoever, therewith belonging or in anywise apper-
 taining: Together with privilege of hunting, hawking and feeding in and upon the same, and all tenent
 and commonable whatsoever: Saving and reserving nevertheless, to us, our heirs and successors, all rights
 and prerogatives, if any there should be found, growing thence; and also saving and reserving, nevertheless, to us,
 our heirs and successors, our sole privilege of mines of gold and silver only: TO HAVE AND TO HOLD,
 the said part of

Ward Taylor
 the said part of
 the said part of
 the said part of

Ward Taylor
 the said part of
 the said part of
 the said part of

Ward Taylor
 the said part of
 the said part of
 the said part of

Ward Taylor
 the said part of
 the said part of
 the said part of

Ward Taylor
 the said part of
 the said part of
 the said part of

Ward Taylor
 the said part of
 the said part of
 the said part of

Ward Taylor
 the said part of
 the said part of
 the said part of

The American Revolution started several years after the land grants. Family legends say that Ward participated but records do not confirm any military service. The only item is the indent on the next page with some other papers. They are interesting because they show the "mark" Ward used to sign his name, the appearance of the name, Nerie Taylor, and the paper work that

was needed to pay for his horse. The roster of S.C. Patriots in the American Revolution, by Moss, 1983, states, "Taylor, Ward. He lost a mare in service during 1779. A.A. 7666; U35." With respect to the American Revolution, the reader is reminded of earlier comments about the role of South Carolina in the war. Many settlers in the backwoods were not fired with the same zeal as were the patriots at Bunker Hill. Old King George had just given Ward 550 acres of farm land. He may have been grateful - but not enough to lose a mare without payment.

A review of the many documents reveals little about Ward Taylor except that he had a big farm on Turkey Creek. In early South Carolina, this area was in Granville County. Later, the old 96th Courthouse and Abbeville were organized. Then, Edgefield County was cut off of Abbeville County. Records from all these administrators have been checked.

Ward kept a very low profile. In 1784, he helped inventory a dead man's estate. Again, in 1786, he did it for another estate. In 1786, he gave his son, Nerie (or Avery or Neri) 100 acres of his farm. Ward must have died just before 1790, because his name does not appear as Head of Household in the First Census of the United States.

After the death of Ward Taylor, one paper surfaced which tells more about the family than all the other documents with their legal jargon. It is the deed which sells the farm on Turkey Creek in order that the estate can be settled.

Leroy Taylor & others) Deed Book 19, page 322
TO) The State of South Carolina, Know
Elijah Bird) all men by these presents that we Leroy
Taylor Moses Taylor Josiah Taylor Avery Taylor John Taylor Sarah
Taylor his wife, Jesse Cox and Delany Cox wife to the said Jesse Cox
all of the District of Edgefield and State aforesaid in consideration
of one dollar to as in hand paid by Elijah Bird Senr: of the District
and State aforesaid Have granted bargained and sold and released and
by these presents do grant bargain sell and release unto the said
Elijah Bird all that tract or parcel to be laid out (containing one
hundred and twenty five acres it being a part of a tract of Land
granted to Ward Taylor Dec'd the first day of August in the year of
our Lord One thousand seven hundred and ninety one containing four
hundred and forty five acres Situate in the District and State
aforesaid on Crucked Run Creek waters of Turkey Creek & Stevens Creek
and Savannah river the line of Division to begin at the Southermost or
upper end and to Extend as far that parellel line to the upper most
will make or lay of the above mentioned hundred and twenty five acres
bound on Josiah Taylors S. Ward to W. Ward on Jesse Cox and Avery
Taylor. TOGETHER with all the Singular and rights members

hereditaments and appurtenances to the said Premises unto the said Elijah Bird Senr. his heirs and assigns forever and we all do hereby bind ourselves our heirs Executors & Administrators to warrant and forever defend all and Singular the premises before mentioned unto the said Elijah Bird Senr. his heirs and assigns against ourselves and our heirs & Lawfully claiming or to claim the same or any part thereof WITNESS our hands and Seals this Twenty Eighth day of October in the year of our Lord Eighteen hundred and in the twenty fifth year of the Independancy of the United States of America.

Signed Sealed & Delivered		Leroy Taylor (LS)
In Presence of		Moses Taylor (LS)
Jas. Blocker		Josiah Taylor (LS)
Solomon Bird		his
Thompson Moore	Delany X Cox	John X Taylor (LS)
Jesse Blocker	Sarah X Taylor	mark
Moses Taylor	Sary X Taylor	his
		Avery X Taylor (LS)
		mark

The two lines Interlined in consequence of the Boundaries and Warranting was before Signed——

James Blocker appeared before me and after being Sworn on his oath saith he was present and saw the within named Leroy Taylor, Moses Taylor, Josiah Taylor, John Taylor, Avery Taylor, Delany Cox, and Jesse Cox, sign seal and acknowledge the within Deed for the purposes therein contained and that he the Deponant Solomon Bird Thompson Moore & Jesse Blocker were witnesses to the due Execution thereof

Sworn to the 10th of Nov. 1800 James Blocker
before me R^d Tutt C.C.P.

South Carolina)
Edgefield District) Personally appeared Moses Taylor and made oath on the holy Evangelist of Almighty God that he was present and saw Lary Taylor sign and acknowledge the within Release for the purposes therein mentioned and he this deponant signed his name as witness hereto

Sworn to before me 24th day of November 1800 Moses Taylor

John Blocker J.P.

Recorded 1st Decr. 1800

Recorded in Deed Book 19, Pages 322, 323, 324, and 325
Edgefield County, South Carolina.

So, the children were Moses, Nerie, Nancy, Leroy, Josiah, John, and Delany. Ward's wife is believed to be Anne. Our ancestor was Moses Taylor.

Even with Ward dead in 1789, another mystery is at hand. Two more State of South Carolina land grants came through. On 1 August 1791, 425 acres were granted to Ward and on 1 October 1792, another 375 acres were granted. All the property was on Turkey Creek to "Ward Taylor, his heirs and assigns." Probably, he had petitioned for the land while alive and it came through after the funeral.

MOSES TAYLOR
b. 1761 - d. 1821

The reader will note that Taylor, the surname, may have been common, but the first names were not. Moses was born in 1761 (or 1762) in Camden, Kershaw County, SC, and died in November 1821 in Jones County, Georgia. His first wife and mother of his children is thought to have been Elizabeth Morriss, who died on 25 February 1802 in Edgefield County, SC, at the birth of her son, Job.

The children of Moses and Elizabeth were: Ward Taylor II, born in 1791 in South Carolina, married Mary Nancy Mathews, 31 May 1814, Milledgeville, GA, and settled eventually in Jefferson County, Texas; Elias Taylor, our ancestor, will be discussed later; Ozias Taylor; Joseph Taylor; Mary Taylor; Cessandra Taylor; Martha Taylor; Nancy M. Taylor; and, Job Taylor.

The Moses Taylor family moved from South Carolina to Jones County, GA, in 1806. Jones County is in the middle of Georgia - about the same thing as saying, "in the middle of nowhere". Georgia was being settled as the land was taken gradually from the Indians. Moses Taylor was 45 years old, a widower. His son, Elias, also our ancestor, was 15 years old.

Moses found himself with 101 1/2 acres to farm, a house full of teenagers and no wife. He solved the problem by marrying a widow (for about a year) named Rachel McGee Bonner on 23 March 1815. Rachel came complete with her own family including a fifteen year old daughter named Elizabeth Bonner. Mother Nature saved one room and one bed when Elias Taylor, 24, married Elizabeth Bonner on 22 June 1815. Elizabeth's brothers and sisters were William Neville, Henry Hubbard, Reuben McGee, and Martha. Moses Taylor and his wife, Rachel, both died in 1821 in Jones County, GA. They are shown in his home in the 1820 census.

Elizabeth Bonner's ancestors will be described later in this book.

ELIAS TAYLOR
b. 17 Mar 1791 - d. 5 Feb 1861

Elias was born back in South Carolina on Turkey Creek, before the move to Jones County, Georgia, when he was fifteen. He grew to manhood on the farm. Somewhere along the way, he was educated.

Jones County was authorized in 1807, the year after the Taylors arrived. The settlers lived in one room log cabins as they cleared their farms. Then, rooms were added to the cabin. Entertainments were wrestling, shooting matches, chicken fighting, horse racing, country dances, and drinking corn whiskey or peach brandy. An interesting book, The History of Jones County, Georgia, was written by Carolyn White Williams in 1957.

Earlier remarks explained the different nature of the Revolutionary fighting in South Carolina. Similarly, the War of 1812 in rural Georgia was not like the version taught to school children today. They know that Washington was burned by the British, that ships fought on the high seas, and they hear songs about the Battle of New Orleans. In Jones County, GA, the War of 1812 was called the Creek War. Runaway slaves and the Seminole Indians joined the British against the settlers. Tecumseh, the Indian Chief from up North, was sent by the British to Georgia with the Shawnee Indian tribe to stir up the Creek Nation of Indians. Nine-tenths of the Indians fought the Americans.

Elias Taylor was twenty-two in 1813, when, on August 23rd, he volunteered and joined Captain William Lee's Company of Volunteer Infantry, 2nd Regiment, Georgia Militia. The service of Elias Taylor has been proved and documented with the Society of the War of 1812.

2
(Joshua)
Ga. Vols.
and Mil.

Elias Taylor
for Capt. William Lee's Company,
2 Reg't Georgia State Troops
(War of 1812.)

Appears on
Company Pay Roll
for Aug 23, 1813 to Oct 8, 1813
Roll dated Oct 8, 1813
Commencement of service
or of this settlement, Aug 23, 1813
Expiration of service
or of this settlement, Oct 8, 1813
Term of service elapsed, 6 months, 18 days
Pay per month, 8 dollars, cents
Amount of pay, 52 dollars, 78 cents
Signet name,
Remarks:

2
(Joshua)
Ga. Vols.
and Mil.

Elias Taylor
for Capt. William Lee's Co. of Vol.
Inf., from Jones County, 1 Reg't
Georgia Militia.
(War of 1812.)

Appears on
Company Muster Roll
for Aug 23 to Oct 30, 1813
Roll dated Oct 8, 1813
Time of entering service, Aug 23, 1813
For what time engaged, 6 months
Present or absent, present
Remarks:

2
(Joshua)
Ga. Vols.
and Mil.

Elias Taylor
for Capt. William Lee's Co. of Vol.
Inf., from Jones County, 2 Reg't
Georgia Militia.
(War of 1812.)

Appears on
Company Muster Roll
for Sept 30, 1813 to Oct 8, 1813
Roll dated Milledgeville
Time of entering service, Aug 23, 1813
Expiration of service, Oct 8, 1813
Present or absent, present
Remarks:

The State of Mississippi
Jones County

On this the twenty eighth day of the
one thousand eight hundred and fifty one Personally appears
one George M. Weatherly acting Justice of the peace in and
for the County of Holmes & State aforesaid and duly authorized to
administer Oaths for general purposes, within and for the County and
State aforesaid Elias Taylor aged about Fifty seven years resident
of Holmes County and State of Mississippi who being duly sworn
according to law, declares and says, that he is the identical Elias
Taylor who was private in the company commanded by Captain
William Lee in the second Regiment of Georgia Infantry Commanded
by Col. Daniel Newman from the thirtieth of September 1813
until he was mustered to the ninth day of March 1814 under the
Command of Brig. Genl. John Floyd in the war of the United
States with the Creek Indians known as the Creek War, that he
Volunteered in Jones County State of Georgia on or about the last
of August or first of September 1813 for the term of six months
and continued in actual service in said war
and was honorably discharged at Milledgeville in the State of Georgia
By William R. Bosty Inspector Genl. on the ninth day of March 1814
as will appear by the Muster Rolls of said Company
He makes this Declaration for the purpose of obtaining the Bounty
Law to which he may be entitled under the act Granting Bounty
Law to certain Officers and Soldiers who have been engaged in the
Military Service of the United States Passed Sept. 28th 1850.

Elias Taylor

Even to and Subscribed before me
the day and year above written
And I hereby certify that I believe and know the said Elias Taylor to be
the identical man who bears as aforesaid and that he is of the
age above stated
George M. Weatherly J.P.
acting Justice Public Holmes

In the discussion of Ward, father of Elias, we told of the marriage of Elias Taylor to Elizabeth Bonner on 22 June 1815. He was listed as Head of Household in the 1820 census of Georgia.

By 1820, Elias was 29 years old. This young man had grown old in a hurry. A war behind him, married, settled, his situation is shown in the 1820 census (Jones Co., GA, p. 121.). He has 2 boys under 10, one 10-15, one 16-26, one girl 10-15, Elizabeth and Elias. He has six slaves and one person engaged in "commerce". The explanation of the six children is that Elizabeth's sister, Martha, and her brothers William N., Henry H., and Reuben M. became legal wards of Elias. Moses, Elias' father, his step-father and his father-in-law (a rare case!) died the next year, 1821. By 1820 they must have known that they were going to die soon, so the children were placed.

What prompted the next move west can be guessed only. It could have been ambition, the need for more land to support his family, a grant of bounty land, or encouragement from his older brother, Ward Taylor - who knows? But, in 1822, the family bid farewell to Jones County, GA, and headed west to Butler County, Alabama.

At this point, it is appropriate to bring Ward Taylor II into the story even though he is not an ancestor. He is the brother of Elias, an active leader in the family. He had come west first, married in Georgia and moved on to Butler County. A book, Butler County in the Nineteenth Century, by Marilyn Davis, tells about the first settlers and one of them is Ward. He lived one half mile from a place called Fort Dale, east of a stream that runs into Persimmon Creek. Ward delivered the first mail in the county on horseback, later by wagon. He developed and owned a stage coach line and he owned a hotel and a blacksmith shop. The hotel was not very nice. The rooms were small and he did not furnish bedding. The mattresses had too few feathers. Ward made patriotic speeches on holidays. He became the Militia Major and was sent to the Legislature in 1822. The book by Marilyn Davis continues to say: "In early 1822, his brother, Elias Taylor, moved out from Georgia, lived there a number of years, moved to Holmes County, Mississippi, where a few years ago he died. He was a man of sterling integrity, always commanded the respect of his fellow citizens; and on the Mississippi Central Railroad runs a magnificent engine bearing his honored name." Efforts to learn more about that engine from museums and libraries have been fruitless.

Elias opened his own stage line in Greenville, Alabama, where he lived. He employed one of his Bonner kin as a driver when he came west. In 1830, now 39, Elias had a still growing family: boys, 2(-5), 2(5-10), 2(10-15), 1(20-30); girls, 1(-5), and 1(10-15). He and Elizabeth headed the family. They had ten slaves. Our ancestor, their son, Ward J. Taylor was born two years later, in 1832, in Greenville, Alabama.

The move to Holmes County, MS, was made after Martha was born in 1837 in Alabama and before the census of 1840, which shows Elias in Holmes County, MS.

Today, over a hundred years later, about the only two pieces of evidence to show that Elias lived his life out in Mississippi are his tombstone in the Richland cemetery and his will in the courthouse at Lexington, MS.

My search for the Taylors started at the grave of Elias Taylor. My first cousin, Mary Elizabeth Parish, told me that she thought that our grandmother's kin were buried there. The cemetery is across the road from an historical marker for a "Little Red School" near Goodman, MS. The cemetery is owned by the county school board and is not maintained. Tombstones can be seen protruding from tree trunks. The Taylor plot is surrounded by an old iron fence. The stone of Elias Taylor is massive - eight feet long, three feet wide and several inches thick. Marble, turned black, the stone is broken into two pieces and moved off the foot high brick pedestal onto the ground by vandals. The letters are deep and clear, "Sacred to the Memory / Elias Taylor / born Mar. 17, 1791 / died Feb. 5th, 1861." In the same plot, Elizabeth is buried, but no stone stands today. Other names in the plot are Weatherby, Craig, and Patterson.

When Elias and his family came to Goodman, MS, he must have continued in the hotel, stage line business, if to a limited degree. The Census of 1850, the first to show the names of all the members of the family, is interesting.

Free Inhabitants enumerated by me, on the 30th day of August 1850. *W. D. Johnson* Agent Marshal 282

The Name of every Person whose name appears of abode on the first day of June 1850, was in this family.			Sex and Age			Profession, Occupation, or Trade of each Male Person over 15 years of age.		Place or Birth, Naming the State, Territory, or Country.		Whether deaf and dumb, blind, insane, idiotic, pauper, or convict.	
1	2	3	4	5	6	7	8	9	10	11	12
<i>Elias Taylor</i>	<i>30</i>	<i>M</i>	<i>30</i>	<i>30</i>	<i>30</i>	<i>Farmer</i>	<i>1000</i>	<i>U.C.</i>			
<i>Robert</i>	<i>17</i>	<i>M</i>	<i>17</i>	<i>17</i>						<i>✓</i>	
<i>Caroline</i>	<i>14</i>	<i>F</i>	<i>14</i>	<i>14</i>						<i>✓</i>	
<i>John</i>	<i>13</i>	<i>M</i>	<i>13</i>	<i>13</i>						<i>✓</i>	
<i>Elizabeth</i>	<i>9</i>	<i>F</i>	<i>9</i>	<i>9</i>						<i>✓</i>	
<i>Ward</i>	<i>18</i>	<i>M</i>	<i>18</i>	<i>18</i>	<i>Medical Student</i>					<i>✓</i>	
<i>Mary</i>	<i>16</i>	<i>F</i>	<i>16</i>	<i>16</i>						<i>✓</i>	
<i>Miranda</i>	<i>13</i>	<i>F</i>	<i>13</i>	<i>13</i>						<i>✓</i>	
<i>Caroline</i>	<i>9</i>	<i>F</i>	<i>9</i>	<i>9</i>						<i>✓</i>	
<i>George</i>	<i>28</i>	<i>M</i>	<i>28</i>	<i>28</i>	<i>Dentist</i>					<i>✓</i>	
<i>Edward</i>	<i>31</i>	<i>M</i>	<i>31</i>	<i>31</i>	<i>Student</i>					<i>✓</i>	
<i>Oliver</i>	<i>19</i>	<i>M</i>	<i>19</i>	<i>19</i>						<i>✓</i>	
<i>Phillip</i>	<i>31</i>	<i>M</i>	<i>31</i>	<i>31</i>						<i>✓</i>	
<i>James</i>	<i>19</i>	<i>M</i>	<i>19</i>	<i>19</i>						<i>✓</i>	
<i>John</i>	<i>17</i>	<i>M</i>	<i>17</i>	<i>17</i>						<i>✓</i>	
<i>Frank</i>	<i>20</i>	<i>M</i>	<i>20</i>	<i>20</i>						<i>✓</i>	
<i>Henry</i>	<i>28</i>	<i>M</i>	<i>28</i>	<i>28</i>	<i>Teacher</i>					<i>✓</i>	
<i>John</i>	<i>13</i>	<i>M</i>	<i>13</i>	<i>13</i>						<i>✓</i>	
<i>Mary</i>	<i>11</i>	<i>F</i>	<i>11</i>	<i>11</i>						<i>✓</i>	

Although dim, his son, Ward, age 18, a medical student born in Alabama, is shown. The "hotel" is full of students, a dentist, a teacher, and others. Elias calls himself a farmer. His youngest child is Caroline, aged 9.

The will of Elias is in the county courthouse and a copy is in the Mormon Library in Salt Lake City. (E89619-904440 p.276-9). It is long. Of interest is the beautiful handwriting. He mentions only one child, called Francis C. This must be the daughter, Caroline, in the census. He provides for her and his wife, then has the rest divided equally among the other heirs, after giving land to the Methodist Church for a new church building. A copy of the signature of Elias, from the original will is below:

I do hereby nominate and appoint my Executors W. D. Taylor & O. Robert. Witness my hand & seal. Elias Taylor

The 1860 census has Elias at 66 years and Elizabeth at 60. The only other person in the house is "Cornelia". Probably, this is the Caroline of the 1850 census or the Francis C. of the will. The age checks out. She is 19, unmarried, and may have cared for her old parents. Census takers were very careless with the names of children. Elias died the next year, 1861.

DR. WARD J. TAYLOR married PARILEE COCK
b. 1832 - d. ? 15 Sep 1855 b. 1838 - d. ?

This marriage was discussed, partly, on pages 27 through 29 as the life story of Nora L. Taylor Metts, wife of John Phillip Metts, was described. The complicated research problems with continuing mysteries unsolved make some repetition worth while. Perhaps, this repetition will provide emphasis and interest that will lead to continued successful research.

Great fathers try to raise great sons in many cases. The sons are given everything to insure greatness. The opportunities are there. Our ancestor, Ward J. Taylor, seems to have tried to remain invisible. Only part of his life is exposed by documents. He appears in the census of his father's home as an 18 year old medical student born in Greenville, Butler County, Alabama, in 1832. The best way to tell about Doctor Ward and Parilee is to give dates, in order, and events.

1838 A little girl was born in Wilson County, TN, a few miles east of Nashville. She was Parilee Cock, daughter of Linius Cock. The Cock family will be the subject of another chapter. Parilee was six years younger than Ward, Her family moved to Holly Springs, MS, when she was small. They lived with her uncle, Caswell Cock, for a while, then moved on to Texas. Her father was a prosperous farmer in Panola County, Texas.

1850 The U.S. Census showed Ward Taylor as a medical student. Soon after 1850, Ward left home and headed for Texas. His uncle, for whom he was named, had settled in east Texas. That may be why Ward III went to Carthage, Texas, in Panola County.

1855 On September 15, 1855, the Marshall, Texas newspaper printed these words: "Married at the residence of Mr. Spierman Holland, in Panola County, by Rev. Mr. Lentz, on the 12th inst., Dr. Ward J. Taylor of Carthage, to Miss Parilee Cock of Panola." The marriage license was issued on August 5th.

Also, the courthouse records of marriages show, "9-12-1855 Ward Taylor - Parilee Cock." Emphasis is directed to the complete record of the marriage and the fact that Ward is called Doctor Taylor.

1855-1857 During this period, Ward and Parilee, using her name as "Parilee Taylor", were involved in a number of real estate transactions - and so was Parilee's father, Linius Cock. Deed Book A, in Panola County, acting individually, rather than as a couple gives the impression that they were speculating.

1857 Nora L. Taylor, my grandmother, was born.

1860 The U.S. Census of 1860, household number 795, shows: W.J. Taylor, 27, Farmer; Parilee Taylor, 20, House keeper; Nora, 3; and Willie, 9/12. Our grandmother, Nora Taylor Metts was born in Carthage, Texas, not in Tyler as shown on her death certificate. Note that Ward calls himself a farmer, not a doctor.

At this point, the cloud of mystery rolls into the family history. Parilee Cock Taylor disappears! Some old papers in the Cock family say she, "married Taylor and lived in Mississippi". Mrs. Jim Cocke, who is a genealogist of the Cocke family and who lives in Longview, TX, went to Carthage and searched Panola County, Tx, but found no trace of evidence about what happened to Parilee. After seeing how well the wedding was documented, surely her death would have been noted somewhere. It is not.

Next, her uncle Caswell still lived in Holly Springs, MS. Nora Taylor said that she had gone to school in Holly Springs. Nora also talked sadly about her brother, named Caswell, who ran away from home and was never heard from again. Ward may have taken his family back to Caswell Cock's home in Holly Springs. Nora named my father Albert Caswell Metts. I have that name and so has my son.

1862 The census of 1870 shows Caswell Taylor, age 8, so he was born in 1862. He must have been the son of Parilee because Caswell Cock was her uncle. Did she die in childbirth with Caswell? Who knows? Efforts to learn the truth have been futile. Available books and the help of the President of the Marshall County (MS) Historical Society in Holly Springs have produced no results. Caswell Cock buried his little daughter, Fannie Wade Cock, in the Holly Springs Cemetery in 1856. If Parilee had died in Holly Springs, there should be some evidence. Mormon Church records of all cemeteries in Holmes County, MS, were checked. Mayor A.S. Donald of Goodman, MS, tried to find Parilee. Results are negative.

1861-1865 The War Between the States was called the Civil War by the yankees. By whatever name, it brought pain and suffering to the people of the South. Starvation and disease took a terrible toll. Parilee Taylor may have been a victim. Ward Taylor was 29 years old in 1861 Did he serve? Yes, he did serve. The U.S. Archives have Confederate and Union records. As stated earlier on page 28, Ward joined Captain T.D. Sedberry's Company of Waterhouse's Regiment of Texas Volunteers for three years. He is listed as 30 years old. Later, the unit was redesignated as Company "F", 19th Texas Infantry. Ward was a Confederate private. After a few months, he was discharged for disability for "hemoptysis and an organic disease of the heart". A copy of his records follows this discussion. Hemoptysis means "expectoration of blood from some part of the respiratory tract". This may explain the sad events before and later. With no proof, he may have had tuberculosis. Highly contagious, it may explain the mysterious disappearance of his wife, Parilee.

1866-1877 The war is over. Ward Taylor and a new wife are in Holmes County, MS. As a couple, they are busy buying and selling property. They bought a lot in Richland from R. Craig and wife on 9 March 1866. They sold land in May 1870 - land from the estate of his father, old Elias. Ward and wife, Kittie F. Taylor deeded land in Goodman on 4 March 1872. They bought and sold four lots in Goodman in 1877. These records were found in the Lexington Courthouse by Mr. Joe Moore, Chancery Clerk.

1870 The U.S. Census of 1870 shows Ward as a doctor in Richland, near Goodman, MS. His new wife, Kittie, is 13 years younger than Ward, only 10 years older than Nora! The census, in error, shows Nora and Wm to be born in Mississippi. They were born in Texas. All the children were shown with MS birth. Ward G., age 2, is the son of Kittie and Ward J. That is shown on the tombstone of the child in the Richland Cemetery. That stone proves that Ward and Kittie were married in 1867 or earlier. The tombstone shows, also, that Ward and Kittie lost an unnamed baby in 1870 and "Little Wardie", age 6, in 1874. The stone is near the grave of old Elias, the grandfather of the babies.

1876 Nora Taylor married her first husband, Charles Boyd. She moved to Kosciusko, MS.

From all the above dates, we have seen part of the life of Dr. Ward J. Taylor. We do not know what happened to Parilee Cock Taylor. The dates bring us to 1877. Then, Dr. Ward J. Taylor steps into the shadows again. If he put the GTT sign on his door, I do not know. (GONE TO TEXAS) A check of Texas counties, including Caswell Cock in Marshall County, turned up negative. The Mississippi census of 1780 does not help. So at the age of 45, with a 32 year old wife, nothing remains to be said but this: The story of the Cock family will be covered in another chapter. The tale of the Taylors has come to the junction with the Metts family. Nora Taylor's story is with that of her husband, John Phillip Metts.

Most genealogy books make heroes of every ancestor or say nothing, even if the truth has to suffer. In the case of Ward, this writer goes on record with this statement: He deserves our gratitude. He did his part in giving us one of the finest ladies ever born, my grandmother, Nora L. Taylor Metts.

Taylor Ward Jr
Co. G, 19 Texas Infantry.

(Confederate.)

Private | Private

CARD NUMBERS.

1	5-0685-267	20
2	5-35-2	21
3	5431	22
4		23
5		24
6		25
7		26
8		27
9		28
10		29
11		30
12		31
13		32
14		33
15		34
16		35
17		36
18		37
19		38

Number of medical cards herein 0

Number of personal papers herein 0

BOOK MARK: _____

See also _____

(Confederate.)

5 | 19 | Texas.

Ward Taylor, Jr.

Pvt., Capt. T. D. Sadberry's Company, Waterhouse, Jr.'s Reg't Texas Vols.

Age 30 years.

Appears on

Company Muster-in Roll

of the organization named above.

Roll dated Jefferson, Tex

May 10, 1862

Muster-in to date May 10, 1862

Joined for duty and enrolled:

When May 10, 1862

Where Jefferson

By whom R. Waterhouse, Jr.

Period 3 years

No. of miles to rendezvous 8

Remarks:

*This company subsequently became Company F, 19th Regiment Texas Infantry.

Book mark:

R. Y. Gies.

(666)

Copyist.

(Confederate.)

5 | 19 | Texas.

Ward Taylor, Jr.

Pvt., Co. F, 19 Reg't Texas Infantry.

Appears on

Company Muster Roll

of the organization named above,

for May 10 to July 1, 1862

Enlisted:

When May 10, 1862

Where Jefferson, Tex

By whom R. Waterhouse, Jr.

Period War

Last paid:

By whom

To what time, 1862

Present or absent Present

Remarks:

Book mark:

R. Y. Gies.

(642)

Copyist.

(Confederate.)

5 | 19 | Texas.

Ward Taylor, Jr.

Pvt., Co. F, 19 Reg't Texas Infantry.

Appears on

Company Muster Roll

of the organization named above,

for July + Aug, 1862

Enlisted:

When May 10, 1862

Where Jefferson, Tex

By whom R. Waterhouse, Jr.

Period War

Last paid:

By whom

To what time not paid, 1862

Present or absent

Remarks: Discharged June the 30th '62 By order of Genl. E. McCulloch

Book mark:

R. Y. Gies.

(642)

Copyist.

92-a

Definition of "Hemoptysis": Expectoration of blood from some part of the Respiratory Tract.

Certificate of Disability for Discharge

Ward Taylor, of Capt. J. D. Seaborn's company (F) of the nineteenth (19th) Regiment of Texas Infantry Volunteers of the Confederate States Army, was enlisted by Col. R. Waterhouse, jr (19th) nineteenth Regiment Texas Infantry at Jefferson Texas on the 10th day of May A. D. 1862 to serve three years or the war. He was born in Butler County in the State of Alabama, is thirty years of age, six feet high, light complexion, dark eyes and dark hair and by occupation when enlisted a Teacher

During the last two months said soldier has been unfit for duty

I, Capt. J. D. Seaborn do certify that I have known the said Ward Taylor for twelve years, and have known that he has been diseased as stated in Surgeon's Certificate for the last four years, and believe it might prove fatal at any time

Camp Waterhouse, Texas

J. D. Seaborn, Capt
Comd'g Co (F) 19th Reg Texas Inf

June 30th 1862

I certify that I have carefully examined the said Ward Taylor of Capt. J. D. Seaborn's Company and find him incapable of performing the duties of a soldier because of Haemoptysis and also an organic disease of the heart

Camp Waterhouse, Texas

June 30th 1862

H. Witherington Surgeon
19th Reg Texas Inf

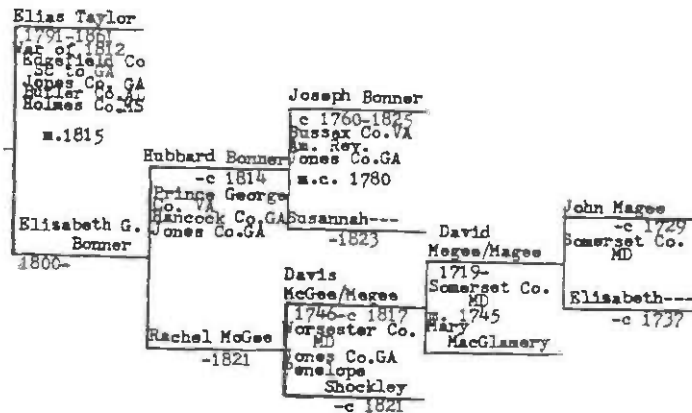
Station Jefferson Texas

Discharged this 30th day of July 1862. at Jefferson Texas

R. Waterhouse Jr
Col Comd'g 19th Regiment Texas Inf

Bonner & McGee

The McGees and the Bonners were the ancestors of Elizabeth G. Bonner who married Elias Taylor in 1815. The information in this chapter was provided entirely by Mrs. Eugenia Bounds of Macon, Mississippi. Her thorough research and documentation seem to have determined what can be learned about these families. She generously provided a copy of her files. Only the segments dealing with the direct line are included here. A portion of the Metts chart, below, shows where they fit into the family.



The McGees came from Maryland. Most of the other Metts immigrants came from Virginia or South Carolina. The early history of Maryland differed from that of other colonies in several ways. Lord Baltimore established the first colony in 1634. The Maryland colonists spent more time fighting with Virginians than they did fighting with Indians. The laws of Maryland forbid the persecution of any Christians. This differed from practice in the other colonies, where religious intolerance was common. Persecuted settlers came to Maryland from Pennsylvania, Virginia, and other colonies in greater numbers than immigrants from Europe.

We do not know the name of our first McGee in America. There is record of Edward, Henry and Patrick Magee being transported to Maryland in 1674 (Liber 18, Folio 152). No evidence yet found links one of them with the first ancestor that we know, John Magee of Somerset County, Maryland. Our McGees spelled the name Magee, Megee, and McGee. This is just one more case of "sounds like" spelling. Somerset County is at the very end of Maryland - east and south. The county was established in 1666 and has records from that date.

A gentleman, Caleb R. Megee was 81 in 1969. He wrote about his family and his words/cannot be improved. According to Caleb:

"John Magee purchased Coxe's Choice Plantation---300 acres in Somerset Co., Md. for which he paid, as stated in the deed, 6,000 lbs of tobacco. said John made a will, dated 20 April 1728, which I have.---"

The will was made by John Magee, planter, of Somerset County. He named his wife, Elizabeth, and left her 1/3 of the estate as long as she was unmarried. He mentions seven children, but names only six sons, George, John, Peter, Samuel, Moses and David. The first three got 100 acres each from the

plantation. One of the witnesses was a John Shockley. At the time of the will, the last four sons were minors. Now, we return to Caleb's tale:

"John Magee's widow, Elizabeth, probated his Will in July, 1729, and in Oct., 1729 an entry is shown in Princess Anne, Md. where John Davis and wife Elizabeth, formerly Elizabeth Magee, rendered a report of the personal property of the late John Magee. She made her X mark while he wrote in a clear hand John Davis. The Will of Said John Davis shows he had lands, and as being well off. Evidently, his wife had passed away not too long prior to John Magee's reaching 'Journey's End' and Elizabeth Magee (the widow) needed help, and perhaps John Davis needed companionship. Young David Magee was only about 10 years old in 1729 and John Davis must have been a right good step-father because David thought so much of him that he named his first child, born in 1746, Davis Magee.

"Don't know when Elizabeth (Magee) Davis died, but she rendered the final report on the John Magee Estate in 1737, as shown in Princess Anne, Md., when David Magee, b. 1719, reached age 18. Think she was quite a bit younger than husband John Magee.

"I have always understood, from a very young boy, that our family originated in Scotland, then moved over to County Antrim (Protestant North Ireland) but I never could locate a port of entry here for John. Spent something less than \$100 trying to locate records in County Antrim and looking in England. Think he probably had worked his way over (sailor) and married after he got here."

John Magee's son, Peter, is the ancestor of Caleb R. Magee. Son, David is our ancestor.

DAVID MEGEE/MAGEE

b. 1719

The early life of David Magee is indicated in the discussion of his father. At age 10, he got a new step-father of means. He married Mary McGlamery on 31 Oct 1745 at Stepney Parish, Worcester County, Maryland. We do not know the name of her father, but the Maryland Calendar of Wills, p. 225, shows a will of Edward Maglamery, Worcester County, 19 April 1743, proved 25 September 1743. He had seven children, three of which were girls. He may be Mary's father. In turn, another Edward McGlamery (Maglamery), Somerset County, had a will in 1721, proved 21 Oct 1723. He leaves half of a plantation called "Partner's Choice" to a son named Edward. A wife, Hannah is mentioned. They could be Mary's grandparents.

Back to David Magee and to the words of Caleb: "David Magee (b. 1719) was a civic-minded man of Salisbury Town, Md. He signed the petition for a charter for Salisbury. Apparently, he dealt in real estate; there are numerous deeds. All at once, in 1774 he sold 2 pieces of property, and there never appeared any records of David Magee after that date. One of the researchers that I employed did a lot of checking in various Eastern States and he reported a record of a David Magee who said he came to Kentucky in 1775. I did not follow it any further."

David may have moved on to Kentucky. The 1790 Census shows a David Magee in Hopkins County, Kentucky. In 1775, he was in his fifties - a little too old in those days. But the immigration routes west were being opened. Daniel Boone crossed the Cumberland Gap in 1769 and blazed out the "Wilderness Road". Between 1774 and 1790 there were 70,000 people who followed that trail. David and Mary may have been among them.

If they moved, some of their children must have been with them because Ann Mary was born 19 Jan 1761, Betty came along on 4 Mar 1763, and David was born on 12 Mar 1765. Their ages were 13, 11 and 9 in 1774. The older children were first born Davis, our ancestor, Moses, Leah, Nelly, Reuben, and Josiah.

Reuben and Josiah both served in Maryland's 5th Regiment during the American Revolution.

DAVIS McGEE / MEGEE
b. 1746 - d. about 1817

The birth and selection of a name for Davis was discussed earlier. He was the oldest child in a large family. He married Penelope Shockley in Worcester County, Maryland.

Continuing with the account of Caleb: "In the same year (1774) Davis Magee, who married Nelly Shockley 176_, sold his household goods, or many of them to Elijah Shockley and in my personal opinion started southward, tarrying a while in North Carolina, thence to Georgia. My information indicates that Davis's son Joseph reported (in census) that he was born in Maryland, 1786, which may be correct. Maybe Nelly made a home visit of some duration. Said Joseph died 22 May 1855 in Holmes County, Mississippi. His first wife was Matilda Brantley whom he married 12 December 1808. For his second wife he married Susan Bonner, who was a sister to Hubbard Bonner, who was in turn the husband of Rachel Magee (McGee), a sister of Joseph Magee (McGee)." (Note: Davis McGee, Rachel McGee, and Hubbard Bonner are our ancestors.)

The different spellings of McGee have been used as the applicable documents show their names. Davis recorded McGee in Georgia in 1788 and that has been the spelling since then. At that time, 4 October 1788, Davis McGee paid 75 pounds for 200 acres on Shoulder-bone Creek in Hancock County, Georgia. (BKB, p. 31) Later, Davis acted as Administrator of the estate of Elijah MacGlamery of Hancock County. What kin was he? Who knows?

On 13 January 1804, Davis McGee sold 100 of the 200 acres. (BKG, p. 36) He was preparing to leave Hancock County for Jones County, Ga. As a matter of interest, several of our ancestors lived in Hancock County, GA. Today, in 1985, the county seat is Sparta. The old red brick courthouse stands in the center of squalid unpainted shacks. The Confederate soldier has been taken from the monument. (Buried?) Only the base remains. The doors of the courthouse are gone. The first floor is a dance hall with vending machines. County business is conducted upstairs. Records that remain are available for the taking. If a single white person lives in the county, it would be surprising. Fortunately, the Georgia Archives copied many of the records and have them on file. Now, we turn back to Davis McGee.

In Jones County, Georgia, April 1808, Davis McGee and a man named Loid paid 500 dollars for 202 1/2 acres. Another record of 19 December 1808, shows Davis McGee selling 202 1/2 acres for 150 dollars. It would seem that he lost money, but the plots may have been different. The 202 1/2 size was common in the county because that was the size of land grants. At any rate, Davis paid taxes on 202 1/2 acres in 1811 and the land joined Taylor. Remember from the Taylor chapter that Moses Taylor and Elias Taylor lived in Jones County.

Aside, of interest, another couple of ancestors lived in Jones County in those days - Rev. Joshua Sanford Callaway and his wife Elizabeth Shivers. He was one of the great and famous old Baptist preachers. More will be written about him in the Oliver and Callaway chapters.

Davis McGee seems to have let the American Revolution pass without serving. Two of his brothers served. He was 30 in 1776. Maybe he was a lover instead of a fighter. He and Nelly produced a total of nine children. Their names were Milby, Josiah, James, Rachel (our ancestor), Joseph, Sarah, Richard Henry, Charlotte, and Davis, Jr.

When Davis McGee wrote his will on 15 January 1816 (Probated 3 Feb 1817, Estate Bk A, p. 244), he made the usual statement and gave all to Nelly as

NSSAR. In later years, in Georgia, as an invalid soldier of the Revolution, Joseph drew from the Harris Militia District of Jones County, Lot #127 in the 27th District of Early County (250 acres) and lot #493 in the 8th District of Appling County (490 acres). He already owned 202 1/2 acres on Commissioner's Creek in Jones County, GA.

After the Revolution, Joseph Bonner settled in Prince George County, VA, and married Susannah. Their son, William, was born in 1781. The names of four of their children are known. William, above, was followed by our ancestor, Hubbard Bonner. Then came Uriah and Susan. She was born 25 February 1791. All were born in Prince George County. A daughter, Mildred, who married Benjamine Weatherby, has been claimed, but proof is yet to be found.

Joseph was listed as a tax payer with 1 tithe and 12 slaves. His name is on various land documents in 1789 and 1790. By 1793, he owned land in Wilkes County, GA.

In 1799, he and Jeremiah Bonner were administrators in the estate of Robert Bonner in Hancock County, GA. Later, in 1806, he witnessed a will in Warren County, GA. Wilkes, Warren, Hancock, and Jones Counties are along a line from NE Georgia to the center, below Atlanta. These counties were the homes of many of our ancestors as they moved west.

Joseph Bonner finally ended his life in Jones County, Georgia. His 202 1/2 acres were next to the farm of his son, Hubbard. Joseph died 6 Jan 1825 leaving no will. His property must have been divided among his heirs.

HUBBARD BONNER

d. about 1814

Born in Prince George County, Virginia, Hubbard came south with his family about 1791. All these dates and moves become monotonous, but they tell the moving story of the American settlers looking for better land and a better life. Disappointments were more common than good fortune. The life of a farmer is never easy. Hard work killed these men and child bearing killed the women. They wasted no time in getting on with their lives. Time wasted was lost. Hubbard came from Virginia as he was approaching manhood.

A little earlier, as we have seen, the McGee family was moving from Maryland to Georgia for much the same reason as the Bonners. The two families must have met at Hancock County just before the turn of the century. Hubbard Bonner married Rachel McGee. From there, the moves can be tracked by the arrival of the stork, that great old bird that brings babies.

Elizabeth Bonner came about 1800 in Jefferson County, GA. She is our ancestor who would marry Elias Taylor.

Martha was next in 1803 in Jefferson County. She married John Tinsley.

Third was William Nevil Bonner on 1 Oct 1806, in Hancock County. This is the young man who worked with Elias Taylor, driving stage coaches in Alabama.

Next, Henry Hubbard Bonner, 4 Nov 1808, was born, also, in Hancock County.

Reuben was last, 8 Nov 1810, in Jones County, GA. Now, we find Joseph Bonner, Hubbard Bonner, and Moses Taylor all having farms on Commissioner's Creek in Jones County.

On 18 Apr 1814, Hubbard is dead. The court had Rachel administer the estate. There was no will. Moses Taylor was one of the appraisers. The inventory is what Hubbard had to show for a hard life. It also gives a picture of the possessions of a well-to-do family in those times and the value of the items in dollars, which were not inflated in those days. Notice the high value of the slaves, compared to the price put on household items and animals.

INVENTORY OF HUBBARD BONNER'S ESTATE

The following is a true Inventory & Appraisement of all the goods, chattels, rights & credits of Hubbard Bonner deceased pointed out to us by Rachel Bonner, Administratrix this 18th day of April 1814.

35 head of hogs \$55.00	5 cows & calves \$45.00	\$100.00
13 head of cattle \$47.00	1 Bay mare \$40.00	87.00
Bay filley \$65.00	1 lot corn, 120 bu. at \$.50, \$60	125.00
1 lot of fodder, 2000 lbs at \$1.00 per Cwt		20.00
1 bee hive \$2.00	1 Musket \$4.00	6.00
1 lot of Earthen Ware \$10.00	1 set of knives and forks \$1.50	11.50
1 lot of tin Ware \$3.00	1 lot of Pewter \$5.00	8.00
1 lot of jugs \$1.50	1 lot of Bottles \$.50	2.00
1 Jar \$.50	1 lot of Carpentry tools \$2.00	2.50
1 lot of Books \$10.00	1 sett of Sad Irons \$1.50	11.50
8 Chairs \$4.00	1 Chest & trunk \$4.00	8.00
1 Table \$1.00	3 feather Beds & furniture & 4 Steads \$91.50	92.50
1 Ox Cart at \$20.00	1 Loom, 4 Slays & 2 pairs of harnes at \$7.00	27.50
2 Wheels & 2 pairs of cards \$6.00	1 lot of Cooking Ware \$3.00	9.00
1 Coffee Mill \$1.50	1 Tray \$.50	2.00
	2 Saddles \$8.00	10.00
7 Geese \$3.50	1 lot Kitchen furniture \$10.00	13.50
1 lot of household Lumber		2.50
1 lot of Bacon supposed at 600 lbs		60.00
1 lot of Lard supposed 40 lbs.		4.00
1 lot of Soap supposed 40 lbs.		4.00
1 lot of Plantation utinsels		16.00
1 lot of Oats supposed at 15 bu.		6.00
3 Padlocks \$1.00	3 pecks of Salt \$2.00	3.00
1 Sett of Shoe Brushes \$.25	1 lot of Seed Cotton 360 lbs. \$7.00	7.25
10 Due Bills, Accounts and Notes by name and date (most kinfolks)		67.76
To Cash on Hand		20.00
1 Negro man named Frank		275.00
1 Negro woman named Aggy		125.00
1 Negro man named Nathan		450.00
1 Negro woman named Celia		400.00
1 Square of land, lot 201, Dist. 6, Jones County, Ga.		800.00

We do certify that the foregoing is a true Inventory & Appraisement of all the goods, chattels, rights and credits of Hubbard Bonner deceased as pointed out to us by Rachel Bonner, Administratrix.

Moses Taylor
William Northern, Jr.
William Bonner

By 1815, Elizabeth Bonner will have married Elias Taylor and Rachel will have married his father, Moses. By 1818, Martha will have married John Tinsley. The other children will have become wards of Elias.

In 1821, both Moses and Rachel died in the fever epidemic that devastated Jones County. So ends the McGee - Bonner chapter of the family history.

Cock

This surname has been researched by many people for many years. It can be spelled many ways - COCK, COCKE, and COX are the most usual. All mean the same - a rooster. The first man named Cock, back in the Middle Ages, when one name was enough, must have looked like a rooster, or sounded like a rooster. Maybe he looked, sounded, and acted like one. That's the way names were chosen.

Thousands of pages have been written about people named Cock. Their history goes back to the tenth century. England had many families with the name. Several of the leading families in Jamestown were named Cocke. It is unfortunate that so many records in America were destroyed by war or fire. We use what remains to study the past.

The leading researcher and writer of the Cocke family, today, is Virginia Webb Cocke of Winston-Salem, NC. She has written two thorough and detailed books and will publish two more. She has a listing of all descendants of Nora Taylor Metts and will include them in her next book. Of course, she can publish only as much as her research has revealed. All genealogists work together to solve the mysteries of the past and to determine the truth. It would be presumptuous of this writer to vary from the line set in the book, Cockes and Cousins, Vol. II. This chapter will extract the direct line as it applies to our family.

Earlier, in the Taylor chapter, the life of Parilee Cock was discussed. She was the wife of Dr. Ward J. Taylor and the mother of Nora Taylor Metts. Parilee was a member of the Cock family.

The first Cock that we can claim is Alexander Cock of Bedford County, Virginia. Records in the St. Paul's Parish Vestry Book, Henrico County, Virginia, indicate that he was born between 1686 and 1700. He may have been an immigrant because he received his land by grant or purchase rather than by inheritance. On the other hand, couples had many children in those days. All did not inherit land. Some genealogists think that Alexander had sons named Bradley, John, William, and George. His wife, first name unknown, was the daughter of Thomas Bradley, an early settler of Hanover County. The name, Thomas Bradley, is included in a list of "eminent English merchants of the 17th Century who either lived in Virginia or had near relatives living there". Along with other names is, "Thomas Bradley, son of Thomas Bradley, D.D., Chaplain to Charles I". Then, in 1702, Anthony Winston sold to Thomas Bradley, of King William County, a tract of land on Mehixon Creek in St. Peter's Parish, New Kent County. The Virginia Quit Rent Rolls showed him to own 255 acres. Much later, in 1734, Thomas is listed in King William Parish. The Vestry Book of St. Paul's Parish mentions Thomas Bradley 4 times, Alexander Cock, 24 times, and George Cock twice. Also, the "small record book" in Hanover County mentions Alexander Cock in 1733. Other than the above, nothing is known of Alexander Cock. To say that a shadow hangs over the man is an understatement. We can call him the father of George Cock until a better candidate can be found.

Why is this indecision about the Cock line expressed? It is because eventual proof of lineage in this autocratic family is worthwhile. There is little or no doubt that our line goes back to one of the four original Cocke immigrants. Also, it is probable, but not proved, that our line is the most prestigious of the four, the family from Bremo. James C. Southall, an eminent genealogist, says that there are four distinct lines:

1. The main line of Richard Cocke from before 1632, of Henrico County, VA. Brems and Malvern Hills were the family homes.
2. The family of Surry and Princess Anne Counties in Virginia. They came in 1690, after our line has been documented.
3. The line of Secretary William Cocke of Williamsburg, coming about 1705, also too late for our line.
4. The Cockes and Coxes of Lancaster, Middlesex, and Westmoreland Counties. Nicholas came in 1658. Maurice and Pressley came before 1700. Early records contain a Fleet Cox. Our line has used Fleet as a first name.

Our line has used, also, the name **Bowler** as a first name. This unique name was common in the Richard Cocke line. The third generation Richard Cocke married Anne Bowler, and many future generations gave that name to their children. Eventually, someone will find documents and determine the truth. Meanwhile, we go on to George Cock, who is considered to be the son of Alexander Cock.

GEORGE COCK

b. 1728 - d. 1802

George lived in Bedford County, Virginia, in the part which became Campbell County in 1782. He was mentioned, along with Alexander Cock, in the St. Paul's Parish Vestry Book in the early 1700's. As was true with Alexander, there were very few records of George. We can blame the Yankees for most of the problems because they burned so many valuable Virginia records during the War Between the States. Earlier, the British had burned the census records in Washington in 1812. For lack of better documents, we use tax records. Those of Campbell County for 1785 show George had 3 white and 11 black persons. John is shown with one white and 11 blacks. They were the only Cocks in Campbell County. George wrote his will on 24 December 1801 and it was probated 14 June 1802. (W.B. 2:88 Campbell Co., VA) The will names the following ten children: Elizabeth Talbot, Jack, Jamima Gilbert, Mary Kent, Sarah Kent, George, Nancy Stith, Thomas, Rebecca Marshall, and William. The son, Jack, is considered to be our ancestor, John W. Cock.

JOHN W. COCK

d. 1823

Beginning at this point, the evidence is more and better to establish the Cock lineage. John was born in Hanover County, Virginia, in the part which became Campbell County in 1782. Patrick Henry gave it the name Campbell after his brother-in-law, a general in the Revolution. The date of John's birth is not known, but we do know that he lived a long and fruitful life. The first date in evidence is 1773, when Sally, his third child, was born. A guess would put his birth before 1750.

John was married three times and fathered fifteen children. His first wife, Elizabeth (Jones?) gave him six children, Thomas J., William, Sally, Nancy, Polly, and John Calvin. They lived in Campbell County. In 1784, John bought 50 acres on both sides of Big Falling River and, two years later, another 360 acres on Molley's Creek (Briery). In 1788, he sold some of the land. In 1790, he sold 140 acres on the south branch of Bull Creek.

The second marriage was recorded in Campbell County as follows: "Cock, John and Mary Tweedy (In her own name), bond 20 August 1796. John Cock (b) and Robert Tweedy (b); Joseph Tweedy (w) and Robert Tweedy (w). M.R. 1796 by Charles Cobbs listed the groom as John Cock." Mary was the daughter of Joseph and Fanny Tweedy. The seven children of John and Mary were: Joseph, born 1798; Fleet, born 1800; Jarrett; Elizabeth, whose estate was administered by Lynnaeus in Campbell County in 1829; Lynnaeus, born 1810, our ancestor;

Caswell; and, Martha. We will discuss several of these children when we describe the life of Lynnaeus.

About this time, John moved from Campbell County to Wilson County, TN. The death of old George may have caused the move. George, Sr., on 11 July 1801 gave George, Jr., "with love", 450 acres and dwelling on Falling River and Molley's Creek. Then, old George died. George, Jr. had thirteen children in 1812. So, whatever the reason, John W. went west about 1810.

There is an official document which lists "Citizens furnishing Supplies, Arms, teams, etc. or rendering other service to the Continental Army — between 17th March 1782 and 4th April 1783." On this list for Campbell County, VA, are: Cock, John; Cock, George; Cock, Agnes; and, Tweedy, Joseph. All four are our ancestors with what is called "Patriotic Service". John W. Cock has been called Captain in several books including the NSDAR listings. He was old enough, the right age, in fact. He may have served but the writer cannot document his service. There were several Captain John Cocks. Each record that was found was checked. Later, service by our John may be confirmed, but, probably, it will not.

Before leaving Campbell County for Tennessee, John became the father of the bride four times in the marriage records of Campbell County. The first two were his sisters - Nancy, in 1782, and Rebecca, in 1787. Then, his daughters married, Elizabeth in 1805 and Martha on 10 October 1808.

We do not know when Mary Tweedy was born or when she died, nor do we know whether she moved west with her family. Wilson County, Tennessee is east of and very near Nashville, the seat of Davidson County. It is very unfortunate that the officials of Davidson County and others in Nashville will not cooperate in family research or we would know more about this period of John W. Cock's life. In a book, Pioneers of Davidson County, Tennessee, by Whitely, p. 15, the members of Captain Butler's Militia Company in the War of 1812 are listed. John W. Cock is number 153. This reinforces the contention that he was not an officer in the Revolution. He deserves credit for service in the War of 1812.

Later, back in Wilson County, John may have been old, but he had not given up. He married for the third time, Elizabeth H. Williams of Wilson County, on 25 Feb 1817. As time went by, two more children came. Number 14 was Bowler, mentioned earlier, and number 15 was Susannah.

When John W. Cock died, he left a strong young wife with a lot of children, too many. Our ancestor, Lynnaeus, now spelled Lenius, was sent to live with his older brother, Fleet Cock. The document telling of this act is on the next page.

In his will, John left two slaves to Lineas named Sudo and American. The will is shown on the following pages of documents. Also, there is another interesting paper, number 474, that evaluates the slaves to allow division of property among the heirs.

The property inventory is four pages long with a total of \$1,355.12. Tools, livestock and household items are listed. The family Bible, \$7.50, would be valuable today if we could find it! After all bills were collected and paid, the estate was \$1,264.76. After reading the documents, we can let John W. Cock rest in peace and move on to his son, our ancestor, Linius Cock.

Chandler & John S. Hall and each endorsed them

On the back of my copy - Certified Copy. County Wilson. Roll No. 151. Book 1822-1824. Page 526. Type Record Guardian App.. Tennessee State Library and Archives."

It is ordered by the court that Fleet Cook be appointed guardian to Lenius Cock minor ??? (heir?) of John Cook dec'd who thereupon entered into bond with security for the faithful discharge of his guardianship.

this court ordered that the property of the negro or man named Cherry be reflected

It is ordered by the court that that Fleet Cook be appointed guardian to Lenius Cock minor heir of John Cook dec'd who thereupon entered into bond with security for the faithful discharge of his guardianship

474

State of Tennessee Wilson County 18th September 1823
We the undersigned Commissioners have met agreeable to the orders of the Wilson County Court and have valued the negroes belonging to the estate of John Cook Decd viz Caswell Cock's negro man Mitchell at six hundred dollars Martha Cock's negro woman Dimah at four hundred and fifty dollars Jarrett Cock's negro boy Flim at three hundred and twenty five dollars Fleet Cock's negro boy George at one hundred and seventy five Dollars Lineas Cock's negro Girl Sutare at one hundred and thirty seven & half dollars and America at one hundred and thirty seven & half dollars

America at one hundred and thirty seven and a half Dollars

William Word
Francis Puckett
William Williams

Recorded this 3rd December 1823

Test

John Allcorn Clk
of Wilson County Court

In making these copies, I have tried to spell and punctuate exactly as the original. Also, the words, by line are the same so a comparison can be made. Dashes are used where the word could not be read. Spelling of names varied on the will and between the will and the "Division of Negroes" paper. But, the assignment of slaves to persons is consistent between the papers.

ACM

In testimony whereunto set my hand and affix my seal
 this 25th November 1822
 Elisha Sims
 John Quarles
 A. Harris
 State Cook
 Jarrel Cook
 State of Tennessee
 Wilson County
 The within
 Cook deed no
 by the oaths of
 the subscribing
 witnesses
 Registered the

his
 John I Cock
 mark

Will of JOHN COCK

341

State of Tennessee) I John Cock Sr of the county and
 Wilson County) State aforesaid being in sound mind
 and memory do make and ordain this my last will
 and testament.
 1st Item I give to my son Thomas J. Cock William Cock
 Sally Jones Nancy Kent Polly Cock and John Cock each of them
 fifty cents each out of my estate Also I give to my
 son Joseph Cock fifty cents
 2nd Item I loan to my beloved wife Betsey Cock
 all the tract of land I now live on during her widowhood
 also two negroes one by the name of George and the other Cate
 during her widowhood and if she should marry or decease
 then said negroes is to be equally divided between my son
 Bowler Cocke and Susannah Cock
 3rd Item I give and bequeath to my son Fleet Cock two
 negroes one by the name of Morgan and the other by the
 name of George
 4th Item I ----- bequeath to my daughter Elisabeth
 Cock one negro woman by the name of Nancy and all the
 children she has ever had and also her increase forever
 5th Item I give and bequeath to my son Lineas Cock two
 negroes one by the name of Sudo and the other by the name
 of American
 6th Item I give and bequeath to my son Caswell Cock one negro
 man by the name of Mitchell
 7th Item I give and bequeath to my daughter Martha Cock
 one negro girl by the name of Dinah and her increase forever
 8th Item There is one sorrell horse to be sold for the payment of
 my debts all the stock of every kind is to go the ---- of the family
 9th Item There is two negroes not devised to my children
 to wit, Alse & Fountain which is to be sold and the money
 equally divided between all my children except Joseph
 Cock which I had by my second wife which is to be
 divided so as to include all the legates above named
 equal.

page 342
 10th Item When my youngest child comes of age
 if my wife should die or marry my land is to be equally
 divided between all my children except those I have
 given fifty cents to
 11th Item I give to my son Jarrel Cock one negro by
 the name of Flem also one cow I appoint my son
 Joseph Cock executor to this my last will and testament
 In testimony I hereunto set my hand and affix my seal
 this 25th November 1822

Elisha Sims
 John Quarles
 A. Harris
 Fleete Cook
 Jarrel Cook

his
 John I Cock
 mark

State of Tennessee) December Term 1822
 Wilson County)
 The within will and testament of John
 Cock deed was produced in open court and duly proved
 by the oaths of John Quarles and A. Harris two of
 the subscribing witnesses thereto and ordered to be
 registered

Teste John Allcorn Clerk of
 said court

Registered the 27th February 1823
 Seal Jno Allcorn Clk

Copied to the best of my ability from a Certified Copy of the
 original in the Tennessee Archives, Roll 191, Book 1819-1824
 page 341-342, Record of Probate.

LINIUS COCK
b. 1810 - d. 1853

Born in Campbell County, VA, baby Linius made the move to Wilson County, TN. The spelling of his name changed three times before he was ten, but it was always pronounced the same. When his father died, he went to live with his older brother, Fleet, who was 23. Linius was 13. Fleet lived in Madison County. The Cock family was drifting west and south. That's the way families moved - they followed each other. Remember that the brothers of Linius were Joseph, Jarrett, Fleet and Caswell. In 1830, Linius found his way, six days on a horse, back to DeKalb County, TN, just east of Wilson County, where he married Louise Overall. The young couple must have lived with their kin for the first years of their marriage. The brothers helped each other. Jarrett went to Rutherford County, south of Nashville. Joseph was in Madison County with Fleet by 1840. Then, Joseph, Linius, and Caswell moved to Mississippi. They lived in Marshall County, near Holly Springs. Joseph was the oldest.

Linius was 28 when Parilee was born in 1838 in Tennessee. By the time William was born, he had moved to Holly Springs, where he stayed until 1849, when he moved on to Carthage, Texas, in Panola County. We know when he moved because of the census of 1850. It showed Joseph and Caswell in Holly Springs and Linius in Carthage, TX, as shown. We see Linius as a farmer with land worth \$2500. His first son, John Walter, has left home. Then, there is Lafayette (spelling?), Mary Ann, John, Parilee, William, Joseph, and Charles. The last three names are farm workers, probably.

‡ 459 Farmer		
Linus COCK		40 m Va
Eliza		27 f Tenn
Lafayette *		19 m "
Mary Ann † *		16 f "
John † *		14 m "
Parilee † *		12 f "
Wm †		7 m Miss
Joseph		3 m "
Charles		1 m "
Dan SEGOR		20 m "
C. LIGHTFOOT		25 m Ky
Elisha BARNETT		21 m Tenn

* Children of Louisa Overall

Now, there was another mystery - Who is Eliza? Where is Louise Overall? Those old roosters had a bad habit of losing wives! This third edition has the answer to the mystery. In 1987, contact was made with Wenzola Kiger of Chattanooga, TN. She sent a copy of her book, "Overall" and the door opened to many great ancestors - all forebears of the beloved grandmother, Nora Taylor Metts! The next chapter, "Overall" is added in this addition.

Linius died on 17 Jan 1852 of "consumption" at his home in Panola County, TX. His obituary in The Texas Republican, Marshall, TX, 24 Jan 1852, said that he was 46 years old and had been ill for several months. It went on to say that he had been born in Virginia and came to Tennessee as a young man. His request was that he be buried at Major Holland's cemetery because he did not want "to be buried in the woods". The paper said he left a wife and 7 children.

The 1860 census, as presented in the Taylor chapter, showed Ward and Parilee with little Nora (Taylor Metts) and Willie. Brother Lafayette is a wealthy farmer. Eliza has married someone else. This brings the Cock line to the junction with the Taylors. The life of Parilee was discussed with her husband, Dr. Ward J. Taylor.

Many questions were included in this chapter. Much is left to be found. This writer believes that our Cock line descends from Richard Cock, of Virginia. With good luck, this chapter may be rewritten.

Research continued on the Cock family. On page 100, the marriage of John W. Cock to Mary Tweedy is discussed. John was the son of George and Agnes Cock. Two references were found that lead to more information about these ancestors who lived during the Revolutionary period.

The Virginia Magazine of History and Biography, Volume V, for the year ending June, 1898, page 257, states that Mr. W. MacFarlane Jones had copied the Campbell County Order Book at Rustburg, Virginia. The report starts with the appointment of a court on 7 Feb 1782. On page 260 to 262, Mr. Jones copied a, "List of Citizens furnishing Supplies, Arms, Teams etc. or rendering other service to the Continental Army, who received certificates calling for payments account thereof, at various sessions of the County Court of Campbell County between 7th Mch. 1782 and 4th April 1783." An alphabetical list follows with about 156 names. Included are the names of John Cock, George Cock, Agnes Cock and Joseph Tweedy. (This time there are two e's in Tweedy.)

Later, the William and Mary College Quarterly, Volume 8-Series 2, 1928, makes the same report as above and records it as of the September Court of 1832. The information is exactly the same. These books are available in most large genealogy libraries.

Follow-up on the information was accomplished by letters to the Virginia Library and to the Campbell County authorities to acquire the actual documents. The Virginia Library in Richmond is, actually, the Virginia archives - a wonderful institution. They provided copies of the original documents and the summary of each as follows:

1. Public Service Claims, Commissioner's Book 1., Reel 5, p. 282. At a court held for Campbell County on 1 August 1783, the claims of John Cocke, Ayres (They misread Agnes!) Cock and George Cocke of having furnished corn and beef for public use were allowed.

- clippings from document -

282 August 1, 1783

United States

1 John Cocke for corn & shells paid to ... 3 16

1 Ayres Cock. for Corn & shells paid to ... " 4 3

1 George Cocke for doers ... do paid " 6 9

2. Ibid.

p. 293. At a court held for Campbell County on 7 August 1783, the claim of Joseph Tweedy of having furnished beef for public use was allowed.

293 August 7, 1783

United States

1 Joseph Tweedy for beef he do paid ... 4 4 6

3. Public Service Claims, Campbell County Court Booklet., Reel 1, p.1.
At a court held on 7 March 1782, pp. 5, 6, 11. The claims of John Cock,
George Cock, and Joseph Tweedy of having furnished beef and corn for public
use were allowed.

Public Service Claims

Campbell County Court Booklet

- 5 ✓ To John Cock for 275 lb wt Gr Beef $\frac{1}{2}$ Bush Corn 5 Diets
& 1 Bushel Oats - for Ditto.
- 6 ✓ To George Cock for 5 Diets and $\frac{1}{2}$ Bushel Corn for
Orphan Squire Com. Pro. Law.
- 11 ✓ To Joseph Tweedy for 325 lb wt Gr Beef 3 Diets
& $\frac{1}{2}$ Bushel Corn for Orphan Squire Com. Pro. Law.

A letter to the Clerk of the Circuit Court of Campbell County was answered by Mrs. Elizabeth Tucker, the Deputy Clerk. She went to considerable effort to find other documents. She went through the Campbell County Order Books and sent copies transcribed below:

1. Order Book 1, page 30, May 1782, "George Cock proved that he furnished the said Commissary with five diets for which he is allowed the sum of five shillings and one and a half Bushells of corn for which he is allowed the sum of three shillings which is ordered to be certified."

2. Order Book 1, page 56, June 1782, "Joseph Tweedy proved that in October One Thousand Seven Hundred and Eighty One he furnished Christopher Irvine Commissary of the Provision Same with Three Hundred and Twenty-five pound of Beef for which he is allowed the sum of three shillings two pecks of corn for which he is allowed the sum of one shilling which is Ordered to be Certified."

3. Order Book 1, page 29, date not evident on copy, "John Cock proved that he furnished the said Commissary with Two Hundred and Seventy-five pound of Beef for which he is allowed at the rate of sixteen shillings and eight pence per hundred weight half a Bushell of corn for which he is allowed the sum of one shilling; five Diets for which he is allowed the sum of five shillings, and One Bushell of Oats for which he is allowed the sum of one shilling and sixpence which is Ordered to be Certified.

4. Order Book 1, page 23, "Ordered that Richard Stith John Fitzpatrick and John Cock being sworn before a Justice of the Peace for this county do viden the way from the Ford on Falling River where Randolphs Road crosses it to John Hooks store and make report of the conveniences and inconveniences attending the same to the next court."

5. Order Book 1, page 38, "Ordered that Thomas Jones, Junior and John Cock two of the Executors of the Last Will and Testament of William Jones Deceased be appointed Guardians of the said Descendents Orphan Children to wit, ———."

6. Order Book 1, page 492, November 1784, Joseph Tweedy bonded.

7. Order Book 15, page 226, "On the motion of Robert Tweedy and Adler Arrington Securities for John and Frances Twedy Executor and Executress of Joseph Twedy deceased ———" No date on the copy.

8. Order Book 15, page 240, Campbell September Court, 1823, "John Twedy Exor and Frances Twedy Exex of Joseph Twedy decd who were summoned to appear

at the third term to give Robert Twedy and Adler Arrington their securities—" —it goes on to relieve the executors and appoint another to handle Joseph's will.

Mrs. Elizabeth Tucker found and sent a copy of Joseph Twedy's will. This will is recorded in Campbell County, Virginia, in Will Book 3, Page 69. The name is spelled several ways in various documents, Tweedy and Twiddy being common. An inventory follows the will and on four pages lists 16 slaves, cattle, horses and many of the household items. Joseph Twedy was born about 1750.

In the name of God amen I Joseph Twedy son
 of sound mind but weak body do make and
 constitute this my last will and testament, it is my
 will and desire that in the first place all my just
 debts shall be paid, I lend to my beloved wife Fanny
 for and during her natural life for her use the tract of
 land whereon I live with all the appurtenances, there-
 unto belonging together with all my stock of every
 kind, also all my furniture of every sort, and the follow-
 ing slaves to wit Ned Tom Kate Rener Nancy and
 Ed Sader, At the death of my wife, I give to my son
 Ebenezer the tract of land whereon I now live to him and
 his heirs, also at my decease three negro boys to wit, See
 Daniel and Jack, I give at my wife's death to my
 son Robt and his heirs my negro man Ned in addition
 to what he has received, I give at my wife's death to my
 son Jon and his heirs my negro man Tom in addition
 to what he has received, it is my wish and desire to aid
 and support my daughter Elizabeth Coleman
 and her children, I therefore leave for their use in
 the

the hands of my son John Tweedy whom I hereby
 appoint and constitute trustee for that I will give
 the following negroes to wit, Rose and her children
 Anderson and William and Rose's children in case also
 I leave at the death of my wife in the same manner
 for the use of my daughter Elizabeth and her children
 my negro ^{woman} Kate and her increase all which negroes
 with their increase at the death of my daughter Elizabeth
 Coleman shall be equally divided among her children
 I give to my daughter Gaziah the following negroes
 to wit, Isbell, Bill and Fran and Isbell's future
 offspring at my decease, I also give to my said daughter at
 the death of my wife my negro girl Rener and her
 increase also a gray mare saddle and bridle together
 with a bed and furniture which has been called
 her own also one hundred acres of land called Sixty
 tract, I give to my son Joseph Tweedy the debt he
 owes me of forty or fifty pounds in addition to what
 he has received, I give to my daughter Nancy Robin
 the sum of six shilling in addition to what she has
 received, I desire that my wife will as soon as con-
 venient after my decease purchase and deliver to my
 grand daughter Caroline Coleman a negro girl
 at about fifty pounds price which girl I give to
 my said grand daughter and her heirs. I give to my
 daughter Polly Cooke at the death of my wife
 my negro girl Nancy in addition to what she has
 received, In order to carry this my foregoing will

← Polly
 is
 "Mar"

71

in do respect I do hereby constitute and appoint my beloved
wife my Executrix and two sons Rob and John my
Exrs to this my last will and testament revoking all
others, as Witness my hand and seal this 30th Day of
October 1810

Joseph Twedy
done in presence of S. King, Hartwell, W. Dop, John
Bryan Junr

In a Court held for Campbell County, Decem^r 6th 1810
The within last will and testament of Joseph Twedy
senr deceased was proved by the oaths Sackville King
Hartwell, W. Dop and John Bryan Junr Witnesses
thereto and ordered to be recorded and on the motion of
Fanny Twedy the Executrix and John Twedy one of
the executors in said will named whom made oath therein
according to a leave is given them to administer on
said decedants Estate giving security whereupon
they together Robert Twedy Archer Williamson and
Adler Arington their securities entered into bond
in the penalty of ten thousand dollars with condi-
tion as the law directs for the said Executors due
and faithful administration on the said decedents
Estate and performance of his Will, The other Executors
in said will named having in open Court refused to
qualify. Teste Rob Alexander C. C. C.

Recorded in Will Book 3, Page 69

A copy, teste; H. E. Bennett, Clerk
By: Elphie Fisher Deputy Clerk
10-1-87

72
Tuedy's
Inventory

Agreeable to an order of the County Court of Campbell Co. Va directed we Robert Watkins Daniel Evans and Thomas Franklin have met at the late dwelling house of Joseph Tuedy deceased on this 12th of January in the year 1811 and being first duly sworn for that purpose do apprais all the personal estate of said decedant produced to us by the Exe- cutor and executing in the following manner to wit

1 Negro man Ned to	\$150.
1 Ditto Ditto Tom to	120
1 Do Boy See to	90
1 Do Do Danice to	80
1 Do Do Jack to	50
1 Old negroman Monkey to	20
1 Negro Woman Catey to	120
1 Do Do Isobel and her 2 children Polly & Frank to	175
1 Woman Row and two children Anderson and Julia to	160
1 Girl Regina to	80
1 Do Nancy to	60
1 Old Woman Sally to	20
	\$1125

A Yoke of work steers to	12
Red cow with white back to	3 10
Red white faced heifer to	2 2
Red Heifer to	2 8
Black white backed cow to	3 13
Red cow. to	3 10.
one Black Bull to	2 2
one Red Do to	1 4
one white backed cow to	4 10
Black Heifer at 1/4 and Red Heifer at \$ 2 1/4.	3 16
	38 4

One Gray mare to 27. "

\$

A Sorel Horse To	\$ 24	"	"
A Small Gray mare To	12	"	"
A Colt To	4	10	"
Two sows and pigs To	4	10	"
one spotted sow To	1	10	"
Eleven fat Hogs To	12	"	"
6 Sheep at \$ 3 1/2 and 2 calves at 2 1/2	4	13	"
16 Geese at 3/ each	2	8	"
35 Barrels of Corn at 15/100 Barrel	26	5	"
A Walnut tree cupboard To	6	"	"
A plain Walnut tree table To	1	16	"
A large Walnut tree chest To	2	8	"
A Set of cups and saucers and water at	"	9	"
8 Plates and broken set cups and saucers	"	5	6
One tin pan and four plates To	"	4	6
Sundry articles of tin ware To	"	11	3
Ditto of Lippamed Tin ware To	1	1	"
Earthen Ware at 9/ and Tea Kettle 12/	1	1	"
Sundry articles of crockery tin and Lippamed ware	"	14	"
A Brass candle stick at 6/ and three decanters 9/	"	15	"
Razer Shrop and Stone	"	6	"
Tin pans 5 and Kister 2 9/	1	14	"
A P. of Tonges 6/	"	6	"
Knives Box Knives and forks To	"	4	6
A looking Glass	"	10	6
Sundry Articles of tin crockery and Glass To	"	10	6
Books Bible &c	"	17	6
2 Trunks one at 4/6 the other at 15/	"	19	6
A Bedstead cord and furniture To	12	#	#
one Ditto.	10	"	"
A Shot Gun To	3	"	"
A Bedstead cord and furniture To	9	"	"
			2 p

2 p Bead stands To	\$ 18
Slays and Harnep	" 12
Barrel Bead cover and feathers	1 10
one barrel of feathers 6/ and 12 Churns 3/	" 9
2 Juggs 7/6 five reaf Hooks 5/ and womans saddle	2 8
Wollen Yarn \$6. Cotton Yarn \$4. 50	3 3
A barrel of feathers at 10/ and 12 Chairs at 5/ 10	2 "
Half Bushel and Tub 4/6 and Stacks at 10/6	" 15
Check Reel 7/6 Tap wheel at 5/ 4 and Frohells at 1/4	2 7
2 botton wheels one at 12/ the other at 10/6	1 2
A p Saddle bags 2/ a butting box and Knife 13/6	1 14
4 p of fords 4/ 6 and 2 Bells 7/6	" 12
And saw and drawing Knife	" 8
Smoothing Irons at	" 12
3 Frowel plows 20/ 4 axes 24/	2 4
5 Hoes at 18/ and 2 Spades at 12/	1 10
2 Matag a butter and a Wedge	" 12
2 p Gears Biddles &c	1 4
1 oval Oven 15/ and a pot and Kettle and a Beer 9/	1 4
2 old Tables and a gumblet 9/6 and a pot rack at 7/6	" 17
A Barrel of Wheat 64/ and a Hog head of beef 75/	6 9
2 byder barrels at 10/6 and one cask at 6/	" 16
A tinager bask meal barrel and sifter	7
12 ^{lb} Tallow at 9/ p lb. Cash at 6/ and an old saddle 6/	1 1
A Loom at 24/ and 2 Ovens at 27/	2 11
3 pots at 18/ and spicemoter at 6/	1 4
Shoe Bag and tools 4/6 and 75 ^{lb} of Iron at A ²⁵ 1/4	1 9
A side of leather at	13 6
An ox fart at 6/ and 2 p fire Irons 5/ 4	7 4
A hark of brandy at	2 2
Amount of Appraisment	<u>1386 14 9</u>

John Tweedy

Daniel Evans
Robert.

75

Fanny Tvedy

Robert Watkins
Thomas Franklin

At Court held for Campbell County January 14th 1811.

The within Inventory and appraisment of the Estate of Joseph Tvedy deceased were exhibited in Court and ordered to be recorded

A Copy. teste: H. E. Bennett, Clerk
By: Charles Siskin Deputy Clerk

Recorded in Will Book No. 3, Page 72

Teste: No. Alexander C. C.

Mooman's Estate Dr the Estate of Achilles Mooman sen^r Deceased
with A/c in account current with David Mooman Adm^r

The Adm ^r	To Cash paid Dr John Slaughter	\$ 7 10 "
1809	" Do Sheriff of Campbell	2 17 "
	4 gal ^s whiskey for the sale of the Estate	1 4 "
	" 2 1/2 gal ^s Brandy for Do	" 15 "
Dec	" Expences to the State of Ohio and back	9 15 "
	" Cash for recording deeds in Ohio	" 6 "
	11 " Do to Colo Watts for interest on a bond	1 8 10/100
	" Do to Matthew Ester for crying sale	1 4 "
	" Do to Doct Slaughter	1 12 6
	12, 13 th Pork for the Estate \$6	2 8 "
	14 " Cash to Thomas Fox	1 19 4
1810 Jan/2	" 3 Tobacco Ahd ^s 8/6	1 5 6
	" 3 Gal ^s Whiskey for the Commissioners	" 13 6
	" 1 Do Do for Do at 2 nd meeting	" 4 6
	" Cash to David Sans for coffin	1 10 "
19	" 3 1/2 Gal ^s Whiskey at the sale of negroes	" 15 9
	" Cash to Michael Hubbard	" 13 6
20	" Carriage 2 Ahd ^s Tob ^s to Lynchburg	1 16 "
24	" Cash to Isaac Pedegon for leather	2 11 "
	" Do to Higginbotham & Brown Ho.	4 3 8
	" Do Expences of Inspecting 3 Ahd ^s of Tobacco	" 9 "
25	" Do to Davis Harvey Ho	15 " "
Feb/3	" Do to John Johnson seneca	" 7 6

Do

The Sons of the American Revolution and the Daughters of the American Revolution recognize patriots who are given credit for "Patriotic Service" as different from military service. By helping to feed or support the soldiers, they assisted in their own way. Eventually, they were paid for whatever they had contributed and the pay records give the evidence to document their activities. George, his wife Agnes and John Cock were farmers. So was Joseph Twedy, the father-in-law of John Cock. All four have been claimed and proved to and approved by the Sons of the American Revolution.

Most documents spell the Twedy name with two e's. I have chosen to call him Twedy because his hand written will, signed in handwriting spells it that way. I believe that he knew how to spell his own name.

Before these papers were found, little was known about the Cock ancestors of Campbell County. In the past, there has been a problem about the John Cock name. There were several in Virginia, some with outstanding military service. Now, however, we see these people as a family group in Campbell County, Virginia.

This brings the research, again, to the question about the origin of George. With patience and persistence, as the little pieces of information are collected, they may come together - one of these days!

OVERALL

November 18, 1992

The second edition of this book was finished in 1985. It tells that the wife of Linus Cock was Louisa Overall of DeKalb County, Tennessee, and no more about her. A few efforts to find her ancestors had not produced any results, so the search moved on to other lines. Then, in early 1987, a book was found that has the complete ancestry of that branch of the family. Mrs. Wenzola R. Kiger wrote and published "OVERALL". In 442 pages, she documents a lifetime of careful and complete genealogical work. A copy of the book is in the NSDAR library in Washington, D.C.

A new chart in this edition is on page 2. It shows the ancestors added to the Metts family as found in the book by Wenzola Kiger. This chapter will be addressed to and will give a condensed description of the ancestors of Louise (or Louisa) Overall as described in Wenzola's book. When no reference to Wenzola's book is made, the information came from that book. About the only other references needed concern the documentation of four men who participated as soldiers or patriots in the American Revolution. Her book gives them credit, but the original documents needed for proof will be included in this chapter.

OVERALL

The Overall family were Saxons who came to England from the Danish peninsula and settled in Thaxted and Essexshire during the reign of Henry the Eighth (1509-1540). One early and famous Overall was Bishop John Overall (1560-1619), Regius Professor of Theology at Cambridge, later Dean of St. Paul's, London, and Bishop of Coventry and Litchfield and Norwich successively. He was one of the 47 translators of the King James Bible.

The Bishop had no children, but he had two brothers named William and Nathaniel. These have become often-used names in the Overall family since 1560. Probably, one or the other was followed by Overalls that came to America. Another Nathaniel came from Kent to Virginia in 1637. Later, in 1651 and 1665, a William bought land in Westmoreland County, Virginia. As with most surnames in the olden times, the name , Overall, had other "sounds like" spellings, Overhall being one that was often used.

We will start with William Overall who was born about 1650 or 1660. He married Jane Baldrige (c.1652 - 5 Apr 1719). Her parents were James and Dorothy Baldrige of Virginia. Jane had been married three times (Capt. Alex Baynham, Thomas Butler, and John Berryman) before she married William. This was not unusual in old Virginia because men were killed or died young. Indians, hard work and disease took a terrible toll. William died in King George County, Jane in Westmoreland County.

In the next generation, William Overall, Jr. was born about 1682. He married Mary Jones about 1700. She was the daughter of John Jones of Westmoreland County, VA, and the grand-daughter of Nathaniel and Judith Jones. When father John Jones wrote his will on 10 Jan 1707 (probated 5 June 1713), he mentioned a son, Nathaniel Jones; daughters, Elizabeth and Sarah; and a son, Charles. Also, he listed a grand-son, John Overall as the son of William Overall. William was executor.

William Overall, Jr. and his wife, Mary, had seven children. Our ancestor, John, was born about 1701 and died in 1743. The other children were: Mary (c.1707-) m. 31 Aug 1727 Anthony Kitchen; Sarah (c.1709-) m. 14 Nov 1729 John Dagg; Elizabeth (c.1714-) m. 15 Sep 1733 John Whitledge (1711-1761); Frances (22 Aug 1716-) m. 27 Oct 1733 Nathaniel Whitledge of Hamilton Parish; William III (c.1718-); and, Nathaniel c.1721-), a Virginia Trooper in 1756. These dates and some of the information came from the St. Paul's Parish Register.

John Overall, Sr. was born in Prince William County before 1707 and died there in 1742/43. He married Mary Elliot on 8 Oct 1722. Her mother, also a Mary, was born about 1680 and died 24 Jul 1738. John, Sr. and Mary had five

children: Sarah (7 Feb 1725-) m. 21 Sep 1750 Joseph Powell; our ancestor, William (c.1727-); Mary (19 Mar 1731-) m. 11 Feb 1750 James Bowling; Behethalam (7 Feb 1725) m. James Cunningham; and John Overall, Jr. (1735-).

John Overall, Sr. wrote his will on 16 Sep 1742. After writing that he was from Hamilton Parish in Prince William County, VA, he made his peace with God and gave almost everything to his son, John Overall, Jr., who was only seven years old, leaving next to nothing to John's older brother, William, our

ancestor. This is odd and not according to the old rules of "primogeniture" where the oldest son inherits. Part of the will reads:

"ITEM, I give and bequeath unto my son, John Overall, all my land which is six hundred acres and thirty, except some part that shall be hereafter mentioned. The land is in five tracts and lying on Lucky Run and the Chestnut Branch - the one I bought of Leonard Lehns (?), Sr. the other of Thomas Whitledge - the beginning of both tracts is now in Whitledge's mill dam, and if my son John Overall should die without heir lawfully begotten of his body then the aforesaid land to be equally divided between my three daughters and also I give to him five good feather beds and furniture, five negroes Caesar a boy Judah a girl one ovill table, one small table, one great chest, one horse of ten pound price, saddle, pistols, holsters, & sord; one cow and calf; one young steer of three year old; one sow & pigs; one ten gallon iron pot and hooks; five pot racks; one puter dish; and six plates; five pistols; one iron pot of five gallons, now with his grandmother a brass mortar and pestol large, a pair of tongues, a dripping pan, & a iron spit."

The will goes on to give the usual feather bed, cow and a gold ring to each of the girls with a little variation in minor items. The gold ring to Behethalam was broken. Poor old William got a little land that he could "not leas or sell it but to work on it as he pleases himself" and then it would revert to little brother, John. His grandmother got a "barrill of wheat one barrill of corn one hundred pound of hogmeat for five years". Seven year old John, Jr. would live with his Uncle Nathaniel, go to school to age 14, work until he was 18, then be free at last!

There is a document, "Northern Neck Grants No.5 1713-1719", wherein John Overall gets confirmation of his ownership of 57 1/2 acres in Westmoreland County, Washington Parish. It refers to John Overall as "of ye County of Stafford."

William Overall was born, probably, in Prince William County. He married Maria Christina Froman (1 Mar 1736-) in Frederick County, Virginia, in 1753. Her father was Captain John Paul Froman, Sr., a famous man. Also, she descended from Jost Hite, the first citizen of the Shenandoah Valley. The Froman and Hite families will be described in separate sections of this chapter, later. William and Maria had seven children: Captain William Overall (1754 - 22 Jan 1793) married Susannah Thomas and moved to Tennessee; our Ancestor, John Overall (c.1756-) remained in Virginia and married his first wife, Elizabeth Ann Waters, from whom we descend, on 13 Sep 1772 in Shenandoah County, Virginia. His second marriage, in 1783 was to Mrs. Mary Ann (Markham) Earle Byrne. Another son was Nathaniel (1758-1835), who died in Rutherford County, TN. He married Anne Thomas (-1844), a Quaker, on 26 Feb 1783 in the Shenandoah. Next, Nancy (c.1760-), also a Quaker, went to Tennessee and married Joshua Thomas, who was killed by the Indians in 1783 in the Nick-a-jack expedition. Joshua was the son of William and Elizabeth Thomas. In Pillow, Part II, of this book, the Nick-a-jack battle is described as Colonel William Pillow participated. See pages 241-245. The death of Joshua Thomas is mentioned in Colonel Pillow's papers. Also, our ancestor, Abner Pillow, married a lady named Mary Thomas. Further, our W. Rees Porter had a wife, Mary Thomas. All three of these Mary Thomas wives lived in Tennessee at about the same time. Study of the Thomas family continues.

March 11, 1881. Capt. Lawrence (Brewer) came today on one of the regular
trains to the county and made out the register. They are signed and
correct.

W. Clark

W. Brewster

53
1881

Capt. W. Brewster
Pay Roll
No. 66

W. Brewster
Pay Roll
No. 66
June 1881

581

Miller

L. H. 1374

112.13.6

1881

Following the reference is a copy of the front and back of the original pay roll. This was provided by the Virginia State Library. It is very dim, but can be read (exactly),

"A Pay Roll of Capt Brisco Company of Militia on the Expedition under Genl Clark against the Shaney in 1780"

	When ent.	When dis charged	Time of service	?????????
				L S De
private John Overhall	July 10, 1780	Augt. 21, 1780	33 1/4	2 4 0

Having entered this document, remarks are required to show that we have the right man.

1. The fact that his kinsman, Isaac Froman is on the same roster for the same period is indicative.

2. In The Encyclopedia Americana, 1953, Vol. 7, page 41 & 42:

"CLARK, George Rogers,

"The capture of Detroit again postponed, Clark returned to Kentucky to build Fort Jefferson at the mouth of the Ohio. In 1780, he crushed Great Britain's last major offensive in the West, beating off a heavy attack on Cahokia, and punishing the atrocious raids made upon Kentucky's smaller forts by leading a force of 1,000 men against the Shawnees, defeating them heavily and destroying their villages Piqua and Chillicothe. Later that year he was commissioned brigadier general by Thomas Jefferson,—" Remember that Kentucky was not a state, it was a part of Virginia. Many of Clark's men were Virginians, particularly those Virginians that lived in the western mountains of Virginia.

3. Captain Permenous Brisco (or Permanas Brisca) was born near Charlottesville, VA. He is well documented. Gwathmey, page 94, "Captain, Clark's Ill. Reg." and "Captain in Jefferson County in 1781".

4. The correct reference is Gwathmey, Historical Register of Virginians in the Revolution to "Overhall, John, Shenandoah Mil. appointed Lieut. Sept. 30, 1784. IP". Of course, the Revolution was over in 1784, but this is an indication of prior service. The promotion is in the Shenandoah County Order Book, 1784-1786, Reel 53, p.77 (for date) and Page 83, "John Overhall is appointed Lieutenant in the second battalion of the militia of this county, " court held 30 September 1784. This reference is from the Virginia Library. Note that his name is spelled Overhall back in his home in Virginia.

5. The Overall study by Kiger has found most if not every Overall (or Overhall) in America during Revolutionary times. This would preclude getting the wrong John. The spelling of Overall as Overhall is not unusual. It happened often. Remember that the company clerk makes out the pay roll and the soldier pays attention to the pounds, shillings and pence, not the spelling!

6. Attention is called to Vogt & Kethley, Virginia Historic Marriage Register, Shenandoah County Marriage Bonds, 1772-1850, Page 405, "Waters, ~~Elizabeth~~ Ann & John Overall 13 Sep 1772."

Colonel Abraham Overall was born in Shenandoah Valley County Virginia on 11 Jun 1774. He died in DeKalb County, near Liberty, Tennessee, on 26 Aug 1844. As was stated earlier, he married Hannah Leath (after 1775-1837) on 7 Sep 1790 in Shenandoah County, Virginia, and they moved to Tennessee in 1802 (or as late as 1805). She was the daughter of James and Lydia Leath. Hannah's ancestors will be discussed separately in another section of this chapter.

Abraham Overall was commissioned a Lieutenant Colonel during the War of 1812. He was a gallant officer of the 41st Militia and was an intimate friend of Andrew Jackson. While fighting in the Battle of Horse Shoe Bend, he was said to have had his horse shot out from under him.

Abraham and Hannah had ten children:

1. Dr. John W. Overall (1792-1837) was born in Shenandoah County. He never married. His practice was in Alexandria, Virginia, where he was murdered.
2. Elizabeth Ann Waters Overall (18 Nov 1799-) was born in the Shenandoah, married Joseph Fite. They moved to Marshal County, Mississippi in 1846.
3. Elizabeth Overall (6 May 1806-1874) was born in DeKalb Co., TN, and married James Wood on 17 Sep 1820. They lived in Cannon Co., TN.
4. Nancy Overall (c.1808-) married Dr. Thomas Jefferson Sneed of Cannon County.
5. Louisa Overall (c.1810-bef 1846). She married Linious (Lin) Cock. Her heirs were living in Mississippi in 1846. This is our ancestor whose life has been a mystery until this chapter was written.
6. Harriet Overall (c.1812-) married Pleasant C. Watson and moved to Texas.
7. Vadney Overall (c. 1814-) never married.
8. Paralee Overall (c. 1816-) married Colonel William B. Stokes
9. Lauralee Melissa Overall (c.1820-) married F.P. Windes and Charles W. LaFayette Hale.
10. Horace Abraham Overall (15 Dec 1822-) married Elizabeth B. Clark.

Abraham Overall wasted no time becoming a very wealthy man in Tennessee. Eventually, he owned 2,500 acres of land and many slaves. The old Overall home is near Liberty, Tennessee. It was built by the slaves in 1811. The two story part of the house is made of logs. Originally, the kitchen was fifty yards behind the house. The way that Abraham bought his land is interesting. Governor Samuel Houston (that's right - Texas Sam!) sold him 50 acres on 22 Sep 1828 for one cent an acre. At 12 1/2 cents an acre, he got 50 acres "on Clear Fork—near a Blowing Spring" in 1829. In 1827, he bought 450 acres in Smith County for a penny an acre. Eventually, he had 2,500 acres.

There is a family story about Thomas G. Ward Overall. As a little baby, in 1833, he was left at the door of Dr. John W. Overall, who was not married. The doctor took the child to his father and little Thomas was given the Overall name. Somehow, they knew that the baby's last name was Ward. Many people thought he was another of the many Overall children. Four years later, the Doctor is murdered. In his will, Abraham provided for the education and care of the eleven year old child and gave the child Dr. John W. Overall's house in Alexandria. This story would make a TV "soap opera"!

The will of Abraham Overall is long. He makes the usual statements and leaves the home place to number ten kid, Horace. Details are included about the land. He gave some of the girls land and valuable property with the provision that it "shall not in any event be subject to the debts or control of her husband but to be hers absolutely" and go to the children after her death. One daughter got only ten dollars. As was usual, the slaves were given by first name. In the case of our ancestor, Louisa Overall, she was dead. He states:

"I give and bequeath to Lafayette Cock, Mary Ann Cock, John Cock and Paralee Cock (Paralee is the great grandmother of this writer), the lawful heirs of my deceased Daughter Louisa Cock one-seventh part of my real and personal property not otherwise bequeathed by this instrument which shall be equally divided amongst them first reducing from their said Legacy the amount of Twelve Hundred Dollars that being the amount which their Mother received of me in her lifetime in advance.

When all was said and done, each of the children got \$2,439.37. With \$1200 out, Louisa's children got \$1,239.37.

In a way, there seems to be a pathetic story behind Abraham's life. His first son, a doctor, is murdered. Another son dies. The last child, a son, is the executor and will farm the land. The many girls seem to marry and move on with the westward emigration. The old house still stands in DeKalb County, Tennessee.

In the second edition of this book, questions were raised about the fate of Louisa Overall. We wondered why there was a new young wife in the Linious Cock home. Now we know that Louisa died before the family left for Mississippi. As for Linious Cock, more is learned about that old rooster.

Above, Elizabeth Ann Waters Overall, daughter of Abraham, married Joseph Fite. They had a daughter, Elizabeth Fite. When Louisa Overall died, leaving four minor children, young Elizabeth Fite married the old father, Linious Cock, and she is the mysterious Eliza in Carthage, Texas, that told the census taker in 1850 that she was 27 years old! She is the wife that moved to Holly Springs, Mississippi, with the family and on out to Panola County (Carthage), Texas.

In DeKalb Co. Deed Bk B, p.3, "Lenny Cocke" was the first to sign over his share of Dr. John W. Overall's house in Alexandria to Thomas Ward in 1837. Later, Deed Bk D, p.99, October term, 1846 states:

"Circuit Court decree:

'Thomas J. Sneed & wife Nancy, formerly Nancy Overall; Hbrace A. Overall & William B. Stokes and his wife Paralee, formerly Paralee Overall citizens of DeKalb Co., Tenn. against James Wood and his wife Eliza, formerly Eliza Overall, citizens of Cannon Co., Tenn.; Joseph Fite and wife Elizabeth, formerly Elizabeth Overall of the state of Mississippi; and the following minor heirs of Louisa Cock formerly Louisa Overall, also citizens of the state of Mississippi, to wit,

LaFayette Cock, Mariann Cock, Paralee Cock, and John Cock. Also Pleasant C. Watson and his wife Harriet, formerly Harriet Overall, citizens of the Government of Texas; also F.P.Wyndy and his wife Melissa, formerly Melissa Overall, citizens of the state of Missouri," several tracts of land sold to the highest bidder.

The document, above, is very important because it establishes the relationship between Paralee Cock and Louisa Overall Cock. Louisa was born about 1810 and died about 1846. She was the mother of Paralee Cock, born in 1838. Louisa married Linious about 1830. This completes the Overall line to the Cock family. Now, we turn back to discuss the ancestors of Overall wives. The famous Hite family is first.

NOTE: The next two pages have a copy of the original document, Deed Book D, Page 99, October Term 1846. The document is in the courthouse of DeKalb County, TN.

Record of the Circuit Court of the State of Tennessee DeKalb County
of DeKalb County To Circuit Court for said County docket Term
Edward Robinson & Others, 1846 Be it remembered that at a Circuit

Court began and held for DeKalb County
in the 5th Judicial Circuit at the Courthouse in the Town of Smithville in the
State aforesaid on the first Monday it being the 5th day of October Anno
Domini Eighteen hundred and forty six and of the independence of the United
States the 11th year Present the Honorable Abraham Baruthey Judge with
and for the State and Circuit aforesaid Proclamation being made Court
was duly Opened Thomas J. Sned & wife Nancy formerly Nancy Overall
Hosaw. A. Overall & William B. Stokes and his wife Paralee formerly Paralee
Overall Citizens of DeKalb County Tennessee against James Woods and
Wife Eliza formerly Eliza Overall Citizens of Common County

Tennessee and Joseph Tate and his wife Elizabeth formerly Elizabeth Overall
of the State of Mississippi and the following minors and heirs of Louisa Cook formerly Louisa
Overall his children of the State of Mississippi to wit Lafayette Cook, Marianne Cook
Parilla Cook and John Cook Mrs Pleasant C. Madison and his wife Harriet formerly Harriet
Overall Citizens of the Government of Texas Also J. P. Myers and his wife Malice formerly
Malice Overall Citizens of the State of Missouri Petition To Sell Land

Be it Remembered that at this term of this Court on the 5th day of October 1846
this Cause came on to be heard upon the report of the Clerk made pursuant to an interlo-
cutory order made at the last Term of this Court Decreeing the Sale of the Lands mentioned
in the pleadings with Report is in words and figures following to wit In pursuance to an
interlocutory decree pronounced at the April Term and rendered at the June Term last of this
Court in this Cause in the Cause directing the Clerk to sell the Lands mentioned in the Petition
said Clerk Deane has to report that after duly advertising agreed to law and to the requisition
of said Decree he attended in the Town of Liberty in said County on the 23rd day of July
1846 and offered said lands publicly to the highest Bidder on one and two years credit
then and where the following persons became the purchasers they being the highest Bidder
and Last Bidders for their respective lots to wit Lot No 1 was bought by Hosaw A. Overall
for the sum of \$3.50 cents in cash for which he took said Overalls note due and Twelve
months after date for \$1309.87 1/2 cents and the other Twenty four months after date for the
same of amount with Peter Holank security Lot No 2 to Edward Robinson for \$9.62 1/2 cents
in cash for which he took said Robinsons note due in Twelve ^{plus} months for \$476.49 3/4 cents
each with Jacob Hile security No 3 to William B. Stokes for \$6.50 in cash for which he
took said Stokes note due Twelve & Twenty four months after date for the sum of \$412.75 each
with Hosaw A. Overall security Lot No 4 Thomas J. Sned in cash and also Lot No 1
to Thomas J. Sned for \$3.00 in cash for which he took said Sneds note due and Twenty
four months after date for \$529.00 each with Hosaw A. Overall security Lot No 5 to
Marion M. Brinn for \$1.50 in cash for which he took said Brinn note due Twelve and Twenty four
months after date for \$76.12 1/2 each with James Hilt security Lot No 6 to James Brant
for 21 cents in cash for which he took said Brant note due Twelve and Twenty four months after
date for \$154.98 each with George Brant security Lot No 7 to Japhet Adamson for \$3.25 in
cash for which he took said Adamsons ¹⁰⁴⁻¹ note due Twelve and Twenty four months after date for

months after date for \$76.12 1/2 each with James Subb Security Lot No 6 to James Pew
 for 21 Cents per acre for which the Court said Beckwith's notes twelve and twenty four months after
 date of 154.98 1/2 each with George Beckwith Security Lot No 7 to John Adamson for \$3 25 1/2 per
 acre for which the Court said Adamson's notes twelve and twenty four months after date for
 \$104.32 1/2 Cents each with Joseph Adamson Security No 8 to William J. Drien for \$6 00 per
 acre for which the Court said Drien's notes twelve and twenty four months after date for
 each with Pleasant Pistole Security Lot 9 to John H. Allen for \$1 00 1/2 per acre for which
 the Court said Allen's notes twelve and twenty four months after date for \$50 1/2 ea
 with John W. Harts Security Lot No 10 to Pleasant Pistole for \$4 01 1/2 per acre for which
 the Court said Pistole's notes twelve and twenty four months after date for \$4 01 1/2 ea
 with Isaac Turney Security Lot No 11 to Great State for \$3.41 per acre for which the
 Court said Harts notes one seven months after date with Edward Robinson Security
 \$476.43 1/2 Cts and one twenty four months after date for the same amount with
 Pleasant & Thomason Security Lot No 13 to Joseph Pew for 4 Cents per acre for
 with the Court said Pew's notes twelve and twenty four months after date for \$5.40
 each with Terry Braswell Security Lot No 14 to Terry Braswell for 4 1/2 Cents per acre
 for which the Court said Braswell's notes twelve and twenty four months after date
 for \$637 1/2 Cts each with Joseph B. Pew Security All of said aforesaid notes are good
 and solvent All of which said report is respectfully submitted to the Hon^{ble} of Govern

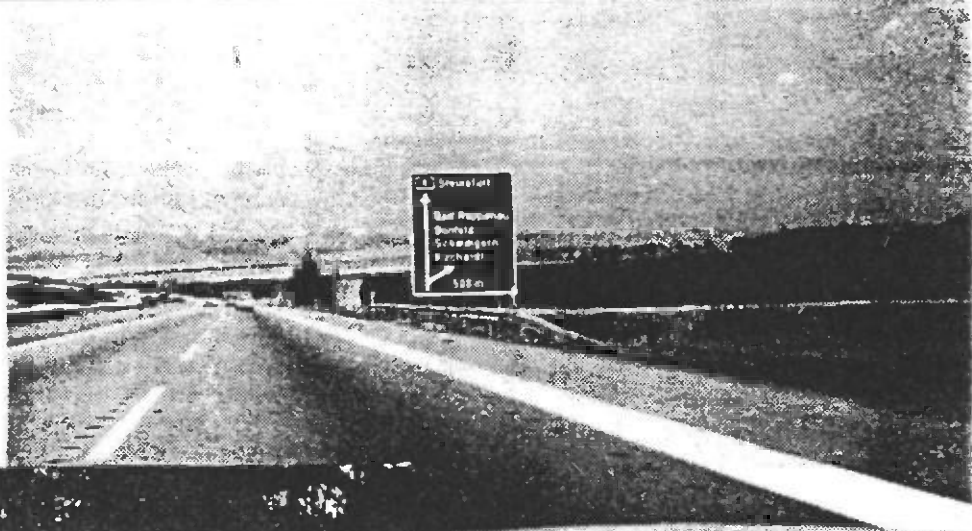
101

and which being unexcepted to is in all things confirmed it is therefore
 Ordered and decreed by the Court that the title to the lands mentioned in the
 Pleadings be divested out of Complainants and Defendants and Vested in the
 respective purchasers according to their said purchases as shown in said
 Report upon the payment of their Respective Bonds and that Complainants
 and Defendants pay the Cost of this prosecution out of the fund produced
 by the sale in proportion to their respective interests and it appearing to the
 Court that some of the parties interested are minors it is ordered by the Court
 that the Clerk report in whatever is practicable and if not then to the next
 Term of this Court what sum would be a reasonable fee for the counsel in this Cause

State of Tennessee De Kalb County J. M. B. Lawrence Clerk of
 De Kalb County Herewith Certified that the foregoing Report & Decree is a
 true and perfect Copy as appears by record now remaining in my office in the
 foregoing named Cause and that the same is a Copy of the whole Report & decree
 in said Cause as before mentioned Given under my hand at Smiths
 Hill this 25th day of April 1850
 J. M. B. Lawrence Clerk

Noted in Book A page 136 on the 25th day of April 1850 at 9 o'clock A.M.
 Registered this 1st day of May 1850 by John H. Hester of De Kalb County

Right
Highway sign directs the
visitor to Bad Rappenau
(Bonfeld), birthplace of
JOST HITE. Some small
towns are losing their
identity in present day
Germany's reorganization



Town of Bonfeld - named for
the ruling family during the
13th through 15th century. In
1496 the Gemmingens became rulers
and were in power when JOST HITE
was born. Bad Wimpfen was birth-
place of ANNA MARIA MERCKLE,
wife of HITE. Both towns are
now in county Landkreis of
Hillbron, Baden-Wurtemberg.

church in
Bonfeld.



The Gemmingens and those of their territory were of
the Lutheran faith. Their castle and church were
prominent buildings. Losses in lives and goods
because of decades of warfare were primary motivation
for emigration of enterprising families from the
Neckar Valley and the Kraichau region. JOST HITE
and his families were among the Palatine families
who found refuge in the Colony of New York in 1709/10.
ELIZABETH HITE, his daughter and our ancestor,
was baptized there in 1711. JOST HITE was a very
early "success story" making his life using native
intelligence, industry and thrift.

Photographs shared by Mrs. G. O. Kiger

Source of information: GERMAN ORIGINS OF JOST HITE,
Virginia Pioneer by Jones, Connor, Wust. Pub.
Shenandoah History, P. O. Box 98, Edinburg, VA 22824.
1979. p. 32.

This page is from "Overalls All Over", by Eudine
M. Britton, July 1988, Vol. II, Issue#4, p. 52.

JOST HITE Married
(5 DEC 1685-Before 1760)

ANNA MARIA MERCKLE
(16 Jan 1687-1736)

The German emigration to America in the early seventeen hundreds has been discussed, telling of the arrival of the Metts, Suber, and Weyman families. Here, again, we see German Lutherans of the Lower Palatinate driven from their homes by the Roman Catholics of Bavaria, Austria and France. Faced with the alternatives of death by hanging, being chained to an oar in a galley, or going to an uncivilized country called America, the choice was easy. Between 1700 and 1740, thousands of so-called Palatines came to South Carolina, North Carolina, Pennsylvania and New York. In New York, five settlements were established along the Hudson River in the fertile valleys of the Catskill mountains. The region was called New Paultz.

Johan (Hans) Justus (Jost) Heyd (Heydt) was born on 5 December 1685 in Bonfeld (There is no town by that name, today.), Germany. He was baptized the next day. His father, Johannes Heyd, was a butcher and civic councillor of Bonfeld whose wife's name was Magdalena. Young Johan became a linen weaver and on 11 December 1704, he married Anna Maria Merckle, the daughter of Abraham and Anna Veronica Merckle, also of Bonfeld. Johan and Anna Maria had a little girl, named Maria, in Germany.

The family sailed for America in 1710, landed and went to Kingston, New York, to the New Paultz settlements. As was true for many Germans with strange names, his became Jost Hite. Clerks would spell it several other ways as well. The family joined the church and records show that daughter Maria was joined by a little sister, Elizabeth, born 4 Nov 1711 in Kingston. This Elizabeth Hite would marry our ancestor, Captain Paul Froman, Sr., a Quaker of New Jersey. Their life will be discussed later. Another girl, Magdalena, was born in Kingston on 13 Sep 1713. In 1732, she married Jacob Chrisman of Swabia, Germany.

Jost must have heard the call of the frontier the moment he stepped ashore in America. His destiny was evident. The family set out for Pennsylvania in 1715 and settled in the Pastorius Colony near Germantown where he owned 174 acres in 1717. That was not enough land. He bought 600 acres the next year. He continued to farm and started weaving and milling enterprises. In 1720, he built a mill at the mouth of Perkiomen Creek. As did many German farmers, he lived in a log cabin until he had quarried rock and built fine barns for the farm animals. Then, he built a stone home for the family.

The family continued to grow. The next child born became Colonel John Hite, Sr. (c.1715-1792), who married Zara (Sarah) Eltingem (6 Feb 1715-) of Fredericktown, MD. The fourth child was Jacob Hite (1719-1778). He was a rover! He went to Europe for immigrants. He married twice, Catherine O'Bannon and Mrs. Francis Madison Beale. She and some of his children were killed by Indians in South Carolina. Lt. Isaac Hite (12 May 1723-28 Sep 1795) was the next child born in Pennsylvania. He married Helita (Eleanor) Eltinge (29 Apr 1724-10 Nov 1792). She was the daughter of Cornelius and Rebecca van Meter Eltinge, a sister of John's wife. Also born at Perkiomen was Colonel Abraham Hite, Sr. (10 May 1729-17 Jan 1770). He married Rebecca van Meter, daughter of Isaac and Annetje Wyncoop van Meter. (The last sentence could have been left out of this book, but these great names are fascinating!) The family continued to grow. Number six, Joseph Hite, Sr. (1731-1757) had a wife named Elizabeth; then, Maria Susannah, the last child married Abraham Weissman. Jost and Anna Maria had nine children.

During the years in Pennsylvania, Jost must have become a leader among his fellow settlers. Wealth and power followed thrift, hard work and

enterprise. In those days on the frontier, Indian raids were a real threat. Settlers were murdered and property destroyed. Hite and others sent a petition to Governor Gordon asking for help, but he ignored their plea. As the atrocities became worse, Hite organized the settlers and planned to move south. In 1630, Jost sold his 600 acres and his mill to John Pawling, who, later sold half interest in the mill and 58 acres of land to Isaac du Bois, a nephew of Jost Hite's wife. (This may be the source of many errors in books about the Hite family. They give the name of Jost Hite's wife as Anna Maria du Bois.) Later, the property was sold to Pater Pennybacker, ancestor of S.W. Pennybacker, Governor of Pennsylvania. During the American Revolution, George Washington camped on the old Hite land during and after the Battle of Germantown in October 1777.

In 1730, John Van Meter went to Williamsburg, Virginia, where Governor Sir William Gooch granted him 40,000 acres in the Shenandoah Valley. Jost Hite bought the grant from Van Meter in 1731 and Governor Gooch confirmed the transfer. The land was called "Hite's Grant".

The edge of civilization in Virginia was at the eastern slope of the Blue Ridge Mountains. The mountain country was a savage land. The frontiersmen had crossed it, but settlers had not gone in and established their farms. On 27 Oct 1731, another ancestor of ours, Robert McKay helped Hite get an order from the Council for an additional 100,000 acres. Jost Hite held grants that totalled 140,000 acres of land! The grant for the 100,000 acres required that he settle 100 families on the land. Hite set out with sixteen families - the same families that had come to America with him in 1710. Historians give Jost Hite the credit for being the first settler in the Shenandoah Valley. They moved across the Cohongoruton (Now the Potomac River) and established a village called Pack Horse Ford (later, Mecklenburg, then Shepherdstown, W.VA.)

At this point a few remarks may be helpful concerning the purchase of property in the early seventeen hundreds. Land on the frontier had very little if any monetary value. Few men were brave enough to go there, much less try to farm it. Trees and stones had to be removed by hand. Natural obstacles were compounded by the savage Indians. Most grants were free. The sale of land, such as the transfer from Van Meter, a family member, to Hite may have been made for as little as a penny an acre. This was a common value put on frontier property. Small taxes were placed upon land. In some cases, so-called "quitrents" were assessed. Based upon the assumption, no doubt, that huge sums were needed to buy so much land, false family legends, printed in several books, state that Jost Hite had been a baron in Germany, was wealthy, and had owned the two ships - the "Swift" and the "Friendship" - which brought the German families to America. Incredible! How would a German own two English ships and sail from Strassburg? Palatines were poor. Jost Hite earned his wealth in America the hard way.

Back to the story, the 16 families moved into the valley west of the Shenandoah River - a land beyond the most western county line. Hite assigned the land to families and gave them certificates that the Colonial Council would ratify. Some of the families were Hite's grown children. Son John Hite was given one of the first plantations located on the Obequon Creek. John built the first colonial home in the valley, called "Springdale". The settlers helped him build a stone fort. The ruins are on the east side of the Valley Turnpike. Other sons and sons-in-law built substantial stone homes surrounded by the richest lands in the valley.

Ownership of the land was contested by a favorite of the English King named Lord Fairfax. Hite went to court and the suit, very complicated, lasted

for 55 years. Fairfax and Hite were dead by the time it was settled. Hite won. Details of the suit are in several reference books.

By 1737, Hite had 57 families in the valley. He was given an extension of time to complete the one hundred. Most of these people were real Germans, writing in script, if they could write. They slept between feather beds, ate sauerkraut, wore short coats with long waist-coats above their breeches, and trimmed their broad hats with silver buckles. They spoke the German language and followed German customs. In 1987, we hear of marriage contracts as if they were something that the lost generation of the sixties had invented! Well, let me tell you that when Jost lost his wife, Anna Maria, in 1736, he waited a long time before he married again. Five years later, he married Maria Magdalena Neuschanger. First, she had to sign a marriage contract. Here it is:

MARRIAGE CONTRACT between JOIST HITE & MARIA MAGDALENA NEUSCHANGER

WHEREAS WE, two persons , I, Just Heite and Maria Magdalena, a Relict and widow of Christian Nuschanger, according to God's Holy Ordinance with the Knowledge and Consent of our Friends and Children and Relations are going to enter into the Holy State of Matrimony. We have made this Nuptial pact one with the other. First, I promise to the aforesaid Maria Magdalena, all the Christian Love and faithfulness. Secondly, as neither of us are at the moment secure from death so I promise her that my House shall be her Home or Widow Seat so long as she lives and the Heir to whom the said House shall fall shall provide her necessary Diet and Cloathes, and if that do not please but that she rather desires to have her commendations in any other place, so shall the aforesaid Heir to the House yearly pay her Six pounds ready money and that is my well considered desire.

Jost Hite

And likewise the wife, I, Maria Magdalena, promise the aforesaid Just Hite First all Love and Obedience. Secondly, I am designed to bring with me to him some Cattle, money, household stuff, which in other Agreement with Attested witnesses shall be Described and, should I die before the said Hite so shall the said Hite have the half thereof and the other half shall be delivered back again to my heirs and this is my well considered desire. Thirdly and Lastly, whoever of the aforesaid persons shall die first the half of the portion the Woman brings with her shall go back again to her heirs.

Her
Maria X Magdalena
Mark

John Hite
Jacob Hite
Isaac Hite
Joseph Hite
his
Jacob X Nisswanger
mark

November 10, 1741

Note how careless they were with the spelling - Joist, Just, Jost Hite, Heite did not seem to worry about how they spelled his name and Maria didn't even know because she could not write! Some of the variations in spelling were due to difficulty in reading German script signatures. The document is followed with a list of her possessions worth about fifty pounds. The

agreement was written in German, signed in script, and recorded in Orange County and in Frederick County.

Before Jost Hite died, he signed a simple will on 25 April 1758 at Frederick County, Virginia.

In the name of God Amen. I Joost Hite of Frederick County in the Colony of Virginia being in Good Health of Body and of sound and disposing mind and memory do make and ordain my last will and Testament in form following, that is to say

First and Principally I recommend my soul to the Hands of God Almighty and remit my Body to the Earth assuredly trusting to the mercy of Jesus Christ my Redeemer for Eternal Salvation, both Body and Soul at the Resurrection of the Just, and as touching my worldly estate I dispose thereof in the following manner viz..

My will and desire is that all my debts and funeral charges be first paid and Satisfied.

ITEM - I give and devise to my sons John, Jacob, Isaac and Abraham and to the heirs of my son Joseph, deceased, viz... John Hite, William Hite and Ann Hite, sons and daughter of my deceased son, all my Estate both Real and Personal, of Whatsoever Nature or Quality and to their Heirs and assigns forever to be Equally Divided Betwixt them as soon as Conveniently may be after my decease. But if it shall so happen that if any of my said son Joseph's children shall die before they arrive at age or marriage that the Survivor or Survivors of them shall be Equally Possessed of the Surety to the Deceased Part and to their Heirs and assigns forever. My will is that my Estate above mentioned be Divided into five Equal parts - to my son John Hite one-fifth part, to my son Jacob one-fifth part, to my son Isaac one-fifth part, to my son Abraham one-fifth part, and the above mentioned son Joseph Hite, Deceased, one-fifth part of my Estate to be Divided as above directed to his three children heretofore above named, and

Lastly I appoint and Constitute my sons John, Jacob, Isaac and Abraham my Executors of this my last Will and Testament ratifying and confirming this and no other to be my Sole Will and Testament and voiding all other wills by me heretofore made. In witness whereof I have set my hand and affixed my seal this 25th day of April in the year of our Lord One thousand seven Hundred and Fifty-eight (1758).

Joost Hite (Signed in German)

Probated 7 May 1761

Will Book 2, page 487, Frederick County, VA.

The Hite family were famous Virginians and made a major contribution to the history of the United States. More than a dozen of Jost Hite's sons, sons-in-law and grandsons served in the American Revolution. Five of them were colonels. As stated earlier, a complete book could be written about Jost Hite. For more details, readers are encouraged to read accounts in Shenandoah Valley Pioneers, by Cartmell, History of the Shenandoah Valley, by Wayland, Colonial Families of the United States, by McKenzie, and Some Prominent Virginia Families, by du Bellet.

Elizabeth, daughter of Jost Hite married Captain John Paul Froman, Sr.

Captain JOHN PAUL FROMAN, SR. married ELIZABETH HITE
(1703/09-1783) (4 NOV 1711-1783)

John Paul Froman is called Paul Froman in most references. He was born in New Jersey and became acquainted with the Hite family before they started their emigration south. He married Elizabeth, the second daughter of Jost Hite. The old court records in Kingston, New York, show that she was baptized there on 04 Nov 1711. Elizabeth was the first member of the Hite family to be born in America. Paul was a member of the Quaker society.

When the family arrived in the Shenandoah Valley of Virginia, they settled a large tract of land on the north side of Cedar Creek. The land included Zane's Forge and Winter Hill, as it was called then. The home was nearby with springs flowing from the base of the limestone hill. The first task was to build a fort for protection from the Indians. It was made of logs and surrounded by two acres surrounded by a picket fence. The Froman, Colville and Bayliss families built the fort for their safety.

In 1743, a road was built from the fort to the county seat. In 1751, Paul Froman built a substantial stone home for his family. Jost Hite gave Paul Froman five hundred acres. Orange County Court records read, "To adjoin on the side of Froman's survey"

Paul Froman and Elizabeth Hite had five children:

1. Sarah Jane Froman was born 15 Nov 1732 and died in 1750. She was the first white child born in the Shenandoah Valley.

2. John Paul Froman, Jr. was born 16 Oct 1734.

3. Maria Christina Froman was born 01 Mar 1736. She is our ancestress who married William Overall as discussed earlier.

4. Elizabeth Froman, born 08 May 1738, married Nathaniel Cartmell and died at their home, called "Retirement", about four miles west of Winchester.

5. Jacob Froman went with his father and mother when they moved to Pittsburg. Jacob bought land there. Later, seeking adventure, he floated down the Ohio River on a raft and landed in Kentucky where he became prominent. His brother, John Paul, Jr., followed him. Lastly, to complete the family, the old father, John Paul, Sr., sold his land in Pennsylvania for a good price and headed for Kentucky. The family became wealthy and the Froman name became well known.

John Paul Froman, Sr., called Paul Froman, was a brave man and a patriot. On the next page is a reduced copy of a payroll that he prepared and certified on 04 Oct 1775. At that time, he was in the militia. The service involved was for a campaign called "Dunmore's War". Lord Dunmore, Governor of Virginia, was determined to solve the Indian problems by military action. Pennsylvania preferred trade without war. Records for this payroll are found in the Virginia State Library, Pittsburg Payroll, Misc. Reel 78, pp. 29, 29a, Payroll of Captain Paul Froman's company of militia, paid 4 October 1775. The National Society Sons of the American Revolution gives credit for Revolutionary service for participation from 19 April 1775 to 26 Nov 1783. Therefore, the document will qualify Paul Froman for SAR credit and for Colonial War service in various societies. He was a very old man when the Revolution started, but he did serve. There are manuscripts pertaining to George Rogers Clark, which are in the Virginia State Library, photostated and bound, but not indexed, referenced as: T - Serial D, Volume 2, Page 897, and T - Serial D, Volume 1, Page 442.

The Eighth Annual Report of the LIBRARY BOARD of the Virginia State Library - 1910-1911, No. 5826, p. 172, lists Paul Froman. The NSDAR Patriot Index, p.253, gives him credit for military service as a Captain in Virginia. The Historical Register of Virginians in the Revolution, by Gwathmey, p. 290, gives him credit for service in 1781.

When the Fromans left the Shenandoah Valley and moved to Pennsylvania, they lived near Fort Pitt, which is now Pittsburg, in Washington County. From there, they went in flat boats down the Ohio River to Kentucky before 1780. Paul Froman lead a long and interesting life. He was about 80 years old when he wrote his will:

WILL OF PAUL FROMAN, SR., LINCOLN COUNTY, VIRGINIA April 28, 1783

The 28th day of April in the year of our Lord God 1783, I, Paul Froman, Gent. of Lincoln Co., Va. being very sick and weak in body but of perfect mind and memory, thanks be given to God for it, therefore calling to mind the mortality of my body and knowing that it is appointed for all men to die, do make and ordain this my last Will and Testament,-----

Principally and First of all I give and recommend my soul to the hands of God who gave it and for my body I recommend it to the earth to be buried in a Christian like manner at the direction of my executors, not doubting that at the general resurrection I shall receive the same again by the mighty power of God. And as touching such worldly estate whereof it hath pleased God to bless me with in this life I give and devise and dispose of same in following form and manner ---

FIRST - I give and bequeath to Elizabeth my beloved wife the third of my whole estate, together with my household goods - likewise I give to my beloved son Paul Froman, Jr., forty dollars, and to my daughters twenty dollars, and each of my daughters that is deceased the same shall be given to their husbands or children - and the residue after my debts be justly paid I give and bequeath to my beloved son, Jacob Froman, whom I likewise constitute, make and ordain my only executor of this my last will and testament, all and singular of my messuages and tiniments by him to be freely possessed and enjoyed, and I do disallow, revoke and disavow all other wills and Testaments made, etc.

PAUL FROMAN (Seal)

The will was witnessed and was probated in court on 20 May 1783. It is found in Will Book A, page 46, Lincoln County, Kentucky. Remember that Kentucky was part of Virginia before it became a state. The settlement inventory is in Will Book A, p. 140 - 27 Mar 1784. It lists nine slaves, four of them children, and a few household items - value in all, 704 pounds and ten shillings.

Paul lived to see George Washington become President. He died in Kentucky near Harrodsburg and he is buried there in the Old Fort Cemetery or in a churchyard nearby. He had helped carry civilization to York, Pennsylvania and to the Shenandoah Valley of Virginia. Finally, he was one of the first citizens of Kentucky. Probably, Elizabeth was buried beside her husband.

This one generation of Fromans belongs to our family tree. Their daughter, Maria Christina became an Overall. So we leave the great old soldier and turn to another branch on the chart. Lt. Col. Abraham Overall married a lady named Hannah Leath. Her ancestors were Leaths, McKays, Chesters and Cartmells. The Leath branch will be discussed first.

EPHRAIM LEATH married BARBARA —
(- 1786) Dec 1750 (-Before 1786)

Few details are known about Ephraim Leath. His name was spelled many ways - Leath, Leeth, Leith, but they all sound about the same. Fortunately, there were so few people in western Virginia in the olden times that we can be certain that we have the same man regardless of the spelling. He was in Augusta County, Virginia in 1750. In 1775, he had 12 people in his family. By 1783, the number was only six. He died in Shenandoah County without a will. His inventory was made on 27 Jul 1786 by Jeremiah McKay, John Overall, and Sinnet Young. Wife, Barbara, must have died before Ephraim. Only two of their children are known. One is James Leath "the Elder", who is our ancestor. The other child was Ephraim Leath, Jr. He was born about 1755, and on 3 August 1784, he married a lady named Nancy Jones.

Ephraim Leath, Sr., is given credit for Patriotic Service during the American Revolution because he furnished beef to the soldiers of the Continental Line, for which he was paid one pound, seventeen shillings and six pence. (That's about what a steak costs in 1987!) The document on the next page is proof. Note that his son, Ephraim, Jr., not our ancestor, had military service. Also, James McKay, who is our ancestor collected four shillings and six pence for driving the cows to the soldiers.

JAMES LEATH married Lydia McKay
(c.1753-1806) 13 Sep 1774 (c.1754-after 1806)

Again, little is known about James, called "the Elder" because he had a son with the same name. He, along with the McKays, lived in the Shenandoah Valley of Virginia. He and Lydia had four children, named in his will. They were:

1. George (c.1775-after 1835) married Susannah McKay on 12 Jun 1807.
2. Polly married Joel Ferrell on 14 Aug 1794.
3. Hannah Leath, our ancestress, (c.1780-1837) married Colonel Abraham Overall on 7 Sep 1799 and moved from the Shenandoah to DeKalb County, TN.
4. Nancy was born about 1792.

The will of James Leath was written in Shenandoah County on 13 Jul 1806. The entire document is in Wenzola Kiger's book, Overall. James named five slaves given to various children. One slave, Lucy, went to his wife, then to daughter Polly until she became 18. On that day, slave Lucy would be free. Son, George, got the land, except that his mother would use 1/3 during her life or widowhood. Our Hannah Leath Overall was given her share of the "moveable property" and money to make up for there being no slave for her. James refers to his "Mansion house and barn". The will was witnessed by Jeremiah McKay, William McKay, and Abraham Overall.

The will is recorded in Woodstock, Shenandoah County, Virginia, Will Book F, page 480, and the settlement is in the same book, page 522, 1807.

James Leath was a good candidate for service in the American Revolution, about 23 in '76, but a careful search has failed to turn up a single clue. On the other hand, these may have been very private people. Note how few details are known about them. And,- he may have been sick.

Lydia McKay's ancestors will come next!

November 27th 1783

Militia - (D)

X	Christian Miller - In Rye furnished the Militia in May 81. as p ^r Cert: allowed by the Court of Shenandoab.	9
X1	William Kennedy - Iron furnished ditto June 82 - p ^r do.	1 8.6
X1	Henry Keviler - Mutton June 81 - do.	1 4
X1	Abraham Kendrick - Hay June 81 - do. Nov 80 & Jan 781 - do.	2 8.9
X1	Jacob Longacre - Meat & June 81 - do.	1 13
X1	Benjamin Leamer Wagon hire for do June 81 - do.	1 13
X	Ephraim Litch June 81 for service performed the Militia & do. - a horse furnished 15 th - do.	15 6.9
X1	George Lane - Bacon furnished Militia May 78 - do.	8 14.9
X1	Philip Long - do - furnished ditto June 81 - do.	3 17.3
X1	Isaac Litch - a Dog June 81 - do - April 81 - do.	5

United States - (D)

X	Jacob Lane for wheat June 81 the C.P.L. - p ^r Cert: of	3 15
X	George Lane - Beef June 81 Cont: Army - do.	2 10
X	Ephraim Litch - Beef June 81 C.P.L. - do.	1 17.6
X	John Moore - Whisky June 81 - do.	13
X	Alexander Macher, Wagon hire furnished the Cont: one for 50 th - one for 10 th - one for 10 th 11/11 - do.	70 11.11
X	Daniel Mock - flour June 81 - C.P.L. - do.	8
X1	John Macher - service as do to C.P.L. - do.	3 12
X	James & Robert McEly - three services collecting & driving Bees for C.P.L. - do.	4 6
X1	Daniel Muthing - service, driving Bees for public use - do.	5 3.6
X1	William Miller, pasturage of Bees June 81 - C.P.L. - do.	4 4
X1	Abraham McHenry - Wagon hire June 81 the Cont: - do.	2 15
X1	Francis McHenry - driving Bees for C.P.L. - do.	3 3

Prisoners of War - (D)

X	Daniel Muthing - Bacon furnished Prisoners of War p ^r Cert: of	17.3
X	Reuben Moore - Beef furnished - do - p ^r do.	6 17.3
X	Alexander Macher, Wagon hire June 81 Prisoners/war Convention Troops/one for 20 th - one for 9 th 18/81 - do.	29 15

Southern Expedition - (D)

X	Christian Miller - services, for shoeing horses for the Militia owed to the Cont: p ^r Cert: of	9
---	---	---

SHENANDOAH VALLEY - Public Service Claims
 Commissioner's Book 5, Page 16, p 158 (A 02)
 VIRGINIA STATE LIBRARY

The will of Robert McKay, Sr., is very long for two good reasons. He had nine children, so ITEM by ITEM, he provides for every one of them. Secondly, he had plenty to give away. Remember that he was a partner of Jost Hite. After making his peace with God and paying off his debts, he names all his sons, daughters and sons-in-law. Most of the provisions concerned land. Robert, Zachariah (called Zachary), and Moses were given 7,000 acres of land each. Others were given plantations by names, such as: "Joshua Bottom", "George's Bottom", "Nathaniel Chalheath Bottom" and "Hay Bottom". The Joshua and George were first names of the girls that got land. As for the "Bottom", it must have meant fertile land in the valleys. Our ancestor, James McKay was mentioned in the seventh ITEM:

"ITEM - I give and bequeath to my son James his Place or Plantation part of the aforesaid grant being 110 acres or thereabouts called the "Old Place" and to the heirs of his Body and in case he dies without Heirs or such heirs dies without any then I give the same to my said sons equally and their heirs." James seems to have inherited less than the other children. He did get a share of anything left over, which could have been more than his 110 acres.

Old Robert seems to have been so busy giving to the children that he forgot to do anything for his wife, Margaret. Maybe she reminded him, because he added a long codicil to the will to provide for her. Without the legal phrases, it reads "I give to my son Moses my Plantation I live on commonly known as 'Hay Bottom'----my will and desire is that my wife live on that plantation during her natural life and that each of my four sons pay unto my wife three pounds currency a piece each year for and towards her keeping and maintenance and that my son Moses find and provide fire wood for her during her life----" She may or may not have considered herself to be fortunate!

The will of Robert McKay, Sr., was probated in Augusta County, Virginia, on 19 August 1753.

JAMES McKay, SR. married MARY CHESTER
(c.1712-1797) c.1735 (c.1719-after 1797)

James married Mary Chester in Cecil County, Maryland. She was the daughter of Captain Thomas Chester and Sarah Cartmell. After the wedding, they moved to the Shenandoah Valley where all of their children were born. The two boys and five girls were:

1. James McKay, Jr., (c.1740-1787) married Mary Check (c.1745-1820/30). After his death, she took her children to Indiana.
2. Susannah (c.1737-) married John Cock (-c.1812). (??Can this John Cock, who died in Kentucky be related to our John Cock - page 100 ??)
3. Hannah (c.1744-) married Isaac McCurdy.
4. Mary (c.1750-after 1823) married William Nelson and had 7 or 9 kids.
5. Edith (c.1752-) married Jonathan McCarty of Indiana - 15 children.
6. Lydia McKay is our ancestress who married James Leath (Page 104-r).
7. Robert McKay II (12 Feb 1760-after 28 Sep 1835) married 9 Jul 1782 Lidia Leath (c.1763-c.1830). He fought in the Revolution.

Our James McKay, Sr., qualifies for "Patriotic Service" as defined by the Sons of the American Revolution. On page 104-s, the document proves that he and his brother Robert were paid four shillings, six pence for "their services collecting and driving beeves for C.P.L." It means that they rounded up cows for the soldiers. Another document follows this page. It proves that James provided a wagon for three days to the revolutionary soldiers. He was paid one pound, ten shillings.

No.	Name	Time taken		No. of pages	How filed	August 1782	
		Week	Days			1st	2nd
199	Law Books	1	10	10		10	
200	Flow Machine	1	8	10		10	
201	Wm. Beckman	1	15			10	
202	David B. ...					10	
203	John ...					10	
204	Henry ...					10	
205	...					10	
206	...					10	
207	...					10	
208	...					10	
209	...					10	
210	...					10	
211	...					10	
212	...					10	
213	...					10	
214	...					10	
215	...					10	
216	...					10	
217	...					10	
218	...					10	
219	...					10	
220	...					10	
221	...					10	
222	...					10	
223	...					10	
224	...					10	
225	...					10	
226	...					10	
227	...					10	
228	...					10	
229	...					10	
230	...					10	
231	...					10	
232	...					10	

Virginia State Library
Shenandoah Valley
Public Service
Court Book at

Reel 4 P. 7

15
16
17
18
19
20
21
22
23
24
25
26
27
28
29
30
31
32
33
34
35
36
37
38

James McKay, Sr., signed and sealed his will on July 18th, 1797. His document is as long as his father's, but quite different. His father came close to forgetting about his wife, but not James! The first ITEM set Mary Chester McKay up for the rest of her life. It reads:

"ITEM - I give and bequeath to my beloved wife Mary that part of my plantation whereon I now live beginning at the lower ford and including the lower field with half the lower meadow and also the pasture adjoining the lower field along the hillside and timber for the support of the same and that part of my dwelling house called 'my room' and also the lower end of the barn and likewise two beds (beds) two cows and calves two yearling heffers and all which shall be of her chusing and likewise the Darby mare which after her decease shall fall to Susannah Cock, wife of John Cock and also what pewter tea pots or other utensils she may think she stands in need of with as much poard and grain as shall be necessary for her support at that present and also six sheep and one good breeding sow and six others all of her own chusing all the above moveable to be disposed of at her death as she may think proper and the land to fall to my son Robert who is to find her a full soplly (supply) of fire wood dure her life."

James may not have known much about spelling and the entire ITEM is one long sentence, but his heart was in the right place! There are eight "ITEMS" in the will. The one that applies to our Lydia reads:

"ITEM - my further will and desire is that after my decease there should fall to my wife more land than what is here bequeathed her that the same be equally divided between my daughters, vix..Nancy, Susannah, & Lydia until they shall have as much land in proportion returning what they have possessed as I have given my son Robert, and if any overplus to be equally divided amongst my above mentioned children to have a child's part of said overplus they paying each of above mentioned children purportionable part of the expence of what is behind what may yet be to come - in respect of the great suite and if it should not hold out as much as I have bequeathed to my children or my son's children the possession to pay the afourd cost as purportion to what they shall hold."

After reading the ITEM several times and shaking the old head vigorously between each effort, what Lydia was given is still a mystery. The "great suite" is the legal action whereby Lord Fairfax tried to cancel part of the grant of 100,000 acres. The will passes out a lot more land than James was willed by his father. Executors appointed were Robert McKay and John Cock, but John refused to serve. Maybe he could not understand the will. It is understandable that the title to all of the land may have been questionable as long as the courts had not acted.

One statement was clear. It is, "I give and bequeath to my mulatto Sam his freedom". No other slaves are mentioned in the will.

The first line of the will identifies James McKay as being of the parish of Beckfort and county of Shenandoah in the colony of Virginia. The will was recorded in court on September 12, 1797. This will, the one of Robert McKay and any other wills in this chapter that are discussed rather than being copied can be found complete in the book, Overall, by Wenzola Kiger.

This completes the information about the McKays. The reader should return to the chart on page two. The ancestors of Louisa Overall have been discussed with the exception of those on the right of the chart with the surnames Baldrige, Jones, Cartmell and Chester. Most of the information available about these generations is in wills that are on record and are found complete in Wenzola Kiger's book. To complete this chapter, each surname will be discussed with references and a condensed description of each will.

BALDRIDGE

William Overall, Sr., the first of his surname that we have on record, married Jane Baldrige about 1680. Jane must have been quite a lady. William was her fourth husband. However, such a score was not unusual in old Virginia. As has been written over and over again in this book, life was hard in the olden times. Disease, wars, Indians, and accidents took many men and women at early ages. Women did not inherit much - wills passed the land to the oldest boy. Widows remarried. Jane was the daughter of James Baldrige and his wife, Dorothy.

The prominent Baldrige family came from England to Maryland. Brothers Thomas and James were among the first settlers. Both were members of the First General Assembly of Maryland which met at St. Mary's on 25 Jan 1637. James was High Sheriff of St. Mary's in 1637 and Sheriff in 1638. Both brothers moved to Virginia where Captain Thomas Baldrige patented 840 acres of land in Northumberland County on 3 April 1655, south of the Potomac and east of Hallows Creek. He claimed to have transported 17 people including James, Thomas, Mary and William Baldrige. Mary was a sister of James and Thomas. She married William Horton.

James Baldrige is called "The Elder" because his brother, Thomas, had a son named James. James, the elder, was married to Dorothy ---. James and Dorothy were the parents of William, and our ancestress, Jane Baldrige. Jane's husband number one was Captain Alexander Bayanham, "a commissioner of ye county of Westmoreland". They had Elizabeth Ann, Mary and Anne. Next, Jane married Thomas Butler and she gave him a namesake named Thomas. Third came John Berryman, who died about 1679. Last, but not least, came our ancestor. Jane married William Overall, Sr., and they had our William Overall, Jr., about 1682. So, you see, Jane married four times and had only five children.

The Daughter of the American Colonists have approved the lineage of James and Dorothy down through Abraham and Hannah Leath Overall.

James and Dorothy wrote wills that are interesting. James died first in Westmoreland County in 1658. His will is dated 26 Nov 1650 and it states:

"In the name of God Amen. I, James Baldrige, being very sick and weak of body but in perfect sence and memory blessed be God, doe make constitute and ordain this my last Will and Testament.

"IMPRIMIS - I bequeath my soul to God that gave it and my body to the ground from whence came therein to be interred with solemn and decent burial in sure and certain hope of Joyfall resurrection both of soul and body together to Everlasting Glory.

"ITEM - I give Daniel Sisson the first foal of the Gray Mare. I leave mine whole estate chattle, chattels, and moveables and immovables and servants and Land whatsoever unto my loving wife Dorothy Baldrige to use and dispose thereof as she shall please and think fit and requisite, ordaining her my full and whole Executrix of this my last Will and Testament utterly revoking and renouncing all former wills whatsoever.

"In witness whereof I have hereunto set my hand and seal this 26th of November 1650.

James Baldrige (SEAL) "

Recorded 10 Jan 1651, Westmoreland Co., VA, Deed & Will Book #1, page 106.

James did not name children. His wife, Dorothy, a typical grandmother, named her grandchildren in her will and gave them various gifts: colts, an old gun, or tobacco, which was the same as money in old Virginia. One ITEM was strange, it reads:

"I give unto John Stands and Stephen each one year of their turn of time which they were to serve a piece." ?????

Jane, daughter of James and Dorothy had not married William Overall when the will was written on 2 Nov 1662 in Westmoreland County, where it is found in Deeds and Will Book #1, page 188, et seq. Jane did not marry William Overall until after 1779, when husband number three died.

Dorothy Baldrige's will has twice the language used by Thomas to insure her entry into heaven. Not certain that she had succeeded, she added this :

"ITEM - it is my will and mind that the Bowle and Challice be sent out of England this shipping and that my Executor hereafter named shall pay 2,000 lbs of Tobacco in cash for them. And I give said Cup or Bowle and Challice to the parish Church of Appomattox to celebrate the Communion forever. And it is my will that my name be engraving in the said Bowle and Challice."

This church was called, later, Pope's Creek Church. It is not known whether they ever got the Bowl and Challice.

JONES

John Jones and his wife, Anne, were the parents of Mary Jones, who married William Overall, Jr., about 1700.

The father of the above John Jones must have been another John Jones who made his will in Washington Parish of Westmoreland County, Virginia, on 4 Jan 1695. That will is in Deed and Will Book #2, page 60. In the will, he gives his son, Ashton Jones a child's part of the plantation, the home place, when he is eighteen, and charges him with the responsibility of care of his mother. John names a daughter, Elizabeth. The will goes on to name two more minor sons, Mainwaring Jones and John Jones, telling them to live with their "mother in Law", his wife, Mary. What John meant was "real mother by law". John gave his wife, Mary, "all my passanall (personal) Estate" including "all the plate". The will was proved in court on 25 March 1695.

The next will is that of son, John Jones who married Anne. This will was signed and sealed on 10 Jan 1707 in Westmoreland County. It was not probated until 5 Jun 1713 and is found in Will Book 5, pages 155-6. The will has twelve lines of religious instruction and then gets to the interesting items that name his children:

ITEM - I give and bequeath unto my son Nathaniel Jones one black mare branded H one cow and calf and a gun two pewter dishes one sow with pigg one bason three plates one pott to be delivered at age.

ITEM - I give and bequeath to my daughter Elizabeth Jones a feather bed one iron pott one cow and calfe a Dutch chest and the first mare colt that Nathaniel Jones his mare brings.

ITEM - I give and bequeath unto my son Charles Jones a cow and calfe and the first mare colt my mare Bony bringeth; one sow with pigg one gun one large pewter bason one brass skillet.

ITEM - I give and bequeath unto John Overall, son of William Overall, and to William Overall, Jr. each of them a young heifer.

ITEM - I give and bequeath unto Mary Overall one young mare.

ITEM - I give and bequeath unto my wife one feather bed and furniture one horse a side saddle one warming pan a brass kettle.

ITEM/- I give one crown to my daughter Anne Jones.

I do constitute and appoint William Overall to be my executor of this my last Will and Testament.

All the rest of my estate to be equally divided between my wife and children and my land I give to be equally divided in quantity - that is to Nathaniel Jones and Charles Jones to them and their heirs successively forever and no other. Witness my hand and seale this 10th day of January Anno Qt. Dom: 1707.

JOHN JONES (SEAL)

CARTMELL

Nathaniel Cartmell and his wife, Dorothy, were the parents of Sarah Cartmell, who married Captain Thomas Chester of Frederick County, Virginia. We have the last Will and Testament of Dorothy, which was made in Frederick County, Virginia on 20 April 1749. Obviously, she outlived her husband and may have lived a long life. Her will has thirteen items, whereby, she gives money or various objects to her children and grandchildren who are named. The item that applies to our ancestors is number two:

ITEM - I give and bequeath to my son-in-law Thomas Chester a Bond which I have against him therefore my will and mind is that my Executor deliver to him the Bond. Also

I give and bequeath to my Daughter Sarah Chester the sum of Five Pounds Pennsylvania money to be paid within Twelve months after my Decease.

The children named are: Thomas; our Sarah, and a daughter who married a Smith. The Grandchildren were: Nathaniel Cartmell, Nathan Cartmell, Thomas Smith, Lydia Smith, Mary Smith, Sarah Smith, Mary Chester, Susannah Chester, Elizabeth Smith, Thomas Chester, David Chester, Joseph Cartmell, Thomas Cartmell, William Cartmell, Sarah Cartmell, Hannah Cartmell, and Edward Cartmell. There were seventeen grandchildren.

The last named, Edward, was given two slaves, one being a woman who would be free in five years.

Our Sarah Cartmell married Captain Thomas Chester.

CHESTER

Captain Thomas Chester and Sarah Cartmell were the parents of our Mary Chester who married James McKay, Sr. Thomas and Sarah had five children: our Mary, Susanna Chester Harrold, Thomas, David, and Elizabeth Chester Smith.

Thomas Chester wrote his will in Frederick County, Virginia, before 1759. It was probated on 2 Oct 1759, presented in court by James McKay. Sarah Cartmell Chester appeared in court, so she outlived Thomas.

The will gave the land to the two boys with the provision "that it be divided at the Discretion of Charles Buck and James McKay having a more particular regard to the Equality in the Goodness than the Equality of Quantity and that the upper orchard be laid off the upper part and the lower orchard to the lower part and that they go half shares at both Nurserys."

He provided for his wife, Sarah, by allocating 100 acres from which she would get the profit for the rest of her life. He left nothing to his daughters other than the provision that, if both sons died without heirs, the male heir of our Mary McKay would get the land. Then, Elizabeth and Susanna would get a chance.

THIS COMPLETES THIS 1987 CHAPTER ABOUT THE OVERALLS. A FINAL STATEMENT IS APPROPRIATE. THIS STORY COULD NOT HAVE BEEN INCLUDED EXCEPT FOR THE GREAT WORK OF WENZOLA R. KIGER AND HER EXCELLENT BOOK, "OVERALL". THE METTS FAMILY OWES HER A DEBT OF GRATITUDE. THANK YOU, WENZOLA!

Some books give the origin of the Oliver name as "one who carries the olive branch". The olive branch is defined as "la: a branch of the olive tree esp. when used as an emblem of peace---b: an offer or gesture of conciliation or good will---". It seems to be appropriate.

For eighty years there had been no communication between the Olivers and our Pillow branch of the family. When John Madison Oliver and Elizabeth Porter Pillow Oliver were separated, Bessie took the children, Gladys and William, and the long silence began. In 1981, I "carried the olive branch" to the little town of Wesson, Mississippi, the old home of the Olivers. My wife, Betty, and I went to the cemetery, where we found the Olivers buried. John Madison Oliver lies at the feet of his parents. A considerate local citizen gave me the address of Miss Ella Rea and her cousin Decima. I wrote a letter to these gentle elderly ladies. In response, they wrote that our cousin, Mrs. C.C.Smith, Rilla, of Brookhaven, Mississippi, would write to me.

Rilla and I have become close friends as we developed the Oliver family history. My wife, Betty, and I have visited in her lovely country home when we have been in Mississippi. She has been interested in and has actively researched the family for years. Her generosity has made this part of the book possible. This kind and intelligent lady has responded to the "olive branch" with friendship and total cooperation. The long void has been our loss. These cousins should have been close kin throughout the years.

This part of the book could be expanded, easily, to become a separate book, or several books. As we present the direct lineage back through the years, it is proper that the Oliver surname be covered first. Then, as the distaff names become evident, the Callaways, Shivers, Hendersons, Godwins, Pitts, Bridgers, Madisons, and many more will enter the story.

Although the ancestors are shown as those of John Madison Oliver, they are equally related to his brothers and sisters, of course. With slight adaptation, this family history can become useful to all the descendants of William Oliver. Generally, we find a very aristocratic background. Many of the ancestors were famous, well documented in the history of their times. Direct quotes or copies from the printed descriptions will be used to allow variety in the style of writing and to show the greatness of the writers of a century past. Some documents are included. Many are not copied, but are available. Too much reference can kill interest in the text. Where proof is less than complete, there will be discussion.

Some of the individuals have been documented with the so called "patriotic societies". John Oliver and Captain George Cowan have been certified by the National Society of the Sons of the American Revolution. Lt. Col. Robert Pitt, Colonel Joseph Bridger, and Colonel Thomas Godwin were certified by the General Society of Colonial Wars. The lineage through Isabella Graves Henderson, wife of Joshua Callaway, Sr., to thirteen of the Barons who were Sureties to enforce the Magna Charta has been approved by the Somerset Chapter, Magna Charta Barons.

Oliver, Part II will begin with the background of the surname.

Oliver

The Oliver name was well known throughout the British Isles. Some by that name lived in Kent, Lincolnshire, and Devonshire. Others lived in County Limerick, Ireland, where the family owned twenty-four town lands during the reign of Queen Elizabeth. These Olivers may account for the "olive branch" theory of name origin. Coming from France with the Normans, Olivier became Oliver. On the other hand, in lower Scotland, Olivers lived and claimed Scandanavian origin. They claim that Oliver came from Olaf or Olafr, an old Norse word meaning "left by his ancestors". Others give the German word Alfihir meaning "elf-host".

The French epic poem, "Song of Roland", tells about heroic knights of Charlemagne and the duel between Roland and Oliver. The eldest version of the poem was Teutonic with probable Norse background. Olivers by various spellings are found throughout old British history. In Scotland, Olivers were members of the Clan Fraser. Walter Olifer witnessed a gift by King William the Lion in 1180. John Oliver was Mayor of Berwick about 1250. Over the years, we find Olivers named John, Thomas, Robert, and William.

It comes as no surprise that in the early 1600's many Olivers came to America. In Virginia, some emigrants were Francis (1620), Edward (1623), John (1647), William (1687), Thomas (1708), and many more. They were alike in one way. They gave their sons plain usual English names. This leads to the problem in tracking ancestors. The first of our Olivers that can be identified and proved is John Oliver, of Jones County, North Carolina. He died in 1787. A long list of capable genealogists have been searching for years to identify John's parents to no avail. There were at least a dozen John Olivers in North Carolina during the American Revolution..

JOHN MADISON OLIVER married ELIZABETH PORTER PILLOW
4 Apr 1867-24 Feb 1934 24 May 1892 9 May 1870-17 Aug 1953



This part of the family history tells of the ancestors of John Madison Oliver. He was born in New Orleans the year after his father moved there from Trenton, Louisiana. His father had completed his service as a Captain in the Confederate Army as the War Between the States came to a close. When John was three years old, the family moved to the small town of Wesson, MS, where his father became manager and co-owner of the cotton and woolen mills. The family members were very religious Presbyterians. His father became a powerful and very wealthy man.

The family home was a large mansion and it still stands today. The mills employed 2000 people. During John Oliver's early years, the town prospered and the Oliver family were the leading citizens. Naturally, John had every advantage. He must have been exceptionally intelligent. Family stories tell of his ability to add columns of three digit numbers from memory. He was sent to the University of Mississippi at a young age. While there, he excelled in his studies. On one occasion, the Hazelhurst, MS, newspaper, the Signal Copenhian, June 2, 1887, printed an item which stated: "The Champion Debater. On May 29th, the Herman Literary Society of the Oxford University had a competitive debate, which was participated in by five young men. Each sustained his part ably, the successful one being Jno. M. Oliver, of Wesson, which decision of the judges gave satisfaction, as it was a just reward. We are pleased to note the success of our Copenhian boys." Copenhian was the name of the county.

At the university, John was a member of the Phi Delta Theta fraternity. His graduation diploma is framed and hangs in the library at the University of Mississippi (Ole Miss). It states that he "is hereby declared PROFICIENT in the School of Elocution of the University, Oxford, Mississippi, June 24, 1886." John was nineteen years old. The diploma was presented to the university by Albert Caswell Netts, III and Martha Gee Netts Graber, both graduates of the university and great grandchildren of John Madison Oliver.

He must have inherited his father's ambition. Looking to the future, he went to Gainesville, Georgia, and built the first telephone company in Georgia. It extended lines over part of north Georgia. Success and wealth followed. Six years after graduation, he married Bessie Pillow, a daughter of another wealthy Mississippi family of Greenwood. Her early life had been similar to his. Her family traveled often, taking personal servants for each of the children. Wagon loads of trunks would meet the train. The children were educated by tutors or private schools.

John and Bessie lived the good life for the early years of their marriage. Their home in Gainesville was large and comfortable. They owned the first porcelain indoor bathtub in the town. Also, they owned a home in Florida with citrus orchards. The family lived in Florida in the winter and Gainesville in the summer. Gladys was born June 22, 1893 and William on May 23, 1897. Gladys was educated at Agnes Scott and Brenau. William went to Riverside Military Academy.

The good times ended abruptly and John was given one blow after another which would defeat the spirit of any man. First, the Bell Telephone Company was becoming a national institution. It came to Georgia. Ma Bell offered John Oliver one million dollars for his company. At the turn of the century, there were few millionaires in America. The stamp on a letter was two cents, so dollars were valuable. John had the opportunity, but he chose to fight and he lost. Bell put in free telephones until the private company failed.

Next, Bessie left and went back to her family in Greenwood, MS. She said that they were divorced, but neither of them ever remarried. Both lead long and lonely lives. There is a moral here—somewhere!

John went back to Wesson. He became a merchant in the town that was virtually owned by his family. The town depended upon the mills. When World War I ended, there was labor unrest all over the country. John's father, the great leader was long dead. The employees at the mills called a strike. Their

Anniversary Ball



SUBJECT: "THE IDEAL OF THOUGHT"



Reception Committee.
 BERN PRICE AND LADY, JIM JENKINS AND LADY
 H. H. BRYANT AND LADY, P. H. BARNES AND LADY

Arrangement Committee.
 FRANK M. PURNELL, CHAIRMAN
 E. G. TAYLOR, E. J. BUCK, R. E. LYNCH

Invitation Committee.
 WALTON SHIELDS, CHAIRMAN
 R. D. SESSIONS, H. C. TYE
 G. B. HEBRON, R. P. NALLE

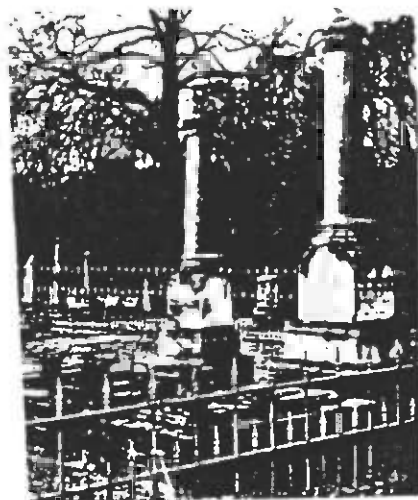
Floor Managers.
 BLUE ROSEMAN
 JOHN ROSS, CHAIRMAN
 W. H. YERGEN, J. B. WHITEHEAD

demands were refused. The mill was torn apart, brick by brick. The machinery was shipped north. Worker's homes, owned by the mills, were sold for pennies on the dollar and moved away. The town died. John Oliver's health failed and he moved to Berkeley Springs, West Virginia. The great depression may have dealt him the final blow, because he died in 1934. His body was returned to Wesson. Bessie lies in the Pillow cemetery, near Greenwood, almost exactly where she was born.

Today, most of the citizens of Wesson are in the well kept Wesson Cemetery. The Oliver lot is in the center and is prominent. A heavy iron fence surrounds the graves. The large monument is that of William, John's famous father. The other large one, next to William, is Mary's. She was William's first wife. John lies at his feet.

WESSON CEMETERY

William Oliver Rea 1875-1955
John Wimberly Rea 1879-1942
John Madison Oliver 1867-1934
Rilla Oliver Rea 1852-1938
Robert Wiley Rea M.D. 36 Miss. Inf. CSA 1844-1923
Robert Wiley Rea 1885-1885
James Madison Rea 1880-1881
George Robert Rea 1877-1878
Lula Oliver 1863-1882
Mary Milner Callaway 1828-1883
William Oliver 1829-1891
Charles Warsham Phillips 1883-1915



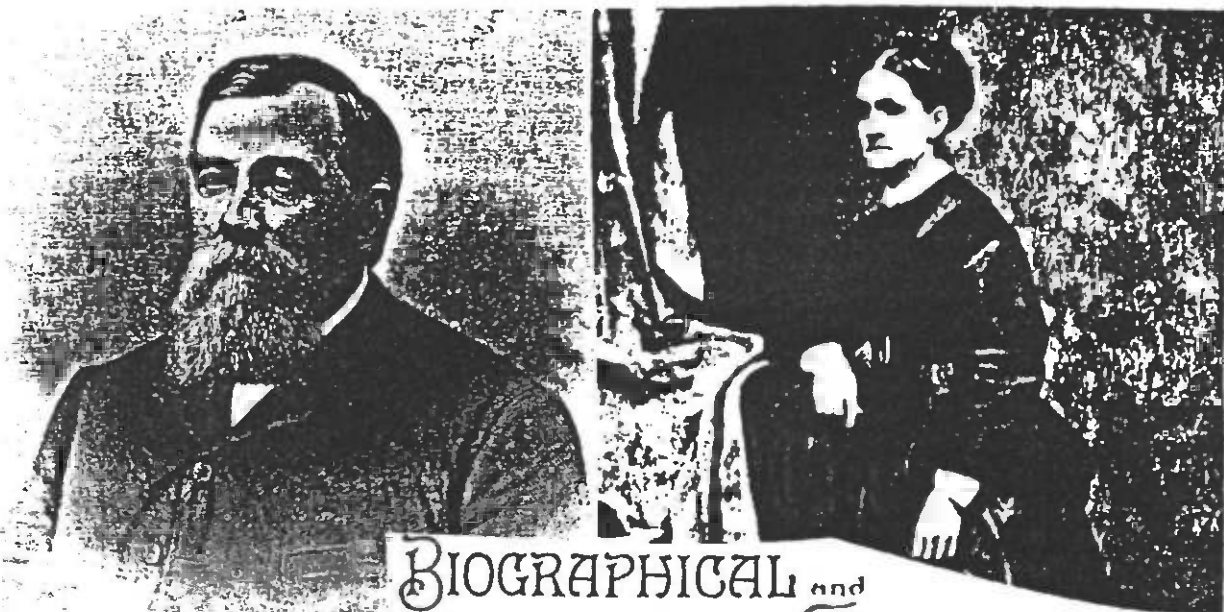
The parents of John Madison Oliver were William Oliver and his wife, Mary Milner Callaway. The next section tells of their life.

WILLIAM OLIVER
24 Feb 1829-3 July 1891

married
12 Oct 1847

MARY MILNER CALLAWAY
1 Sep 1828-10 Jan 1883

The life story of William Oliver was published in 1891 by the Goodspeed Publishing Co. The books are in the public domain, but the Reprint Company, of Spartanburg, SC, performed a great service to genealogists by reprinting the two volumes in 1978. The eloquent prose, written in the style of the 1890's, exceeds the ability of this writer, so pp. 532-534, Vol. II, follows:



BIOGRAPHICAL and
HISTORICAL
MEMOIRS of
MISSISSIPPI

Capt. William Oliver, Wesson, Miss. The South contains no treasure so rich as the fair fame of its children. Time evolves wondrous changes. "Empires crumble and fade away, governments perish and men decay." but the glory of our national existence must still remain so long as the names of those who aided in enlarging the boundaries of knowledge, who gave tone and high impress to its morals, who conserved its laws, or fought its battles, are remembered with gratitude. The men who stamp the impressions of their genius or their virtues on their own times, influence also the lives of those who follow, and they become the benefactors of after ages and of remote nations. Of such men the record should be carefully compiled, printed and preserved; and the South, above all other sections, owes it to its country and to the world to perpetuate such records, while it is yet possible to separate truth from fiction, in all that which pertains to the true character or relates to those who laid the foundation for a new and higher life—who have sustained it by their wisdom or adorned it by their talents. It should be constantly borne in mind that the South to day stands conspicuous among the countries of the world as a younger son grown to full and beautiful manhood from the ruins of a former bright and prosperous family; that it has passed successfully through an era of deep obscurity and wasted years of feeble infancy, and that it has stepped forth at maturity from the panoply of war like Minerva from the brain of Jove. Such is the character of the intrepid man whose memoir inspires these words.

Captain Oliver was endowed by nature with a powerful frame and vigorous intellect, undaunted courage, and a spirit of enterprise that peculiarly fitted him to encounter the perils and hardships of the time that tried men's souls. In a letter from Wesson to the *Southwestern Presbyterian* at the time of Captain Oliver's death, the Rev. T. S. West says:

"Some years ago I was on a rostrum before a large audience, witnessing some exercises of more or less interest. Turning my head a little to the right I noticed a man of singularly striking appearance, sitting near the platform; he was very handsome, had an open countenance with very forcible expression. I thought him one of the most imposing looking personages I had ever seen. He was about the age that men are the best looking, say fifty; his dark beard beginning to be threaded with gray. I said, mentally, 'I don't know who you are, nor what you are; but you stand above your fellows in whatever community you dwell, and you are a leader in your calling, whatever it may be.' He engaged my attention for some time; I turned and whispered to some one, 'Who is that?' The answer was, 'Captain Oliver, of Wesson.' I did not meet him again, until eighteen months ago, when I was appointed pastor in charge of the Methodist church of this place. We gradually grew intimate, and in his death I feel that I have lost a friend." William Oliver was born in Twiggs county, Ga., February 24, 1829. His father, Wiley Oliver, moved to Barbour county, Ala., in 1833. At the early age of eighteen we find William already occupying a position of trust, commanding the highest salary commanded in that day. On the 12th of October, 1847, he was married to Mary Milner Callaway, being at that time just eighteen years and eight months old; although so young, he made an admirable choice. When a little more than nineteen he began business for himself, in Eufaula, Ala. In 1853 he moved to Minden, La., and opened a business there with Mr. Drake. In 1855 the firm established a joint house in Trenton, La. Here he remained until the dark din of war rolled over our Southland. He had marked success in his ten or twelve years of mercantile life. He entered the Confederate service in the Thirty-first Louisiana regiment, with the rank of captain, and was assigned to duty in the quartermaster department. In 1866 he went to New Orleans, engaged in the cotton business with John T. Hardie, and was again successful. In 1870 the Mississippi Manufacturing company, at Wesson, Miss., passed into the hands of John T. Hardie and William Oliver. Captain Oliver, of the firm, came to Wesson and took charge of the mills, without any knowledge whatever of the manufacturing business. In the reorganization the name was changed to Mississippi Mills, with John T. Hardie, president, and William Oliver, secretary and treasurer. The plant at this time was worth about \$100,000; after three years of successful management the mills were consumed by fire. This misfortune discouraged most of the stockholders; but Captain Oliver's three years' experience led him to believe that the thing could be made a grand success under proper management. About this time John T. Hardie, the leading stockholder, proposed to buy or sell. Captain Oliver saw his opportunity, and had the adroitness to interest in this enterprise Col. Ed. Richardson, the commercial king of Mississippi. So John T. Hardie and others were bought out; the company newly organized, the stock increased to \$340,000, with Col. Ed. Richardson president, and Captain Oliver, the general manager, in the office of secretary and treasurer. In eighteen years, from 1873 to 1891, without any additional capital except profits reinvested, the factory grew to that magnificent plant at Wesson to-day, with \$2,000,000, dispensing its blessings to thousands of the poor, and with comfortably increasing dividends to the stockholders, who are confined almost wholly to the Richardson and Oliver families. Since the death of Col. Ed. Richardson, his son, John P., has been president of the company; he married Mary Ella, second daughter of Captain Oliver. Rilla E., the eldest daughter, married Dr. R. W. Rea. His only son, John M. Oliver, is a successful young merchant at Wesson.

Colonel Richardson was asked one day why he did not put more money in factories, as his Wesson interests had proven so profitable. He said: "I would be glad to do so if I

could get more William Olivers to manage them." Capt. William Oliver's wife, Mary Milner Callaway, died January 10, 1888: she that had been the comfort and joy of his young life, that had increased the strength of his mature manhood, proven herself to be the fitting companion of such a man, passed away, with the praise and blessing of all who knew and loved her. After a suitable season in silence and sad solitude, recognizing the truth of God's word that it is not good that man should be alone, he married again; this time, a niece of his first wife, Melissa D. Callaway. This also proved a wise choice, for she was a stay to him in trials, and a comfort to the last hour of his life; he said that parting from her and his children was the saddest thing connected with passing away from this life. The sting of death, itself, he did not fear. He said a short time before he died: "While I have been ready to defend what I regarded as my rights, I have acted with a good conscience toward my fellow-men, and I go out into eternity trusting only in my Lord." Men who had business dealings with him pronounced him honest and fair. The world called him charitable; he sympathized with the suffering, and his hand was open to the wants of the needy. During his residence in New Orleans he became the warm friend and admirer of Rev. Dr. B. M. Palmer, and united with his church in 1867. For a period of eighteen years he held the office of elder in the Presbyterian church at Wesson. One who knew him well said: "The Captain differs from most men: as he grows richer he grows better." It is exceedingly common for men to grow in worldliness as they grow in worldly goods, but it was not the case with the subject of this sketch. Some men are too busy to worship God; this man, although very busy, attended church regularly; if his own pastor was away he went to some other church to worship; he taught a class in Sabbath-school, was equally at home in managing a factory or conducting a prayer-meeting. He took interest in the affairs of the community, the public school, the municipal government, or whatever was of interest to the people. He was specially interested in the welfare of the operatives in the mill; he called them his people. The old women were heard often to say: "The Captain has been mighty good to us; when we came here and had nothing the children soon got work in the mill, and we got credit at the store until we could pay up." The Captain had an eye to the morals of his people, and refused to employ any disreputable person. His devotion to his home was very beautiful; its lovely surroundings attest to his exquisite taste and love for flowers. A profusion of greenhouse plants and rare flowers grace his extensive lawn, and gladden the eyes of all; it was his delight and recreation to wander among them, and in their beauty seek oblivion from the sordid cares of business. As a homemaker, one sees the loveliest traits of his character brought to light; his home was first with him always, nothing had precedence before it. It was his delight to make those about him, young and old, happy, and he was ever thinking of the wants and pleasures of others.

Never was more solicitude expressed in a community for a sick man than was expressed during his last illness. Never was there such a crowd at a funeral; the church was packed, all the standing room in the aisles was occupied, the yard was filled, the masses about the windows, with stretched umbrellas in the drizzling rain. Some one remarked that during a part of the funeral service there was scarcely a dry eye in the house. This remarkable man left to his family not only nearly \$400,000, which he had accumulated, but also the rich heritage of a good name, an unswerving reputation. A man of wonderful magnetism, he drew about him a host of friends, who deeply mourn his loss. He went down to the grave much loved and greatly honored. The glorious Fourth of July, as we term it, was a sad day for Wesson when Captain Oliver lay in state. He died on the 3d of July, 1891, at 9 o'clock P. M. On the 3d of July, 1890, the people of the mills presented him with a gold-headed cane, in token of their devotion. He died upon the anniversary of this expression of their love.

The War Between the States was a trying experience for all of the people of the Confederacy. At the very beginning, the educated and intelligent must have known that they had a Lost Cause. When patriotism and courage become the subjects in the study of American History, the role of the southern leaders must stand out as heroic. They gave all they had in allegiance, possessions, perseverance, and endeavor. As the days passed, the end became inevitable.



William Oliver's army financial return, below, was rendered three days before the fall of Vicksburg and two days before the defeat at Gettysburg.

Going back in time, the Olivers had left Eufala, Alabama, following the route that settlers used as they moved westward. Long before the war, they had GTT (Gone to Texas). In east Texas, near Henderson, the Olivers found good farming land where cotton was grown. But William was well educated and ambitious, so he farmed and also began to buy and sell cotton. He had to learn about cotton fiber and the way that mills went about buying cotton.

Then, the war came and learned men were needed for administration. He bought supplies and accounted for the funds. The document, here, has his signature. A year earlier, Mary had written a letter to William from Texas. Dim and faded, the letter on the following pages can still be read with the exception of a few words. Along with a translation, part of the letter is reproduced to show her handwriting and signature. Her problems are evident. She tells of her plans to leave Texas and go east to Louisiana near Shreveport.

Most people in the South were defeated entirely by the war. Strong character was needed to come back and achieve. William used his experience to advantage and moved ahead. Leaving the farm, he moved into the cotton business, then to the mills. His record stands to show his indomitable will.

Abstract of Disbursements on account of Contingencies by Capt W. Oliver at 2nd Regt.
At the Office of the Quartermaster and the 31st Day of June 1862 in East Louisiana, under Order from Major General...

Date	To Whom Paid	For What account	Amount	Date	To Whom Paid	For What account	Amount
April 1	J. G. Griffin	Services rendered	11	April 5	John W. Smith	Transportation	23 64 51
May 1	John W. Smith	Transportation	16	April 6	John W. Smith	Transportation	24 50
April 10	J. W. Smith	Services rendered	18	April 7	John W. Smith	Transportation	31 11
May 1	J. W. Smith	Services rendered	27 25	April 17	John W. Smith	Transportation	183 11
April 10	J. W. Smith	Services rendered	11 11	June 6	Capt W. Oliver	His actual expenses	271 01
June 2	J. W. Smith	For horse hire	22 19	June 5	Capt W. Oliver	All paper disbursements	50 01
July 1	J. W. Smith	For horse hire	22 19				
May 25	Charles Smith	Transportation	28 77				
June 18	J. W. Smith	Services rendered	27 00				
May 19	J. W. Smith	Services rendered	6 40				
May 19	J. W. Smith	Services rendered	10 00				
May 25	J. W. Smith	Services rendered	102 20				
June 17	J. W. Smith	Services rendered	50 00				
May 25	J. W. Smith	Services rendered	70 00				
April 1	J. W. Smith	Services rendered	51 75				
May 1	E. J. Smith	Charge	51 11				
May 25	J. W. Smith	Expenses - Charge	11 77				
May 5	Charles Smith	Services rendered	222 57				
May 25	J. W. Smith	Transportation	11 70				
April 25	J. W. Smith	Expenses as Charge	22 70				
June 25	J. W. Smith	Services rendered	117 75				
May 1	J. W. Smith	Transportation	20 00				
May 1	J. W. Smith	Services rendered	62 25				
May 1	J. W. Smith	Services rendered	20 00				
April 25	J. W. Smith	Transportation	15 00				
May 25	J. W. Smith	Expenses as Charge	60 00				
May 1	J. W. Smith	Services rendered	100 00				

Total Disbursements
 Capt W. Oliver
 At the Office of the Quartermaster
 31st Day of June 1862

My dear Husband

I have the pleasure this evening of acknowledging the receipt of your kind favor of the 18th, which had been written 10 days and the only one I've received since Thursday week. I had become very uneasy about you and regret hearing that you were not well. I sincerely hope you have recovered before this and that you may continue to enjoy good health. I wrote you twice in the past week in which I gave you all the news except the return of Bro. Mc and I think he has written you since his return. He told me he had mailed a letter to you on yesterday, though for fear he has not I will mention that he brought all the wagons with him, though he had to go to Shreveport and get an order from the chief adjutant general before getting them. Birge was on the eve of sending them to Samato (?). If he had been one week later, they would have been gone. Bro. Mc has money which he says he wishes you to have, that he collected in the old issue. He says if I don't leave soon enough to take it, he will send it some other way. I will try to leave in time to get to Homer by the 25th, if that will be in time for you to dispose of it. I can bring it with me. I will write you definitely as to when I will leave so that you can meet me in Shreveport.

The mules are looking tolerably well except Rock. He was scarcely able to get here. I don't think he will ever be of any more service. Your mules that were here are very poor. Beck has been very for several weeks - cannot travel unless Randle and Jeff only have 4 mule teams that they brought from Jefferson except Rock, which is only a frame of bones, barely surviving. If we take our best mules for the wagons and one for the buggy, I don't think there will be 4 left, though I haven't asked Bro. Mc and the boys are not here or I would inquire. I think I had better leave the poorest mules as the crop will soon be laid by and wheat will be giving them the benefit of a pasture as they are too poor, 2 or 3 of them, to travel. The others look very well.

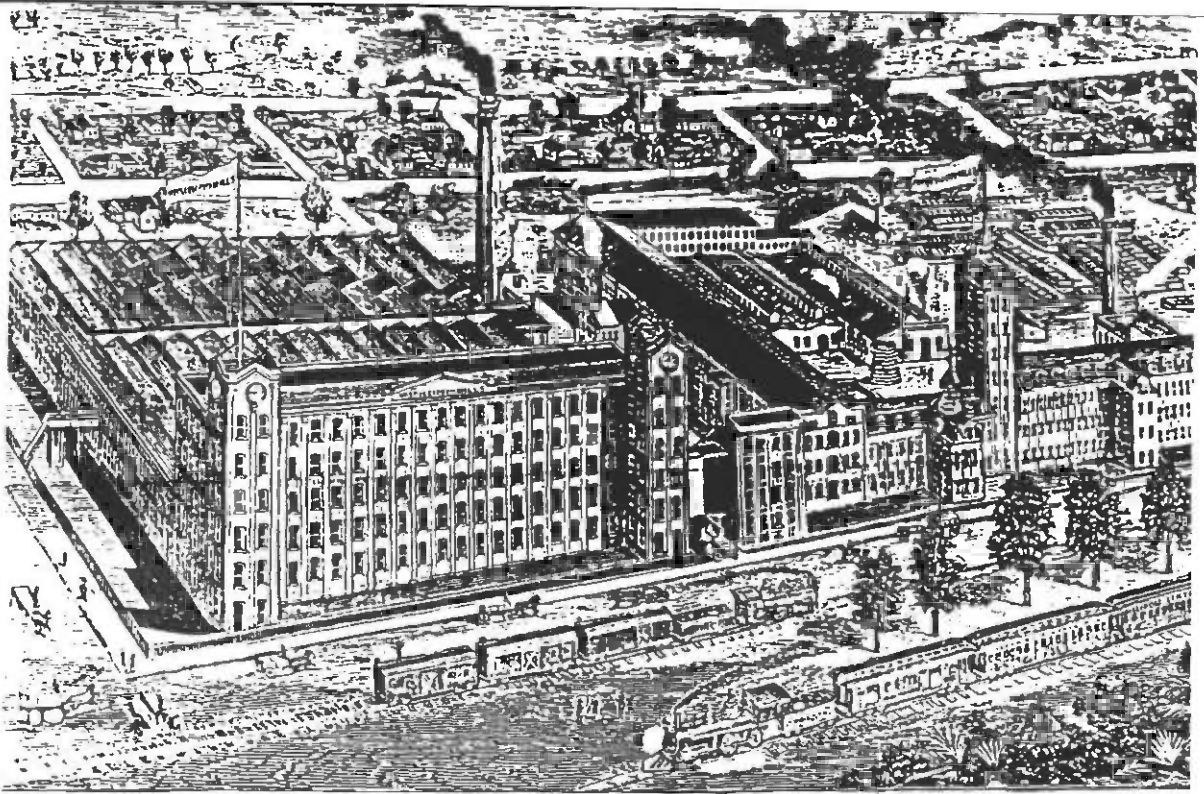
I have occupied a portion of today in reading the Yankee paper you sent me, and I greatly fear our defeat since reading it, should they raise those 100 days men, which undoubtedly they will, and they will have overwhelming numbers against us, which is useless for us to deny. And they are told that if they will push forward that they will soon conquer us, and what is to be dreaded mostly, those men are coming on in time to destroy our crops, overrun our country, and in all probability leave us or those of us who may live through it in a starving condition. It is useless to say the North can't raise an army. Lincoln has the same power that President Davis has and can enforce it. I am sure I would like to think differently, although we must take a common sense view of the case. They have the power and it is with the people as to whether it is enforced or not. I greatly fear the result of the next 4 months. Nothing, save the hand of Providence, can screen us from the foe. Oh, that the good Lord would be pleased to smile upon us and would save us from the hand of the enemy. I am very anxious to get through and be able to leave for La. Since hearing of the enemies reinforcing so largely, I am afraid to bring many of my things. I will pack them so that I could send for them provided I stay long enough to need them. Tuesday Bro. Mc will send this with his letter to Henderson to be sent by the courier and as Wiley is waiting on me, I shall have to bring my letter to a close.

I was quite sick night before last, though all right again. All well. The children are more anxious to leave than they ever were to come to Texas. They join me in sending love to you. It is useless for me to write you about the fine prospects for a crop as Bro. Mc has written. Say to Mrs. Bennett, Bro. Mc was in Henderson yesterday, there was not a yard of dress goods in Henderson, it being sent from Shreveport when the Yanks were coming up the river. Has since been taken back, selling their when Bro. Mc was there last week at \$45 per year calico. I regret not being able to make the purchase for her.

Your affectionate wife,

Mary Oliver

Your affectionate wife
Mary Oliver



MISSISSIPPI MILLS, WESSON, MISS.

William Oliver was very active in the Presbyterian Church. His interest in religion may have been encouraged by his wife, Mary. She was a daughter of the great preacher, Joshua Sanford Callaway. The note, below, was found in William Oliver's papers. It seems to be in his handwriting.

At a meeting of the Session of the Church held Nov 23rd 1894 it was Resolved, That getting the mail on the Sabbath, Reading Sunday issues of Secular papers, Diggory peddling and frequenting the Depot on Sunday as a matter of recreation are crying evils & that we do urge the members of the church to abstain from such evil practices, because they utterly disqualify all such for the worship of God.

Resolved, also that any member of the Church guilty of profanity, drunkenness or any other form of evil will be dealt with according to the book of discipline. It was resolved, that these resolutions be read from the pulpit of this Church on Sunday.

The children of William Oliver and Mary Milner Callaway were:

1. Joshua Wiley 1 Oct 1848-4 Dec 1849
2. Rilla Elizabeth 18 Dec 1851-16 Feb 1938
3. William Henry 12 Jun 1855-3 Jul 1856
4. Mary Ella 10 May 1857-
5. William Pitt 3 Jul 1860-17 Mar 1863
6. Browder 6 Aug 1862-17 Oct 1863
7. Lula 25 Dec 1863-20 Jul 1882
8. John Madison 4 Apr 1863-1 Mar 1934



This information is from the Oliver family Bible owned by Nona Oliver, wife of William P. Oliver, son of John Madison Oliver.

At the beginning of Part II, Oliver, credit was given to Rilla Anderson Smith for her help in the development of this history. Without her help, it would not have been started. She has provided this listing of the descendants of William and Mary Oliver in the Rea branch of the family. It is included here as a token of appreciation and to let her children and grandchildren use their family history.

Rilla Elizabeth Oliver, 18 Dec 1851-16 Feb 1938 and Robert Wiley Rea, 4 Feb 1844-13 Dec 1923 were married on 31 Dec 1874.

Their Children:

I. William Oliver Rea, 21 Dec 1875-1 Nov 1955 m.(1) Beulah Allen, (2) Annie Hederman.

II. George Robert Rea, 28 Jul 1877-1 Sep 1878.

III. John Wimberly Rea, 9 Apr 1879-20 Feb 1942 m.(1) Nannie Fairly, (2)——

Children:

A. Doris Oliver Rea, 15 Aug 1904.

B. John Fairly Rea, 16 Jan 1908, m. Iola Mary Hicks, 12 Oct 1913-14 Feb 1977.

C. Robert William Rea, 12 Jan 1910-28 Jun 1971, m. 1934 Ruth Taylor.

Children:

1. Nancy Rea, 9 Dec 1936- m. Bruce Leroy Nelson.

Children:

Eric Leroy Nelson, 23 Sep 1961-

Brian Arnold Nelson, 1965-

Lucinda Nelson, Sep 1968-

2. Robert William Rea, Jr., 2 May 1941-m.1961 Vevie Lynne Weir,1944

Children:

Connie Lynne Rea, 10 Jun 1962- m. Randy Eastep, divorced 1983.

Karen Louise Rea, Sep 1965-

3. John Russell Rea, 7 Apr m. Mrs. Selene Putnam, 15 Nov 1949, m. 20 Apr 1973.

Children:

Robert Wesley Rea, 15 Jul 1978-

Mary Taylor Rea, 28 Oct 1983-

4. Carolyn Rea, 18 Feb 1946- m. Aug 1968 Ron Gaetano.

Children:

Patricia Ann Gaetano, 24 Dec 1969-

Christina Gaetano, 18 Feb 1973-

5. Margaret Rea, 7 Sep 1947- m. Apr 1965 Glen Perkins.
Children:
Rebecca Perkins, 12 Jun 1970-
Stephen Perkins, 2 Mar 1978-
Michael Glen Perkins, 31 Aug 1979-
Jason Perkins, 28 Jul 1982-
Jesse Marie Perkins, 4 Apr 1984-
6. Barbara Rea, 25 Dec 1949- m. James Thomas.
Children:
Tonja Thomas, 16 Aug 1973-
James Edgar Thomas, 27 Dec 1974-
7. Mary Rea, 7 Sep 1952- m.(1) William Cooke, (2) Jack M. Schuler
on 21 Jun 1980.
Children:
Mary Ruth Schuler, 3 Jun 1984-
8. Lucinda Rea (Cindy), 13 Nov 1955- m. 17 Jul 1976 Roy Dennis
Robertson.
Children:
Elizabeth Robertson, 24 Dec 1981-
Kate Robertson, 2 Aug 1983-
- IV. James Madison Rea, 10 Sep 1880-13 Dec 1881.
- V. Mary Lula Rea, 28 Jan 1883-30 Mar 1970, m. Charles W. Phillips, 17 Nov
1883- 13 Oct 1915, m.1909.
Children:
A. Charles Worsham Phillips, Jr., Sep 1911-
B. Robert Rea Phillips, 29 Jun 1913- m. Judith Fox, 4 Mar 1917-
Children:
1. Charles Fox Phillips, 1949-1979, Twin.
2. Robert Rea Phillips, 1949- , m. Cathy Cook.
Children:
Robert Rea Phillips III, 4 Jul 1981-
- VI. Robert Wiley Rea, Oct 1885-20 Aug 1885
- VII. Rilla Ella Rea, 19 Nov 1886-
- VIII. Sarah Milner Rea, 30 Oct 1889-7 Apr 1971, m. 9 Jun 1915 Eugene Ferris
Anderson, 8 Apr 1890-31 Dec 1970.
Children:
A. Eugene Ferris Anderson, Jr., 30 Aug 1917- m. Finetta Toohey, 11 Jul-
B. Rilla Lucy Anderson, 15 Aug 1919- m. Clower C. Smith, 7 Jun 1918, m.
22 Nov 1947.
Children:
1. Sarah Camille Smith, 28 Aug 1949- m. 27 May 1972 William Charles
Johnston, 3 Mar 1949-
Children:
James Cullen Johnston, 23 Jun 1978-
Charles Edwin Johnston, 12 May 1982-
2. Henry Ferris Smith, 27 Oct 1950- m.(1) Jean Elizabeth Leggett.
Children:
Jennifer Lynne Smith, 4 Dec 1973-
Emily Michelle Smith, 4 Dec 1975-
Henry Ferris Smith, m.(2) Mrs. Benita Romeny Ward, 8 Feb 1961-
m. May 1982.
Children:
Christopher Clayton Smith, 28 Dec 1983-

A Brilliant Wedding Reception And Dancing in City in 1878

By ANABEL POWER

From a family scrapbook of Miss Eva Petrie Hamilton of Jackson we take the story of a social affair that will go down in old Jackson's history for its beauty and distinction and for the importance of the bride and groom. The dazzlingly beautiful Ella Oliver was the daughter of one millionaire, Col. William Oliver of Wesson. The handsome and dashing John P. Richardson was the son of another millionaire, Col. Edmund Richardson of Jackson, whose home and grounds occupied a city block—the present site of Southern United Ice Co.

Many of Jackson's leading citizens of the present era are the children and grandchildren of the lovely ladies whose names are included below.

The story is printed from The Courier of January, 1878, and is as follows:

Pursuant to cards issued, the spacious home of Col. and Mrs. Edmund Richardson was the scene of a very brilliant and happy occasion on Thursday evening, a reception given by them to their son, Mr. John P. Richardson, and his bride, nee Miss Oliver.

The toilettes of the ladies present were rich and elegant. Mrs. Edmund Richardson wore a heavy black velvet and satin costume, made en princesse and trimmed with rare old point lace; she wore diamonds. It may be said with truth that the costume of the bride, Mrs. John P. Richardson, was the most exquisite and costly ever worn in Jackson. It was a mystic combination of white silk, lace, flowers, diamonds and pearls. We will attempt no description but leave imagination to picture the effect when such a dress was worn by such a bride, so brilliant in manner and conversation and withal so charming in person.

Mrs. J. J. Green wore an elegant toilet of ceil blue silk with valenciennes lace overdress, garniture of exquisite silver flowers; Mrs. George S. Green wore a rich and tasteful costume of brown silk, lace and flowers; Mrs. R. L. Saunders was attired in light blue tulle made en princesses, elaborately trimmed in point lace with an Elizabethan ruff finishing the neck; the garniture was dark red rosebuds with diamond ornaments; Mrs. Wirt Johnston appeared in a costume of black grenadine trimmed with Duchesse lace; her ornaments were pearls and violets.

blue silk made en princesse, square neck and elbow sleeves trimmed in lace; lovely flowers were worn with this toilet; Miss Robinson of Madison wore a combination costume of light blue and dove colored silk, garniture of peach blossoms; Miss Bailey of Tallahatchie wore a creamy white cashmere princess, with lace trimmings and garniture of flowers; Miss Ella Quinn looked stylish and graceful in white tarlatan; Miss Callie Richardson wore a handsome blue silk with point lace overdress and flowers and diamonds.

Mrs. Cynthia Harris, wore a dress of sea foam silk made en princesse and trimmed in loops and bands of pink satin, pearl ornaments; Miss Ada Green, was dressed in a printesse costume of maize brocade combined with maroon velvet, garniture of roses; Miss Bettie Morris wore a handsome black silk with cardinal trimmings and flowers; Miss Alice Hiltzheim a costume of light blue silk en princesse and trimmed in maroon velvet.

Mrs. Mattie Robinson a costume of brown silk, lace trimmings and flowers; Misses Buck wore sweet and becoming white toilets; Miss Sallie Wharton in white, with pink trimmings and flowers; Miss Rosabelle Hunter wore a lovely toilet of white swiss and Valenciennes lace, with garniture of cardinal flowers; Miss Ida Stewart also wore white with handsome trimmings. Miss Sullivan appeared in a becoming black costume; the

Misses Lemly wore rich black silk with garnitures of scarlet flowers.

The following ladies wore handsome toilets but the lack of space prevents more elaborate description: Mrs. J. Z. George, Mrs. William Oliver, mother of the bride; Mrs. H. H. Chalmers, Mrs. William Lemly, Mrs. John Hunter, Mrs. C. C. Campbell, Mrs. P. T. Baley, Mrs. Charles L. Robinson of Bolton, Mrs. John W. Robinson, Mrs. Ella Buck, Mrs. John A. Webb, Mrs. Iva Wharton Talbot, Mrs. A. A. Folkes, Mrs. E. H. Reber, Mrs. Thomas Sturges, the Misses Shelton, Miss Beaulieu, Miss Wolfe, Miss Watkins, Miss Jennie Morancy, Miss Morris, and Miss Langley.

The following gentlemen among others from a distance were present: Colonel William Oliver of Wesson, Mr. Charles Robinson of Bolton, Mr. Henry Busick of Brandon, and Messrs. Lee Richardson, D. W. Lampkin, Searls and Fulker-son of Vicksburg.

Dancing was indulged in until a late hour, when the guests adjourned to the supper room where the table groaned under all the delicacies that this and the New Orleans markets afford. Noticeable were five magnificent pyramids—the crowning glory however, was one in the center of orange over which fell a veil of spun candy which had the appearance of being a bridal veil, so delicate was its texture.

The dancing was resumed after supper, and continued until the "wee small hours of the night."

Ella Richardson was William Oliver's daughter and John Madison Oliver's sister. She lived in a mansion on St. Charles Street in New Orleans. A hospital is on the site today. Gladys Marie Oliver Metts, when a young girl, frequently lived in her Aunt Ella's home. When Ella became Mrs. Richardson, the two fortunes behind the mills were united. After her husband died, Ella became intensely interested in family history research. She went to Jamestown and Richmond, Virginia, and to England. Her papers were basic in development of the Bridger, Godwin, Pitt lines which will be presented later. This is the story of Ella's wedding. One reason for including this in the book is that ladies are usually interested in the description of the dresses worn in 1878.

A Woman Who Moved Amarillo

By Bryon Price, Director, Panhandle Plains, Historical Museum

In 1890 a slender, strikingly beautiful woman named Melissa Dora Oliver accepted the invitation of her merchant brothers, John and James Callaway, to visit Amarillo for the first time.

The wife of industrialist Capt. William Oliver, principal stockholder of Mississippi Mills, the South's largest textile manufacturer, Mrs. Oliver returned to the Texas plains on several occasions and, in 1891, purchased land in Potter and Randall counties. After her husband's death in 1895, she relocated permanently in the Panhandle.

Mrs. Oliver's arrival with her fine horses, carriage and household help, said to be the first blacks to come to live in Amarillo, created quite a stir.

Dressed in a black English riding habit with a small derby perched atop her head, she and her spirited chestnut mount soon became a familiar sight on the city streets. Her elegant attire and somewhat aloof public manner were such that townspeople began to refer to her as "the Duchess." To her family and close friends, however, Mrs. Oliver was known for her gentleness, warmth and great generosity.

Amarillo in 1895 was a town of about 500 people, and like the rest of the nation, was in the throes of economic depression. With a personal fortune which exceeded the combined capital of all the area banks, Mrs. Oliver began to inject funds into the town at a time when money was sorely needed for growth.

As the entrance of a woman into the financial world was virtually unknown, most of her early transactions reflected the name M. D. Oliver. Thus, those to whom the banks loaned money in her behalf were rarely aware that the actual lender was a woman.

At age 38 and after being widowed for 11 years, Dora Oliver remarried in 1902 to O. M. Eakle, an organizer and director of Amarillo National Bank and first president of the Amarillo Board of Trade (predecessor of the Chamber of Commerce).



Melissa Dora Callaway Oliver-Eakle with her daughter, who became Oliver Rea Eakle Barfield. Picture was taken about 1908.

When Mary Oliver was in ill health prior to her death, her niece, Melissa D. Callaway, came to Wesson to help care for her Aunt Mary. William was about 53 years old. Melissa was twenty. After Mary's death, Melissa stayed on in Wesson and she and William were married. He was a happy man until he died about eight years later. This story is included because of the human interest involved and because, even though Melissa is not in our direct line, she is kin through the Callaways and her descendants share with us the great ancestors of the Callaway, Henderson, and Herndon chapters.

TWO CHILDREN AND GRANDCHILDREN OF WILLIAM AND MARY MILNER CALLAWAY OLIVER



RILLA OLIVER REA AND HER CHILDREN RILLA ELLA REA AND SARAH MILNER REA



MARY ELLA OLIVER RICHARDSON AND HER CHILDREN SUSIE AND EDMUND RICHARDSON

WILEY OLIVER
15 OCT 1802-29 APR 1853

married
c. 1825

MILBRAY FAULK
8 Jan 1808-30 Oct 1853

Wiley Oliver was born in Screven County, Georgia, a few years after the land had been ceded by the Indians. This was the frontier of America, the edge of cultivation. Born, the fifth son of the fifth child of thirteen children, the chance of land inheritance did not exist. Why was he given the name "Wiley" is unknown. He may have been a sly looking new born baby! However, in life, he seems to have been a straight arrow. He worked hard, was ambitious, became educated, served his country, and raised a fine family. Throughout this book, military service in wartime is credited if the facts can be determined. In some cases, emphasis is given to cases where the ancestor was able bodied and did not serve when his country was at war.

In the olden times, families seemed to be closer than they are today. They helped each other overcome the perils of the times. As farmers, the land would be left to one of the boys, usually the oldest. The other children went to find land on the frontier. There, it was free or very inexpensive. One member went first, and the others followed.

Some of the thirteen Oliver children stayed in Screven County. There is a little town named Oliver in the county today. A nice letter was sent to the mayor asking for the origin of the name. No answer came back. If he can write, he may not know the origin!

After Wiley's mother died, his father left Screven County and ended up in Twiggs County, GA, where he married a young lady named Luraney Holmes. By 1825, brothers James, William and Wiley were in Twiggs County, too. Their father, McDaniel Oliver, and brothers James, William and Wiley opened charge accounts in 1826 at the store in Old Marion. This town has disappeared over the years. The people left, houses are all gone, and now there is nothing but an abandoned cemetery with one marked grave. Another customer at the store was Mark Faulk who opened an account for Sarah Faulk.

About 1825, Wiley Oliver married Milbray Faulk. There has been some problem with her first name. Was it Mildred, Milbrie, Milbra, or some other spelling? The Bible page, on the next page, written by one of her children shows MILBRAY. Also, it is the only document that gives Wiley a middle initial, -"B"- . Those were the times when people first began to use middle names. This Bible gives the birth of Wiley and Milbray. With other added information from other sources, the children were:

1. McDaniel Oliver, 2 May 1826-27 Jun 1883, m. Nancy A. Taylor (Albany, GA). They had thirteen children, the same number as his grandfather after whom he was named.

2. Captain William Oliver, 24 Feb 1829-3 Jul 1891, m. Mary Milner Callaway. These are our ancestors described earlier.

3. Sarah Oliver, b. 27 Dec 1831, m. John L. Roberts, brother of George A. Roberts who married Wiley's half sister, Nancy Ann.

4. Jasper Newton Oliver, b. 4 Aug 1834. His son, Wiley E. went to Wesson, where William Oliver gave him a job.

5. Henry Young Oliver, b. 31 Jan 1838.

6. Alexander Browder Oliver, b. 2 Feb 1841. Also, he went to Wesson. lived lived in Osyka, MS.

The ancestors of Milbray Faulk are not known. This writer has not researched the complicated clan called Faulk, but a gentleman has spent years studying that surname. He is Col. Charles B. Schweizer, 2 Lakewood Dr., Edwardsville, Ill., 62025. His Volume VI is titled Descendants of Some Twiggs County, Georgia Faulk Families. The first four pages are about our kin. After reading these pages over and over again it is hard to come to any conclusion about these Faulks. Schweizer believes, but has not proved, that Milbray's father was William Faulk. Evidently, William was very ill or disabled. William died and Mark Faulk, mentioned earlier, took over the children. Milbray was one of them. Milbray named her son, our famous ancestor, William Oliver. Of course, he had an uncle named William Oliver. Members of the Oliver and Faulk families moved together, later, to Barbour County, Alabama, and to Louisiana. Charles Schweizer has published several books on the Faulks and he plans more. Now, back to Wiley Oliver.

By 1830, Wiley's father is dead and Luraney, his stepmother, lives near Wiley, James and William. She has four of the younger children and two slaves. The teenage children have moved in with their older brothers and sisters. Wiley was a member of the New Hope Baptist Church, serving as a messenger to the association. The U.S. Census of 1830 for Twiggs County shows Wiley Oliver with 2 boys under 5 years and 2 men 20 to 30. One girl is 10 to 15 and his wife is between 20 and 30. There are 12 slaves.

FAMILY RECORD.

Births of Brothers & Sisters
 BIRTHS
 Wm O Oliver Son of Wiley
 & Luraney of Milbray Oliver
 Was Born May 24th 1822
 Wm O Oliver
 Wife of Wm O Oliver
 Was Born May 18th 1823
 William Oliver
 Was Born
 February 24th 1829
 Jacob Oliver
 Was Born
 December 27th 1831
 Joseph Austin Oliver
 Was Born
 August 27th 1831
 H J Oliver
 Was Born
 January 31st 1838
 Alexander B Oliver
 Was Born
 Feb. 2nd 1844
 Wm O Oliver
 Was Born
 Nov 5th 1844

Receiver's Office at Montgomery, Ala.
 December 17th 1884.

No. ~~609~~
 Received from Wiley Oliver of Twiggs Co. Georgia the sum of Two thousand Forty Eight cents, being in full payment for the South West of Section No. Seventeen in Township No. Twelve North and Seven West containing 160.58^{1/2} acres at 2 1/2^{cts} per acre.
 \$ 448.00
 A. G. Robinson Receiver.

In 1833, Wiley was on the move again. New and better land was available in Barbour County, Alabama. Wiley paid \$1.25 per acre for 160.38 acres.

The next three years, the family settled the new land and Jasper was born. Then, in 1836, four years after the Land Office had started selling the land of the Creek Indians in east Alabama, the Creek War started. Few people today know of that war. The Indians began with a number of depredations. The village of Roanoke, Georgia, on the Chattahoochee River, just across from Wiley's land, was burned and several white persons were killed. These troubles caused widespread, but unnecessary alarm. A force of 1500 volunteers were organized at Tuskegee and General Jessup, of the regular army, took command. The force headed for Russell County, but were recalled by General Scott. General William Welborn (who signed Wiley's discharge) attacked, on the Pea River, a body of emigrating hostiles, who had been guilty of some depredations near Midway. Several Indians were killed. The other Indians gave up and were moved west. Wiley signed the handwritten statement in application for bounty land. Before that are his records from the U.S. Archives and his honorable discharge. All these documents have been reduced in size.

No. *009* LAND OFFICE *Montgomery Dec. 17th 1834*

IT IS HEREBY CERTIFIED, That, in pursuance of Law, *Wiley Oliver*

of *Twiggs* county, State of *Georgia* on this day purchased of the Register of this Office,

the lot or *South West Quarter* of section number

donation in township number *Two* of range number *Twenty Seven*

containing *One Hundred & Sixty 3/8* acres, at the rate of *One* dollar

and *Twenty Five* cents per acre, amounting to *Two Hundred* dollars and *Thirty*

eight cents, for which the said *Wiley Oliver*

has made payment in full as required by law.

NOW THEREFORE BE IT KNOWN, That, on presentation of this certificate to the Commissioners of

THE GENERAL LAND OFFICE, the said *Wiley Oliver*

shall be entitled to receive a patent for the lot above described.

J. H. Somerville Register.

HEAD-QUARTERS,
WINSTON, ALA. *28 June 1834*

I CERTIFY That *Wiley Oliver*

a *private* under my command of Mounted

Volunteers in the service of the United States has served a term of

duty of *3* months and *—* days under the

most penurious and trying hardships against the Creek Indians, which

entitles him to the gratitude of his country, and he is hereby honorably

discharged.

Wm. Welborn

Col. Com'g Volunteers of Sta.
in U. S. Service.

Moore's Mtl. Co. Ala. Mil.
(3 Months, 1836.)

Wiley Oliver

Rank: { Capt. Moore's Mtl. Co., Ala. Mil.
(3 Months, 1836.)
(Creek War.)

Age _____ years.

Appears on Co. Muster-out Roll, dated _____, 1836.

Muster-out to date _____, 1836.

Last paid to _____, 1836.

When enrolled *Oct. 3, 1836*, for *3 months*.

Where enrolled *Lawson, Ala.*

Clothing account:

Last settled _____ 1836; drawn since \$ _____ 100

Due soldier \$ _____ 100; due U. S. \$ _____ 100

Am't for cloth'g in kind or money adv'd \$ _____ 100

Due U. S. for arms, equipments, &c., \$ _____ 100

Bounty paid \$ _____ 100; due \$ _____ 100

Valuation of horse, \$ _____ 100

Valuation of horse equipments, \$ _____ 100

Remarks: *Discharged Oct. 3*

* See enrollment on card from muster-in roll.

Book mark: _____

Moore's Mtl. Co. Ala. Mil.
(3 Months, 1836.)

Wiley Oliver

Rank: { Capt. Moore's Co.
Alabama Militia (3 Months, 1836.)
(Creek War.)

Age _____ years.

Appears on _____
Company Muster-in Roll
of the organization named above. Roll dated
Lawson, Ala. Oct. 3, 1836.

Muster-in to date *Oct. 3, 1836.*

Joined for duty and enrolled:

When *Oct. 3, 1836.*

Where *Lawson*

Period *3* years = *mor.*

Bounty paid \$ _____ 100; due \$ _____ 100

Valuation of horse, \$ *140* 100

Valuation of horse equipments, \$ _____ 100

Remarks: _____

NEXT ROLL ON _____

* See Muster-in roll shows enrollment and muster-in of this company of men. See enrollment on previous card or card.

Book mark: _____

Silber

When said Capt. William Willborn, was elected or became Col. of said Regiment, in the late war with the Creek nation of Indians - that he volunteered at Inimton (now Eufaula) in said County, about the first day of January A.D. 1837 for the Term of Three months and continued in actual service in said war for the Term of Three months, and was honorably discharged at said Town of Inimton (now Eufaula) in said County on or about the 1st of April A.D. 1837, as will appear by the Muster Rolls of said Company, and he herewith Exhibits his original certificate of discharge, which was dated after the actual discharge or disbanding of said Company.

And he further declares, that he is the identical Wiley Oliver, who was an orderly sergeant in the Company of Mounted Volunteers, Commanded by Capt. Lawson J. Keener, in the Regiment of Alabama Militia, Commanded by Col. William Willborn in the late war with the Creek nation of Indians that he volunteered at Inimton (now Eufaula) in said County of Barlow, on or about the first day of April A.D. 1837, for the Term of the war, and continued in actual service, about the Term of Four months, and was honorably discharged at Inimton (now Eufaula) in said County, on or about the nineteenth day of August A.D. 1837 - as will appear by the Muster rolls of said Company - His certificate of discharge being lost -

He makes this declaration for the purpose of obtaining the bounty Land to which he may be entitled under the "act granting bounty Land to certain Officers and Soldiers who have been engaged in the Military service of the United States," passed September 28th 1850.

Wiley Oliver

Sworn to and subscribed before me the day

44

Wiley Oliver

Moore's Company, Alabama Mounted Militia.
(Creek War.)

Private | *Private*

CARD NUMBERS.

112413827

112413939

After the war, Wiley returned to his farm where he spent the rest of his life of 51 years near Eufaula, Alabama. From time to time, the census shows his family in Barbour County. In 1838, he had his wife, four boys, one girl and a grown lady (and 7 slaves). In 1840, he is in his 30's and his wife is in her 20's. There are four boys under 15 and a little girl under 5 (and 9 slaves).

Ten years later, 10 Oct 1850, in the same place, we see Wiley 41, Milbray 43 (She had lied to the census taker in 1840! Many women used to lie about their ages when they passed thirty.). Sarah is 18, Jasper is a 15 year old student. Young is 12 and Alexander R. is 10. Living in their home is a couple named Wainwright, an overseer named John Johnston, and a clerk named John L. Roberts. You will recognize the "Young" as Henry Young Oliver and the "Alexander R." as Alexander Browder. Census takers were careless. Our William Oliver had left home and the 1850 census shows him with his own household. He is living in Eufaula, age 22, a merchant, married to Mary, also 22, both born in Georgia.

An interesting side note is that this writer served as an instructor in offensive tactics at The Infantry School at Fort Benning, GA, in 1951-2. As the principle instructor of the problem, "The Reinforced Rifle Company in the Assault of a River Line", the crossing of the Chattahoochee River took place a few miles north of Wiley's farm on the other side of the river.

When Wiley Oliver died in 1853, he owned considerable land and 60 slaves. Son, McDaniel, called McDonald in most of the documents, was the administrator of the estate. Slaves were distributed, perishable property was sold, the cotton crop was sold, and Milbray petitioned for her dower rights. She died before the court gave her consideration. Bureaucrats were almost as bad, then, as they are today! There were many records. Our William Oliver was in Louisiana, which caused a problem. Finally, the estate was settled. A few of the documents are included.

O. C. R. BOOK V

- Oliver, Milbra
 p. 452. Bond of McDonald Oliver as admr. of the estate of Milbra Oliver, dec'd. Bondsmen: John L. Roberts, F. E. Baker, Thomas S. Smart and John Crew. 28 Nov. 1853.
 pp. 532-3. Petition of M. D. Oliver to divide slaves. The heirs are:
 William Oliver, residing in La.
 M. D. Oliver
 Sarah, wife of John L. Roberts
 Jasper Oliver, minor
 Henry Y. Oliver, minor
 A. Browder Oliver, minor
 9 Jan. 1854.
- Oliver, Wiley
 p. 237. Bond of Milbra Oliver and McDonald Oliver as admrs. of the estate of Wiley Oliver, dec'd. Bondsmen: Franklin E. Baker, Benjamin P. Pearson, John C. P. Keneymore, Clinton E. Parsons and A. N. King. 20 May 1853.
 pp. 298-301. Inventory and appraisal of real and personal property by commissioners. 13 June 1853.
 p. 335. Heirs of Wiley Oliver, who died on 29 Apr. 1853:
 Milbra (Milbra), widow of dec'd.
 McDonald Oliver, over age 21
 William Oliver, over age 21, residing Minden, Claiborn Parish, La.
 Sarah, wife of John L. Roberts
 Jasper N. Oliver, minor
 Henry Y. Oliver, minor
 Alexander B. Oliver, minor
 27 July 1853.
 p. 370. Petition of admrs. to sell perishable property. 24 Oct. 1853.
 pp. 462-4. Petition of McDonald and Milbra M. Oliver, admrs., for distribution of property to heirs (same as above). H. M. Tompkins appointed guardian ad Litem of minors. 11 Oct. 1853.
 p. 465. Authorized to sell land. 11 Oct. 1853.
 p. 489. Bond of McDonald Oliver as guardian of the above minor heirs. Bondsmen: B. F. Pearson, F. E. Baker and James M. Feagin. 17 Jan. 1854.
 p. 493. Petition of M. D. Oliver, admr., to divide property to the above heirs with the exception of Milbra Oliver, now dec'd. 19 Dec. 1853.
 pp. 627-8. Report of sale of perishable property and real estate. 22 Feb. 1854.

O. C. R. BOOK VI

- Date: 12 Dec. 1855.
 Recorded: 24 Dec. 1856, Harborough Dist., S. C.
 14 Dec. 1863, Harbour County, Ala.
- Oliver, Milbra
 p. 46. Report of commissioners on division of slaves, McDonald Oliver, admr. 9 Jan. 1854.
- Oliver, Wiley
 pp 21-3. Report of division of slaves. 9 Jan. 1854.
 pp. 397-9. Final return of McDonald Oliver, admr.
 p. 400. Heirs:
 Milbra Oliver, dec'd., late widow. The admr. is to pay her share to the admr. of her estate.
 William Oliver, a son
 McDonald Oliver
 Sarah, wife of John L. Roberts
 Jasper N. Oliver, minor
 Henry Y. Oliver, minor
 A. R. (Alexander) Oliver, minor
 14 Feb. 1855.

The parents of Wiley Oliver were McDaniel Oliver and his first wife, Charlotte. We do not know the last name of Charlotte.

McDANIEL OLIVER
1772-1831

married
c. 1793

Charlotte
c. 1775-1820

McDaniel Oliver was born in Jones County, North Carolina, on the south side of the Trent River near the town of New Bern. He was born with the wanderlust, the ninth of ten children, and the fifth son. McDaniel was given the unusual first name that was his mother's maiden name. Kinsmen named McDaniel were neighbors of the Olivers. In times when few people could read or write, he would be called McDonald, Mac, M.D., and McDanold. All meant the same person. This first name was given to later sons in generations that followed. Life for a farm boy meant following a plow for long days.

McDaniel's father died in 1787. His will left McDaniel and his younger brother, Risdon, more than they could have expected. McDaniel got a feather bed, some furniture, and fifty acres of farm land. Risdon got fifty acres, too. After the funeral, the Oliver boys decided to move on - together. Indian land was being opened in Georgia. They headed for Screven County.

The two younger boys had a problem, however. They could not sell their land until they were twenty-one. That meant that they would work for one of the older brothers until they were grown. The Trent River in North Carolina is about 300 miles from Screven County, GA. Only two horses were mentioned in their father's will and they went to the mother for farm work. Nevertheless, all went to Georgia.

We learn the birth year of McDaniel from the dates of the indentures for sale of those 50 acres. He and Risdon would celebrate their 21st birthdays in North Carolina. McDaniel sold his land in 1793, Risdon in 1795.

Back in Georgia, pockets full of pounds, McDaniel spent his life buying and selling farms and raising children. Georgia was the frontier - as wild as a west Texas wind. Now a man of means, McDaniel married Charlotte. We know her name from the land documents that refer to "McDaniel Oliver and wife, Charlotte". (Note: Some publications give his wife as Priscilla Harrison, in error.) Documents used to track the Oliver family as it wandered from farm to farm and from county to county in Georgia are land sale documents, land lottery records and the U.S.Census of 1820. In 1805 and 1807, Georgia held lotteries and citizens could draw for land opened for settlement.

The U.S.Census began in 1790, but Georgia did not have its first one until 1820, a very rough list of families. It was written on tablet paper, worn and torn, with "bleed through" of ink from the opposite side of the paper. Some sort of tape had hidden part of the Mac in McDaniel. But, the report shows that he had in his home 3 females under 10, 2 10-15, 1 26-44, males, 1 under 10, 2 10-15, 1 16-18, 1 18-25, and old McDaniel over 45.

Risdon	<i>Risdon Oliver</i>	2	1	1	1	1	1	1	1
Oliver	<i>Oliver</i>	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1
	<i>Oliver</i>	2	1	1	1	1	1	1	1
	<i>Oliver</i>	2	1	1	1	1	1	1	1
	<i>Oliver</i>	2	1	1	1	1	1	1	1
McDaniel	<i>McDaniel Oliver</i>	6	2	1	1	1	1	3	2
Oliver	<i>Oliver</i>	1	1	1	1	1	1	2	1

This indenture made this 22nd day of February 1793
between M^o Daniel Oliver lately a resident of the county of
Jones in the state of N^o Carolina tho. now a resident of
the state of Georgia being of full age of the one part, and
John Harrison of the county of Jones state of N^o Carolina
of the other part, Witnesseth that the said M^o Daniel
Oliver for and in consideration of five hundred and fifty
his pounds lawful money of the state of N^o Carolina to
him in hand paid by the said John Harrison at & by
the receiving & delivery of these presents the receipt
whereof he doth hereby acknowledge himself to be fully

satisfied contented and paid that he doth bargain
& sell by these presents doth absolutely give
grant bargain sell alien convey and confirm
unto the said John Harrison his heirs and assigns
one certain messuage tenement tract or parcel
of land lying & being in Jones county state of N.C.
and on the south side of Trent River adjoining to
Hatcher land and Thomas Morris land beginning
at a red oak Thomas Morris corner & runs S 89 W 45 p
then N 71 E to Hatcher's patent line then with said Hatcher's
patent line, to Morris line, then with Morris line to the
beginning containing fifty acres which is part
of the land within Hatcher's patent. To have and to
hold the said fifty acres of land hereby granted and
every part and parcel thereof with the privileges and
appurtenances thereto belonging or in any wise
appertaining to him the said John Harrison his heirs
executors administrators or assigns forever in fee
simple estate free & clear & freely & clearly exonerate
and discharged of & from him the said M^o Daniel Oliver
his heirs executors administrators or of from any other
person or persons whatsoever claiming from by or
under him them or any of them. And the said
M^o Daniel Oliver for himself his heirs executors and
each coheir and grant to and with the said
John Harrison his heirs executors administrators
& assigns that he and they or any of them shall
- may from time to time and at all times hereafter
have hold use occupy possess & enjoy the forlangued
premises of every part & parcel thereof free & clear exonerate
& discharged of & from the lawful claim or claims
of any person or persons whatsoever & that he & they will
warrant & defend the same forever according to
the true intent & meaning of these presents.

Do witness wherby the said M^o Daniel Oliver hath hereunto
set his hand & affixed his seal this the day & year within
written,
M^o Daniel Oliver (seal)

In this indenture, McDaniel sells his 50 acres on the Trent River in NC. The date is 22 Feb 1793. McDaniel "lately a resident of" Jones County, NC, "now a resident of the State of Georgia being of full age" sold the land. This document proves that the McDaniel in GA is the same one that was in NC.

Going back in time - 1796, McDaniel bought 150 acres in Screven County. In 1801, he and his wife, Charlotte, sold 50 of the acres. Wiley was born in 1802. In 1808 and 1811 he was living in Washington County, just north of Screven County. In 1812, he moved to Laurens County. Brothers William and James were there, too. "McDaniel Oliver and his wife, Charlotte" were selling land in Laurens County in 1815 and 1816. We have seen that they were still there in the census of 1820. After the census was taken, Charlotte died, leaving ten children.

Before leaving Laurens County, McDaniel married for the second time, a young lady, Luraney (or Luranty or Lurena) Holmes. By 1826, they were living in Twiggs County, Georgia. McDaniel died before 1830.

The next document is William Oliver's will with comments by M. E. Gardner, one of the first serious students of the Oliver lineage. This William Oliver is not our ancestor. He is McDaniel's older brother, one of the group of six Olivers that came from North Carolina. This old will ties them all together. Incidentally, a natural child is what they called an illegitimate child in the olden times.

WILLIAM OLIVER'S WILL, LAURENS COUNTY, GEORGIA, 1812

"I, William Oliver of the County of Laurens and State of Georgia, being low in health and weak of Body, but of sound mind and memory ... to my wife, Abigail Oliver, the tract of land whereon I now live called the Mill Tract to her and her heirs forever, also the use of the upper part of the Scarbrough land ... on Buckeye Creek, a slave Sylvia, horse and mare, and items of household furnishings and farm equipment and supplies; if wife pregnant, \$50 to such child or children. To "my reputed son, William Spell, natural child of my wife, Abigail while she was Abigail Spell" Lot No. 317 on Sugar Creek in Morgan County, Lot No. 200 in Putnam County, the upper half of "the Bracewell tract", the 200 acres "of the Scarbrough land, after the term of use given to his mother ceases", and two slaves Fred and Aeron. "... to my reputed son, John Cuddy Spell, son of my wife Abigail, Oliver White Abigail Spell [sic], one tract of land in Randolph being No. 100, on Shoal Creek; one other tract in the twenty first district of Old Wilkinson drawn and sold by McDaniel Oliver to me, also the balance of the Scarbrough land and ... Bracewell land", and a slave Jack.

"Item, ... if either of my said two reputed children William Spell or John Cuddy Spell should die before he arrives at lawful age, or without heirs of his body, that the survivor of them shall be heir to the other, and if both should so die, ..." then as contingent heirs, to "William Oliver, the son of McDaniel Oliver ... the land in Morgan County", to "George Oliver son of Ruden [sic, a miscopy of Risdon] Oliver ... the land in Randolph", to "the youngest son of Ruden Oliver that he had at the time I moved from his neighborhood ... the land in Putnam County", and to be "equally divided between John Oliver the son of John Oliver, and William Oliver the son of James Oliver" the Scarbrough and Bracewell tracts (location not specified, but presumably in Laurens County), "... to them and severally their heirs forever, ... the above named sons of my above named brothers. I hereby appoint my brothers, James and McDaniel Oliver, Executors, and my wife Abigail Oliver, Executrix ... this 2nd day of December A D 1812." The witnesses, William Livingston and Charles A. Hill, proved the will in Laurens Court of Ordinary on 4 Jan. and 8 Sept. 1813, respectively. (abstracted from certified typescript, Laurens Co., Ga., Will Book 1, pp. 5-8)

Comment: The above-named brothers James, John, McDaniel, Risdon, and William Oliver are assumed to be the five Olivers of those given names who are in Screven County in the 1805 Land Lottery (presumably compiled as of 1802); also in that lottery and county was a Thomas Oliver. All six have two draws each, indicating them as family men. Still residents of Screven County and receiving "fortunate draws" in the 1807 Lottery were John Oliver, Sr., McDaniel Oliver, and Risdon Oliver, Jr., all of Oliver's militia district. William Oliver was a resident of Laurens County when he made his will in 1812 and named his brothers James and McDaniel as executors; so we may assume the latter two as then also living in Laurens. In the 1820 Census for Georgia McDaniel and Risdon Oliver are in Laurens; a Risdon Oliver, Jr., is in Screven. As might be expected, Olivers named James, John, and William are fairly common in Georgia at this period. McDaniel Oliver married (1) ... and (2) Lurena Holmes. By 1826 he was in Twiggs County where he died before 1830.

MEG: 8/1970

The thirteen children of McDaniel Oliver were: 1. James; 2. William married Dorcus Harrison (This may be the basis for the error concerning McDaniel's wife.); 3. Joseph; 4. John; 5. Wiley, our ancestor; 6. Ann Hodges; 7. Charlotte; 8. Elizabeth Adams; 9. Susan Albritten; and, 10. Sarah Adams. All of the above were Charlotte's children. Those of Luraney Holmes were: 11. Augustus married Ann Williams; 12. Nancy Ann Roberts; and, 13. McDaniel who married Parrie Ricks.

After McDaniel died, Luraney kept her own children. The older children of Charlotte, James, William, and Wiley took Charlotte's younger children into their homes. James and William were administrators of the McDaniel Oliver estate.

The parents of McDaniel Oliver were John Oliver and Anne McDaniel.

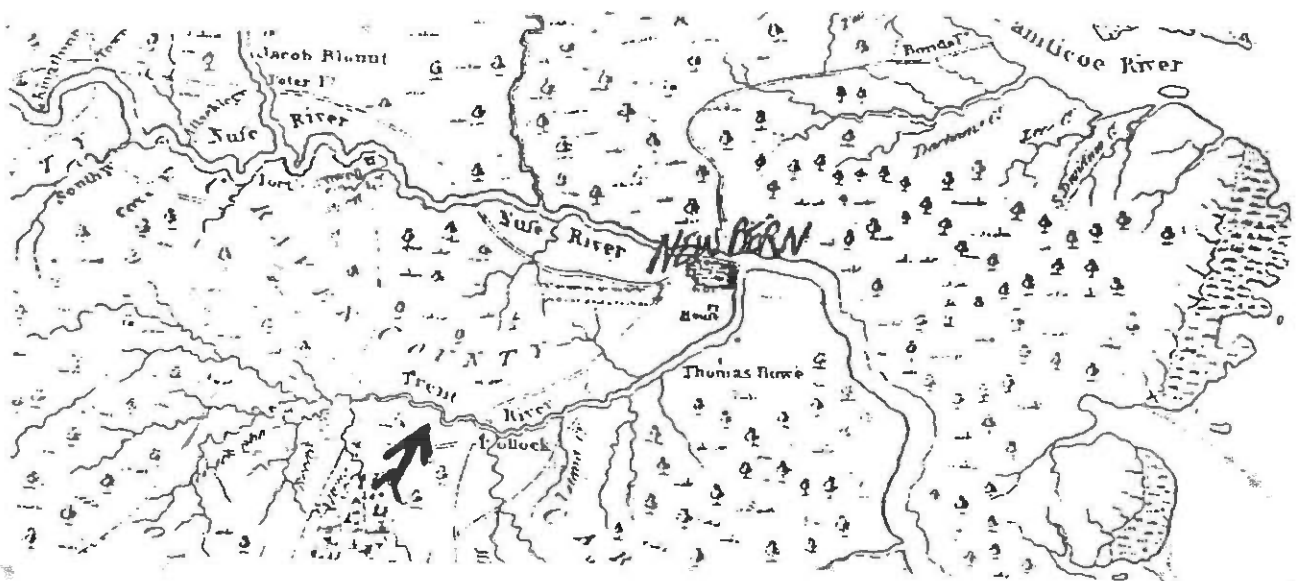
JOHN OLIVER
c.1735-1787

married

ANNE McDANIEL

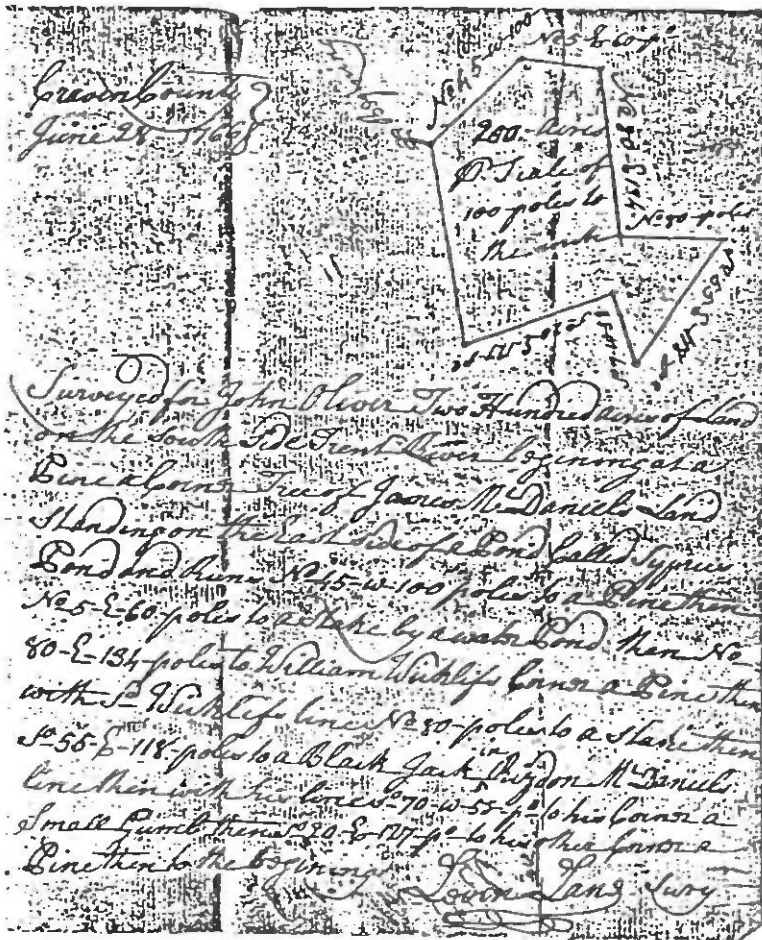
The origin, parents and exact date of birth of John Oliver are unknown. As the search continued, several Oliver families in eastern North Carolina were studied and eliminated from further consideration. Generally, many of the settlers in that area came from Virginia, following the emigration route from the James River, to the Blackwater River and on down to New Bern, moving west of The Great Dismal Swamp. Much of the land was and is covered with swamps and streams, making travel difficult. Often families moved together. It is possible that young John Oliver accompanied the Browne and McDaniel settlers as they came to North Carolina from Virginia. Olivers lived in Isle of Wight County in Virginia from the earliest colonial times.

John Oliver made his first land buy on May 10, 1756 from Abraham Bussett for twelve pounds "proclamation money" for "one hundred acres by estimation measure" on the south side of the Trent River west of New Bern. This is the first official record found, so far. He was described as a "planter" and the land was a "message". That meant that it was improved to include buildings and a home. The map below was drawn in 1770 during John's lifetime.



When he went to New Bern to buy the land, James McDaniel went with him. James would become his neighbor. In court, James McDaniel was his witness and his testimony was sworn. This help from an older person for a young man is not usual in a case where they are strangers. It is more likely for close friends or kin. James McDaniel was the son of Daniel McDaniel, who had died in 1734 in Bertie Precinct, leaving grown sons, Nicholas, Daniel and James, and two young and unmarried daughters, Sarah and Anne. In those days, when the father died, usually the widow and children went to live with kin or family members. John Oliver may have known Anne at her brother James McDaniel's home, married her, and later, decided to buy the adjacent farm.

John Oliver 200 Acres or more on the south side of Trent river Beginning at a
 pine corner of James McDaniel's Land standing on the E. side of a pond called
 Cypress pond and runs N 45 W 100 poles to a pine then N 5 E 60 poles to a stake by a water
 pond then N 80 E poles to William Wickliffe's corner a pine then with said Wick-
 liffe's line N 70 E poles to a stake then S 88 W poles to a Black Jack in Risdon
 McDaniel's line then with his line S 70 W 55 poles to his corner a small Gum
 then with his other line S 20 E 127 poles to his other corner a pine thence to
 the Beginning dated 25th April 1767 Wm. Taylor



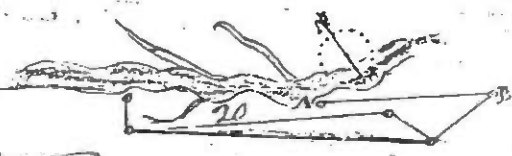
James McDaniel had a son with the strange name, Risdon. When Risdon came of age, he bought a farm beside the land of his father and the farm of John Oliver. Later, when James McDaniel died in 1759, John Oliver was named as the Executor of his will.

John Oliver's farm on the south side of the Trent River would become the Oliver homestead, where John Oliver would live for the rest of his life where he and his wife, Anne McDaniel Oliver, raised ten children. On that farm on the south side of the Trent, he prepared his will and that is where he died.

State of North Carolina
 Surveyor General's Office of Survey for Land in Jones County
 To the Surveyors of the said County beginning
 John Oliver's Twenty Nine Acres of Land on the South Side of
 the River Beginning at Hatcher's Corner Hickory
 standing on the River Bank & then with
 his line S 58 E 122 ft. to a Pine another of
 his corners, then S 89 W 52 ft. to his corner
 White Oak, then with his own line N 19
 W 36 ft. to a White Oak a corner of his old
 Survey, then with a line of S. Survey
 N 54 W 100 ft. to a light wood stump his
 own Beginning, then N 31 E 99 ft.
 to a Black Gum on the River Bank,
 then with the various courses of the
 River to the Beginning — — —
 By a scale 100 ft. to an Inch — — —
 Done under my hand July 1st 1800

Edw. Whitty for
 Hatcher & Co.

Jones County
 Dec. 3rd 1802



Surveyed for John Oliver Twenty
 Nine Acres of Land on the south side of Trent
 River Beginning at Hatcher's Corner Hickory
 standing on the River Bank & then with
 his line S 58 E 122 ft. to a Pine another of
 his corners, then S 89 W 52 ft. to his corner
 White Oak, then with his own line N 19
 W 36 ft. to a White Oak a corner of his old
 Survey, then with a line of S. Survey
 N 54 W 100 ft. to a light wood stump his
 own Beginning, then N 31 E 99 ft.
 to a Black Gum on the River Bank,
 then with the various courses of the
 River to the Beginning — — —
 By a scale 100 ft. to an Inch — — —

Edw. Whitty Sur.

The children of John Oliver and his wife, Anne, were:

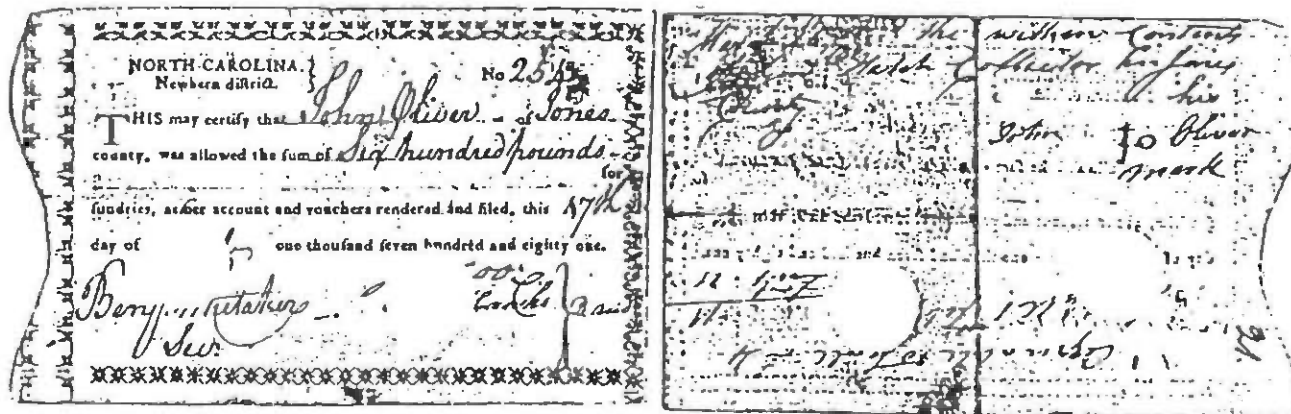
1. Sarah Lavender. (Anne's mother and sister were named Sarah.)
 2. Sivilty Morris.
 3. Mary Brockson
 4. John. (His father's name)
 5. Thomas.
 6. James m. Priscilla Williams. (Anne's brother was James McDaniel.)
 7. Ann. (Her mother's name)
 8. William m Abigail Spell
 9. McDaniel m. Charlotte- (McDaniel was Anne's surname.)
 10. Risden m. Sarah Williams. (Risden McDaniel was Anne's nephew.)
- It is quite obvious that this is a McDaniel Oliver family and that is the name of our ancestor!

In looking for the old land records, some are found, but not all of them. On 15 Feb 1778, John Oliver sold 50 acres to Thomas Morris. Then, on 6 Jun, he sold 100 acres to Rachel Taylor. Both farms were on the south side of the Trent River.

Jones County was organized in 1779, cut out of Craven County. At that time, the owners of all property were assessed, taxed, and listed. The listing included land in Jones, Craven, Carteret, and Duplin Counties. John Oliver had 300 acres worth 1451 pounds. Only one John Oliver was listed.

Late in 1779, 8 Dec, he sold 200 acres. This may have been done to pay his taxes. He was left with only 100 acres. On 1 Jul 1784, he was granted 20 acres. His will, in 1787, mentions only 100 acres. This explains why all six of his sons left for new land in Georgia.

During the American Revolution, John Oliver was a private in the militia of North Carolina in the 10th Regiment, Stevenson's Co. from 22 April 1777 to 6 June 1778. He was paid 600 pounds for his service. The vouchers below were copied from the originals in the NC Archives. On the back side, John signed for the money with his "mark". When people could not write, they signed with an "X" or a special mark. John's mark was very special.



The mark on the pay document is exactly like the one on John's will, so we know that the same man signed both papers.

Included are copies of documents that prove the service of John Oliver, transcribed. This completes the Oliver line as we know it today. However, this chapter will be continued with information about the ancestors of Anne McDaniel.

State of North Carolina

Department of Cultural Resources

Division of Archives and History



This verifies that the following information is recorded in a manuscript volume in the custody of the State Archives titled "Revolutionary Army Accounts" (Volume III, Page 76, Folio 2):

Heading: Statement of the Accounts of the non Commissioned Officers and privates of the North Carolina line in the late Army of the United States, as passed upon by the Commissioner of Army Accounts.

Number: 1291

Name: John Oliver p[ri]vate

Amount Charged: 80 dollars

Amount Credited: 36 dollars, 24/90ths

Balance paid and Charged by the State: 43 dollars, 66/90ths

Remarks: Inadmissable discharged 6 June 1778

Charges 12 mo in 77

Other information: [The 1778 and 1779 North Carolina dollar was divisible by 90 rather than 100 parts.]

Raleigh, North Carolina

July 21, 1981

Shanton W. Mitchell

Chief, Archives and Records Section

STATEMENT CONCERNING THE IDENTIFICATION OF JOHN OLIVER

1. The name of John Oliver is common enough to raise concern about whether we have the right man. The statement used to prove his service was provided by the NC Archives based upon my information about my John Oliver from Jones County with a farm on the Trent River.

2. North Carolina Regiments were organized by geographical area in general. The tenth was the last of the regiments formed and was never up to full strength. The Regimental Commander was Colonel Abraham Shepard. The Company Commander of Stevenson's Company was Silas Stevenson.

3. The inclosed papers show that Colonel Shepard came from Dobbs County, NC, in 1775 and represented the county at the provincial congress in Hillsboro. As the inclosed papers show, Dobbs County had a short life from 1758 until 1791. Jones County was created in 1779 from Craven County. Dobbs also got part of Craven County. Part of Dobbs County was annexed to Jones County in 1788. The TRENT RIVER was used in description of the annexation. John Oliver lived on the Trent River in Jones County.

4. Captain Stevenson left the service at about the time that John Oliver's service claimed here terminated. It is possible that my John Oliver went back to the Tenth Regiment in Doherty's Company from 12 Apr 1781 to 25 May 1782, but this service is not claimed here to avoid complication. Actually, John Oliver's initial enlistment was for three years. He may have served in several places which resulted in his claim and collection of the 600 pounds in 1781.

5. The voucher for 600 pounds is proved absolutely by the very unusual "Mark" used to sign it- the same mark on John's will.

1130

STATE RECORDS.

8th REGIMENT.

Name and Rank.	Companies.	Dates of Commissions and Enlistments.	Periods of Service.	Occurrences.
Oram (or Owens) Jas., pt.	Wadd's	13 Aug 1777		Omit. Feby. '77.
Owens, Stephen, Lt.	Rufford's	" "		(omit. June " "
Owens, Jacob, pt.	" "	" "	W.	Omit. Feby. '79.
O'Kelly, Dink, pt.	Tartanson's.	" "		Omit. Sept. '78

9th REGIMENT.

Name and Rank.	Companies.	Dates of Commissions and Enlistments.	Periods of Service.	Occurrences.
O'Bryan, Dennis, pt.	Cook's.	" "	'77. 3 yrs	Drummed out the Regt Aug. '77.

10th REGIMENT.

Names and Rank.	Companies.	Dates of Commissions and Enlistments.	Periods of Service.	Occurrences.
O'Neal, Jas., pt.	Williams'	12 May '77.	3 yrs	
Oram, Wm., pt.	" "	8 Augt " "	" "	Dischgd. 21 Aug. '78.
Oliver, Jun., pt.	Stevenson's	22 Apl " "	" "	Dischgd. 6 June '78.
Overton, Caleb, pt.	Moore's	30 June " "	" "	
Overton, Leml., pt.	" "	30 June " "	" "	
Oldridge, Wm., pt.	" "	19 Apl '78.	2 1/2 yrs	Dischgd. 22 Octo. '78.
Oyler, Jno., pt.	" "	14 Feb. '77.	3 yrs.	
Owens, Jno., pt.	" "	29 March " "	" "	
O'Neal, Jno., pt.	Coleman's.	18 Feby " "	" "	
Oligood, Henry, pt.	" "	" "	" "	Mustd. Jan'y. '78, omitd. Feb. '78.
Orange, Wm., pt.	Montfort's	20 July. '78	9 mo	
Odum, Aaron, pt.	Hogg's.	" "	" "	

The National Society
of the Sons of the American Revolution



Supplemental Ancestor Certificate

Alheat Carroll Melts, Jr.

National No. 118709

Descendant of

John Oliver

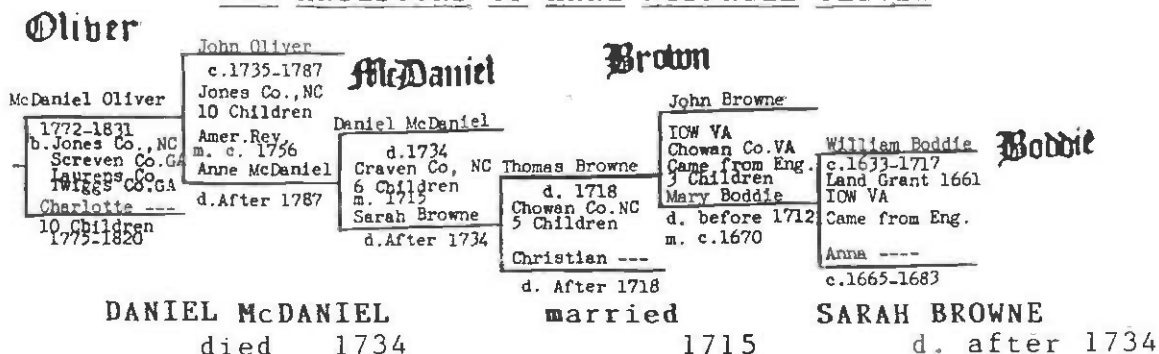
Approved 9 April 1981

134

James G. Pugh
President General



THE ANCESTORS OF ANNE McDANIEL OLIVER



The first members of the McDaniel family, as was true of many of the settlers on the eastern shore of North Carolina, probably drifted down from Virginia. It is probable that the Daniel McDaniel, who married Sarah Browne, came from Virginia. Someday, we may know. The immediate problem in the case of our Daniel McDaniel is the determination that he is a different person from another Daniel McDaniel who lived in eastern North Carolina at the same time! The other Daniel McDaniel is quite visible in the records of those years. As he was mentioned in earlier editions of this book, research has continued and it is evident that the man, hereafter called "THE OTHER DANIEL" is not the one who married Sarah Browne.

Logically, we know that a man cannot be in two places at the same time. The other Daniel became well known to the Edenton, NC, courts and lawyers in 1722. He and a partner, Robert Atkins, were in the business of transporting people and their possessions by water in small boats to various places along the eastern shore. In 1721, they took Reverend Ebenezer Taylor from Bath to Core Sound - a dangerous 60 mile trip. Upon arrival, Taylor refused to get out of the canoe and died. They buried him in the sand and his money and possessions disappeared for some time. A determined lawyer, John Porter, hounded the other Daniel. Finally, he moved out of the county and the charges were dropped. Lawyer Taylor and the court did get the money. ¹

The explanation above is important to prevent confusion and allow the discussion of the life of Daniel McDaniel and his wife Sarah Browne of Chowan County. He was a busy married man farming south of the Meherrin River in Chowan County in 1721 and 1722. One thing is certain. He was not paddling a canoe down the Pamlico River. As the research continued, we were fortunate to have the books written by John Bennett Boddie, a well known historian and genealogist. ²

Daniel McDaniel of Chowan County was born about 1690. ³ He was married to Sarah Browne by 1715. We know that because his father-in-law gave them a farm, probably, for a wedding present. Records state that, "Thomas Browne of Chowan Prect. with the consent of Christian my wife to DANIEL McDANIEL 19 July 1715 for the tender love I bear my son-in-law 100 acres more or less, joining Old Tree. swamp Wit.: Jacob Lewis his mark, Val Brasswell his mark Reg. 10 Sept. 1715" ⁴ The family of Daniel's wife, Sarah Browne, had moved from Virginia to Chowan

1. William L. Saunders, THE COLONIAL RECORDS OF NORTH CAROLINA, Vol. II, 1713-1728, Pp 450, 451, 456, 472, 492, 508.
J.R.B. Hathaway, THE NORTH CAROLINA HISTORICAL AND GENEALOGICAL REGISTER, Vol. I, No. 1, p. 110. A letter to the Governor explaining that the other Daniel McDaniel was innocent.

2. John Bennett Boddie, HISTORICAL SOUTHERN FAMILIES, Vol. II,

Pp. 71-73.

3. North Carolina Genealogical Society, INDEX OF NORTH CAROLINA ANCESTORS, p. 129.

4. J.R.B. Hathaway, THE NORTH CAROLINA HISTORICAL AND GENEALOGICAL REGISTER Vol. I, No. 1, p. 289.

Margaret M. Hoffmann, CHOWAN PRECINCT, NORTH CAROLINA, 1696-1723, "GENEALOGICAL ABSTRACTS OF DEED BOOKS", p. 95.

County before 1710.² The Browne family had moved from Isle of Wight, VA, to Nansemond County, VA, to Chowan County, NC.

The father of Sarah was Thomas Browne and he had a son named Thomas Browne. Both were neighbors of the newly weds. The family lived in the area below the Meherrin River and north of the Roanoke River. The Meherrin River branches northwestward from the Chowan River near the Virginia border. (Below Murphreesboro, NC, on modern maps) The Indians and many settlers called the Roanoke River the "Moratuck" - spelled several ways. Also, as mentioned earlier, a "Pocoson" is a marsh or swamp. These Indian words are used in the early documents. J.R.B. Hathaway and Margaret M. Hoffmann⁵ extracted many of the deeds. The same deeds as copied by other researchers vary slightly, according to their reading of the faded and worn old papers, but they tell about the activity of the McDaniel and Browne families as they developed their plantations.

After the wedding about 1715, Daniel must have worked his 100 acres. On 17 July 1717, John Molton sold Daniel 200 acres beside the Beaver Dam. The same day, Daniel sold the same 200 acres to Thomas Brown. (This is his brother-in-law rather than his father-in-law.) Daniel and Thomas lived near each other. On April 11, 1720, both were listed as members of Captain Robert Patterson's militia company. The company mission was to operate from Meherring Creek to the Meherring River "and soe up the River of both sides". The company had about 93 men depending upon which reference is consulted.⁶ During the years through 1722, his name appears in deeds for various reasons, such as being the owner next to land that was sold. In Chowan County Deed "Book III, page 8, he acquired 410 acres on Beaver Dam swamp and the spring branch". Then, in 1727, the minutes of The Executive Council of North Carolina read:

"Read the Petition of Daniel MacDaniel Shewing that John McDaniel some time agoe obtained a Patent for 640 acres of Land which is not Seated as the Law directs therefore prays a Lapse patent may be granted him for the same.

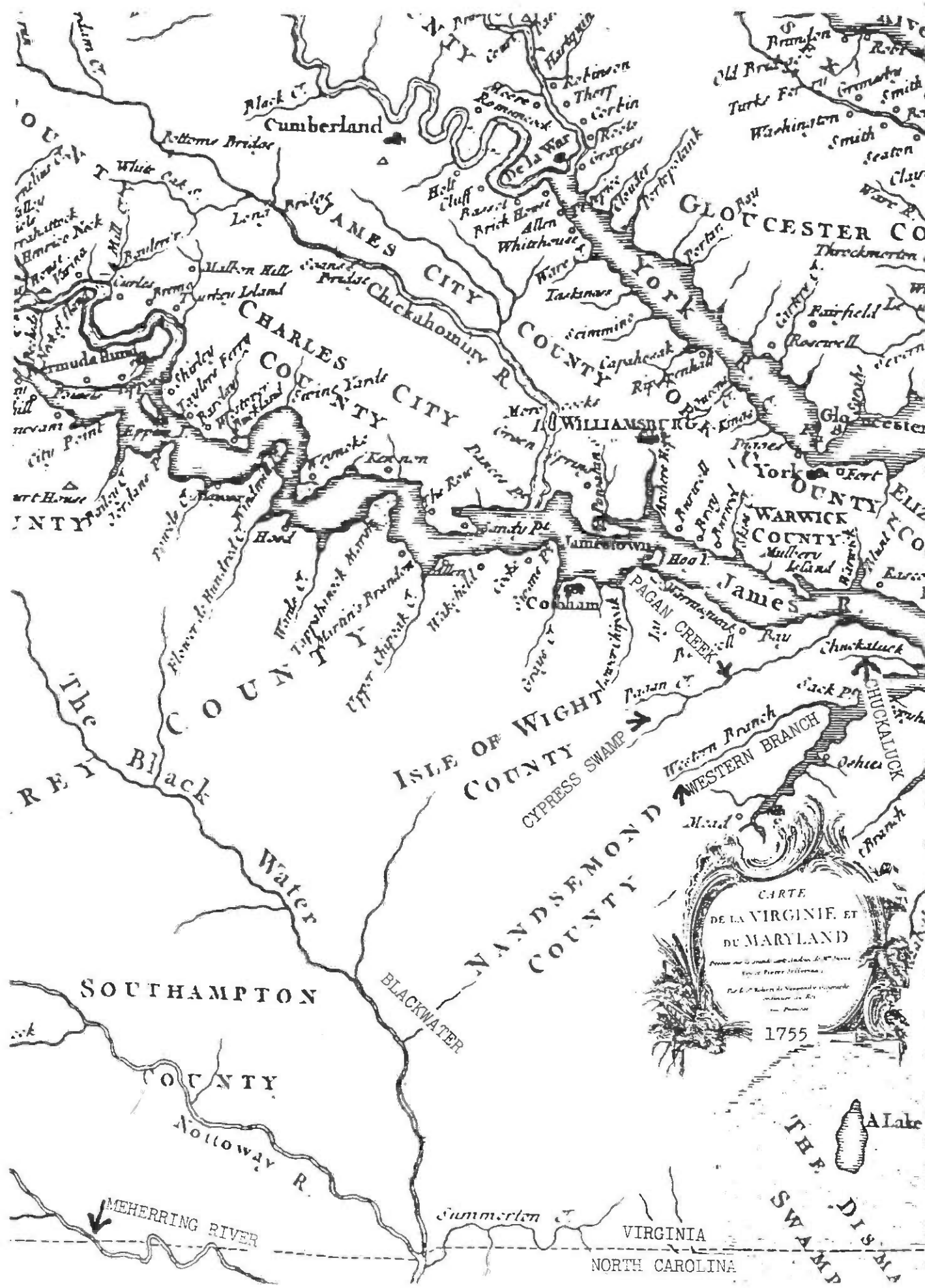
"Ordered that a Patent Issue as Prayed for."

Time passed and at the courthouse on Timber Branch, on 9 May 1732, Daniel McDaniel signed three deeds of land to Robert Rayford, John Fort and Phillip Peirce. Less than a year later, on 16 April 1733, he signed his last will and testament. It was probated on 2 May 1734. He named his sons as Nicholas, Daniel, and James. His daughters were mentioned as Ann and Sarah McDaniel. His wife, Sarah was named as Executrix. Since the daughters were listed by their maiden names, they would not have been married at that time.

The parents of Daniel McDaniel cannot be named until more research is completed. However, we know that the parents of Sarah Browne McDaniel were Thomas Browne and his wife, Christian.

5. J.R.B. Hathaway, THE NORTH CAROLINA HISTORICAL AND GENEALOGICAL REGISTER, Pp. 299, 300, 142.
Margaret M. Hoffmann, CHOWAN PRECINCT / NORTH CAROLINA 1696-1723 / Genealogical Abstracts of Deed Books, Pp. 71, 72, 95, 121, 122, 216, 243, 254.

6. Weynette Parks Haun, OLD ALBEMARLE COUNTY NORTH CAROLINA MISCELLANEOUS RECORDS / 1678 to ca 1732, p.117.



CARTE
 DE LA VIRGINIE ET
 DU MARYLAND
 1755

Thomas Browne, the son of John Browne and father of Sarah Browne, was born in Isle of Wight, Virginia.⁷ His grandfather, William Boddie, named him as his grandson in the Boddie will in 1712. The family lived across the James River a few miles from Jamestowne. At that time, over a hundred years had passed since the first settlers had come ashore. After those first awful years of war and starvation, the population had grown. Religious competition, political upheaval and Bacon's Rebellion followed. The land had been tilled for over seventy five years. The main money crop was tobacco and the land in North Carolina was much better. By the time Thomas Browne became a man, his generation began a movement out of Virginia to the south. His brother, William Browne, went to the Blackwater River area and Thomas followed. Then, in 1702, William deeded his land on the Blackwater in Isle of Wight County to his brother Thomas in Nancemond County, Virginia.

In Nancemond County, Thomas married Christian -----. Her surname is not known. Thomas and Christian sold the Blackwater land in 1710. By that time, they had left Virginia with most of the members of the Browne family which moved to Chowan County, North Carolina.

As time passed, North Carolina counties were reorganized often, but the rivers and towns did not move! Briefly, old Albemarle Co. was created in 1663, divided into 3 counties and disappeared in 1739. Areas called Precincts became counties. Chowan County was cut from Albemarle in 1670. Craven Co. was created in 1712. Bertie Co. was cut from Chowan Co. in 1722. Jones Co. was cut from Craven Co. in 1778. The need to know of the changes will become apparent later, as the story continues. A person could have lived in more than one county without moving.

In North Carolina, the Browne family members lived in the same general area. William lived above the Meherrin River. Thomas and the others lived below the Meherrin River and west of Meherrin Creek. Land deeds mention Potocasy Creek, Old Tree Swamp and the Moratuck River (The Roanoke).

Actually, the moves made by the Browns were short. The distance from the Browne land in Isle of Wight County to the Blackwater is about 50 miles. From the Blackwater to the Browne land below the Meherrin River is another 30 miles. Of course, there were rivers and marshes to cross.

In the story about Daniel McDaniel and Sarah Browne, the wedding present of 100 acres given to them by Thomas and Christian on July 15, 1715 was discussed. The Browne and McDaniel farms were adjacent. There are documents⁹ to show several land transfers, showing that the family stayed in the same area.¹⁰ As often happens, care must be taken with regard to analysis of these documents because there was another Thomas Browne in the general area in addition to our Thomas Browne and his son Thomas Browne.¹¹ This man petitioned for land "That his Father/Dr. Samuel Brown obtained ---in Chowan in the year 1717". It is fortunate that our Thomas Browne was usually identified by having his wife Christian's name on documents.

7. John Bennett Boddie. HISTORICAL SOUTHERN FAMILIES. Vol. II, p.71-73. Here, in 1712, William Boddie names Thomas Browne as his grandson.

8. Ibid. Vol. III, p. 168. Dates and continuation of Vol. II material are given. This gives the birth date of Thomas as 1675, however, Boddie's SEVENTEENTH ISLE OF WIGHT COUNTY VIRGINIA, Vol. II, p. 609, shows a Deed Book I entry which indicates a date of 1659.

9. Margaret M. Hoffmann. CHOWAN PRECINCT / NORTH CAROLINA 1696-1723 Pp. 48, 72, 95, 115, 121, 122, 142, & 240. On p. 143, "CHRISTIAN BROWNE of Albemarle Co., widow", on 21 Oct. 1718 sells

118 acres on the Pocoson for 1,000 pounds of "Merchantable Tobacco". The land deals read "THOMAS BROWNE of Chowan Precinct and CHRISTIAN his wife to---"

10. J.E.B. Hathaway. THE NORTH CAROLINA HISTORICAL AND GENEALOGICAL REGISTER. PP 3, 9, 289, 299, & 300.

11. Robert J. Cain. THE COLONIAL RECORDS OF NORTH CAROLINA (Second Series), Vol. VII, "Records of the Executive Council" 1664-1734, p.110.

12. J. Bryan Grimes. ABSTRACT of NORTH CAROLINA WILLS, P. 51.

Thomas Browne wrote his will on April 1, 1718 and it was probated on October 21, 1718. He named his sons: Thomas, John, Howell and James. One daughter was Sarah Macdonel (sic. McDaniel) and wife, Christian. It was made in Chowan County. ¹²

After the death of her husband, Christian sold the property and, later, married John Nairn. Thomas Browne was the son of John Browne and his wife, Mary Boddie.

JOHN BROWNE

married
1670

MARY BODDIE

c.1653-bef.1712

John Brown was the first member of our Browne family to come to America. He was included on a list of fifty-six people that William Boddie transported to Isle of Wight County, Virginia, dated 12 July 1665. Based upon this claim and eleven people on an earlier list, William Boddie was granted 3,350 acres of land on Cypress swamp near Western Branch, which runs into Pagan Creek where Smithfield is located today. In order, listed, were the names: "WM. BODY, ANN BODY, MARY BODY, and JNO. BROWNE, twice", in that order and together. ¹³ Mary was the daughter of William and Anne Boddie, all born in England. In about 1670, Mary Boddie married John Browne in Virginia. ¹⁴ The approximate birth date of Mary was calculated from an 8 June 1683 deed, "William Boddie of Isle of Wight Co., Va. to daughter Mary Brown that plantation which she now dwelleth on and all the houses and orchards of same ----and to her four children, eight head of female cattle." ¹⁵ "Mary Brown probably was not less than twenty-five years of age in 1678. Take twenty-five years from 1678, this would make the year 1653 as the possible date of birth of Mary Boddie, daughter of William, and would indicate his date of birth was between the years 1630 and 1635." ¹⁶ Note that William Boddie gave the plantation to his daughter without reference to her husband. Also, it means that Mary and John had four children in 1683.

When Mary's father, William Boddie, wrote his will on 17 December 1712, it included these words: ¹⁷

"I give and bequeath to my grandson, WILLIAM BROWN, one shilling.

"I give unto my grandson, THOMAS BROWN, one shilling, and also I do give and bequeath unto all their sisters, my grand-daughters, one shilling apiece.

Now, we know that two children were named William and Thomas (our ancestor). Also, we know that one of the wealthiest men in America left each of them one shilling and that they had sisters. I hope that they did not spend all that money in one place! Further, son-in-law John Browne was not mentioned! Also, Mary was not mentioned in the will. Of course, he had given her a plantation in 1683. However, his mention of grandchildren indicates that Mary died before 1712. William Boddie was generous with his other children. Further, William and Thomas were not little children in 1712. Thomas was a grown man with a married daughter, Sarah Browne McDaniel.

13. J.S. Bryan and E.G. Svem. WILLIAM AND MARY COLLEGE QUARTERLY. Vol. 14, Series 2, 1934, p.126.
14. John Thomas Boddie and John Bennett Boddie, BODDIE AND ALLIED FAMILIES, 1918, p.8 and 11.
15. Ibid., p.11.
16. John Bennett Boddie, SEVENTEENTH CENTURY ISLE OF WIGHT COUNTY VIRGINIA, Vol. 1, 1938, Pp. 339-340.
17. Ibid., Pp. 350 and 351.

The birth and death dates of John Browne are not known. One thing is certain - he was no wealthy and prominent man like his father-in-law. Again, there is the problem of multiple John Brownes, both with and without the final "e". J.B. Boddie's classic book, SEVENTEENTH CENTURY ISLE OF WIGHT VIRGINIA, is an outstanding history of the county during the seventeenth century. The 756 pages tell of most of the citizens as well as of the Boddies. There are 23 references to a John Brown(e). In 14 of them, a John Browne is a witness. Only 2 of these involves a family member. In 1668, William Boddie and his wife Anna sold some land on Cypress Swamp and John Browne signed with an "X" as a witness. Then, in 1683, William Boddie leased some property and John Browne witnessed the transaction. ¹⁸

There is an interesting story that a John Browne, shipwright, built and sold a ship hull, which he named the "Isabella", 40 tons. It was "riding at anchor on Pagan Creek" (near where the family lived). He sold it for 10,000 pounds of tobacco. Later, after it was sold, Governor Berkeley "pressed it into His Majesties service". ¹⁹ The year was 1675.

On 20 October 1688, Governor Effingham, of Virginia, granted John Browne 500 acres. Then, on 9 March 1690, he and his wife Mary assigned this patent to Thomas Reeves. ²⁰ (This is interesting because Thomas Reeves sold this land in 1695/6 and his family moved with Thomas Browne and the other Browne family members to Chowan County, NC.) ²¹

On 2 December 1692 there was a record that, "John Browne, Sr., empowers John Browne to be his atty. in acct with Hugh Campbell. Dan Leigh, Mary Browne." ²² (There appeared, in 1694, another John Browne who was 25 years old.) A land grant was given to a John Browne in 1692 for 220 acres and a quit rent is listed in 1704. ²³ These may or may not be our John Browne.

There are inferences that old John and Mary went with the family to North Carolina. They may have gone, but no valid wills are evident nor are there other reasons to know. Actually, the answer is not too important. The most important thing that John did during his life was to marry Mary Boddie, daughter of William Boddie. It is fortunate that William Boddie, in his 1712 will named his grandson, Thomas Boddie. As for proof and evidence, it is certain that John Browne came to America before 1665 with the Boddie family and that he married Mary Boddie. It is certain that they are the parents of Thomas Browne, who moved to North Carolina. It is certain that Mary was the daughter of William Boddie, one of the great land owners of Colonial Virginia.

WILLIAM BODDIE
c.1633-1717

married

ANNA -----
c.1635-c.1683

William Boddie, who patented land in Isle of Wight County, Virginia, in 1661, was the son of John and Mary Boddie of London and Ingatestone, Essex. ²⁴ He was an educated gentleman. He, his wife Anna and their daughter, Mary, came from England. They sailed to America, arriving before 20 October 1661. At that time, William was granted 550 acres of land for importing eleven

18. Ibid. VOL. II. Pp 564 and 627.

19. Ibid. p. 574.

20. Ibid. p. 605.

21. John Bennett Boddie, HISTORICAL SOUTHERN FAMILIES, Vol. II, p. 71.

22. John Bennett Boddie, SEVENTEENTH CENTURY ISLE OF WIGHT COUNTY VIRGINIA, VOL. II, P. 624.

23. Ibid. Pp 692 and 699.

24. J.S. Bryan & E.C. Swem, WILLIAM AND MARY COLLEGE QUARTERLY, 1934, Vol. 14, Series 2., Pp. 125-131.

persons. Later, he was granted 3,350 acres, including the earlier 550 acres for bringing 56 emigrants to America. He became one of the greatest land owners in Virginia. In all, he brought 134 people to the New World.

Isle of Wight County is located across the James River from Jamestowne, which was colonized in 1607. Most Americans know of the severe life lead by the first settlers. Disease, famine and Indian wars almost destroyed the colony. Those in Isle of Wight were no exception. Edward Bennett, a wealthy Englishman was given a patent in 1621 to settle 200 English settlers on a plantation across from Jamestowne. In February, 1622, the ship "Sea Flower" arrived with 120 people. They were Puritans. On Good Friday, 22 March 1622, Indians attacked and killed 53 of the residents of Isle of Wight. Disease killed many of the settlers. By 1624-25, only 31 people were alive. However, by 1630, conditions were beginning to improve. As more settlers continued to come, gradually, prosperity and the opportunity for success allowed fortunes to be made.²⁵ When William Boddie arrived, he was in the right place at the right time.

The Boddie family plantation grew to about 8,000 acres located near Cypress Creek where it runs into the Pagan River. Today, the town of Smithfield is located there. The Pagan River was about ten feet deep from there to the James River. The land extended over to the Western Branch near the Nandsemond (sic. Nansemond) county line.

William Boddie married three times. Of course, his first wife, Anna, is of most importance to our lineage because she was the mother of Mary Boddie Browne. William habitually included the names of his wives on land deeds, fortunately, because that indicates the approximate dates of death and marriage! He bought and sold land continuously. Anna died about 1683. The name of the second wife was Elizabeth ---, who died about 1697. She gave him two children, John and Elizabeth. His third wife was Mary Edwards, a widow of Robert Edwards and daughter of William Hunt. Mary gave William Boddie no children.

William Boddie, a Puritan, became a Quaker in about 1672. This is important because it meant that he would own no slaves and could have only one household servant. With 8,000 acres to farm, the work was done by indentured workers who cleared the fields and planted the tobacco. Boddie, in addition to being a wealthy land owner, was a dealer in indentured servants. Ship loads of the emigrants were brought to America and their names were used as "headrights" to procure land. These people served 5 to 7 years to pay for their passage.

The Boddie land was near the Nancemond County line where, in Chuckatuck, the Quaker meetings were held. At a Quaker wedding, there, on 6 October 1679, William Boddie attended and two others present were Thomas Godwin and Elizabeth, his sister. (see Pp. 167-171 of this book.)

It is appropriate to mention, at this point that there were several of our distinguished Metts ancestors living in Isle of Wight County. Thomas Godwin was Speaker of the House of Burgesses in 1676. Also, Joseph Bridger (1628-1686) was a Burgess in 1657, 1663 and 1666 - a very important man. He is buried in the famous St. Luke's Church (The Brick Church) near Smithfield. (See Pp. 173-9) He married the daughter of Col.

Robert Pitt, who died in 1694. These outstanding citizens were neighbors of William Boddie. It seems evident that William Boddie was not involved in politics. There may be a reason.

The earliest American settlers were, most of them, very poor, looking for religious freedom and a way out of poverty. The history of England had a marked effect upon America. King Charles I surrendered to the Scots in 1647 and was beheaded in 1648. Cromwell became Protector. The Battle of Worcester in 1661 caused King Charles II to flee. Oliver Cromwell died in 1658 and Richard Cromwell took his place. Parliament was dissolved in 1660 and Charles II was king again. These Civil Wars in England lead to mass emigration to America. Some called this "The Coming of the Cavaliers". Many of the Americans who came during the years of upheaval were of noble birth or were citizens of high station. ²⁶ Nathaniel Bacon was one of them and so was William Boddie, who may have learned, in England, that power was better found in wealth than politics.

The scarcity of reference used in this segment about William Boddie is due to the fact that the outstanding genealogical contribution of John Bennett Boddie makes an extended discussion in this book unnecessary. The books listed at the bottom of these pages tell the story about Boddies in America and make the link, also, back to England.

Note: Please see Appendix F for Boddie in Old England.

26. John Bennett Boddie, SEVENTEENTH CENTURY ISLE OF WIGHT COUNTY, Vol. I, Pp. 105-110.

Callaway

Mary Milner Callaway was the wife of William Oliver. Mary's ancestors can be traced back to ancient times. Many of them were aristocrats. Also, many were hard working farmers. In the preface of The Callaway Clan, by Hoffmeyer, in 1948, William Thomas Callaway wrote, "Today, members of the family number in the thousands and are spread all over the nation, and the world. But the majority in the United States are found in the South.— Most of the Callaways have had an honorable record, although of course in such a large number of individuals there have been some 'misfits of society'.— Farming seems to have been the chief occupation of a large majority of the Callaways, and even today a great number of them live in rural communities. However, the family has had its share of judges, doctors, preachers (more than its share), business men, teachers, and scholars."

The Callaways came from England. The name has been spelled many ways,— Callway, Calloway, Callawy, Calwaye, and many more. Probably, it came from a little town in County Devon or Cornwall. Around 1500, a window was placed in the church at St. Neots. It has a crest and the motto, "St. Callaway Oro Pro Me". The last three latin words mean "Pray for Me".

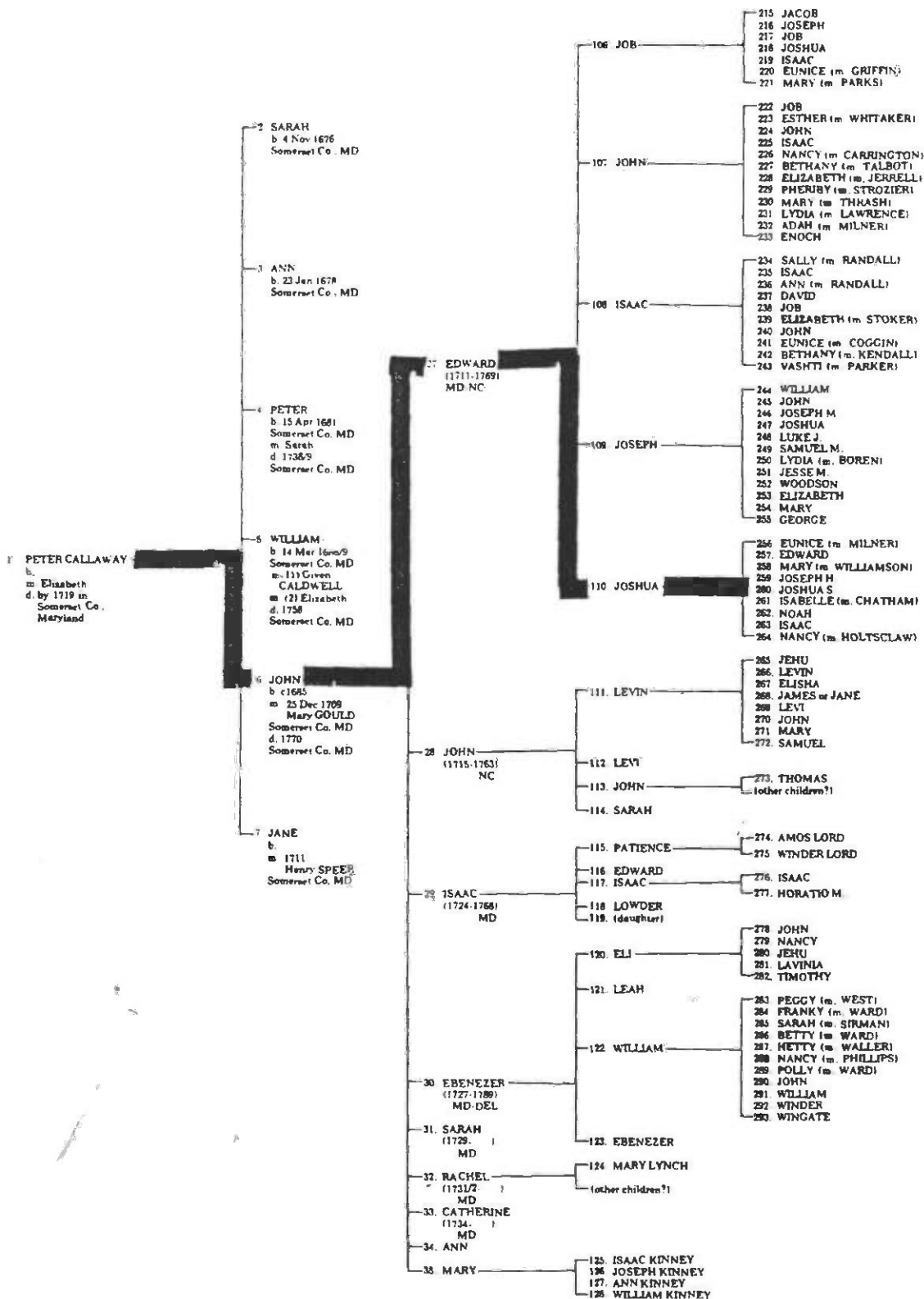
The Callaway Family Association is very active. Their annual journal tells of the family today and seeks out the history of the clan. Through our cousin, Anne Scott Mauldin, Ben A. Callaway has given permission for journal items to be used in this book. In the past, a number of books have been published with wrong and misleading accounts of the lineage of our branch of the family. Based upon research by the association, our lineage is documented in The Callaway Journal, Volume V, page 67. (see chart on the next page.)

Mary Milner Callaway's life was discussed along with that of her husband, William Oliver. Mary's parents will be the next topic. She was the daughter of one of the several great Baptist preachers in Georgia who were Callaways. Her father was Joshua Sanford Callaway and her mother was his second wife, Elizabeth Shivers.

JOSHUA SANFORD CALLAWAY	married	ELIZABETH SHIVERS
30 May 1789—29 May 1854	15 Nov 1827	c. 1798—1831

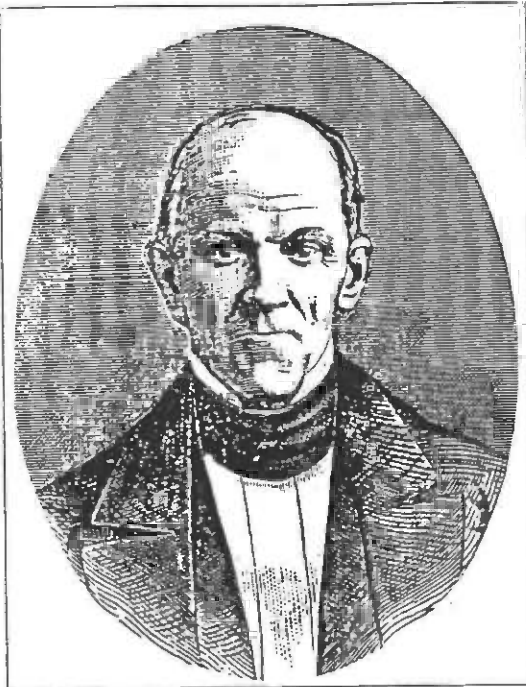
Georgia was the frontier during the years following the American Revolution. First, the frontiersmen came and made way for the settlers. Gradually, the Indians were pushed back and their lands were taken for farms to be cleared for planting. Indian attacks and Indian wars had to be part of the lives of these people. Religion was an important part of their existence. Families were close and often members of several families would live near each other, move together, and help in their problems. The children married and often there were several links between these families. So it was with the Callaways and the Milners. This is evident in the following story of Joshua. This item was published by the Baptist Church, History of the Baptist Denomination in Georgia, 1881. (This book is in the Public Domain.)

Descendants of Peter Callaway of Maryland through one of his sons: John



JOSHUA S. CALLAWAY.

JOSHUA S. CALLAWAY was born in Wilkes county, Georgia, May 30th, 1789, and in his 11th year was hopefully converted to God, but through the prejudice felt by the churches of that day against early professions of religion, was not baptized till his twentieth year, when the ordinance was administered by Rev. Jesse Mercer. He was ordained to the work of the ministry at Sardis church, in Jones county, Georgia, in 1820, and was Moderator of the Flint River Association for more than twenty years. In the troublous times when the missionary and anti-missionary elements of our denomination separated from each other, Elder Callaway at first inclined to take the side of the latter, but on mature reflection he decided



to unite with the missionary element, and if he lost any time while in a state of doubt, he amply made up for it by extraordinary zeal and diligence afterwards.

The first ten years of his ministerial life were spent in Jones county; at the end of this period he removed to Henry county, and there and in the neighboring counties expended most of his labors during the rest of his life. His ministry was very successful. In its earlier years he kept an account of those baptized by him, but when the number reached fourteen hundred, he conceived the idea that there might be something wrong in keeping this account, and he therefore discontinued it. It is probable that several thousand persons received baptism at his hands. He excelled greatly as a disciplinarian, and was vigilant and rigid in keeping the churches under his care in good, orderly condition. In doctrine he was very decidedly Calvinistic, and he sustained his theological views with ingenuity and with great power. Yet he was tender and sympathetic in manner; his appeals were addressed equally to the understanding and to the feelings, and while they were always effective, were sometimes remarkably so. His talents were of superior order, and his culture much above the average, though he went to school only eight months of a single year. He was a man of very strong and decided convictions, inclined somewhat, perhaps, to extremes, and when he espoused a cause he did it with energy and enthusiasm. He was sure to take one side or the other of every question that came before him, and he took it for better and for worse; he was not given to compromises when he thought that principle was involved; was inflexible, stern, and sometimes was thought to be a little overbearing, but considering his remarkable force of character, this is not surprising.

As might be expected, he had strong friends and strong opponents. But none questioned his high integrity, the purity of his motives, nor the genuineness and earnestness of his piety. He was devoted to his work and faithful in the discharge of his duties, and continued to preach until his last illness, and on his sick and dying bed continued to speak to those around him of the great salvation until death sealed his lips in silence.

It is needless to say that a man of such character as that just described had high position among his brethren, and was universally recognized as one of the strong forces of the denomination. Outside of his ministerial gifts, he was blest with others which would have made him eminent as a citizen if he had not been a minister. Among these was a remarkable talent for mathematics—a science in whose intricacies he took great delight, and in which he was perfectly at home. He never sought official position of any kind, but was once appointed surveyor of Walton county, and his returns are said to have been the most complete and perfect ever received by the Surveyor-General.

Elder Callaway was three times married. First, in 1811, to Miss Mary Milner, daughter of deacon Pitt Milner. This lady died in 1826, leaving six children, the youngest a babe, and the eldest thirteen years old. On her deathbed she gave them all hopefully to God, and now, with the exception of the second son, James Madison, who died a Christian in 1848, they are all living, and all worthy and efficient members of Baptist churches. The second wife was Mrs. Elizabeth Smith, whose maiden name was Shivers, a daughter of Willis Shivers. Mrs. Smith had three children at the time of her marriage with Elder Callaway, and two were given to her afterwards. The eleven children of three different sets, nine of them being boys, were all raised under the same roof, and educated at the same school. With such varied elements there was room for discord, but under the godly influence of their pious parents, they lived together in harmony, peace and love. Elder C. was married the third time to Miss Mary McCoy, daughter of Abner McCoy. This estimable lady survives her husband, and is now living in the town of Jonesboro, near the spot where his mortal remains are entombed. By this last marriage there were seven children, making eighteen in all who composed the family. Fourteen of these are now living, and are all worthy representatives of him under whose wise, kind and pious tutelage they were brought up.

Elder C. was a man of rather spare habit, but of fine personal appearance and impressive presence. He died in Jonesboro, Georgia, May 29th, 1854, lacking one day of being 65 years of age. The writer of this memoir never saw the subject of it, but he takes pleasure in recording the fact that men of the generation now beginning to pass away, and who knew Elder Callaway, are unanimous in speaking of him in the strongest terms as one of the purest and best men, and as one of the ablest ministers ever known to the Baptist denomination of Georgia.

Joshua baptized 1400 people before he quit counting. He decided that it was sinful to count. As mentioned above, he married three times. After Mary Milner died, he married Elizabeth Shivers Smith, our ancestor. She had been married to John C. Smith, a very fine man. They had lived in Jones County, Georgia. Joshua was a minister there for a few years. When John C. Smith died, his will left the estate to Elizabeth and the children, Jonus Shivers Smith, Columbus Washing(ton) Smith, and the unborn child. It was a boy, named for his father, John Carraway Smith. The 1850 census was microfilmed with the pages overlapped to hide his name. When Elizabeth gave birth to our ancestor, Mary Milner Callaway, the baby was named after his first wife. This was a strange habit. When Elizabeth Shivers died, Joshua married Mary McCoy, his third wife, and her first girl was named Elizabeth Shivers Callaway after his second wife.

The first names and dates of birth of the children of Joshua Sanford Callaway were: 1. Pitt Milner, 10 Oct 1812; 2. James Madison, 1 Jan 1815; 3. John H.M., 25 Jan 1817; 4. Beneter A., 11 Feb 1819; 5. Apsilla Ann, 21 Mar 1827; 6. Joshua Sanford, 18 Nov 1824; 7. **Mary (Polly) Milner**, 1 Sep 1828, our ancestor; 8. Willis Joshua, 1 Oct 1830; 9. Elizabeth Shivers, 21 Sep 1833; 10. Elizabeth E., 24 Apr 1835; 11. Ardicey G., 30 Mar 1837; 12. Jacob King, 18 Jan 1841; 13. Delamartie, 22 Feb 1842; 14. Elen Wilie Jourdan, 31? Apr 1844; 15. Jannell, 1847. The first six were the children of his first wife, Mary Milner. The next two were from his second wife, Elizabeth Shivers. The rest were born to Mary McCoy.

The names and the spelling in the list may not be accurate. First priority was given to the Callaway Bible, one page of which is copied below. The Bible page is from the Georgia Archives, DR 199, Box 66. Also, the U.S. Census 1850 was used.

THE
NEW TESTAMENT

FAMILY RECORD.

BIRTHS.	BIRTHS.
Joshua S. Callaway born May 30 th 1789	Polly, Milner Callaway born Sept 1 st 1823
Polly Callaway born Feb. 25 th 1795	Willie Joshua Callaway .. Oct. 1 st 1830
Were married Feb. 12 th 1811	Joshua S. Callaway & Mary McGay were married Nov. 13 th 1852
W. W. Milner Callaway born Oct. 11 th 1812	Elizabeth, Milner Callaway born Sept. 21 st 1825
James, Madison Callaway born Jan. 1 st 1815	Elixa E Callaway born Sept. 24 th 1835
John H. M. Callaway born Jan. 25 th 1817	Andrew G Callaway March 30 th 1837
Benjamin A. Callaway .. Feb. 11 th 1819	Jacob King Callaway Jan. 19 th 1841
Apvilla Ann Callaway March 21 1821	Dr. James Callaway Feb. 22 1842
Joshua Sanford Callaway Nov. 19 th 1824	Willie Jordan Ellen Callaway Callaway born Apr. 31 1844
Joshua S. Callaway & Elizabeth Smith were married Nov. 15 th 1827	

NEW-YORK:

PRINTED BY HOPKINS AND STEVENS.

ERT M' DERMUT, AND SOLD AT HIS BOOK-STORE, N. 24, PEARL-STREET.

JOSHUA CALLAWAY, SR. married ISABELLA GRAVES HENDERSON
17 Feb 1757-10 Feb 1816 29 Jan 1778 d. 12 Oct 1826

Going back in time, this is the story of the life of the father of the great preacher, Joshua Sanford Callaway. His father was Joshua, Sr. His teenage years were spent on the move as the Callaway family searched for more and better land. His father, Edward, and his brothers Job, John, Isaac, and Joseph followed the typical procedures of the times as they gradually made their way to Wilkes County, Georgia. One member of the family would lead the way, the others would follow. They were living in Sussex County, Delaware, when Joshua was born in 1757.

The first move was to Onslow County, North Carolina. This is in the southeast corner of the state. Today, the U.S. Marine Corps Camp Lejeune takes up much of the county. Jacksonville is the largest town. When Joshua was ten years old, his father, he and Joseph made the long three hundred mile journey. Edward Callaway was given a land grant for 100 acres on 25 Apr 1767 (Bk 23, p. 30.). Brothers Job, Isaac, and Joseph came to complete the circle. They may have come to bury their father, Edward Callaway, who died in Onslow County in 1769. The next year, Joshua and Isaac each bought 100 acres in the same location. Older brother, John, was a witness. Since Joshua was only 13 years old, he must have convinced someone that he was of age. Oldest brother, Job, sold his father's land to young Joseph - 100 acres for a token 5 pounds. On 9 and 12 December 1778, Joshua and Isaac sold their farms in Onslow County. The deeds referred to them as, "of Anson County, NC" and their land being sold as "100 acres whereon Callaway formerly lived on Whiteoak River". It was described further as "on the south side of a forked branch,—,at Starkey's corner.". That river is six miles above Camp Lejeune.

From the above, we learn that the family had moved about 150 miles west to Anson County, NC. Joshua had been in Anson County for over a year because he married Isabella Graves Henderson on 29 Jan 1778. She was the daughter of Joseph Henderson of Anson County. Oldest brother, Job, had moved in 1771. He and his oldest son, Jacob, helped lay out a road from Edward's Store on the Yadkin River to the lower Lawyer's Springs. In 1774, brother John arrived and he helped on another road. Job was the overseer and John and Joseph Henderson were workers. Joseph Henderson was made constable that year. Job became a constable in 1777.

Anson County was much larger in the 1770's than it is today. In 1779, many citizens signed a petition to cut a new county out of Anson-Montgomery Counties. Signers included Job, John, Isaac, and Joseph Henderson. This places the family in Montgomery County, a rural area about 50 miles below Greensboro. Troy is the largest town. The next move to Wilkes County, GA, was made after 1782. All the brothers moved except Isaac. He stayed in Montgomery County where he died in 1810.

As these dates are thrown about, the reader must have realized that these were the times of the American Revolution. Did Joshua serve? He was 19 in 1776. He married in 1778. His nine children and their birth years were: 1. Edward, 1781; 2. Mary, 1784; 3. Joseph H., 1786; 4. Joshua Sanford, 1789; 5. Isabelle, 1792; 6. Noah, 1795; 7. Eunice, 1799; 8. Isaac, 1800; and 9. Nancy, 1802. Was Joshua, Sr., a lover and not a fighter? Job, John and Joseph were in the Revolutionary Army. Their names are in the NSDAR Patriot Index. Joshua has been recognized by the Sons of the American Revolution for Patriotic Service. (See "REVOLUTIONARY BOUNTY LAND GRANTS Awarded by State governments", by Lloyd DeWitt Bockstruck.)

6. John Callaway (Peter') children:
27. Edward b. 1711. Somerset Co., Md.; d. 1769. Onslow Co., NC; m. Elizabeth ?
 28. John b. by 1715; d. 1763. Onslow Co., NC; m. (1) ?; (2) Keziah Wilder. Onslow Co., NC.
 29. Isaac b. by 1724; d. 1768. Worcester Co., Md.; m. Mary ?
 30. Ebenezer b. 24 Aug 1727. Somerset Co., Md. (Stepney P.E. Parish Records, V.1. p. 8); d. 1789. Sussex Co., Del.; m. Leah ?
 31. Sarah b. 4 Oct 1729. Somerset Co., Md. (Stepney P.E. Parish Records, V.1. p. 8)
 32. Rachel. b. 28 Jan 1731/2. Somerset Co., Md. (Stepney P.E. Parish Records, V.1. p. 9); m. ? Lynch (Lynch)
 33. Catherine b. 26 Oct 1734. Somerset Co., Md. (Stepney P.E. Parish Records, V. 1, p. 9)
 34. Ann b. d.
 35. Mary b. d. m. William Kinney

John was born and died in Somerset County, Maryland. He married Mary Gould on 25 Dec 1709. The marriage is recorded in the Stepney P. E. Parish Records, Somerset County. Their children are shown to the left.

Old Somerset County, Maryland, was created in 1666, the eighth county in the state. It is at the southern tip of the Eastern Shore. Many Americans left Europe to escape religious persecution. Then, over here, they turned on their enemies and there was persecution in the other direction. Of all the colonies Maryland offered more freedom than the others.

People came from other states to populate Maryland. Few were emigrants from abroad. The colony had a reputation for being liberal. That may be the reason that Peter Callaway came from Virginia. As we shall see, Maryland was not quite as liberal as he had been lead to believe.

Although proof is needed, there are reasons to believe that our Peter Callaway came to Virginia about 1649. A William Pressley claimed to have transported to America a man to Northumberland County, VA, that could have been Peter. The county is just across Chesapeake Bay from where Peter was first reported in Maryland. In 1665, a James Jones claimed Peter Callaway as a headright in the Wicomico section of Maryland. (Patent Book, MD, Liber 9, Folio 99) Also, a list of "first settlers" between 1661 and 1666 included Peter in the Manokin area. George Johnson and his family were in the Annessex area. George Johnson was granted 300 acres of land which was given according to the size of his family. To prove his head count, he listed Elizabeth Johnson.

Most family histories give glowing accounts of every ancestor with many adjectives, adverbs and purple prose. Nothing is included that will reflect adversely upon anyone - just good, nothing bad. Well, some of these reports, printed in The Callaway Journal, Vol. IV, p. 14, may wrinkle your eyebrows!

"26 Mar 1667 - Elizabeth Johnson was called into court for having a bastard child and ordered to appear at the next court.

"26 Mar 1667 - The bonds of matrimony were recorded for Peter Callaway and Elizabeth Johnson.

"28 May 1667 - Elizabeth Johnson appeared again in court saying that the child's father was Peter Callaway, 'Peter owning same before the court'. Peter was fined 1000 lbs of tobacco and ordered to pay Elizabeth Johnson 100 lbs of tobacco. She was fined 500 lbs of tobacco.— (Note that 2 months after the marriage bond, she is still Elizabeth Johnson.)

"26 Nov 1667 - Reference to Peter Callaway and Elizabeth Johnson having been called into court for non-payment of fines and 'giving in security'. Peter appears in court 'but Tho: Ball appears for Elyzabeth Johnson and saith that she wandreth to and fro amongst the Indians and layeth in the Marshes. Ordered that Thomas Ball Fetch her in and deliver her to the next magistrate to give her correction for her idleness alsoe-to provice her a service so that she may work for her living.'"

A marriage bond was like a marriage license. There is question about whether Peter ever married Elizabeth Johnson. However, one thing is certain. His wife had the name Elizabeth - whether her last name was Johnson is the

question. Peter has record of many land transactions and the wife's name is given as Elizabeth.

Why is this information included with the story of our great ancestors like Joshua Sanford Callaway? After long thought, it was put here to teach a lesson to the present and future descendants, particularly the young people. **After over three hundred years, the misconduct of this man and woman is still recorded and read by Callaway descendants all over the world.** They had no modern communications or computers - just a few church records, that's all. In the year 2300, will our descendants find jail records, stories of deserters, and other reports of the general misconduct in today's "liberal" society? Will your name be in a book?

Peter Callaway became the owner of considerable land. His name is found in a number of documents. The children of Peter Callaway are listed to the right. This listing is from **The Callaway Journal** and is the result of careful research by members of the association.

A final question is very obvious. How could this pair produce such great descendants? The answer is simple. The men in each following generation married great women of good character.

As the Callaway chapter closes, we turn the clock back to the great preacher, Joshua Sanford Callaway and his wife, Elizabeth Shivers. Her family, the Shivers, will be the subject of the next chapter.

Children of Peter Callaway and Elizabeth

Peter Callaway b. d. by 1719, Somerset Co., Md.;
m. Elizabeth (Johnson?) (bonds of matrimony
published 26 Mar 1667, Somerset Co., Md.)

2nd Generation

2. Sarah Callaway b. 4 Nov 1676, Wicocomoco, Somerset Co., Md. (Somerset Record, Liber IKL, p. 35)
3. Ann Callaway b. 23 Jan 1678, Nanticoke, Somerset Co., Md. (Somerset Record, Liber IKL, p. 37)
4. Peter Callaway b. 15 April 1681, Somerset Co., Md. (Somerset Record, IKL, p. 37); d. 1738/9. Somerset Co., Md. (Wills, Liber 22 folios 133-4); m. Sarah?
5. William Callaway b. 14 Mar 1688/9, Somerset Co., Md. (Somerset Record, IKL, p. 39); d. 1758, Somerset Co., Md. (Wills, Liber 30 folios 523-4); m. (1) Given Caldwell. (2) Elizabeth?
6. John Callaway b. c1685; d. 1770, Somerset Co., Md. (Wills, Liber 37 folios 513-15); m. Mary Gould, 25 Dec 1709, Somerset Co., Md. (Stepney P.E. Parish Records, V.1, p. 8)
7. Jane Callaway b. d. ; m. Henry Speer, 1711, Somerset Co., Md. (Stepney P.E. Parish Records, V.1, p. 20)

Shivers

The second wife of Reverend Joshua Sanford Callaway was Elizabeth Shivers. The story of Rev. Callaway's life was included in the Callaway chapter. It was published by the Baptist Church in 1881. The story states that Elizabeth was the daughter of Willis Shivers.

The Shivers name was spelled many ways. The authority on the name and on the family is Marcus O. Shivers, B.S., Ph.G, M.D. He was born in Hazelehurst, MS, in 1877, lived most of his life in Mississippi, and he finally lived in Colorado Springs. He published Shivers Genealogy in 1950. Dr. Shivers believed that the family came from France, moving to Scotland when France owned most of that country. Some of them came to Virginia in the late 1600's. In 1681, a William Chivers received land from his guardian. Then, as William Shivers, the same year, he sold it in Surry County, VA. In 1693, a will mentioned two girls named Constance and Ann Shivers.

In 1724, Robert Shivers bought land. Then, in 1725, William Shivers of Nansemond County, VA, gave his son, Thomas Shivers, land on South Quay. The foregoing means something but proves nothing. The first evidence that applies to our family is the purchase by Jonas Shivers of 200 acres on 6 Dec 1742. The land was on the south side of Indian Swamp in Isle of Wight County, VA. Next, Jonas Shivers, Sr., and Patience, his wife, gave to Jonas Shivers, Jr., one half of the land on 21 Dec 1772. Later, Jonas Shivers, Jr., and his wife, Lilorya (as spelled on the deed), sold the 100 acres to William Shivers (his uncle or brother) of Isle of Wight County, VA, on 18 Oct 1781. This is the background of our early Shivers.

JONAS SHIVERS, SR.	married	PATIENCE DIXON
Before 1721-1777	Before 1746	Born before 1726

The parents of Jonas Shivers, Sr., are not known. He may have been an emigrant, or he may have descended from William of Nansemond County. This is another odd puzzle. Isle of Wight and Nansemond records are intact and very complete. There should be an answer. In Isle of Wight Deed Book 6, p. 205, Jonas gave Jonas, Jr., half of his land south of Indian Swamp as mentioned above. The land was described as being next to Thomas Dixon.

Jonas, Sr., was married to Patience Dixon, daughter of Thomas Dixon and his wife, Penelope. Thomas Dixon wrote his will in 1746. (Will Book 5, p.141, IOW) He named his wife and children. The children were: William, Thomas, Nicholas, Martha (wife of Thomas Pearse), Penelope (Wife of Joseph Bullock), Mourning (wife of Joshia Crudup), and **Patience (wife of Jonas Shevers)**.

When Jonas, Sr., died in 1777 without a will, an inventory was made. The long list, priced in pounds, shillings and pence, included every item he owned. Some of the things were: 3 beds, 1 table and looking glass, 6 pewter dishes, 3 basins, 10 plates, books, 1 meal tub sifter, 1 pr. stilliards, 1 iron kettle and soap, 1 gun, 2 raw hides, 2 yearlings, 2 cows, 1 apple mill, 1 pr. money scales and pocket book, 1 grubbing hoe, some cotton, 1 cooper's adze, and 1 1/2 bbl. rotten corn. The sum total came to 52 pounds, 6 shillings and 10 pence. He was not a wealthy man. His funeral took about ten pounds. When bills were all paid, the estate was 11 pounds, 13 shillings in debt to the administrator, William Shivers. Of course, it is well to remember that figures never lie, but liars figure! (Will Book 8, p. 460 and WB 10, p. 62, IOW) Note that the year is 1777, one year after the start of the American

Revolution. The father's life as a farmer did not encourage Jonas, Jr., to remain on the land. And, too there may have been other reasons to go west.

JONAS SHIVERS, JR. married LILORY GODWIN
15 Oct 1750-12 Nov 1826 c.1772 22 Dec 1750-28 Aug 1825

Jonas, Jr., was born in Isle of Wight County, Virginia. This is one of the most historic areas in America. The first English colonists that came to America lived at Jamestown. Jonas lived on the south side of Indian Swamp. When he became of age, probably, he married Liliory Godwin and his father gave him half of the farm - 100 acres - for a Christmas present. To marry into the famous Godwin family may have been the greatest thing he did in his entire life. The chapter on the Godwins will come later. They were one of the top families of Virginia, wealthy and influential. It is interesting that when the old ancestors married someone like Liliory, there are documents everywhere to tell her name. But, when they marry someone like Lucretia Gilmore or one of the ladies with no known last name, the search becomes futile.

In Isle of Wight County, the first child of Jonas and Liliory was James Adolphus Shivers. Our ancestor, Willis, sometimes called Willie Shivers was born in '76, the year of the Revolution. Their other children were Barnaby, William and Thomas.

As was said earlier, Jonas, Jr. had little reason to stay in Virginia. The family packed out for North Carolina in 1778. Edgecomb County, NC, is northwest of Greenville, a little over a hundred miles from where the Shivers lived in Virginia. The new land was farming country. Here, Jonas and Liliory bought land on the south bank of Fishing Creek on Long Branch on the north side of White Oak Swamp. A schedule of buys and sales will spare the reader some tedious details.

22 Nov 1779	bought	300 acres	2700 pounds
21 Feb 1783	sold	100 acres	100 silver dollars
2 Feb 1784	bought	130 acres	app. 134 pounds
5 Aug 1786	bought	73 acres	60 pounds
16 Jan 1788	sold	73 acres	60 pounds
21 Oct 1788	sold	330 acres	370 pounds

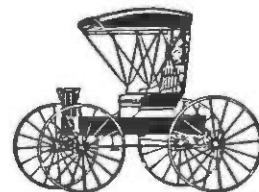
One does not have to be a genius to wonder about his business ability. The act that may have saved him was that in October of 1781, he sold his Uncle William Shivers, back in Virginia, the 100 acres given to him by his father. The selling price was 3000 pounds. Actually, it's unfair to evaluate these transactions because currency fluctuated in value greatly in those war days. The term "not worth a continental" had meaning. On the other hand, Jonas was dealing in pounds and silver dollars, not continental dollars. The pounds may have been local state pounds, not English pounds. So, all the acres were sold and the Shivers were off to Georgia in 1790, long after the war was over.

The family settled in Greene County, Georgia, probably in the part that became Hancock County. Jonas was a landowner in Capt. Wm Rouborn's District in the 1793 Tax Digest. In the 1795 Tax Digest, they are shown in Hancock County. Today, Hancock County shows all the signs of poverty. Sparta is the county seat. The old courthouse stands in a huddle of unpainted houses. The doors of the courthouse are gone and the first floor is a dance hall. County business is conducted on the second floor and what records remain are there. Things are a lot better in Warren County, GA, the last home of the Jonas Shivers family.

The Warren County tax returns show Jonas in 1818 in Capt. Hubert's District. He has 29 slaves and 299 acres of land in both Warren and Hancock Counties.

His land is on the Ogeechee River. Listed near him are James Shivers and Thomas W. Shivers. Jonas is taxed for owning "two Pleasure Wheels". Evidently, Thomas Shivers sells them. A guess would be that they are sporty buggies! (The sports car of those days).

Jonas Shivers wrote a long will before he died. (Warren County Will Book 1810-29, pp. 143-6) It has four pages of very clear handwriting signed by Jonas with an "X". A copy is on file and the original is in the Warren County Courthouse. The will was made on 6 Sep 1825 and probated 4 Dec 1826. He left various amounts of money, property or slaves to sons Barnaby, Willis, William, Thomas, and most of all to James, the Executor.



Then, he leaves to his grandchildren (not all of them) Jonas Shivers (son of Barnaby), Martha Hibler (daughter of William Shivers), Lilly Ann, Nancy (daughter of Willis Shivers), George W.C. (son of Willis), and Obediah (son of Willis). He mentions no daughters. He left Willis, our ancestor, "I give and bequeath unto my son Willis Shivers one hundred dollars.". He mentioned several of the children of Willis, but did not mention our ancestor, daughter of Willis, Elizabeth Shivers. Why? Maybe it was because she did not need anything. She was a young widow who was well provided for by her former husband. The old hand written will in the courthouse shows that someone has made a few small changes to it over the years for some reason. No attempt was made to disguise the different handwriting.

A book, Memoirs of Georgia, Vol. I, gives some insight into the lives of Jonas and Liliory. The item is about Mark M. Shivers, a grandson. The story says, "His—paternal grandfather—was Jonas Shivers, a native of Virginia. He moved the family to Georgia and settled at what is now known as Mayfield, on the Ogeechee river in Warren County. He was one of the pioneer settlers of the county, and for years followed planting and milling. He was quite a prominent citizen in his day and built the beautiful home of Mayfield. He took no active interest in politics, though voting the Whig ticket, and gave his whole time to his extensive milling and farm interests. He died well up in his years. He was the father of five sons." Note that he is given credit for no daughters.

When Jonas died, his obituary was in the Macon Telegraph, 12 Dec 1826. Along with other information, it read, "He was a native of Virginia and was one of those who bore arms for our courageous country in the Revolution." Then, a lot of descendants have taken it from there. In Roster of Revolutionary Soldiers in Georgia, Vol. III, p. 205, by Mrs. Howard H. McCall, VP General NSDAR, 1922-6, it reads, "Jonas Shivers,—Served as private, Ga. Line. Received grant of land in Ga., for his services. " and names his children, five boys, no girls. Historical Collections of Georgia, by White, 1855, p. 675, says, "Jonas Shivers died on the 12th of November, 1826, aged 77, a soldier of the Revolution." Georgia's Roster of the Revolution, compiled by the Georgia Archives under the authority of the Georgia Legislature, lists on page 428, "Slivers, Jonas". It's spelled wrong, but it's our Jonas. A very competent professional genealogist, Mrs Joan H. Young, of Marietta, Georgia, checked the land grant to Jonas. It was of the "head count" variety that any man could get and had nothing to do with military service. All the survey papers are on file. Jonas never came to Georgia until long after the war, so he was not in the "Georgia line". He may have done some sort of service in Virginia or North Carolina between all the babies and land transactions that have been shown here, but a careful search has been made of U.S. Archives,

state and county records and no evidence of military service has been found. In fairness to Jonas, we do not know whether he ever said that he had been a soldier. On the other hand, another genealogist may find records of service and prove this writer to be wrong. Let us hope that proof of his service is found.

WILLIS SHIVERS married ELIZABETH COWAN
1776-1833 c. 1797 c.1781-after 1833

Willis was born in Isle of Wight County, Virginia. He moved with his parents to Edgecombe County, NC, and on to Hancock County, Georgia, which would be his home.

At this point, a summary paragraph is appropriate. The reader may wonder about why there has been so much beating around the bush with the Shivers line. Why not tell who married whom and name the children? The family papers had the line in true form. Well, a very important fact had to be proved. It is that Elizabeth Shivers Smith Callaway was the daughter of Willis Shivers. Of course, the Baptist Church published the fact over a hundred years ago (see the life story of Rev. Joshua Sanford Callaway in the Callaway chapter) when that writer knew the ones concerned. But, several sources, the Historical Collections of the Joseph Habersham Chapter, DAR, Vol. I, p. 85, for one, says that Elizabeth was the daughter of Jonas Shivers, Jr., who married Liliory Godwin. In the first place, Jonas had sons, not daughters. But, to put the matter to rest and to learn more about Willis, Mrs. Joan Young, mentioned earlier, was retained to research this one area in the Georgia Archives. This delightful lady became interested in the project and almost all of her work was done without compensation as we became friends through the interaction. Some readers might pass over the details in her report, but most will be fascinated with the extent of the research possible and the mental concentration exerted by this lady to solve family research puzzles. Parts of her reports are reproduced without edit, because they have a charm that is unique. The reports are at the end of this chapter, so details about Willis will not be repeated.

Willis Shivers married Elizabeth Cowan. She was the daughter of Captain George Cowan, an officer during the American Revolution. His lineage and service has been proved to and approved by the National Society of the Sons of the American Revolution. A separate chapter will cover the Cowan family and his service. Elizabeth's sister, Rachel Cowan, married a brother of Willis, Barnaby Shivers.

Willis Shivers served as a Captain in the War of 1812. His papers from the U.S. Archives are below:

S	3 (Fov's)	Gn. Militia.	S	3 (Fov's)	Gn. Militia.	S	3 (Fov's)	Gn. Militia.
<i>Willis Shivers</i> Capt. { Captain Willis Shivers' Company, 3 Reg't Georgia State Troops. (War of 1812.) Appears on Company Muster Roll for <i>1 To Feb 28, 1815</i> Roll dated <i>Feb 28, 1815</i> Time of entering service <i>Sept. 26, 1814</i> Present or absent <i>Present</i> Remarks: <i>Chick P.</i>			<i>Willis Shivers</i> Capt. { Capt. Willis Shivers' Co., 3 Reg't Georgia State Troops. (War of 1812.) Appears on Company Muster Roll for <i>Sept 26 to Dec 20, 1814</i> Roll dated <i>Dec 20, 1814</i> Commencement of service <i>Sept 26, 1814</i> Present or absent <i>Present</i> For what time engaged, <i>6 Mo.</i> Remarks:			<i>Willis Shivers</i> Capt. { Capt. Willis Shivers' Co. of Geor- gia Drafted Militia in Reg't com- manded by Col. Ignatius A. Few. (War of 1812.) Appears on Company Muster Roll for <i>From Sept 23, 1814</i> Roll dated <i>Camp Jackson Sept 24, 1814</i> Time of entering service <i>Sept 23, 1814</i> For what time engaged, <i>6 mo.</i> Present or absent <i>Present</i> Remarks:		

1263	
Shivers, Willis	
3 Regiment (Few's), Georgia Militia. (War of 1812.)	
Captain	Captain
CARD NUMBERS.	
1. 3-846356	R
2. 4587	S
3. 8479	N
4.	S
5.	S
6.	S

It is obvious that Willis was not a well man during his service. Mrs. Young brought out the evidence that he gradually sold out his holdings and was eventually lost from the records. He gave us his wife, Elizabeth Cowan and his daughter, Elizabeth Shivers, who married John Carraway Smith on 3 Apr 1816 in Hancock County. They lived in Jones Co., GA. She had two sons, Jonas Shivers Smith and Columbus Washington Smith before her husband died 10 Mar 1823. His long will left the estate to Elizabeth, the two boys and the unborn child, who was named after his father. Later, Elizabeth married Reverend Joshua Sanford Callaway and her children became part of his family.

Camp Covington Feb. 3rd 1815

Dear Sir

In consequence of the low state of my health I would wish to have leave of absence for fifteen days, as it is my power to do the service any benefit by remaining in camp the request would not be made

Yours obt. Servant
Willis Shivers
Captain

Camp Covington Feb. 4th 1815

Sir

I have the honor to enclose you a letter addressed to me by one of the Captains under my command, petitioning for a furlough for fifteen days, he has been indisposed for some time, and his health would probably be reestablished sooner with more certainty by a short absence from camp, I know of no objections, except those which are general, to the effect of the example, and loss of service

I am Sir very respectfully
your obt. Servant

Colonel 3rd Regt. S. I.

His Excellency
Major Genl. Tho. Pinckney
Camp Covington

Now, these are the excellent reports of Mrs Joan H. Young:

Joan H. Young
409 Jewell Mill Drive
Marietta, Georgia 30067
Genealogical Research
February 16, 1982

SHIVERS

Jonas Shivers is shown on the 1795 Tax Digest of Hancock County and also on the TD is Barnaby Shivers and George Cowins. This now brings us to your Willis Shivers!

It is stated in, Shivers Genealogy, that Barnaby Shivers, son of Jonas, was born July 29, 1775 so he was just of age (21) when the 1795 Hancock Co., Ga., Tax Digest was made. The fact that Willis Shivers is not shown on this TD, tells us that he was not a Land Owner in 1795 and that he had not reached the age of 21 when he had to pay a Poll Tax. However, by 1803, when he registered for the 1805 Land Lottery, he had married and, as will be developed later if he was the father of Elizabeth, (and I truly believe that he was), had at least one child.

You asked for proof that Willis Shivers married Elizabeth Cowan. I cannot give you the proof at this time (would have to go into the Annual Returns of the Estate of George Cowan/Cowin/Cowen) that her name was "Elizabeth" but I did find the proof that Willis Shivers married a daughter of Mary and George Cowen.

Hancock County, Georgia, Deed Book "L", 1814-1818. Dr. 106, Box 52.

Page 318. Ga. Hancock Co. ...that I, Mary Cowen, of Co. and State aforesaid... in consideration of the natural love and affection which I have and bear unto my beloved sons-in-law Willis Shivers and Barnaby Shivers of same County and State, have given, granted ...as tenants in common and not as joint tenants....all my lands, goods, chattels.....9 October 1816. /s/ Mary Cowin. Wit: John C. Smith, Drury Reese. Sworn to by John C. Smith in Hancock County on 31 Oct. 1816. Rec. 29 Nov. 1816. -- then follows --

page 319. Ga. Hancock Co....that we Willis Shivers and Barnaby Shivers are jointly and severally held and firmly bound unto Mary Cowen in the penal sum of \$5000....to furnish the sd. Mary Cowen with all the necessaries of life. /s/ Willis Shivers, Barnaby Shivers. Wit: Stephen Clements, John C. Smith, Drury Reese. Rec. 29 Nov. 1816. -- then follows - same page:

Ga. Hancock Co....that I, Willis Shivers of Hancock County...bound unto Barnaby Shivers of same...\$5000...condition...the above bound Willis and the sd. Barnaby are heirs and distributees in right of their wives to the estate both real and personal of George Cowin, decd., and are about to make a mutual division.... /s/ Willis Shivers. Wit: Oliver Skinner, Geo. Reves, JIC. Rec. 29 Nov. 1816.

then immediately follows, page 320, same statement as above but in the name of Barnaby Shivers.

then follows - same page 320....Willis Shivers...for \$1.00 relinquishes to Barnaby Shivers all interest and claim to certain slaves (names them) and their children.../s/ 30 Oct. 1816.

then follows on page 321, Barnaby, for \$1.00, relinquishes claims to certain slaves to Willis.

All of this goes on through page 323 - land is involved and it appears that Willis and Barnaby are dividing up the Cowen property. Would imagine this was their way of getting around the stipulation that they were "tenants in common" as set out in the deed from Mary Cowen.

I checked the Hancock County, Georgia, Deed Index, Grantor and Grantees, Book "A", 1794-1838, Dr. 190, Box 72, and picked up many, many transactions under the surname 'Shivers'. I did NOT attempt to check out all of them - picked the ones that I thought might be of importance/interest at this time. Many items under 'Willis Shivers' - did not read them all but think that the ones in Hancock County, Ga., Deed Book "M", 1818-1823, Dr. 106, Box 52, will be of interest:

Page 120. 4 Jan. 1819. Willis Shivers of Hancock County to John C. Smith of Jones County...for \$1000...land in Hancock on waters of Shoulderbone...252 3/4 ac. /s/ Willis Shivers. Wit: Hartwell Gary, Joel ???, JP.

Page 206. 9 Nov. 1819. Willis Shivers to Levin Ellis...both of Hancock Co.....

for \$3000...land in Hancock on waters of Little Ogeehee (?) and Beaverdam...527 ac. /s/ Willis Shivers. Wit: James H. Jones, Thos. Foster, JP. Rec. 29 Nov. 1819.

then follows on same page 206 and 207 - Ga. Hancock Co. 9 Nov. 1819. Levin Ellis to Willis Shivers...both of Hancock...for \$4000...land in Hancock...224 ac. except 2 ac. heretofore sold to Nicholas Childers...the land whereon sd. Ellis now lives. /s/ Leven (x) Ellis. Wit: James H. Jones, Thos. Foster, JP. Rec. 29 Nov. 1819.

Page 344. I, Willis Shivers, of Hancock County....for \$500...to John L. Bailey and John Reese of Sparta....certain negro slave heretofore in my possession... name of Nelly. 19 June 1820. /s/ Willis Shivers. Wit: Jesse W. Gregg, D. Lawson, Rec. 18 Sept. 1820. then follows --

Ga. Hancock Co. I, Willis Shivers, of Hancock Co....for \$700...pd by Bailey and Reese....negro slave called Peter, yoke of oxen and ox cart, bay mare and black gelding. 19 June 1820. (same Wit. as above.)

Page 375. Ga. Hancock Co. I, Willis Shivers....of Hancock Co....for \$500.....to John L. Bailey and John Reese of Sparta in sd. County, Merchants....corn now growing on the plantation in my possession and under my cultivation near the sd. Village of Sparta...70 ac....and all the cotton now growing on sd. plantation...45 ac..... (much in here - items cattle, etc. but very hard to read)....bedsteads and bedding....5 tables.....now in the house in which I dwell. 19 June 1820. /s/ Willis Shivers. Wit: Jesse W. Gregg, D. Lawson. Sworn to by Gregg in Hancock County on 30 Oct. 1820. Rec. 29 Jan. 1821.

This is the last transaction I noted as listed in Hancock Co., Ga., Deed Index, Book "A", which goes to 1838. I did NOT check the later. Book "B", Deed Index.

It appears that Willis is selling out - and, of course, the big question is, "where did he go?" He did not leave a recorded Will in the State of Georgia as per Ted Brooke's, "Georgia Wills, 1733-1860". I checked Hancock County, Ga., Index to Estate Records, 1793-1900, Dr. 108, Box 16, and did NOT find Willis Shivers listed.

I checked the Estate of Jonas Shivers, Warren Co., Ga., Annual Returns, 1825-1848. Dr. 104, Box 36. Page 88 shows that the slave, "Dorcas", left to Nancy Shivers, daughter of Willis Shivers, was signed for 12 Sept. 1827 by James Smith, husband of Nancy G. Smith. (Note: Looks like Elizabeth and Nancy might have married brothers.) Also noted, page 90, that Thomas W. Shivers signed for the negro girl, "Ann", left to his daughter, Lilly Ann Shivers.

I just do not believe that Elizabeth Shivers, who married John C. Smith in Hancock County, 3 April 1816, was the daughter of Jonas Shivers. As John C. Smith died in Jones County, Ga., in 1823, and as Joshua S. Calloway's first wife did not die until 1826, Elizabeth Shivers Smith was a young widow when Jonas Shivers made his Will on 6 Sept. 1825. I just cannot believe that, as rich as Jonas was, he left his young, widowed daughter out of his LW&T. Would imagine that it was thought that Elizabeth was the daughter of Jonas because she named her first child Jonas Shivers Smith. Undoubtedly named for "Grandpa" - maybe hoping for an inheritance!!

1820 Census - Jones Co., Ga. Capt. Jefferson's Dist.

Page 143.

		Males	Females	
<u>John C. Smith</u>	under 10	1		Jonas
	16-26		2	Elizabeth & _____
	26-45	1		John
	over 45	1		
<u>Slaves</u>	under 10	5	6	
	14-26	2	1	
	26-45		1	
	over 45	1	1	

1830 Census - Henry Co., Ga.

Page 209.

		Males	Females	
<u>Joshua S. Calloway</u>	under 5	2	1	
	5-10	1	1	
	10-15	2	1	
	15-20	2		
	30-40		1	Elizabeth
	40-50	1		

Comparing the two above Federal Census Schedules, I would guess that Elizabeth was probably born about 1798 - would then be 22 in 1820 and 32 in 1830. Would then seem that Willis Shivers was married about 1797 and was probably right at 21.

Joan M. Young
409 Terrell Mill Drive
Marietta, Georgia 30067
Genealogical Research
April 12, 1982

SHIVERS

The object of this search was to prove beyond any doubt whatsoever that Elizabeth Shivers Smith Callaway was the daughter of Willis Shivers, proven son of Jonas Shivers.

I am sure that you have noticed the 10 (ten) pages of copy, which are enclosed, so will comment on this first. And - if this doesn't convince you that Willis was 'Grandpa', I will have to put you at the top of the list of "Unconvincables"! I believe that this record/account compiled by Kate Harman Orme, (Mrs. A. J.), of Atlanta, Georgia, in 1898, and contributed to the Georgia Dept. of Archives and History in 1969, would be accepted as fact/proof on your line. Mrs. Orme appears to know the family quite well as evidenced by her comments on not only the Shivers, but also on the Milners and Godwins. I made copies for you on the new (but not too good) self-service copier in the Microfilm Department at the Georgia Archives - these are 25¢ a page and the ones made by the Archives are \$1.00 a page with a long wait. This record is located in Microfilm Drawer 199, Box 46 - under Callaway, Joshua S., Family Records. Will give you some that I copied from the film itself so that you can follow the copies with ease!

Joshua S. Callaway married Mary (Polly) Milner daughter of
Pitt Milner and A ?? Holmes Mary Milner Callaway
died 1 Sept. 1826 - then Joshua S. Callaway married Elizabeth
Smith (nee Shiver) the widow of John Carraway Smith. She was
the daughter of Willis Shivers & Cowan. Willis
Shivers and Pitt Milner (who married A ?? Holmes were 1st
cousins. Their mothers were sisters both being Godwins. Elizabeth
Godwin was Pitt Milner's mother. Godwin was
Willis Shivers' mother. Willis, Jonas, and Bar naby were three
brothers. So, Joshua S. Callaway married two 2nd cousins.

Speaking of copies, I will also enclose a copy of pages 496 and 497 from "Memoirs of Georgia", Vol. I, pub. 1895 by the Southern Historical Association. This gives a little information about the Cowan family that I thought might be of interest.

Before finding the aforecited 'goodie' written by Mrs. Orme, I did considerable work on the family and came up with some interesting (?) data.

You wondered if I had found the right Joshua S. Callaway in the 1830 Census - I sent you the reading for the man from the 1830 of Henry County, Georgia. Your doubt stemmed from the fact that the name was listed as Joshua L. Callaway in the 1830 Index - many, many times an "S" was read as an "L" and that was the case this time. I was quite sure this was the correct Joshua from the number of children in his Household. However, to prove it to you, I checked out the "Poor School List" - these lists contain the names of those attending what was actually the Public Schools - the State reimbursed the County so accurate lists were kept of the students.

Poor School List - Henry County, Ga. 1829. Microfilm Drawer 260, Box 62.

Jonas Smith - age 12. (Born 1817)
Columbus Smith - age 9. (Born 1820)

ibid. 1831. Shows the two Smith children - no ages given.
ibid. 1832. They are not shown on this list.

I went back and read the LW&T of John C. Smith hoping to pick up some clues. This Will is in Jones County, Ga., Will Book B, page 110 - Microfilm Dr. 75, Box 65. Contains some interesting items --- his wife, Elizabeth, was pregnant ...his two children, Jonas Shivers Smith and Columbus Washington Smith..... if Elizabeth remarried she was to receive a child's part of the Estate....all of the negroes to be sold....the Executors, Brother Ezekiel F. Smith, and William Shivers, were to be Guardian's of the children....s/ 9 March 1823 and recorded 10 March 1823.

(Note: I had checked for Guardian Bonds - Jones County, Ga., 1821-1829, Dr. 75, Box 68 - now I know why I didn't find them!)

I had it in my head that I might do it for you through Slaves. I checked Microfilm Dr. 154, Box 62, Jones Co., Ga., Index to Slave Deeds, 1791-1864, but did not find a recorded Slave Deed that would help us. But then, there was no law that said a Deed had to be recorded.

On 17 March 1823, an Inventory was made of the Estate of John C. Smith. Jones Co., Ga., Inventories, Appraisements, Sales and Returns, Book "D", 1820-1824. Microfilm Drawer 75, Box 72.

Page 94. Slaves belonging to the Estate of John C. Smith -- man Dick, female Judy, man Sep, man Elish, boy Henry, woman Susannah and child Bob, woman Jenny and child, Jacob, girl Dorcas, girl Harriot, boy Oslon, boy Miles, girl Sucky, girl Rose, girl Lucy, girl Mary, boy Jim, boy Gad. Value estimated at \$6844.75.

I went back to Hancock Co., Ga., Deed Book "L", 1814-1818, page 321. Dr.(106,Box 52.)

Ga. Hancock County. Barnaby Shivers of Hancock to Willis Shivers...for \$1.00.. all interest and claim to the following negroes -- F ?? and her children, Nelly, Lucinda, Lewis, Henry, Jim, Rose and Drury(?). 30 Oct. 1816. (Note: These were the Cowan slaves that Barnaby and Willis were dividing - see my report 2-16-82.)

Just too many similar names for it to be coincidence that they were not the ones owned by Willis Shivers and then sold or passed on in some way to John C. Smith and his wife, Elizabeth Shivers Smith.

On page 96 of the above cited Jones Co., Ga., Inventory, etc. of the Estate of John C. Smith --

Note #17. On Willis Shivers for \$210 due one day after date bearing date of 21 April 1817.

That is all I ever found on this - read Annual Returns until I was about cross-eyed and not another reference to Willis Shivers. Wonder if maybe he gave up some of his slaves in payment of the note and it was just never recorded by John C. Smith???

I read Jones Co., Ga., Annual Returns for quite a few years and picked up some interesting things for you:

1830. (Book "I", 1828-1835. Dr. 186, Box 68.) Estate of John C. Smith.

Joshua S. Callaway, Adm., with his wife.... the children were - Jonas S. Smith, Columbus W. Smith and John C. Smith - now we know that the unborn child was named for his Daddy!

1831. Various items including the Hire of the Negroes belonging to the children.

1832. Joshua Callaway, Adm., with the Will Annexed - (shows us Elizabeth had died). Showed hire of the slaves, board for Jonas with Joshua AND -

Columbus W. and John C. boarded with their grandfather the balance of the year 1832.

Just about flipped on this item - was it 'Grandpa Smith' or 'Grandpa Shivers'??? Seemed logical to me that the little boys would go visit 'Grandpa Shivers' after their mother's death - oh, my head was spinning and I was muttering, "Where are you, Willis??"

Just the usual Annual Return until I hit the year 1834. (Dr. 75, Box 73)

Ret. of Joshau S. Callaway, Adm., with the Will Annexed:

Jonas S. Smith - Board furnished.	\$50.00
Columbus W. Smith, minor - Pd. <u>George W. Shivers</u>	\$91.00
John C. Smith, minor - Pd. <u>George W. Shivers</u>	\$81.00

Notes: How about that - here they are staying with 'Uncle George'!! All of this was before I located Mrs. Orme's papers and I was building a preponderance of evidence for you!

Read the Annual Returns through 1839 and nothing of interest - then lost them.

I couldn't get it out of my head that the two little boys, Columbus W. and John C. Smith were with Willis Shivers in 1832 - so, I went back to the Hancock County, Ga., records and tackled the Tax Digests. (Microfilm Dr. 122, Box 16.)

1832. 111th District. Page 15.

Obidiah J. Shivers. 1 slave. 130 ac. in Hancock Co. on Ogee.

Willis Shivers - 3 slaves. (No land.)

1833. 111th District.

Obidiah J. Shivers - same as above.

Willis Shivers. No slaves. 40 ac. of land #715 in 3rd District.

Read through 1834 and 1835 and no sign of Obidiah or Willis.

The 40 ac. of land, #715, in 3rd District, that Willis Shivers owned as per the 1833 Hancock Co., Ga., Tax Digest, spelled Gold Lottery to me - 40 ac. lots were given in that Lottery. Sure 'nuff --

1832 Gold Lottery

Willis Shivers, 111 Dist., Hancock County, drew Lot #715, 3rd Dist., 1st Section.

The 3rd District, 1st Section, Cherokee County at the time of the Lottery, immediately became Forsyth County after the Lottery. There is no General Index to Deeds for the earlier years of Forsyth County. IF Forsyth County Deed Books "A" and "B" are extant, they are not on Microfilm at the Georgia Archives. I checked the Grantor Index in the front of the following Forsyth County, Georgia, Deed Books:

Dr. 170, Box 43.	Deed Books C-D, 1835-1840.	No Shivers.
Dr. 170, Box 44.	" " E-F, 1838, 1841.	No Shivers.
Dr. 170, Box 45.	" " G-H, 1841-1848.	No Shivers.
Dr. 170, Box 46.	" " I-J, 1848-1852.	No Shivers.

Was beginning to feel that I was looking for a needle in a hay stack so quit at this point. In 1857, Forsyth gave some land to Milton County and looking at my maps, it is possible that Willis' land went into Milton County - could be a Deed that was recorded there, or even one recorded later in Forsyth, but wonder if we would ever find it? And, if we found it, about all we would learn is when Willis died - would guess that that, even if Willis died owning the 40 ac., the one appointed Administrator would eat up whatever money was paid for the sale of the land and we still wouldn't know much more.

Oh yes - one more thing --- I have a few records from the Cuyler Collection at the Univ. of Georgia - records not at the Georgia Archives. Among these records is an 1834 State Census of Forsyth County, Georgia -- no Shivers.

The help given to this family history by Joan Young is appreciated greatly.

The next chapter will be devoted to the Cowan ancestors of the wife of Willis Shivers.

Cowan

The Cowan branch of the Oliver family is particularly interesting for several reasons. For one thing, this is a rare situation because we pick up the early Cowans north of the Mason and Dixon line! Also, the Oliver family, besides being southern, is almost entirely of English extraction. The Cowans are absolutely Scottish. There is ample opportunity for further research on this clan. They seem to be visible wherever they lived, with their names on all sorts of documents. Unfortunately, their first names were common ones - like William, John, James, and Mary. This makes the sorting of the many children a problem.

The first of our Cowans found, so far, is William. We think that he may have been born in Scotland, but we know that he was in Lancaster County, Pennsylvania, in 1757. He was a Scot. There was constant turmoil in Scotland. Natural fighters, they were at war most of the time for any reason whatever - religion, power, land, family feuds, or for no reason at all. So-called "rebels" were shipped to America by the boat load at five pounds a head during the early 1700's. Many of them were Cowans. Pennsylvania was civilized along the Atlantic coast, but Lancaster County was the frontier. Many of the early settlers in Pennsylvania would stay for a while, then leave for warmer homes and better land in the south.

William Cowan was on the Lancaster County, PA, tax list in 1757. He lived in the Sadsbury township. In 1758, he was given a land grant in Rowan County, North Carolina. Some of his children and other kin had moved out ahead of him. In Abstracts of Deeds, Rowan County, NC, 1753-85, by Linn, p. 110, there is a complicated land deal. A John Cowan and his wife, Elizabeth, bought 640 acres of land on 5 Feb 1753. (7:336) Then, John sold the 640 acres to our ancestor, George Cowan, on 9 Mar 1767. (6:534,535) The next day, John's wife, Elizabeth sold William Cowan, Jr., one third dower rights. This sale is not explained clearly, but has to refer to property in the same area. Later, 23 Jun 1770, William and Ann Cowan, Jr., sold his father, William Cowan, Sr., 320 acres next to George Cowan on Second Creek. (7:336) The transactions are on record, but are less than clear. However, the important information is that there was a father and son named William with George next to them. Also, there was a Cowan named John, and a couple of witnesses named James and Benjamin. Also, it shows that George lived on Second Creek.

William Cowan died in 1791. His will made in Rowan County named Jane, William, Sarah, Isaac, our ancestor George, and Benjamin. (An Abstract of N.C. Wills, Olds, p. 271.)

GEORGE COWAN	married	MARY PORTER
c. 1729-1816	c. 1780	1763-1855

George Cowan was one busy ancestor. Probably, he was born in Lancaster County, Pennsylvania, but he may have been born in Scotland. References say that he was of "Scottish ancestry". His birth year is estimated from the fact that "At a Council held at the Council Chamber in New Bern the 7th day of April 1750" he went before the "Governour" of the colony of North Carolina with a petition for "Warrants for Land". (The Colonial Records of NC, Saunders, Vol. IV, pp. 1039 & 1040) You can bet that he was exactly 21 years old, of age. He died in 1819, so if he were older than 21 in 1750, he would have lived more than 90 years - unlikely.

On 23 April 1762, George was given a Power of Attorney in Rowan County. It referred to George as "of the Province of Pennsylvania". This supports his being the George in William's will along with the evidence that he lived next to William's NC property. The John Cowan in the deeds may be a brother of father William Cowan, Sr. The Cowan clan seems to have moved together and the kin lived near each other.

Court papers show George Cowan on jury duty in 1760 and serving as a constable in 1766. In 1772, the court appointed him as a Captain in the North Carolina Militia. (Abstracts of the Minutes of the Court of Pleas and Quarter Sessions, Rowan County, NC, 1763-4, Linn, Vol. II, p.141.)

Please note that this date is several years before the American Revolution and remember the earlier statement about the warlike Scots! Well, the story builds concerning our patriot. Before the American Revolution, the Committees of Safety were formed to organize an army to fight the King of England. (Scots always fought the English!) The Colonial Records of North Carolina, by NC Secretary of State Saunders, published in 1890, Vol. X, pp. 316-319, reports "Proceedings of the Safety Committee in Rowan County, Friday 10th November 1775." Included is a list of Captains with tax accounts. Captain Cowan has "Taxables in Cash" for 100 men of 2 pounds 10 shillings.

There is no doubt, whatever, about his service in the Revolution. The State Records of NC, by Walter Clark, Chief Justice of the NC Supreme Court, Vol. XXII, p. 159, tells of another man who served 10 months "with Captain Cowan and Lt. George Hammond, in Colonel Hammond's Regiment, which marched from Lincoln, N.C., to Augusta, GA, thence into S.C. joining the army of General Greene, from thence to Eutaw Springs and was in the battle in 1781 (Sept. 6), then to White Hall, S.C."

In Roster of S.C. Patriots in the American Revolution, by B.G. Moss, p. 206, there is a listing for: "Cowan, George - He served as a captain under Lt. Col. Samuel Hammond and was wounded in the battle at Eutaw Springs. Gibbes, Doc., History; A.A. 1539; M3."

Georgia's Roster of the Revolution was compiled under the authority of the Legislature by the State Historian, L.L. Knight, p. 348. George Cowan is listed for service and in the lottery of 1827 in Jackson County, Georgia. He had seen Georgia in service and now he owned land in Jackson County. The service of George Cowan and the lineage to this writer has been proved to and approved by the National Society of the Sons of the American Revolution. A copy of the certificate is on the next page.

During the war, George met a young Scottish lassie in Salisbury, North Carolina. (Notice that this is the town that listed William for taxes. The Sadsbury township was a spelling variation.) The lady was Mary Porter, who had come to America with her family from Scotland. George was a Presbyterian and so was Mary. Although he was thirty years older than Mary, they were married. She lived until 31 Mar 1855, ninety-two years. The Milner Bible, quoted earlier, under births, gives "Rachel Cowan, daughter of George Cowan and Mary, his wife, was born 15 Sept. 1780 in N.C." In later years, Rachel would marry Barnaby Shivers. Rachel's sister, our ancestor, Elizabeth Cowan, was born about one year later, and she married our ancestor, Willis Shivers. (Memoirs of Georgia, The Southern Historical Asso., Vol. I, pp. 496-497)

The National Society
of the
Sons of the American Revolution



Supplemental Ancestor Certificate

Albert Caswell Metts, Jr

National No. 118709

Descendant of

Captain George Cowan



Approved: 26 April 1984

Walter W. Boyer
President General

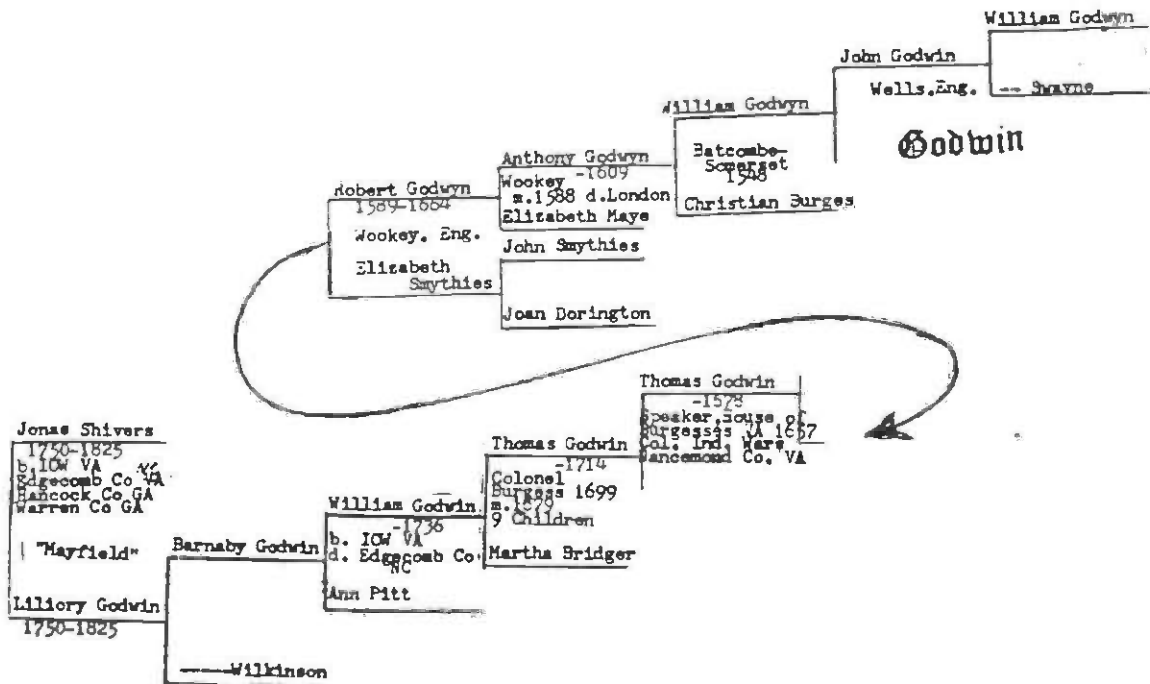
On 27 Oct 1784, George Cowan sold his 320 acres on Second Creek in Rowan County, NC, to Hugh McConaughy for 350 pounds. In 1785, he was ready to move to Georgia. He took his family to Jackson County, Georgia, where he was recorded as overseer on a road project in the upper district in 1788. In 1806, he had two draws in the land lottery of the Ocmulgee Indian lands. When the land was taken from the Indians, they let the settlers draw lots for the farms. Single persons could draw one time, family men had two chances. The lottery took place in Hancock County. That county has come under discussion earlier in this book. The last document in the file shows George back in Jackson County in 1812 when he was ordered by the court to help divide an estate. He died in 1816 in Jackson County. His daughter, Elizabeth, must have met her husband in Hancock County. Their story was told in the chapter about the Shivers.

George Cowan was an ancestor that we can point to with pride. He was a brave patriot and an outstanding example of the American settler.

The next chapter will be about the Godwins. Jonas Shivers married Liliory Godwin (see the Oliver chart). The Godwins were aristocrats.

Godwin

When Jonas Shivers married Liliory Godwin, he must have known that she came from a great family. Many family legends were passed down before research began and the stories are true, basically. The Godwin name is as old as England. Only ten generations are shown on the Oliver chart. They are proved as shown on the segment of the chart shown below.



But, once upon a time long before that, the name was famous. When English history came down by word of mouth or song, before the church scribes put their version on parchment, the crown of England was passed around like a basketball. Rarely did a king rule for many years and leave the kingdom to his son. When King Harold Harefoot seized the throne, he was the disinherited and illegitimate half-brother of the true king, Harthacanute. King Harold Harefoot's chief supporter was the powerful Godwin, Earl of Wessex. Harold was king from 1035 to 1039. In 1036, when Alfred, brother of the true king, came to England from France to see his mother, Godwin tortured and killed him. When King Harold died in 1039, Harthacanute came back from France and became king. He had Harold's body exhumed and threw it into the Thames. King Harthacanute died in 1042 and Edward the Confessor was king from 1042 to 1066. He was a saintly man, but a weak king. Who was the power behind the throne? It was Godwin, Earl of Wessex, the man who had killed Edward's brother. Actually, Godwin put Edward on the throne and married Edward's sister, Edith, in 1045.

When Godwin died, his son, Harold Godwinson took over in 1053. As the king was weak and dying, he named Harold Godwinson as the next King of England. He was crowned in Westminster Abbey the same day that Edward was buried. Of course, anyone with the slightest knowledge of English history will realize the meaning of year 1066, the date of the Battle of Hastings when William the Conqueror seized England. So King Harold had a short reign. Then William broke up the great earldoms, including Wessex, and gave the lands and titles to his Norman friends.

The connection of the information, above, to our story is that Wessex was an area in England and within that area were locations called Wells and Wookey (or Wokey). Here, the Godwin family was recorded, years later, in the early 1300's. Pedigrees of English families began to take shape when, for the first time, a census of sorts, called Visitations, was taken. In 1573 and 1623, the Visitation delegations went to the homes of the very important families. They asked for the family history of each family and recorded the information. The Godwins lived in Somerset County. This county is in southwest England. The city of Wells is in the center of the county about 12 miles southwest of Bristol.



Virginia Historical Genealogies, by John Bennett Boddie, pp. 201-9, and The History and Antiquities of Somerset, by Collinson, Vol. III, p. 84, give the Godwin pedigree beginning in the days of King Edward II. That is over 20 generations from this writer! Information from that time is brief, details few, so the trail will be blazed as we work from long ago to the present. Numbers in parenthesis show the generations.

The Godwins were the Lords of Bower, called "Godwyn's Bower". Between 1307 and 1327, Hugh Godwyn (1) was Burgess of Bridgewater (see map), Bower, and Dunevere. Hugh and his wife, Margery, had a son, John Godwyn (2) who died in 1347. John and his wife, Joan (daughter of Robert de Bradford) had a son, John Godwyn (3). This John, the third generation, bore a shield with a "chevron between three leopard's heads".

This is important because, about 300 years later, when the Visitations went to James and Robert Godwyn in 1623, they had exactly the same arms Now, back to the story.

John (3) and Joan de Bradford had a son, William Godwyn (4), who was followed by another William (5), who died in 1443. Yet another William Godwyn (6) was living in 1461. He had the fourth William in a row and they called him "William Godwyn the Younger" (7).

William Godwyn the Younger was the father of Christopher Godwyn (8) and the grandfather of Thomas Godwyn (9). Thomas sold the Godwyn manor and lands in 1525. To this point, the generations were recorded in the Visitations of Somerset, 1573. When the 1623 Visitations were recorded, William Godwyn (10) of Wells was shown on both the 1573 and 1623 records. Now, we enter the last generation shown on our Oliver chart. William Godwyn married an heiress whose last name was Swayne. They lived between 1483 and 1509. Again, he carried the same arms on his shield. Their son, John (11), was living in 1509-1547. He had sons named William and Richard. We descend from William (12) and his wife, Christian Burges (or Bruges) of Batcombe, Somerset. They lived in Wells until 25 Feb 1548, when William leased the Rectory at Wookey (or Wokey) from William Bowerman, the sub-dean for 23 pounds per year for 80 years. The Godwyn family held it for 170 years. (History of Wookey, by Holmes, p. 150.) We do not know when William died, but he was alive in 1573 and they had eight children, Gilbert, Richard, Isabel Wykes, Anthony, our ancestor, William, Agnes Chappell, Margaret, and Mary.

Anthony Godwyn (13) was the second son of his parents, but he inherited the Rectory in Wookey. Then, his troubles began. He left Wookey and died in 1600 in London. In 1579 he married Joan Goad. Then, in 1588, he married again, our ancestor, Elizabeth, daughter of Robert Maye of Charterhouse. In his will, Anthony wrote, "I have had manifold troubles and suits of law. I am indebted for the payment of same to my brother-in-law, John Maye, Esqr." Anthony's son, Robert, inherited the Rectory lease, Anthony gave "ten pounds out of the

Rectory to my son William Godwyn, whom I heartily pray unto God to convert and make an honest man."

We are fortunate that our ancestor is brother Robert Godwyn (14, a luckier Number!), the one who inherited the Rectory of Wookey. He was born in 1589 and married Elizabeth Smythies, daughter of John Smythies of Wrington, Somerset, and his wife, Joan Dorington. John Smythies died in 1626. In his will, he wrote that Robert Godwyn was "A man not conformable to the laws of the Church of England," He was right. In 1641, Robert was fined two pounds as a recusant. When Robert's mother-in-law, Joan Smythies, died in 1638, her will names the children of Robert and Elizabeth Godwyn. They were: Edmond, Elizabeth, Anna, Joane, and last, **Thomas Godwyn**. (Miscellaneous Genealogy and History, Vol. IV, 4th series, p. 173.) Robert Godwyn died in 1661. His will reads that he is old and infirm at 72 years. Evidence shows that Thomas Godwin (15) was born between 1623 and 1638.

We have taken a fast trip through fifteen generations in Merrie Olde England! Remember that this book is intended for generations in America, but the Godwins are too great to pass up, so here we went again! There are many opportunities for dedicated folk to follow this outline and find the details. Save your money, chillun! Go to England! Write a book!

We've seen the break with the Church of England developing. The spelling of Godwyn to the Americanized Godwin takes place here as Thomas Godwin (15) came to Nansemond County, Virginia, about 1650. This county was below and beyond Isle of Wight County where Jamestown was located.

THOMAS GODWIN, SR.

b. bet. 1623 and 1628 - d. 1678

There are several reasons why Thomas Godwin of Nansemond County, Virginia, is identified as the son of Robert and Elizabeth Godwyn of Somerset, England. First, their son, Thomas, is not found in English records after 1650. Second, the family first names were continued for generations - Thomas, Edmond, Robert, James, and Joseph. Third, the family trend to turn away from the Church of England was probable cause for emigration. In America, Thomas seems to have been a Puritan and, later, a Quaker. The Encyclopedia of American Quaker Genealogy, Vol. VI, lists the Godwin name as a Quaker at the Pagan Creek meetings. Nansemond was in that area. Thomas Godwin's name is shown in several activities on page 29. Also, Thomas Godwin is about the same age as the one in Somerset, England.

The only real problem concerning Thomas Godwin is that no Sr. or Jr. appear in the hundreds of records with the name. He and his son, Thomas, were important, high ranking men. Both were colonels in the militia. Both were Burgesses from Nansemond County. But only one of them was the Speaker of the House of Burgesses in 1676. Which one was the Speaker? It could be the Senior - two years before he died, but more likely, it was Junior as will be discussed later on.

Thomas Senior came to America about 1650. That year he was given his first land grant in old Rappahannock County. He sold the land in 1656. During that time, he was chosen as Burgess from Nansemond County in 1654. This means that he represented the county in the Virginia House of Burgesses, similar to our House of Representatives. From that time, his home was in Nansemond County near the Isle of Wight line. The Statutes at Large, Laws of Virginia, by Hening, published in 1823 (usually called "Hening's Statutes"), Vol. II, p. 318, state, "—a point westerly line indeffinitely extended shall be and remaine the established common bounds and divideing line between the said Isle of Wight and Nanzemund counties, Provided nevertheless that the house and clered grounds of Capt. Thomas Godwin, who hath bin an antient inhabitant of

Nanzemund countie court, bee, remaine counted, and deemed in the countie of Nanzemund, any thing in this act to the contrary notwithstanding,—".

By law, his land would stay in Nansemond County and his rank as a captain is documented. Later, in Hening's Statutes, March 1675-6, 28th Charles II, p. 330, "Coll. Thomas Godwin" is listed with officers from Virginia. Interestingly, within several lines, also appear "Coll. Joseph Bridger" and "Coll. Lemuel Mason", two of our other ancestors. This law gave them their rank as colonel and their orders.

Thomas Godwin, Sr., was granted land in Nansemond at Chuckatuk in 1655 and a number of times, later, more land was granted in that county and in Isle of Wight County. He was a Burgess several times, served as Sheriff, and was a justice and coroner when he died in 1678. His home was called "Old Castle". His will began, "I, Thomas Godwin, of Nansemond county, Gent'l," It gave his son, Edmund, land and slaves. Daughter, Elizabeth got one slave. No slaves were given to son, Thomas Godwin, Jr., who was executor. (The Virginia Magazine, Vol. V, p. 199.)

There were three children mentioned in the will. Thomas, Jr., our ancestor, married Martha Bridger, daughter of the foremost citizen of Isle of Wight County, Colonel Joseph Bridger. A separate chapter will describe the Bridgers. Edmund married Sarah, daughter of Thomas Bembridge and Margaret, his wife. Elizabeth married three times, all outstanding citizens - James Webb, Joseph Woory, and Col. Samuel Bridger. A "sod widow" three times, she died wealthy. The name of the wife and widow of Thomas Godwin, Sr., has never been determined. His son, Thomas, Jr., is our ancestor. The Godwin family is described in more detail in Seventeenth Century Isle of Wight County Virginia, by Boddie, pp. 459-512.

THOMAS GODWIN	married	MARTHA BRIDGER
d. 27 May 1714	c. 1679	

Colonel Thomas Godwin, Jr., was the commandant of the militia of Nansemond until 1705. His actions during his life allow a description of the man. First, he was a lover of liberty, had a very independent spirit, and was against slavery. He was not given slaves by his father and he never owned slaves. He believed in religious freedom and did not support the Church of England. Probably, he was a Quaker. In Bacon's Rebellion he came out strongly on the side of liberty. Bancroft's History of the United States states, "A Majority of the Burgesses returned were much infected with the principle of Bacon, and their Speaker, Thomas Godwin, was notoriously a friend to all the treason and rebellion that distracted Virginia." (Remember that this was a hundred years before the American Revolution.)

At this point, a few words about Bacon's Rebellion are needed. Little is taught in school history about that little war, but many students of American history consider it to have been the first American Revolution, fought and lost. Economics, trade restrictions, taxes, and government corruption had lead to dire circumstances for small land owners. In 1676, an emigrant, Nathaniel Bacon, organized 300 men unlawfully and started fighting Indians. Then, he found that he was fighting the King of England. In the end, Bacon was defeated. Governor Berkeley was severe with the rebels. Many were executed. Land and wealth were taken and given to the loyal participants. Families chose sides. Thomas Godwin favored the rebels but must not have entered the conflict. In 1679, he married Martha Bridger, daughter of the Paymaster General of the King's Forces, Col. Joseph Bridger. What does this prove? Who knows? Maybe it shows a practical man and an even more adept politician. If he were alive today, he might be elected Governor of Texas!

In 1699, Thomas, Jr., was sworn in as Burgess again. This time, his seat was contested by Thomas Milner, who managed to take his place. A number of

times, Thomas Godwin took sides on important issues. He did not hesitate to call the Governor to task when Godwin believed that the Governor was wrong. At the time of his death, he was coroner and justice of the County Court. His will was dated 1713 and proved in 1714. He had no slaves. The will named his wife and nine children: Thomas, Joseph, Edmond, Samuel, our ancestor **William**, James, Martha, Mary and Elizabeth. The military service and the lineage of Thomas Godwin, Jr., to this writer has been proved to the General Society of Colonial Wars, #16689.

WILLIAM GODWIN married ANN PITT

William Godwin was born in Nansemond County, Virginia, the fifth son of nine children. His father was a famous man and so was his grandfather. Their names are found in many documents. There is little note of William. There were a couple of other William Godwins in the county at the same time, but their lot was about as inconspicuous as was our William's. He married Ann Pitt, daughter of John Pitt. Probably, she was a cousin of Robert Pitt. The Pitt, Shivers, Godwin and Milner families intermarried time after time through the years before the American Revolution. The marriage of William and Ann is recorded in Isle of Wight in 1729. (W.B. 4, p. 43.) The couple lived in Isle of Wight, Virginia. William wrote his will and died in 1736. His will mentions his wife, Ann, and names his five children: William, George, John, Pitt, and our ancestor **Barnaby**.

BARNABY GODWIN married — WILKINSON

Barnaby Godwin was born in Isle of Wight County, Virginia. When you are the fifth son of the fifth son, your chances of a big inheritance are slim. As was true of so many young men from large families in Virginia, Barnaby headed for greener pastures. He took his wife and children and moved to Edgecombe County, North Carolina. His wife has been called "Wilkinora —" in some documents and "— Wilkinson" in others. Since no more is known, it makes little difference. In North Carolina, the path of the Godwins must have crossed that of the Jonas Shivers family. Jonas was a farmer in Edgecombe County. The Godwin children were: our ancestor **Liliory**, who married Jonas Shivers; and, Elizabeth Godwin, who married John Milner. The Martha Milner Bible has a record of the birth of Liliory Godwin as follows, "Liliory Shivers, daughter of Barnaby Godwin and Wilkinora, his wife, was born 29 July 1775 in Va." Her death is recorded, also, "Liliory Shivers departed this life 28 August 1825." The Bible record is in the Georgia Archives.

The Godwin line has joined the Shivers line. Now, a short chapter will be directed to the Bridgers, Samuel and Joseph, ancestors of Martha, wife of Thomas Godwin, Jr.

Bridger

This chapter will give variation to the format in the other parts of this book. Here, we address one great ancestor, Colonel Joseph Bridger. He was the father of Martha, wife of Thomas Godwin, Jr.

John Bennett Boddie wrote Seventeenth Century Isle of Wight Virginia. His outstanding reputation as a genealogist and writer is well deserved. On pages 423 to 427, he writes about Joseph Bridger, the third son of Samuel Bridger of England. Samuel was the auditor of the College of Gloucester and owned a manor near Woodmancote in the Parish of Dursley. The will of Samuel Bridger in 1650 mentions his wife, Mary, and daughters, Martha and Mary. He was the only Bridger found at that time with a wife named Mary. In later years, his son, Joseph Bridger, named his first two daughters after his sisters. Joseph mentioned his mother, Mary, in his will. Boddie concludes that Joseph Bridger was born about 1628, probably, at his father's manor in Dursley Parish, England. Joseph came to America before 1657, when his name appears in the records of Virginia as a member of the House of Burgesses.

Boddie is right, probably, but there are old legends that Colonel Joseph Bridger had a father named Joseph who supervised the construction of the still standing famous St. Luke's, (The Brick Church) in Newport Parish, Isle of Wight County. This clipping is from Old Churches, Ministers and Families of Virginia, a very old book by Bishop William Meade. (Vol. I, p. 305.)

Perhaps it was as great an honour to him to be the son of the man who built Old Smithfield Church as to have been one of the Councillors of the corrupt Charles II., and to have acted with Sir William Berkeley against him who is called the rebel Bacon. That he was the son of the man who contracted for the church is stated in the following words accompanying the inscription:—

“General Bridger was the son and heir of the Joseph Bridger who superintended the building of St. Luke's, (the Brick Church,) in Newport parish, Isle of Wight county.”

My friend adds these words:—

“The above is taken from a copy made by the late Mrs. Anne P. P. Cowper, of Macclesfield, from the tombstone, which is erected on a farm about three miles below the Old Brick Church, and is still in a perfect state. This farm was a part of an immense landed estate which descended to Mrs. Cowper from her mother, who was a widow Bridger, and married Colonel Josiah Parker, of Revolutionary celebrity.”

The church was built in 1632, when Col. Joseph was only 4 years old. It is possible that another generation Joseph Bridger should be on the chart, but no basic documents show his presence. The legend may have started many years ago, when his tombstone was found on the Whitemarsh farm and moved to the Old Brick Church, where it lies at the foot of the chancel.

Joseph Bridger has been described as the most prominent man of his time in Isle of Wight County. He was a Burgess in 1657, 1663, and 1666; in 1664 a commissioner to adjust the boundary with Maryland; in 1666 commissioner to confer with Maryland and North Carolina in regard to tobacco; in 1666 was Adjutant-General of Virginia; in 1680 was Commander-in-chief of the horse of Isle of Wight, Surry, Nansemond, and Lower Norfolk Counties; and, in 1670 he

was appointed a member of the Council. He owned 12,000 acres in Isle of Wight County. (VA History Magazine, Vol. II, p. 381.)

In his first land patent, he was called "Captain" Bridger for 300 acres on the Blackwater, 1664. In 1666, he got 7,800 acres with William Burgh "beginning by a White Marsh, a meadow about a half mile from the main run of the Blackwater". He called his home "Whitemarsh".

The name of Joseph Bridger is in hundreds of official documents, too many to be included in this book. But a few clippings from old books long in the public domain will show his activity. As mentioned earlier, Hening published the old Virginia Statutes in 1823. The age of the books makes reproduction poor, but legible.

*JOURNAL OF THE

GRAND ASSEMBLY,

HELD AT JAMES CITY

THE 23D DAY OF OCTOBER, 1666, BY ADJOURNMENT FROM THE FIFTH OF JUNE 1666.

UPON the end of which session it was enacted that the convention of the next should be upon the 25th of April 1667, unless the right honourable the governor found occasion to convent it sooner; who pleasing to issue his summons for the appearance of the respective burgesses, this day there appeared.

Capt. ROBERT WYNNE Speaker.

- | | |
|-----------------|---------------------------|
| Henrico County. | Capt. William Ferrar. |
| Charles City. | { Mr. Speaker, |
| York. | { Capt. Thos. Southcoat. |
| New Kent. | { Lieut. col. Wm. Barber, |
| James County. | { Capt. Danl. Parke, |
| James City. | { Coll. William Clayborn, |
| Surry County. | { Capt. William Berkley. |
| Isle of Wight. | { Capt. Edward Ramsey, |
| Nansamund. | { Mr. Thomas Ballard. |
| | { Mr. Theo. Hone. |
| | { Capt. Laur. Baker, |
| | { Mr. Thos. Warren. |
| | { Adjutant genl. Bridger, |
| | { Maj. Nich. Hill, |
| | { Mr. Robert Williamson, |
| | { Col. John Blake, |
| | { Capt. John Lear |

To the right is a part of a long order, mentioned earlier, that appointed Bridger as a colonel. This is in Hening, Vol. II, p. 330. Three of our ancestors are noted.



This shows Adjutant-General Bridger as a member of the House of Burgesses. (Hening, Vol. II, p. 249) During Bacon's Rebellion, he was Paymaster-General. Often you will see him called a general. He was a Colonel, not a General. Then as today, "Adjutant-General" is a technical assignment. In 1666, Bridger was still a Captain. In our army, today, an adjutant general handles paperwork on the staff of a general officer.

One would think that the early colonists would have been totally occupied with their fight for survival against starvation. Add the never ending war with the Indians which made the militia a necessity. With all their problems, they had to start fighting with each other. Bacon's Rebellion was discussed in the Godwin chapter. Local leaders were appointed as officers and they recruited the soldiers. Usually, the choice of officers was based upon politics more than military knowledge and ability.

Charles City county; coll. George Jordan, or one of them in Surry County, coll. Joseph Bridger, Esqr. coll. John George and major James Powell, or either of them in Isle of Wight county; coll. Thomas Godwin, Lt. coll. John Lear and major Thomas Millner, or either of them in Nansamund county; coll. Lemuell Mason and major Francis Sawyer, or one of them in Lower Norfolk, and the officers of the militia in the countyes of Accomack and Northampton if need be, for the florte, there

Colonel Bridger commanded the Isle of Wight militia in the Indian War of 1675. During Bacon's Rebellion, in 1676, he was an adherent of Governor Berkeley and was denounced along with the other prominent Virginians in Bacon's Proclamation of 1676, a part of which is copied at the top of the next page. (Virginia Magazine, Vol. I, p. 60.)

And we further declare these the Ensueing Persons in this List, to have been his wicked, and pernicious Councillors, Aiders and Assisters against the Commonalty in these our Cruell Com-motions

S ^r Henry Chicherly, Knt.,	Jos. Bridger, ←
Col. Charles Wormley,	W ^m Clabourne,
Phil. Dalowell,	Thos. Hawkins, Jun ^r ,

During colonial days the early Americans were in constant warfare of one kind or another. Col. Joseph Bridger was an educated officer. He was called upon to sit on a number of courts martial. In some cases, the courts were harsh, particularly after Bacon's Rebellion. The rebels were punished, and there were discipline cases in the loyal forces.

PROCEEDINGS OF A COURT MARTIAL, OCTOBER 21, 1673.

At A Court Marshall held At James Citty The 21st October, 1673.

S^r Wm. Berkeley, Capt. Gen^{ll}.

S^r Hen. Chicheley, L^t Gen^{ll}.

Present:

Coll. Nath. Bacon.	Lt. Coll. Augs. Warner.
Coll. Robt. Wynn.	Lt. Coll. John Leare.
Coll. Kemp.	Lt. Coll. Mason.
Coll. Wm. Cole.	Major Edw'd Hill.
Coll. Joseph Bridger. ←	

Whereas, It Appears that Rich'd Clarke in Contempt of Authority And to the Comand of his Lt. Coll. Daniell Parke Esq^r Did upon the Lawfull Comands of the said Lt. Coll. give Mutinous Language Struke his said Officer and Refused the Obeying of A Warrant for Repareing to his Colours the Enemy¹ being then in the Country which Mutinus Contempt of his Deserves the Severest punishment Yett Notwithstanding this Court for this his first fault and as farr as in them lies to Mitigate Soe High a Punishment have order'd that the said Clarke forthwith give bond with Good Security for pay-ment of Tenn pounds Sterling upon Demand And for Per-formance of this whole Order which some is to goe towards the Buying of Armes for the Regiment to which the said Daniell Parke Esq^r is Lt. Coll. And upon the next Muster Day that the said Clarke on his Knees at the head of the said Lt. Coll. Company And on the head of Capt. Cheslyes Com-pany with a Laudable Voice Aske the said Lt. Coll. Pardon for this soe Greate A fault, in these Words, I Rich'd Clarke Doe hereby freely And openly Acknowledge in the p^rsence of God And before this Company that I have beene Very Con-temptuous to Authority And have Pertiarily disobeyed the Comand of Lt. Coll. Daniell Parke to Repaire to my Colours when our Dutch Enemies where Lately in the Country And Doe Alsoe Acknowledge that I Did Resist the said Lt. Coll. for which I Hartily aske him forgiveness And that the said Clarke pay all Costs And Charges alsoe.

¹The enemy was the Dutch fleet.

The case on the previous page is typical. (VA Hist. Mag., Vol. 20, pp. 28-29.) Note that Nathaniel Bacon is on the court. This was long before the rebellion. The Governor of Virginia is President of the court. In those days, civilians as well as military were put on trial. There were cases of men and women being executed for treason. Religious cases came before these courts. More will be said about that a little further on.

In spite of Bacon's ill remarks about Col. Bridger, Sir John Berry, sent by King Charles II to check on Gov. Berkeley, said that Col. Bridger was, "a very Resolute gentleman, who though forced to fly in the heat of war from his own cuntrye, yet on his return was very active and instrumental in reducing to their obedience the South parte of the James River."

The many and varied tasks given to Joseph Bridger seem to stem from the fact that he was one of the very few well educated men available. At one time he was required to set up a "Free School". (Hening, Vol. V, p. 113.)

III. *Smith's Free School.*

Elizabeth Smith, through Joseph Bridger her trustee, did by deed order said Bridger to invest a sum of money in the purchase of a lot in Smithfield and erection of a house to be used as a house for a free school, and appointed Miles Cary, Jr., Richard Kello and Richard Baker trustees to employ a teacher and conduct a school. The lot was purchased by Baker and the house erected for that purpose directed. It is lot No. 26 in the old plat of Smithfield, and is the same now occupied as a Mason's hall. (Letter of N. P.)

The long and complicated document below is included because it is interesting and to show the lack of religious freedom in the early days in this country. In reading the old papers, the "f" is "ss". In this case, the Catholics are the victims. Quakers and persons of any other religion except the Church of England were persecuted. Col. Bridger sat on one case where a man was severely punished because he had not had his children baptized. Joseph Bridger was a member of the General Court at Gov. Berkeley's home in 1677 to witness the will of the Governor.

CALENDAR OF STATE PAPERS.

Vol. I, p. 31

"Assented to by the Councill."

"By order of the Councill."

JAMES SHERLOCK,

Clk. Gen^l. Ass^{em}.

To the Right Honora^{ble} Francis Nicolson, Their Majes^{ties} Governo^r and Councill of State of Virginia: y^e humble peticcon of Joseph Bridger, administ^r of y^e Estate of Christopher Homes, deceased, & Godfather to Christo^r Homes, y^e only sonn of y^e s^d Homes,

In most humble maner sheweth—

That by y^e Statute Anno Tertio Jacobi regis, chap y^e 5th, it was then taken into consideration by the King's most excellent Majestic, y^e Lords Spirituall & temporall, & y^e Comons of y^e present Parliam^{nt}, y^e divers Jefuits semenary & popish priests, dayly did withdraw many of his Majes^{ties} subjects from y^e true service of Almighty God, & y^e religion established w^{ithin} ye realme, to y^e Romish religion, & from y^e Loyal obedience to his Majestic, & had secretly persuaded divers recusants & papists, & Encouraged & emboldened them to comitt most Damnable Treassons, tending to y^e overthrow of God's true religion, y^e destruction of his Majestic & his royall Issue, & y^e overthrow of y^e whole state & Comon wealth, wherefore it was by y^e parliam^{nt} thought fit y^e as noe romish recusant were not thought meet or fit to bee execu^{ted} or Administra^{ted} to any

Petition for control of a child, as God-father, that he may be educated in the Established Church

person or persons w^hsoever, not to have y^o Education of their owne children, much less of y^o Children of any of y^o King's subjects; it was therefore inacted by y^o authoritie as afore^d, y^t such popish recusants should be disabled to be ex^{tr} or Adm^{tr} or to have y^o Custody of any Childe as guardian in Chivalrie, guardian in surkage, or guardian in nature of any Lands, Stewardships or Custody of any such Childe, or of their Lands, tenements or hereditiments being free hold, Coppy hold as afore^d. Now soe it is, may it please this Right Honorab^{le} boarde, y^t contrary to y^o Statute before named, one Peter Blake, of Nansemond County, a Professed Papist & contemner & slighter of y^o Publick worship of God, as it is established by y^o Lawes of England & Virginia, doth keep in his Custody y^o before named Christop^r Homes, y^o only sonn and Childe of Christop^r Homes, deceased, & your Pe^{tr}, nott only from y^o true friendship y^t was betwixt your pe^{tr} & y^o afore^d Christop^r Homes, father of y^o before named Childe, from which Consideration y^o worshipfull Courte of y^o Isle-Wight County, did grant administration to your pett^r upon y^o afore^d Christop^r Homes' Estate, butt most espetiall for y^o solemn Engagem^{nt} y^t your pe^{tr} Lyes under before God, for y^o Christian Education of y^o afore^d Childe, have therefore most humbly made this motion to y^o R^t Hon^{ble} Goven^r & Councill, most humbly praying for y^o reasons before expressed, y^t y^o afore^d Childe may be taken out of y^o Custody of y^o afore^d Peter Blake, & y^t hee may bee delivered to y^o pe^{tr}, y^t thereby yo^r pe^{tr} may better performe those duties doth become him as a God-father, Christian & a friend to y^o afore^d Childe, y^t hee may be brought up in y^o Knowledge & feare of God, & in y^o true principalls of Christian Religion, & your Pe^{tr} as being bound, in dutye wth all Humilitie. Shall every pray, &c.

The oath that was given to Joseph Bridger when he was selected as a Councillor to the King is below, copied from Hening's Statutes. This selection was a great honor.

The oath of a Councillor.

YOU shall swear to bee a true and faithfull servant unto the King's Majestie as one of his Council of state and to bee aiding and assisting to his Lieut. and Governour General of Virginia you shall in all things to bee moved treated and debated in the councill faithfully declare youre minde and opinion according to your hart, and conscience and shall keep secret all matters committed and revealed unto you concerning the same and that shall bee treated secretly in the councill untill such time as by the consent of his majesties Lieut. and Governour General and the full consent of the councill of state there resident or the major part of them publication shall bee made thereof you shall to youre utmost beare faith and allegiance to the king's majestie his heirs and lawfull successors and shall assist and defend all jurisdictions prebemiencies and authority granted unto his majestie and annexed unto the crown against all forreigne princes persons prelates and potentates whatsoever and generally you shall act and doe in all things as a faithfull and true subject ought to doe in his majestie.

And so keep you God, by the holy contents of this booke.

The 10th of May 1680.

Sir Henry Chicheley, Knt.
Col. Nich. Spencer, Sec.
Col. Nath. Bacon, Aud.

Col. Robert Smith.
Col. Jos. Bridger.
Col. Wm. Cole.

In the name of God Amen Joseph Bridger of the County of Wright in Virginia do hereby certify that my last Will and Testament

expresseth that my Will that all my debts be in the first place Carefully payd and for what then shall remain of my Goods by Estate I dispose of as followeth
It is my Will that my personal Estate be equally divided between my wife my Son Joseph Samuel & William and daughters Martha (Godwin) Mary and Elizabeth and Hester that each shall have only my daughter Martha Godwin is to have one hundred pounds left then the rest in respect of what I have already given her husband and half her mother and my dear wife shall have in the first place and before it be delivered over and above her proportion at her choice one Bed covering and furniture to it half dozen chairs a chest of drawers table and carpet and looking glasses and Andirons to furnish the chamber and one horse as she shall choose and one man and one woman servant white or black to waite upon her besides all her apparell Rings jewels and appurtenances for life and at her decease to go to his heirs to Samuel Bridger the plantation bought by me of John Gatlin and William Gatlin wherein John Cooke now lives also one half of my plantation of Curawaock 7800 acres &c; to Son William 850 acres granted to me by an escheat formerly belonging to Nathaniel Floyd &c; and another tract part of which is leased to Christopher Wade; his wife to have the tract of land on which he lives 850 acres formerly belonging to Capt. Vpton and 300 acres formerly belonging to Mr. Seward and she keeping the Brick housing and orchard in repaire; after her death they are to go to his son Joseph as well as half the land at Curawaock for his natural life and remainder to the heirs male of his body; also tract at Manokin: to my mother Mrs. Mary Bridger 5 pounds yearly during her life. Lt. Coll. Jno. Pitt, Mr. Tho. Pitt and Coll. Arthur Smith to assist my wife, to whom I give 20 shillings apiece to buy Rings. Wife Hester Bridger Ex^r. 3 Aug. 1683. By a codicil he disinherits his son Joseph, "who I finde fly out with divers dissolute courses of life and is grown very disobedient to me." Entails the land that went to him on his other sons and divides the personal estate between his children Samuel, William, Martha, Mary, Elizabeth, and Hester. Dated 18 of his body lawfully begotten and it the Oct., 1683. Proved May 8, 1686.

This long will has been reduced and shortened. The extract is from the Wm & Mary fly, series 2, Vol. 7, pp. 242-3.

My Will that all my debts be in the first place Carefully payd and for what then shall remain of my Goods by Estate I dispose of as followeth
It is my Will that my personal Estate be equally divided between my wife my Son Joseph Samuel & William and daughters Martha (Godwin) Mary and Elizabeth and Hester that each shall have only my daughter Martha Godwin is to have one hundred pounds left then the rest in respect of what I have already given her husband and half her mother and my dear wife shall have in the first place and before it be delivered over and above her proportion at her choice one Bed covering and furniture to it half dozen chairs a chest of drawers table and carpet and looking glasses and Andirons to furnish the chamber and one horse as she shall choose and one man and one woman servant white or black to waite upon her besides all her apparell Rings jewels and appurtenances for life and at her decease to go to his heirs to Samuel Bridger the plantation bought by me of John Gatlin and William Gatlin wherein John Cooke now lives also one half of my plantation of Curawaock 7800 acres &c; to Son William 850 acres granted to me by an escheat formerly belonging to Nathaniel Floyd &c; and another tract part of which is leased to Christopher Wade; his wife to have the tract of land on which he lives 850 acres formerly belonging to Capt. Vpton and 300 acres formerly belonging to Mr. Seward and she keeping the Brick housing and orchard in repaire; after her death they are to go to his son Joseph as well as half the land at Curawaock for his natural life and remainder to the heirs male of his body; also tract at Manokin: to my mother Mrs. Mary Bridger 5 pounds yearly during her life. Lt. Coll. Jno. Pitt, Mr. Tho. Pitt and Coll. Arthur Smith to assist my wife, to whom I give 20 shillings apiece to buy Rings. Wife Hester Bridger Ex^r. 3 Aug. 1683. By a codicil he disinherits his son Joseph, "who I finde fly out with divers dissolute courses of life and is grown very disobedient to me." Entails the land that went to him on his other sons and divides the personal estate between his children Samuel, William, Martha, Mary, Elizabeth, and Hester. Dated 18 of his body lawfully begotten and it the Oct., 1683. Proved May 8, 1686.

My Will that all my debts be in the first place Carefully payd and for what then shall remain of my Goods by Estate I dispose of as followeth
It is my Will that my personal Estate be equally divided between my wife my Son Joseph Samuel & William and daughters Martha (Godwin) Mary and Elizabeth and Hester that each shall have only my daughter Martha Godwin is to have one hundred pounds left then the rest in respect of what I have already given her husband and half her mother and my dear wife shall have in the first place and before it be delivered over and above her proportion at her choice one Bed covering and furniture to it half dozen chairs a chest of drawers table and carpet and looking glasses and Andirons to furnish the chamber and one horse as she shall choose and one man and one woman servant white or black to waite upon her besides all her apparell Rings jewels and appurtenances for life and at her decease to go to his heirs to Samuel Bridger the plantation bought by me of John Gatlin and William Gatlin wherein John Cooke now lives also one half of my plantation of Curawaock 7800 acres &c; to Son William 850 acres granted to me by an escheat formerly belonging to Nathaniel Floyd &c; and another tract part of which is leased to Christopher Wade; his wife to have the tract of land on which he lives 850 acres formerly belonging to Capt. Vpton and 300 acres formerly belonging to Mr. Seward and she keeping the Brick housing and orchard in repaire; after her death they are to go to his son Joseph as well as half the land at Curawaock for his natural life and remainder to the heirs male of his body; also tract at Manokin: to my mother Mrs. Mary Bridger 5 pounds yearly during her life. Lt. Coll. Jno. Pitt, Mr. Tho. Pitt and Coll. Arthur Smith to assist my wife, to whom I give 20 shillings apiece to buy Rings. Wife Hester Bridger Ex^r. 3 Aug. 1683. By a codicil he disinherits his son Joseph, "who I finde fly out with divers dissolute courses of life and is grown very disobedient to me." Entails the land that went to him on his other sons and divides the personal estate between his children Samuel, William, Martha, Mary, Elizabeth, and Hester. Dated 18 of his body lawfully begotten and it the Oct., 1683. Proved May 8, 1686.

James Bennett
Robert Pitt
Samuel L. Cook
Richard J. Plow
his mark

Joseph Bridger seal

After the will on the previous page was made, a codicil on son, Joseph, was added. It was put into effect in the legal actions following father Joseph's death on 15 Apr 1686. A clipping about the long legal paper is below. A copy of the will and settlement of Colonel Bridger was ordered from

part of such heirs, and then to him only for life, remainder to the heirs male of his body lawfully begotten. And whereas the said Joseph Bridger, after making his said last will and testament, by his said codicil reciting, that after making his said will, he found his son Joseph Bridger fly out into divers dissolute courses of life, and that he was grown disobedient to him, and that he might not be guilty, by giving him an estate, as an encouragement to continue in his wicked way of living, he did thereby revoke and disannul all and every part of the legacies given him in the will aforesaid, both of lands and personal estate; and did give the said seventeen hundred acres of land, called White Marsh, by the description of the

Isle of Wight County. The list of his possessions has many pages. At the same time, the will of his dispossessed son was ordered to see how he made out in later life. He did very well, becoming almost as rich as his old dad! As a lesson, maybe the father did the right thing and caused the young man to improve his conduct.

Colonel Bridger married Hester, daughter of Colonel Robert Pitt, a Burgess and member of the Council.

The home at Whitemarsh was one of the largest in that time. The inventory of his estate lists the rooms in the brick house. They were: "Celler, kitchen, kitchen chamber, dining room, parlor, hall galery, landing chamber over dining room, outer chamber, lower chamber, hall chamber, middle chamber, middle uppermost chamber, children's chamber." A chamber must be a room.

The children were: James, William, Samuel, our ancestor Martha, Mary, Elizabeth, and Hester.

At the beginning of this chapter, the old book of Bishop Meade was discussed. There was more said in the book about the tombstone of Col. Bridger. At the time of his book, the stone was standing on the farm and in good condition. When Boddie writes about the stone, he says that the stone bears the following epitaph, now almost defaced: "Sacred To The Memory of The Honorable Joseph Bridger, Esq., Councillor of State in Virginia to King Charles ye 2nd. Dying April ye 15; A.D. 1686; Aged 58 years. Mournfully leaving his wife, three sons and four daughters." Then the poem below:

" Does nature silent mourn and can dumb stone
Make his true worth to future ages knowne
Excels expression marble sure will keep
His mercy best yt. ever o're his grave shall weep.
Here lies the great minister of State
That Royal virtues had and Royal fate
To Charles his counsels did such honor bring
His own express fetched him to attend the King
His soul yt. ever did wth, vigor move
Soared like itself above
But ye bright stars ne'er laysily decline
But in an instant shoot yt. cease to shine"

What more needs to be said about that great man? This brings the story to Joseph's wife, Hester Pitt, daughter of another great ancestor, Lt. Colonel Robert Pitt and his ancestors. The next chapter will address the Pitt lineage.

Last Will and Testament of Thomas Pitt, merchant of Bristol.

"To my son William Pitt one lease for the term of his natural life of my tenement without the Temple Gate within the Liberty of the City of Bristol, which is now in the possession of George Tyce, Innholder, called the Saracen's Head; also one lease of a tenement which I lately built within the Temple Gate, now in the occupation of Thomas Arthur, esq., he to pay to Robert Pitt, the son of my said son William, ten pounds yearly after the said Robert shall accomplish the age of 22 years. After the death of the said William these 2 tenements to the said Robert. My son William shall give to his sons William and Robert ten pounds apiece at the age of 16 years. To my daughter Alice Northen one gilt cup and 40 pounds. To my daughter Anne Merrick one silver gilt cup and to my son-in-law John Merrick, 20 pounds to be divided between my daughter Anne Merrick's children, Ann Waters, Mary Waters, and Robert Merrick. To my daughter Mary Owen a silver gilt ale cup and 20 pounds to my son-in-law Robert Owen to be divided between my daughter Mary's 3 children, Robert, Mary, and Jane Owen. To my cousin Mathew Havyland, alderman, a ring of gold. To my kinsman William Pitt, draper, another. My kinsman Edward Batten. My friend Samuel Davies to preach my funeral sermon. My daus. in law, Mary Marlowe, Cicely Gunning and Elizabeth Batteredten. My kinswoman Mary Robinson; son William Pitt to be exr."

His wife was evidently married before as he mentions three daughters-in-law (stepdaughters) in his will. His children were: William, Alice Nothen, Anne m. 1st Waters and 2d John Merrick, and Mary Owen.

William Pitt (4) was the son of Thomas Pitt, above, and he, too, was a merchant and ship owner. He was engaged in the Turkey and East India trade. He died in 1624, a very wealthy man. His will was written 13 Mar 1622 and probated 4 Feb 1624. His will, in part, is below.

Last Will and Testament of William Pitt of Bristol, Merchant

"to my wife Mary 500 pounds; to son William 250 pounds; to son Robert, three score and ten pounds; to son Henry 250 pounds, to son Thomas 250 pounds; to daughter Mary Pitt 250 pounds. To my wife Mary a lease of the house wherein I now dwell in Redcliffe Street and also house in same street where Samuel Griffith dwells, and my garden in Thomas Lane for life. After her decease I give said house and garden to William, with remainder to son Henry, then to son Thomas next to son Robert and lastly to heirs general. To my son Robert Pitt the tenement without Temple Gate called the Saracen's Inn and the new house built by my father Thomas Pitt,—— To my sons Henry and Thomas a lease for two tenements in Redcliffe Street. To niece Ann Waters a lease of tenement at main gate with remainder to my nephew Robert Mericke.——To dau. Ann Pitt my chain of gold; to dau. Mary Pitt my silver and gilt tankard which was given them by my father. To dau. Martha the inlaid Chest in the chamber. I give my son William my best Turkey ring, which was my great grandfather's, Mr. Roger Cookes. My second ring with pearl I give to son Robert.

"My signet ring I give to son Henry, and my ruby ring to my son Thomas. My books to son William. Sons to have their portion at one and twenty and daus. at twenty or marriage.

"Brother-in-law Richard Davis 20 shillings for a ring and sister Mary Davis a double Harry sovereign of gold. To sister Marlowe and sister Gunning, cousin Mary Robinson, sister Alice Knight and brother Knight. To cousin William Pitt, draper. To cousin Nicholas Pokes. A great part of my estate is in debt and beyond seas and any loss shall be borne equally among my legatees. Wife and son William exrs."

Mary Pitt, William's wife, made her will on 25 Nov 1634. Son Robert was the executor. The children of William and Mary were: William, Newell (or Nowell), Thomas, Anne, Maude Russel, Martha, Colonel Robert Pitt, and Captain Henry Pitt. Five of the children went to America. Mary went to New England; Thomas went to Charles City, VA; Maud went to New England; Robert went to Isle of Wight, VA; and, Henry went to Isle of Wight, on Pagan Creek.

As was true in the Bridger chapter, the information given, above, came from Seventeenth Century Isle of Wight Virginia, by John Bennett Boddie. Most references have not been included because they can be found on pages 505 to 511 in the Boddie book. Now, as the life of the emigrant, Colonel Robert Pitt is discussed, other references will be used as well as the Boddie information.

Bristol is located near the waters of the Bristol Channel where the Severn River enters the sea in southwest England. The area is protected from heavy seas and has always been a ship building center. Robert Pitt (5) was born in Bristol. He was part of a family of merchants and mariners. His grandfather, Thomas Pitt, was part owner of the ship "Fortune" in 1588. His uncle Edward was part owner of the "Unicorn" in 1583. Robert's brother, William, owned the "Mary Rose" and the "Supply" in 1627. It was natural that Robert Pitt took to the sea as captain of a privateer of Bristol called the "Thunder". He fought the ship in the War of 1628 against France to help the Huguenots. A guess would place his birth date about 1600.

As the will states, his father left him 70 pounds, the Saracen's Inn tavern, a new house in Bristol, and a share of the remainder including the debts. The later may be the reason that five of the eight children left for America.

Robert was not a poor emigrant when he arrived in America. First, he appeared in the records of the new world on 14 Feb 1637 when, as "Robert Pitt, merchant", he patented 550 acres in Isle of Wight County, VA. The land was "about 3 1/2 miles up New Haven River (later Pagan) opposite land of William Denham, now in the occupation of the said Pitt, for his own personal adventure and that of ten other persons." In 1648, when he acquired 1200 more acres as Lt. Robert Pitt, he had become an officer in the militia. Men were always called by their proper rank and their standing in the community depended upon their service in protection against Indians and other enemies. In later years, Robert gained several thousand additional acres of land in the county.

In 1649, he was sent to the House of Burgesses of Virginia representing Isle of Wight County, and continued as Burgess until 1660. In 1662, he was the commander of the Isle of Wight militia and was a member of the Governor's Council, both very high honors.

Genealogists do not agree on the name of Robert Pitt's wife. He may have had two or more wives - a busy man! Boddie refers to land documents that show that Robert Pitt married a daughter of George Stevens, a Burgess from Surry County. In his will, Robert calls his dead wife, "Martha". So it could be Martha Stevens. But Colonel John Lear, a powerful neighbor, named "sister Pitt" in his will, so some books name Martha Lear as the wife of Robert Pitt. Of course, he could have married — Stevens and Martha Lear. It is to be noted that no kid is named "George", but one is named "John", as in John Lear. John is a new name in the Pitt family. Also, books and extracts do not list a daughter "Martha" for Robert Pitt, but the will, on the tenth line says, "Item - I give and bequest as a gift from my Daughter, Martha Pitt,—" When a wife's name is not proved, it does not change the line of descent through the male side, but any pursuit of the wife's uncertain lineage is useless.

The children of Robert Pitt, as listed by Boddie and in the William and Mary Quarterly, Vol. VII, p. 237, are: Robert, Elizabeth, Hester, Mary, and Lt. Col. John. The will of Robert Pitt was written 6 Jun 1672 and proved 9 Jun 1674. A copy of the original will was made in Isle of Wight in 1982 from the record of wills and deeds, Vol. 2, Part I, 1661-1714, p. 128. On the next page is a reduced size copy that is as legible as the larger copy. At the time of the will, our ancestor, Hester Pitt, was married to the foremost citizen of Isle of Wight County, so she got little more than the mention of her name. Daughter, Martha got more, but was instructed to give half of it to "poor women" and the other half to "poor female orphans". In memory of his dead wife, Martha, he left land and instructions that a home "twentyfive foots in length" be built, "which fore said land and housing is to be for the relief of poor women".

Elizabeth and Mary got thousands of pounds of tobacco. That was the same as money in those days. Also, the girls got various odds and ends - furniture and drinking mugs. He was generous to his grandson given his name, Robert Pitt, son of Robert Pitt. The will is not as long as was the custom in those days. He made no effort to give out all of his wealth, so there must have been plenty to be divided by the executor, son John. By the time he died, his children were not in need. He was more concerned about poor women and female orphans. Those male orphans must have gone out looking for jobs.

The following clippings from documents are interesting and are typical of the writing and actions of the times.

* CHARLES the 1st was beheaded on the 30th of January, 1649. From that period, the commonwealth, in England, commenced; and it continued, under different modifications, till the restoration of Charles the 2d in 1660.—Oliver Cromwell was declared Protector, on the 9th of January, 1654, and died, on the 13th of September, 1658.—His son Richard was nominated, by him, as his successor, and assumed the reins of government accordingly; but resigned them in 1659.—On the dissolution of the monarchy, in England, doubts existed, in this country, whether the powers of the governor and council, and of all the other officers of government deriving their appointments from them, were not extinct.—This, unquestionably, gave rise to one of the provisions of the first act of this session; which made it highly penal to maintain such doctrine. The principle was, however, solemnly recognised, by the first article of the convention entered into between the commissioners of the parliament of England, and the governor, council and burgesses of Virginia, on the 12th of March, 1651, "That the former government, by the commission and instructions was void and null."—It is observable, that the names of the governor and members of the council, are not prefixed to the acts of this session, as had been usual, in all the preceding ones; and the same rule obtained till the March session 1659-60. During the suspension of the regal government, in England, the governor and council of Virginia were chosen by the house of burgesses, for short periods, only. Sometimes the appointment was made by a resolution of the burgesses; at others, the governor was appointed by an act of assembly; and not unfrequently a collision took place between the governor and house of burgesses, as to the limitation of his power, which always terminated in favor of the rights and privileges of the house.—See resolution of the burgesses of April 30th, 1652—March, 1655—March 1657—March, 1658—March, 1659. It appears, from the proceedings of the assembly of the 1st of April, 1658, that the governor and council undertook to dissolve the house of burgesses; but they peremptorily refused to be dissolved, and passed a number of resolutions declaratory of their own power, and denying the right of the governor and council to dissolve them.

ATT A

GRAND ASSEMBLY

HELD AT JAMES CITY THE 10TH DAY OF OCTOBER, 1649.*

[From a MS. received from Edmund Randolph, Esq. which was once the property of Sir John Randolph, who transmitted it to his son Peyton Randolph, Esq. after whose death, it was purchased, with his library, by Thomas Jefferson, Esq. from whom it was borrowed by Edmund Randolph, Esq.]

The Burgesses names:

Henrico—Mr. Wm. Hatcher.	
Charles City	{ Capt. Edward Hill, Mr. Charles Sparrow.
Warw. County	{ Capt. Thos. Harwood, Speaker, Mr. John Walker.
Isle of Wight	{ Mr. George Handy, Mr. Robert Pitt.

The Statutes at Large; LAWS OF VIRGINIA, Hening, 1823, Vol. 1, pp. 358-9.

In the Name of God Amen I Robert Pitt, Merchant, being sick & weak in Body but good in Mind & of sound Memory Do: ordaine & give for my last will & Testament in manner & forme as followeth

I Give & bequeath my soul to God my maker, Desiring to find salvation & redemption for my soule, & life Eternal through the merits of my Saviour & Redeemer Iesus Christ, who died for me: and my Body to be buried at the Discretion of my Executors I Item I Give & bequeath as a gift of my Dr: & last Will Marthia Pitt, one parcel of Land situate with about the plantation that beareth the title, now linc on a Ridge the toppe of the North side of my Land, wch runs in John Swards for the length, And the breadth towards the South upon the Land wch was first by my Son or my Land my Executors is to be one acre of twenty five fute, in length upon four yeares after my death, which foresaid Land & house wch is to be for the wife, of New Women, And their Heires

I Give & bequeath as a gift, from my Daughter Marthia Pitt, five Cows & five fircal: Calves, wch Cattle of the same sort, as to be kept upon the foresaid Land & not any to be disposed of: wch they are to be named of the same sort & Number is still to be continued upon the foresaid Land, & what shall be over that Number of Cattle shall be disposed of, by the Wives & the Heires of the Children of the Cattle, & the whole profit of the Land, to be for the wife of New Women, & the other half, of the Children of the Cattle, to be for the wife of New Women, or Heires

I Give & bequeath the Dividend of Land, wch if now linc upon being six hundred Acres, & what more linc between Cap: Bridges Street, & in Swards Land, adjoining to it unto my Son: John Pitt, during his life, & after his death to my Grandson: William Pitt And to his Heires for ever /

I Give & bequeath that Land that linc on the North side of the River, that beareth the title, linc on, and the other side Cap: Bridges linc on, for running towards William Earnest, & Northward into the River, unto my Son: John Pitt, during his life, and after wards to my Son: Grandson: John Pitt, & to his Heires lawfully begotten of his Body /

I Give & bequeath unto my Son: John Pitt, that Land that Thomas Turner linc on, & what Land shall be between that Land, given to my Grandson: John Pitt, & Churchland the boundary of wch Land, is to be the same wch running through to the through Thomas Pitt, to Cap: Bridges wch foresaid Land after my Son: John Pitts death, I Give to my Grandson: Robert Pitt, And to his Heires lawfully begotten of his Body /

I Give unto my Daughter, Mary Traffier, the value of seven thousand pounds of Gold & Silver, in ready or ready to be paid out of my personal estate, by my Son: John Pitt or his Heires, More I Give unto my Daughter Traffiers one parcel of Land, one half Acre, & one half Acre, Cloth & furniture, valued up Silver: fift /

I Give & bequeath unto my Daughter, Elizabeth Bridges, a pair of English Rings, being: wch shall be upon Gold /

I Give unto my Daughter, Elizabeth, the most worthie five hundred pounds of Gold & Silver, to be paid unto her yearly to be paid out of the rents of the Land, wch I have given to William Pitt, More I Give unto my Daughter Elizabeth, the most worthie my Cousin of Shires, & should being: of wch wch /

I Give unto my Grandson: Robert Pitt, the sum: of Robert Pitts Dr: & last Will, the sum: of five hundred pounds, & wch of Gold & Silver, or to the value in ready to be paid unto him when he shall come to the age of eighteen: yeares /

And if it should please God, to take away any out of my life, any one of my Grand Children to whom I have given my Land before the death of my Son: John Pitt, then his part of the Land shall be disposed of all the Discretion of my Son: John Pitt: And he is to make all former Wills & Deeds: make my Son: John Pitt, my Executors of this my last Will & Testament, as witness my hand & seals this fift day of June: 1672

Rob: Pitt / Signit

Witness Arthur Jones
Thomas R. Pitt
his marks

This will was proved in an open Court for
the year wright County, January the 9: day 1677
By the oathes of Arthur Jones & Thomas Pitt, And them proved
p me: John Jennings Clerk /

RECORD OF
WILLS, DEEDS, ETC
VOL. 2, PART I
1661-1719
PAGE 128

JULY, 1653—4th OF COMMONWEALTH.

The names of the Burgesses for the severall Plantations,

JULY THE 5TH, ANNO 1653.

James Cittie.

Isle of Wight County.

Hening, Vol. I, p. 379.

Left. Coll. Chiles,
Mr. Wm. Whittaker,
Mr. Hen. Soane,
Mr. Abra. Wattson.

Left. Coll. Robert Pitt,
Major Geo. Howden,
Mr. Dan Boucher.

Hening, Vol. I, p. 384.
This was published in
July 1653.

ACCORDING to an order of this Assembly, vpon the petition of Coll. Nathaniel Littleton, Coll. Argoll Yarley, Major William Andrews, and some other comissioners of Northampton county, Master Speaker, Left. Coll. Edward Major, Left. Coll. Geo. Fletcher, Coll. Thomas Dew and Left. Coll. Rob't. Pitt are nominated as assistants to attend the Governour and Secretarie for the settlement of the peace of that county, and the punishment of delinquents there according to their demerits, the appointment of all officers both for peace and warr, the division of that county, and the hearing and determineing of the businesse of damages between Capt. Daniel How and Left. Coll. John Ja-

LAWS OF VIRGINIA.

Isle of Wight County.

Vpper Norfolk

Coll. Robert Pitt,
Major Rich: Hill,
Major John Bond,
Mr. Nicholas Smith.

Mr. Giles Webb,
Mr. William Denson,
Mr. George Catthmae.

Note that Robert Pitt
is a Colonel. Hening,
Vol. I, p. 328.
March 1659-1660.

William & Mary 1/4 1y
Series 1, Vol. III,
1894-5, p. 297.

- *Colo Robert Pitt & Wm. Burgh, Feb. 13, 1664, 1200 acres Upon one of the branches of the Blackwater, Beg'g, &c., in the branch at the mouth of a small valley. See the foll'g abstract.*
- *Colo Robert Pitt & William Burgh, Feby 13, 1664, 1800 acres On the branches of the Blackwater, Beg'g, &c., in the mouth of a small valley on a branch of the Blackwater 1200 acs, being due by a patent dated the 18th day of Feby, 1664. The residuc, &c.*
- *Colo Robert Pitt, Capt Joseph Bridger & William Burgh, Mar. 21, 1664, 3000 acres Upon the branch of Blackwater, 1200 acs. of sd land formerly granted Colo Pitt & Mr. Burgh, dated Feby 18th, 1664, 600, acs. another thereof adjoined unto the*

' Robert Pitt and Henry Pitt were sons of William Pitt and Mary Pitt, of Bristol. William Pitt was son of Thomas Pitt, who made his will in May, 1613. Thomas Pitt, who patented lands previous to 1646, on the Appomattox, was probably another brother. Robert Pitt's sister Maud married Dr. Richard Russell, of Lower Norfolk Co., referred to by John Ferrar in his verses as that "learned physician." Russell appears to have removed to New England, as did Mary Pitt, another sister, who married Andrew Newell (Mary Pitt died Sept. 26, 1684). (See *New England Hist. and Gen. Mag.*, vol. 45, p. 151; and vol. 49, p. 255.) Robert Pitt was a member of the Council and Lieutenant Colonel. His wife at time of death was Martha, sister of Col. John Lear. He had issue: (1) Robert, dead before 1672, leaving son Robert; (2) Lt. Col. John; (3) Hester m. Col. Joseph Bridger, Esq., of the Council; (4) Elizabeth, m. Nosworthy; (5) Mary m. John Brasseur. His son, Lt. Col. John Pitt, mar. after 1677 Olive Hardy.

William & Mary 1/4 1y
Vol. VII, p. 237.

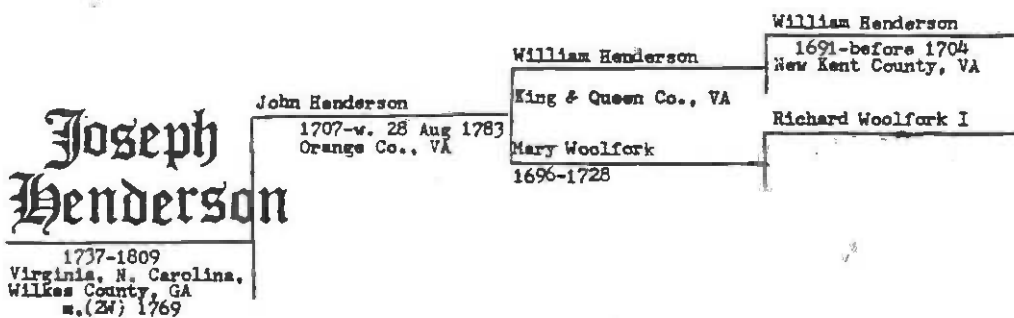
The end of this chapter completes the story of the ancestors of Elizabeth Shivers, wife of Rev. Joshua Sanford Callaway. Study the chart and you will find his mother, Isabella Graves Henderson. The next chapter will address the Hendersons.

Henderson

"There's no sense in going further - it's the edge of cultivation,"
 So they said, and I believed it - broke my land and sowed my crop -
 Built my barns and strung my fences in the little border station
 Tucked away below the foothills where the trails run out and stop:
 Rudyard Kipling

How many times have we told of the emigrant coming to a strange shore in search of land and a better way of life? Then, on to the frontier as he cut the trees and built a cabin where he fought starvation and Indians until he could marry and raise a large family. The story is not new, but it is still true, again, with the Hendersons. There were many Henderson families in early America, particularly in the South. We are fortunate that we know which Hendersons are ours.

Without listing every acre of land, jury duty, and service as a witness, we can recognize these early ancestors, locate them on the map and move on to the ones who were fortunate enough to become leaders among the founders of our country. Some excelled in politics, others were in the colonial wars, but many of them raised corn and tobacco to provide for their children. Again, the great wives of the Hendersons give the link to greatness in the family. It is interesting that an American whose lineage cannot be traced more than two or three generations will marry a lady whose ancestry is on record for twenty generations. That is the way it is in America.



The first of our Hendersons that we have on record is the emigrant, William Henderson, who came to Virginia before 1665. He went "to the edge of cultivation", the rolling foothills and fertile soil of mid-Virginia, west of Fredericksburg and "tucked away below the foothills" of the beautiful Blue Ridge Mountains. There he stayed as the records show him living in New Kent County until 1721, in Spotsylvania County until 1734, and the rest of his life in Orange County. As has been explained earlier, Virginia had large counties in the early times. As settlers came, the counties were divided. Here, William did not move, the county lines were changed. His neighbors were named Wyatt, Turnstalls, and Williams. William Henderson died before 1740.

The next generation is another William Henderson, son of William Henderson. He was born before 1700 on his father's farm when it was in King and Queen County. In 1728, he patented 500 acres in the same county, but it was then Spotsylvania County. This farm is still owned by descendants of William Henderson, but the farm is in Louisa County, today. William married Mary Woolfork. She was the daughter of Richard Woolfork of Abingdon Parish,

Gloucester County, Virginia. He moved, 1704, to Holly Hill, Caroline County. Mary was born about 1689 and baptized a few years later in 1696. She and her son, John, are mentioned in Orange County Virginia Families, p. 125. William Henderson signed his will on 25 Mar 1763 and died before it was probated on 10 November of the same year.

The third generation Henderson in America was John, born in Orange County, in the same area where his father and grandfather had lived. He was born in 1707. At age 21, he patented 500 acres with the evident intention of following in his father's footsteps behind the plow. There is a record in Spotsylvania County, Virginia, Crozier, p. 122, "7 Jun 1732 - John Henderson of Spotsylvania County, planter, to Samuel Brockman of King and Queen County, planter, 1200 pounds of tobacco." Samuel Brockman became John's father-in-law. Daughter, Sarah Brockman, John Henderson's wife, is one lady whose ancestors are recorded back to the days of the crusades. A separate chapter will address the Brockmans. John Henderson died in Orange County. He signed his will on 5 Jan 1779 and it was probated on 28 Aug 1783.

Joseph Henderson is our ancestor in the next generation. He was born in Virginia in 1737. Unlike the earlier Hendersons, Joseph started moving south, down to Danville, VA, and across the state line into Caswell County, NC. Then, he moved across North Carolina to Anson County on the North Carolina side of the Georgia border. Along the way, he would encounter the Lea family,

if he had not known them before back in Virginia. In Anson County, he crossed the path of the Callaways. All these families would end up in Wilkes County, Georgia. From this point, more care will be given to documents which will be needed to prove that Joseph Henderson married Delphia Lea and that they were the parents of Isabella Graves Henderson, the wife of Joshua Callaway, Sr. The Lea family will be the subject of a separate chapter.

ANSON COUNTY 12 July 1774 NORTH CAROLINA
Ord. Job Calloway be overseer of rd from County line to Lince's Cr. and that hands of Zacheriah Henderson, Geo. Runnald, James Rogers, Sr. James Rogers, Jr., John Rogers, John Dunn, Edward Moore, John Walker, Robt. Walker, Stephen Treadwell, Wm. Hendley, Tunstall Rone, John Potete, Joseph Henderson, Jacob Bankston, Andrew Bankston, John Calloway, Jacob Carter, John Martin, William Ellis, Lambert Hopkins, Moses Cocks, John Cocks and John Royal work same.

Albert Eugene Casey was a well known genealogist. He wrote Amite County, Mississippi, 1699-1890, Vol. III. Beginning on page 548, he describes the Lea family. The part that involves Joseph Henderson is on page 561 and 564, below:

p.561

James Lea made his will 28 Mar 1771 Proven Mar 1792 naming sons William Lea, John Lea & Major Lea, executors; children not named; inventory Mar Court 1792, Bk B, p.454 sale of estate 17 Jul, 1792(Rec Bk C p 31) Apr Court 1793; final settlement Apr Ct 1796 (Bk C p 157) Jacob Miles Jr, Luke Lea, Joseph Henderson (for 1st wife), William Lea, Joseph Henderson(2nd wife), Isabella Graves, Paul Haralson & Major Lea, & John Lea executors.(The Caswell County records are confusing since a cousin, James Lea also settled nearby on Kilgore's Branch & had a wife Anne Tolbert), George Lea b 1739 d 1825 was the son of William Lea d Orange 1762 & his wife Mary who d 3 Nov 1784; George Lea who m Lucy Tolbert b 1739 d 1813 lived adjacent to Rev. Luke Lea, his cousin).

Lucinda Lea dau of James Lea & Anne Herndon b St Georges Par. Spotsylvania Co Va c 1746 d c 1769 Orange Co N.C m Joseph Henderson c 1776(& they had: Nancy Anne Henderson d Sardis Church Area Wilkes County Ga Sep 26,1849 m Larry Bankston; Sarah Henderson m John Poteet of Caswell co N.C.) After 1st wife's death Joseph Henderson m (2) her sister;

Adelphia Lea b c 1748 St Georges Parish, Spotsylvania Co Va d Sardis Church Area Wilkes Co Ga 3 Jan,1813,dau of James Lea & Ann Herndon c 1770 & they had: Isabella Graves Henderson d Sardis Church area Wilkes Co Ga Oct 12, 1826 m Wilkes Co Ga Joshua Callaway; Adelphia Henderson d Sardis Church area Wilkes Co Ga Sep 25,1824. (Ref Mrs. Mary Callaway Jones, Macon Ga) John Henderson m Hannah Shaw; Joseph Henderson, Jr d 12 Dec,1841 Sardis Church area, Wilkes Co Ga m Margaret Reynolds; Major Henderson m Polly Strozier 1 Apr, 1799 Wilkes Co Ga & moved to Jasper Co Ga. In 1776 Joseph Henderson beside father-in-law James Lea & bro-in-law John Lea & Major Lea William Lea in petition of inhabitants of northern half of Orange Co N. C to form a new county(Caswell formed 1777). On 25 Oct,1789 Samuel Henderson Sr of Caswell Co N. C. sells Joseph Henderson of Wilkes Co Ga 200 acres land in Wilkes Co Res 2 Jun,1789 (Wilkes Co Dd Bk G.G p 4-5). In 1803 Joseph Henderson of Wilkes Co Ga sells Griffen Smith above 200 acres(Deed Bk RR p 517). On 5 Jun.1799 Joseph Henderson gives 4 negroes to his son Major Henderson (Bk RR p 289) Joseph Henderson of Wilkes Co is sued by Samuel Henderson of Caswell Co. N.C 13 Sep,1805(Deed Bk WW p 196)(Joseph Henderson received lots 3 & 5 in the settlement of James Lea's estate Caswell Co 1792 & I assume thereby that he had children by both Lucinda(Anne) & Delphia Lea).-----

Albert Casey did not waste much paper. He put a lot of information on every page. His genius is evident in his work. The books are regarded highly by family researchers.

As shown, above, Joseph married two times, both wives being daughters of James Lea and Anne Herndon. Our ancestor is Delphia Lea. This unusual first name requires explanation. Actually and oddly, the first name is "Philadelphia". That name was given to girls in the olden times, as it was, also, given to a great American city. The meaning is from the Greek word "Philadelphos" for "brotherly" with a liberal translation "brotherly love". Given to girls, it was shortened by family members, census takers, and others writing the name upon records as Adelphia or Delphia.

Joseph and Delphia lived on Clark's Creek in Wilkes County, Georgia. His land was near to Joshua Callaway. In 1794, Joseph Henderson owned six slaves. He is shown in the tax listing from Some Early Tax Records of Georgia, by Blair, p. 296.

The reader may want to turn back to the map of Wilkes County that is in the Callaway chapter. The tax listing shows Joseph Henderson as number 17 in the district of Captain William Johnston. The farm land is classified into three degrees for tax purposes. Joseph has 703 acres of the worst of the three kinds. He lives next to Joseph Callaway and John Callaway lives nearby. Only one white male is shown on his farm.

State of North Carolina

Department of Cultural Resources

Division of Archives and History



This verifies that the following information is recorded in a manuscript volume in the custody of the State Archives titled "Revolutionary Army Accounts" (Volume I, Page 96, Folio 4):

Reading: An Account of Specie Certificates paid into the Comptrollers Office by John Armstrong Entry Taker of Land in North Carolina -- vizt --

Number: 1241

By whom Granted: Aul^d and MILLE

To whom Granted: Joseph Henderson

Date: 21 Aug 83

Sum: 15 pounds

Interest: 11 shillings, 8 pence

To what Time: 15 April 1784

Total Amount principal & Interest: 15 pounds, 11 shillings, 8 pence

Other information: None

Raleigh, North Carolina

December 4, 19 85

Frank A. Gatton
Chief, Archives and Records Section

State of North Carolina

Department of Cultural Resources

Division of Archives and History



This verifies that the following information is recorded in a manuscript volume in the custody of the State Archives titled "Revolutionary Army Accounts" (Volume A, Page 89, Folio -):

Reading: The United States of America To the State of North Carolina D^r. For Sundries furnished the Militia of North Carolina, Virginia and South Carolina, as allowed by David Wilson Auditor. November 1781 as per Report N^o 31.

Number: 2664

To whom and for what paid: Joseph Henderson, for provisions

Number of voucher: 245

Amount: 2 pounds, 12 shillings, 2 pence, Specie

Other information: None

Raleigh, North Carolina

December 4, 19 85

Frank A. Gatton
Chief, Archives and Records Section

SONS OF THE AMERICAN REVOLUTION

ALBERT

CASWELL

METTS, JR.

(First)

(Middle)

(Last)

Descendant of JOHN HENDERSON (No. 8) is the ancestor who assisted in establishing American Independence while acting in the capacity of Patriotic Service by providing beef, corn, oats, and fodder to General Muhlenberg's Brigade, General Nelson's Brigade and the guard at Brocksbridge commanded by Major Higgins.

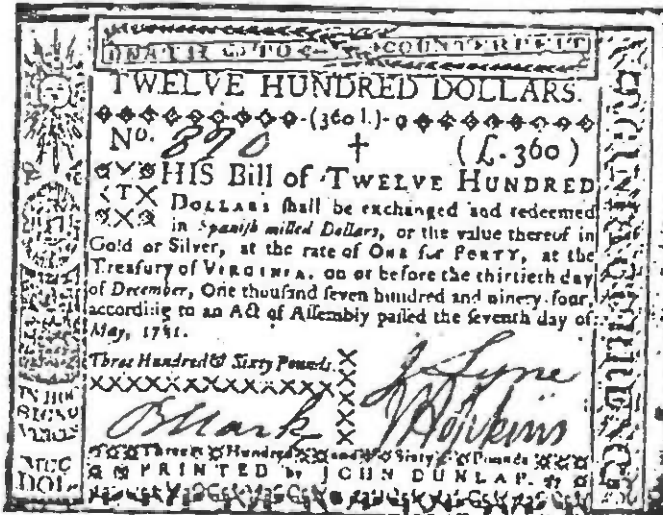
- 8th Gen. 1. Last Will and Testament of John Henderson. Names son, Joseph Henderson.
2. Last Will and Testament of Sarah (Brockman) Henderson, wife of John Henderson.
3. Mildred F. Roberts, "Henderson Family Research", 1973, P. 2.
4. U. S. Census data for Virginia in 1782 and 1785 with notes.
5. John Frederick Dorman, "Orange County, Virginia Will Book 2", 1961, P. 75.
6. William Armstrong Crozier, "Spotsylvania County Records 1721-1800", 1965, P. 122.
7. Nell Marion Nugent, "Cavaliers and Pioneers", Vol. III, 1986, P. 346.

References to ancestor's Revolutionary War services

Janice L. Abercrombie and Richard Slatten, "Virginia Publick Claims - ORANGE COUNTY (Virginia)", 1992, Pp. 1, 14, 15, 42, 43, 47, & 51. These extracts were made at the Virginia State Library and Archives.

William Everett Brockman, "Virginia Wills and Abstracts", 1948, P. 16, This shows John Henderson, husband of Sarah Brockman, at location on the North Anna River at Brocks Bridge, mentioned in the references, above, where he provided corn to Major Higgins in 1781.

Virginia Publick Claims



Orange County

compiled and transcribed by
Janice L. Abercrombie
 and
Richard Slatten
 Iberian Publishing Company
 Athens, Georgia

Orange County Court Booklet

[Index to court booklet not transcribed]

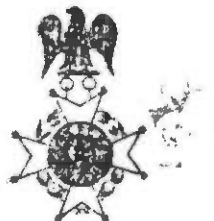
p. 1 At a court held by the justices of Orange County court at the courthouse on the 1st, 2nd, 3rd, 15th, 16th, 26th and 27th day of April 1782 for adjusting the claims made to the said court agreeable to an act made and passed the last session of assembly entitled an act "For adjusting claims for property impressed or taken for public service" The following claims were allowed to be just and reasonable

John Henderson for 525# beef July 1781 £5-9-4½; 59# bacon £2-4-3.

John Henderson for 10 bu corn for Gen. Muhlenbergs brigades cert. by Edward Power Asst. FM June 1781 £1; 26 bu corn for Gen. Muhlenbergs Brigade cert. by Wm. Edmondson FM June 1781 £2-12; 300 bundles fodder for above June 1781 9s; 18 bu corn for Col. Calls Legion LD cert. by John Doswell FM June 1781 £1-16; 5½ bu corn for above June 1781 11s; 52 bu corn for Gen. Nelsons Brigade cert. by

Chas. Lewis BFM June 1781 £5-4; 2½ bu corn for the guard at Brocksbridge commanded by Majr. Higgins cert. by Enoch Ashby QM June 1781 5s; 6 bu oats for 2 teams with baggage of militia going to Culpeper cert. by Wm. Triplett QM July 1781 12s.

The National Society
of the
Sons of the American Revolution



Supplemental Ancestor Certificate

Albert Caswell Metts, Jr.

National No. 118709

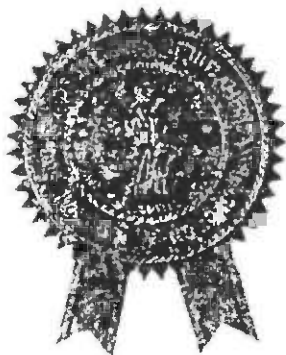
Descendant of

John Henderson

Approved: August 22, 1935

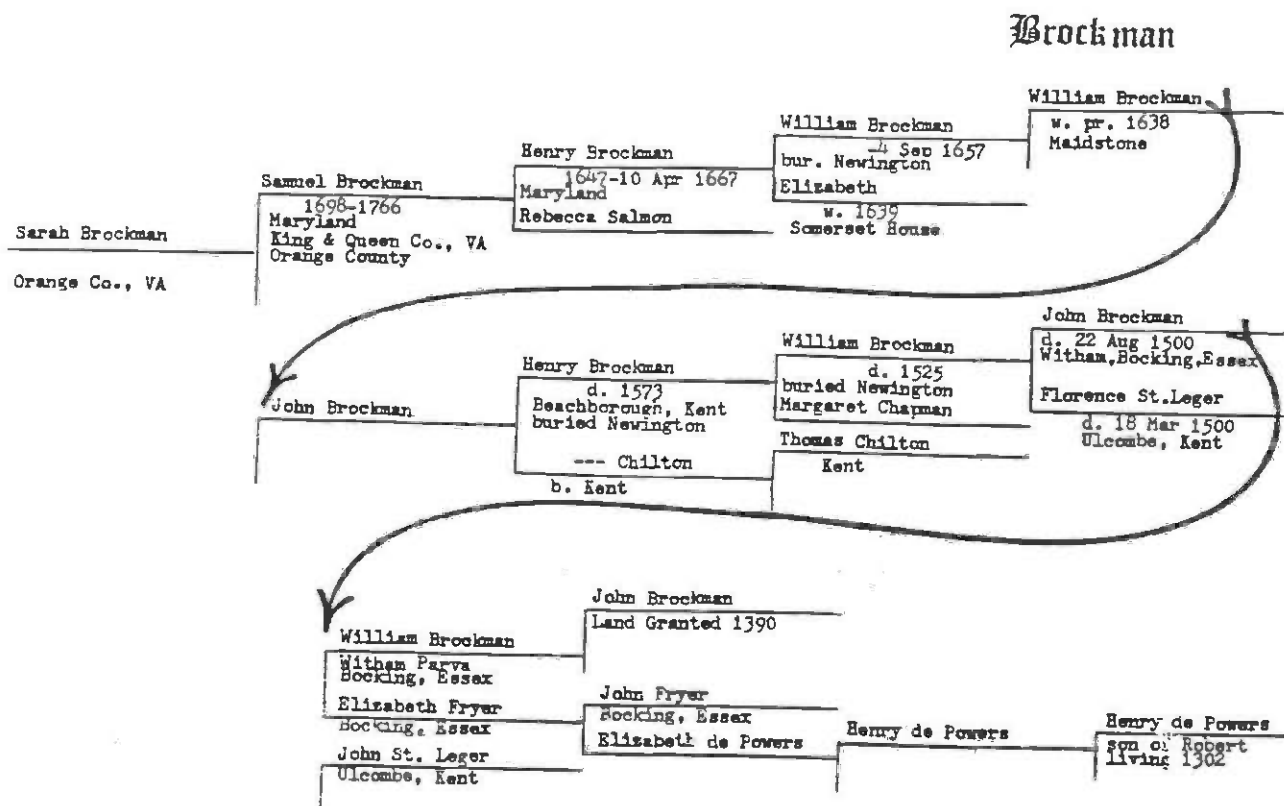
William C. Galt, Jr. DMO

President General



Brockman

John Henderson, of Virginia, married Sarah Brockman. She descended from a long line of Brockmans that are documented on a family chart that was acquired by our cousin, Betty Grissom Wilson, of San Antonio. She found the chart while doing family research in England. It is called Genealogical Chart of the Brockmans, by W.E. Brockman. This discussion will include the direct line only, which is outlined below. Remembering that this book is intended to cover American ancestors, the generations in old England are mentioned briefly. Opportunities are here for further research in England.



John Brockman (1) was the first recorded. Numbers will be used to keep the generations straight. John lived in the Manor of Pirrie, extending to Old Romney and Medley, with more land in Stowing and Crumdale. His grant of land was in 1390. This was the 13th year of the reign of Richard II. The name of John's wife is not known. He had a daughter, Mary, who married Wm. Knatchbulk (not our ancestor!) and a son, William (who is our ancestor).

William Brockman (2) owned and lived in the Manor of Witham Parva (Powers Hall) and he owned the Manor of Fryers in the Parish of Bocking, Essex. William married Elizabeth Fryer, daughter of John Fryer of Bocking. Her ancestry is shown on the brief chart, above, back to 1302.

John Brockman (3) also lived in Witham, Essex. He died 22 Aug 1500. His wife was Florence St. Leger, of Ulcombe, Kent. She was the daughter of John St. Leger. His other children were: Sir Ralph of Ulcombe; Sir Thomas, who married Anne Plantagenet, sister of King Edward IV; James, ancestor of the St. Legers of Devonshire; and, Bartholomew, who married Blanch, daughter of Lord FitzWalter. The St. Legers are of blood royal and further research is

indicated. John and Florence Brockman are buried in the tomb in St. Nicholas Church, Witham, Essex. They had a son, Thomas and our ancestor, **William**.

William Brockman (4) married Margaret Chapman. He died in 1525 and was buried at Newington. Their children were: Joan, Thomas, and **Henry**.

Henry Brockman (5) purchased Beachborough from George Fogge, of Brabourne, Kent. Henry married a daughter and heiress of Thomas Chilton, Esqr., of Kent. Henry died in 1573 and was buried at Newington. His children were William, Julian (girl), and **John** (6).

William Brockman (7) was mentioned in the wills of Grandfather Henry, 1573, and Uncle William in 1604. This establishes the generation six, above, where detail is scarce. William (7) wrote his will 24 Mar 1635 at Maidstone. It was proved in 1638. His wife was dead at that time. They had a daughter, Margaret, who married Daniel Fogge and there was a son, **William**, our ancestor.

William Brockman (8) inherited his father's estate. His wife's name was Elizabeth. She signed her will at Somerset House in 1659. William made his will in 1656 and it was proved in 1657. He was buried at Newington. The children were William, Catherine, Ellen, Elizabeth, and our **Henry**.

Henry Brockman (9), our **emigrant Brockman ancestor**, was his father's executor and heir. He was born in 1647 and was living in Maryland in 1667. He married Rebecca Salmon. Their son, **Samuel**, is our ancestor.

Samuel Brockman (10) was in Maryland, on records, in 1698. He married Mary Madison in King and Queen County, VA, in 1731. His will was proved in Orange County, VA, in 1766. (Orange Co., Book 2, pages 371-4.)

Will of Samuel Brockman, dated 3 Nov 1762

Unto my sons Samuel and William the tract of land which I have in Albemarle County containing about 358 acres to be divided as they themselves think proper. I formerly intended to give my late son John the tract of land containing 150 acres which he lived on at the time of his death and by his last will did devise to his son Joseph, and to prevent any dispute which might arise touching Joseph's title to the said land I do confirm the gift. Unto my well beloved wife Mary during her natural life only my land whereon I now live and all the Negroes and also all my other estate. After her decease, To my son Samuel the tract I now live on. Also one Negro wench Dinah. Unto my son William one Negro Wench Phillis. Unto my daughter Mary Singleton one Negro man George. To my daughter Elizabeth Street one Negro child Winney. Also 15 pounds current money. To my daughter Sarah Henderson one Negro boy Hercules. To sons Samuel and William one Negro man Peter in trust for the maintenance of my daughter Rachel Rogers during her natural life. Peter shall descend after her decease to such of the said Rachel's children as shall be living.

All the rest of my estate be at the death of my wife equally divided amongst my sons and daughters that shall then be living and the children of such as are now or shall be then dead. Such grandchildren shall not be entitled to any greater share than what their father or mother would have been entitled to.

My sons Samuel and William Brockman executors.

Samuel (S) Brockman

Wit: James Madison, William Sims, John White, James Meginnis.

A Codicil was added on 19 July 1765 to distribute four more slaves.

On 25 Sep 1766, the will was proved in court.

Mary Madison Brockman died in 1776. Her will names the children to include our ancestor, Sarah Brockman, who married John Henderson. The James Madison, who witnessed the will, above, would be the father of the 4th President of the United States, James Madison. This fast chapter leaves a lot of names to be explored. Magna Charta lines are probable, here.

We turn, now, to an even shorter chapter on the Madisons.

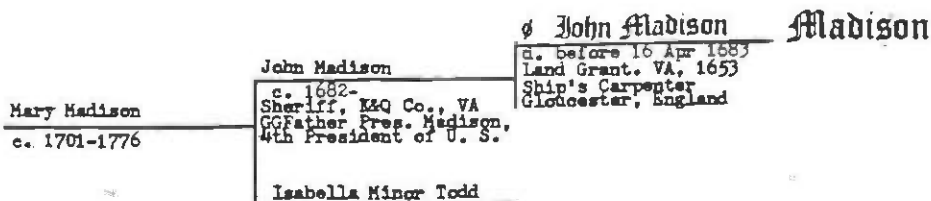
Madison

The chart at the beginning of Oliver Part II shows John Madison Oliver. He is the grandfather of this writer. He was given the Madison name because the family legends told of President James Madison being a member of the family. There is little chance that the exact relationship was known. They may have thought that the line is direct, but President Madison had no children. We do not descend from the President, but we are kin. By looking at the lineage of President Madison, we can start from there and delineate our exact relationship as we note our own ancestry. The lineage of the President is in Burke's Presidential Families of the U.S.A.

A ship's carpenter named John Madison came from Gloucester to Virginia and was given a land grant in 1653. He died before 1683 and left a son, who was named John Madison after his father. John, Jr., was Sheriff of King and Queen County, Virginia in 1714. He married Isabella Minor Todd and they were the parents of both Ambrose Madison and Mary Madison. The two John Madisons were ancestors of President Madison and of our family. Then, Ambrose would become the grandfather of the 4th President, while Mary would marry Samuel Brockman and become one of our ancestors.

We will follow Ambrose, first to give President James Madison's branch, first. Ambrose married, in 1721, Frances Taylor, daughter of James Taylor and Martha Thompson of Orange County, VA. They were the parents of James Madison, Sr., the man who witnessed the Brockman will. He was born in 1723 and in 1749, married Eleanor (Nelly) Rose of Caroline County, VA. They were the parents of President Madison.

Now, we return to our lineage, going back to the common ancestor, John Madison, Jr. His daughter Mary, sister of Ambrose, married Samuel Brockman. Therefore, Mary was the great aunt of the president. If you go back to the chart at the beginning of Oliver Part II, you can find Joseph Henderson, who was in the same generation as President Madison. They were second cousins. This writer can claim to be a second cousin, six times removed!



The chart, above shows three generations of Madisons. With the Hendersons, Brockmans and Madisons behind us, it is time to go back to the Oliver chart and find Delphia Lea, wife of Joseph Henderson. The title of the next chapter is "Lea".

August 25, 1987

The information on the other side of this page was all that was presented about the Madisons in the second edition of this book. A critic of one of the genealogical societies was very critical of this short chapter, writing, "The statement is made that the Madison alliance in this genealogy derives from the great aunt of the President of that name. But for the proof of this connection one looks in vain".

Well, if "one" had looked at a book titled "Orange County Virginia Families, Volume II and Supplement, page 89, "one" might have read:

"The pattern of immigration, while disorganized by political pressures is definite. The St. Leger's settled in King and Queen County, Virginia. Florence St. Leger, who married John Brockman, had a brother Thomas who married Anne Plantagenet, sister of King Edward IV. Henry, grandson of John Brockman, married a Chilton, and the Sheltons became one of the early wealthy Virginia families, and had the first brewery in Albermarle County, Virginia. Elizabeth, sister of Sir William, married Robert Curteis, and the Curtis family came in droves to Virginia. John Curtis lead immigrants from the Barbados and on one trip about 1670 he was ship-wrecked and returned on a passing ship to Barbados, finally landing in Maryland and went over to the adjoining counties of Northumberland and Middlesex in Virginia and right up to Orange County with the Brockmans. The Robertson, Robinson and Potter families had their own sloop running from Barbados to Virginia and they became one of the prominent families of the state, and of course the Randolphs need no comment. Anne, daughter of James Brockman, baptized January 25, 1652, married Sir Miles Cooke, and the Brockmans of Virginia had land transactions with the Cooks in Louisa and Orange. They intermarried with the Henderson (Joseph Miles Henderson) and a daughter of Joseph Collins married John Cook. Julian, daughter of Henry Brockman (d.1573) married Thomas Broadnax, and this family settled in Virginia. Thomas changed his name to May and later to Knight in 1738. Henry Brockman registered into Maryland and with his adventurous career, it is not curious that he did not marry till late in life and that there was one child only, Samuel. (I discount that Henry was son of Thomas). The family after his purported marriage to Rebecca Salmon lived in Maryland for awhile, where the the son was born, and I think it most likely that Henry died there, and that Samuel came over to Virginia with his mother who remarried, probably a Pettie, and he Samuel married Mary, daughter of John, who was grandfather to President Madison. [John was great grandfather, not grandfather - see previous page.] The close tie of the Madisons, Sims, Petties and Brockmans is indisputable. The elder Thomas Madison left a will November 4, 1674, recorded in Rappahannock where he leaves property to his godchild Rebecca Pettie, daughter of Robert Pettie." The one note in brackets and the underscoring are added to the text.

The book was written by William Everett Brockman in 1957 using the "private collections of J. W. Browning, Orange County Clerk from 1901 to 1936, including Bonds, Guardianships, Administrations, Revolutionary War Claims and Importations, from official records, including Two Thousand marriages from 1747 to 1824."

In the Preface of this book, p. iii, it states that, "Many genealogies are so well documented that no one will read them, the story is lost in references." No claim was made that every generation would be "proved" to the reader. To do so would have required many books instead of one. The book described, above, may be right or wrong - we will never know. We do know that that Samuel Brockman's will was witnessed by James Madison, father of the President. I think that the reference is right or the Madison chapter would not have claimed Mary. The Madison name has been given to several members of the family including my grandfather. Note that his name was John Madison Oliver, not James Madison Oliver.

After writing about Mary Madison, this is an appropriate place for a general discussion of research and proof in genealogy. In my young years, I had no interest in family history. While teaching at the Citadel in Charleston, where the first Metts came ashore, I spent my idle time shooting quail or fishing in the marshes. During 15 years in Washington on the Army General Staff, I worked. The best research facilities in the world are there. Late in life, as is true with so many people, I became interested in genealogy. Maybe it is because older folks have more time, have their child raising years behind them and need an intellectual outlet. All over America, the family research hobby has been growing every year. Most of the people participate for the pleasure it gives to them. As with any hobby, there will be those who enter for profit and reputation.

We have been fortunate to have inherited some excellent family history. The Genealogy of the Metts Family, by Henry Richard Metts in 1859, was hand written after a visit to Newberry County, SC. His descendants tried to keep it up to date. Then, on the Oliver side of the family, my grandfather's sister, Ella Oliver Richardson, (see pp. 119 and 121) became a very wealthy widow in New Orleans. She remembered the family legends and went to work to prove them. She spent many days and long hours climbing the stairs to the attic of the Richmond, Virginia, courthouse, looking for documents. Then, she went to Jamestowne and on to Europe. She became a member of the Colonial Dames. Now, years later, with modern facilities to research, I found a few errors in her research, but they were easy to correct and I have joined the Jamestowne Society using her line. These examples prove the value of research and publication of the results - even if there are some errors.



Ella Oliver Richardson-Genealogist

Long ago, there were a number of people, with names like Nugent, Wurts, Browning, Draper, Herndon, Boddie, Gwathmey and Heitman who have been respected highly as family researchers and their work is documented in the books in the library. Those old researchers did not have the modern libraries, archives, and organizations that we have today to help them, but they did have some advantages that we do not have today. They could talk to or write to people older than they were. Remember that Draper wrote to Colonel William Pillow about the Nickojack Battle when the colonel was almost 100 years old. Also, the old authorities had many documents available that are gone today. Without copy machines, they took the information and used it. General Sherman has been unjustly blamed for most of the document losses. He did the best he could to burn every courthouse between Atlanta and Savannah, but the Confederates burned Richmond with all the Virginia records. Also, many old court houses were burned when they were heated by wood stoves, by careless smokers or by lightning. In Louisville, Mississippi the stupid elected officials saw fit to have the county records loaded onto a truck and sent to the dump! Genealogists have stolen many records and documents from courthouses. My Metts 3rd cousin, Sarakay Jordan, was the State Librarian at the Texas Archives for many years. She will agree that the researchers in the genealogical library took many of the old out-of-print and valuable books from the collection. For these reasons, we cannot know what was available to the old writers.

The art of genealogy is a questionable science, in my opinion. Very much as so-called "Management Engineers" call themselves engineers, when they could not build an outhouse, some genealogists build reputations upon some very flimsy foundations. In recent years, some young people have tried to make their reputations as authorities by criticism of those old masters that are not still living to defend their positions. These critics declare that certain previously accepted pedigrees are not valid because various generations have not been "proved". They appoint themselves as the authorities concerning proof. They talk about primary and secondary proof. They take on no burden to "PROVE" that the claims in the pedigrees are wrong, nor do they present what they consider to be true. Here, they are morally dishonest. Their motives are suspect. They enjoy making snide remarks, innuendos and insinuations about other people's work.

The entire question boils down to the question concerning what constitutes "Proof". I am not a lawyer, but I have studied some law. The value of direct evidence versus circumstantial evidence has always been a major subject of argument in court. Few genealogists are lawyers. Some of these genealogists do not have basic educations. Under no known authority they declare what is real proof and what is not proof. In court, many eye witnesses have pointed at an innocent man and declared him guilty. That is direct evidence. Genealogists (most) consider birth certificates and death certificates the kind of direct evidence they approve. Well, my birth certificate reads that I was born on 4 Apr 1921, but I was born on 24 Apr! My grandmother's death certificate reads that she was born in Tyler, Texas, but she was born in Carthage, in another county. Her father, on the death certificate, is one of her husband's kin! Often, circumstantial evidence is far more dependable than direct evidence. When a person has the right name and is in the right place at the right time and no other persons are there, we get to the President's recently publicized ha ha about when something looks like a dog, barks like a dog, and acts like a dog, it probably is a dog.

In paternity cases, even blood tests are questioned when the name of the father is in doubt. There is no way to prove beyond the shadow of doubt that any man is the father of his child. The mother may know, but she is a prejudiced witness! In my book, you can read what I wrote about Reuben Long. The authorities, Heitman and Gwathmey, were wrong. So what? This does not mean that their books are worthless.

In all family research, there is a lingering doubt about accuracy. Genealogy is not an exact science as is mathematics. The best you can do is to examine your information, study the surroundings, consider the dates, and decide whether you will claim the ancestor. If someone does not agree, that is their problem!

In writing my book, I have been very fortunate in finding work done by other genealogists. In spite of our worthless postal system, I manage to contact many people who are studying the same lines that belong to me. Some wonderful friends and cousins have been found. We work together. When there is a chance of getting copies of original documents from Archives, orders are prepared and sent. The end result is a book compiled from many sources.

Still bothered by the burr under my saddle, another inquiry was made. The copy of the one page from the Brockman book had been acquired through inter-library loan from a library in west Texas. Written in type-script, the line about Mary Madison Brockman had a space with intervals which suggested that there may have been an alteration of the line to change the meaning. In order to determine the authenticity of the page, in April of 1988, I went to Orange County, Virginia. In the local library, all of W.E. Brockman's books were shelved. The page 89 was identical to the Texas copy. Still not convinced, I went to the Library of Congress in Washington, D.C., and examined the copy filed by the author. It, too, was identical to the Texas copy, so the spaces were made intentionally by W.E. Brockman. Is it possible that Brockman could be wrong about Mary? Of course it is! If he was wrong, then the Madison chapter is not valid.

Lea (Leigh)

Many years ago, in 1946, a cablegram came to Albert C. Metts, Sr., in Clarksdale, Mississippi. The cable read, "You have a granddaughter named Virginia Lee Metts.". The response to Germany was, "Since you are naming your children after the states you must intend to have forty-seven more.". Nothing was said about the "Lee" - that is a hallowed name in Dixie. But, in Germany, Tessalia Repka, the Hungarian house maid said, "Huh! Everyone I know named Lee is Chinese.". Actually, Ginny's mother is Elizabeth Lee Gray Metts and she was born in Virginia. We did not know that we had ancestors named "Lea".

About forty years later, we learn that we had some great Lea ancestors back in Virginia. Most authorities on that family believe that Lee, Lea, and Leigh are all the same name and that the early family members came from England. While family histories may differ a little, the background of the family is said to have been traced back to the tenth century.

The old tale begins with a French noble named Reginald Reynor, who came to England with William the Conqueror. They took the land away from the Saxons and Reynor was given two manors in Surrey. Neither of the castles was good enough for Reginald, so he chose a large grassy meadow and built "Croton Hall". In England, in those days, they called a meadow a lea. It is still defined that way in Webster. Reynor came to be called "Reynor de Lea". With time, the family became "de Lea" and, finally, "Lea". Each generation had many children. The manor was passed from oldest son to oldest son. Younger sons had to make their own way in the world. Some of them came to America. The name was spelled as it sounded, or according to the preference of the person who bore it.

No one is certain about when the first Leas came to America. As legends gradually became history, documents start to show the Leas in Virginia.

Lea

Delphia Lea

1748-13 Jan 1813
b. Spottsylvania Co., VA
bur. Sardis Church,
Wilkes Co., IA

James Lea
w. 28 Mar 1771
pr. Feb 1792
Soldier, NC Militia
King & Queen Co., VA
St. Stephen's Parish
d. Caswell Co., NC
m. 1731
Anne Herndon

William Lea, Esq.
d. by 16 Mar 1784
Orange County, NC
Justice, County Court

Frances Major

Colonel William Lea
1654-1703
Pres. VA House of Burg-
esses; Judge, Commander
Militia, King Co., VA
Mary (Green)

William Lea (Leigh)
c. 1623-before 1663
Surrey Co., VA
Alice

William Lea
1588-1653
James City, VA

Dr. Albert E. Casey has been described as the foremost authority on the Lea family. In his opinion, the first American Lea was William Lea (or Leigh), born in England about 1588. He settled in Charles City County, VA, 14 Jul 1608, and died in James City, VA, 22 Mar 1653. A patent was issued to Capt. William Leigh in August 1642 for 1000 acres on the north side of the Charles River and Poropotanke Creek and transportation of his wife, Mary, and daughter, Mary.

A second generation William Lea was born in 1623. He was in Surrey County, VA, 28 Feb 1647, and got a land patent in Charles City County, VA. He

claimed transporting ten persons. On 6 Feb 1654, he bought 500 acres on the south side of the James River, west of Indian Swamp, called Choreek. The name of his wife was not recorded, but he had four sons, James, Francis, Allister, and **William**. Our ancestor, William was born in 1654. At this point, documentation becomes much better to prove the history of the Lea family.

COLONEL WILLIAM LEA	married	MARY GREEN
1654-1703	1675	

This third generation William Lea (Leigh) was an outstanding individual. A leader in many ways, he was active in politics, military affairs, industry, and social affairs. Large land holdings and wealth were his initial interests. Land was easy to acquire in early Virginia if the person was willing to move to the frontier. This he did - to the "freshes of the Mattaponi". Without detail of each patent in St. Stephen's Parish, on the north side of the Mattaponi, he acquired 370 acres (1682), 920 acres (1684), 500 acres (1684), 400 acres (1685), 400 acres (1692), and 3474 acres (1699). When he died, he owned over 6200 acres of land. His home was at the landing on the Mattaponi River about one mile below the mouth of Apostique Creek. In a letter written by Francis Nicholson, Governor of Virginia, he wrote, "William Leigh lived on the branch of the York River so he hath a great river to pass before he comes to Williamsburg." The Mattaponi flows into the York.

William Lea was a great favorite of and advisor to the Governor. A member of the Council of State, he was involved in the formation of King and Queen County, became a Burgess for that county in 1691, and went to the General Assembly where he was one of the most influential men. He was known to be a staunch supporter of the governor. On 15 Jul 1702, he became the first Judge of the Admiralty Court and he served as a Governor of the College of William and Mary.

William Lea rose to the rank of Colonel in the militia and in January 1701/02 was Commander in Chief of militia for King and Queen County. His death was described in a letter from Benjamin Harrison to Philip Ludwell, who was in London. The letter, dated 28 May 1703, said, "Col. Leigh fell from a horse lately and cracked his skull, and is dead. Tis said he was drunk at Parson Bowker's on the Sabbath Day and going home happened to that accident".

William Lea married Mary Green in 1675. Her parents were Charles Green and Elizabeth Iverson, who had married in England and come to Northhampton, VA, about 1653. Elizabeth's father, Abraham Iverson, Sr., and his wife had come to Blackjack Bay, Gloucester County, VA, about 1636.

The children of Colonel Lea and Mary were: John, the oldest child, who inherited all the land; a daughter, who married Valentine Ware; our ancestor, **William Lea**; and another daughter, who married William Haines.

WILLIAM LEA	married	FRANCES MAJOR
1682-C.1784	c. 1705	

As second son of the great Colonel, William Lea, Jr., had a hard act to follow. Big brother John got all of the land, so he had to get his own farm. But he had learned a lot from ole Dad! A petition was sent to King William and the first name was Colonel William Leigh. There were many pages of names. The petition is on the next page.

The date was 1701/2, so William was a very young colonel. He lived in St. Stephen's Parish, where he had been born. In those days, the county lines changed as the population grew. It would seem that a family moved, but, actually, the county line moved.

William was granted 100 acres in St. Stephen's Parish in 1703 and he bought another 100 acres on the north side of Mr. John Madison's mill (another

ancestor). It was on the north side of the Mattaponi and he paid two pounds of tobacco per acre. Tobacco was legal tender in those days. By 1704, the quit rent rolls showed his farm as 230 acres and he was serving as a Justice of the Peace.

**Declaration
of the
Inhabitants of King and Queen
County
1701/2**

Great Britain.
Public Record Office, London.
Colonial Office 5, Volume 1312 - Part II.

To

His Most Sacred Majesty William the third by the Grace of God of England, Scotland, France and Ireland King Defender of the faith &c^a.

The Humble Address of your Maj'ties Justices of the peace, High Sheriff Malitia Officers and other your Maj'ties Leigh people Inhabitants of the County of King and Queen in Virginia.

May it please your Majestie

Our remote distance not favinging us So Early as your Maj'ties Loyall Subjects of England and Several other your Kingdomes and Dominions yett now we Heartily and sincerely beg leave to Congratulate your Maj'ties Safe return to England, w'th our hearty thanks to Almighty God for so great a Blessing and wish there had been no other Occation for this Address but to have given your Maj'tie the Repeated Assurances of our fidelity and zeal for the Safety and Prosperity of your Sacred person and Governm't.

But the acco't we have received of the late Strange proceedings of the ffrench King in unduly taking upon himself to Set up the pretended prince of Wales for King of England, Scotland and Ireland, as it gives us a Just Indignation at the great Injury and Indignity Offered to your Maj'tie - So we think it our Duty upon this Occation to give your Maj'tie fresh Assurances of our Steady Loyalty, w'ch no such pretence or Attempts Shall ever alter.

We are too Sencible (Great S'r) of our late Danger of Poperly and Arbitrary power, and of the great goodness of God in delivering us by advancing your Maj'tie to the throne, to be So Unthankfull to God, and so ungratefull to our Deliverer to Court new Dangers and do Unaminously resolve to the utmost of our Capacities and Abilities to Ventor our lives and ffortunes in defence of your Maj'ties Just Right, to this your great Colony and Dominion and shall ever pray for your Maj'ties long life and Reign over us.

→ Wm Leigh Col.

(many other names!)

About 1705, William married Frances Major, from another influential colonial family. The Majors will be the subject of a separate chapter. The home of William and Frances is located by these words in a document, "Wm Lea hath a quarter in the Old Stone Neck below Mr. Fortner's store on west side of Great Harquake Creek in St. Stephen's Parish on north side of Mattaponi River."

Frances and William may not have had many acres of land, but they did have plenty of children - nine. Our ancestor, James, was the first. Then,

they had a daughter, then William, three more daughters, John, another daughter, and Francis.

William's wife, Frances Major Lea, died before he did, because he remarried a second wife named Mary. After William died, the land near John Madison's mill was not disposed of until 1784. At that time his son, James Lea, applied for his share as son and heir of William Lea This is very important because it proves that William is the father of James.

POWER OF ATTORNEY FROM JAMES LEA-CASWELL COUNTY, NC, DEED BOOK B, Page 36.

STATE OF NORTH CAROLINA:

Know all men by these presents, that I, James Lea (the son and heir of William Lea, dec.) of the County of Caswell, have constituted made, and appointed my true and trusty friend, Thomas Phillips of the County and State aforesaid, my true and lawful attorney for me [and in] my name and stead to ask, demand, sue for in law, so as to obtain a good and lawful right and title to a certain tract or parcel of land, lying in King and Queen County in the Commonwealth of Virginia, containing 25 acres on the waters of Mattapone [Mattaponi], lying near Maddison Mill which said land fell to me by line of heir-ship, and upon receipt or recovery of such land as aforesaid, I do empower him to contract, make sale or dispose of the said land, and sign, seal and execute lawfully to any person whatsoever a good and authentic deed of conveyance in fee simple and also all and everything needful and necessary whatever to be done touching the above premices [sic], I do include and perform as fully, largely and amply to all intents and purposes as myself might or could do if I was personally present.

In witness whereof I have hereto set my hand and seal this 16th day of March Anno Dom. 1784, in the Year of American Independence [the Eighth].

Signed, sealed and delivered

In the presence of

Herndon Haralson, Jurat

William Lea

/s/ JAMES LEA

The above letter of attourney was duly proved in open court by oath of Herndon Haralson, one of the witnesses thereto, and ordered to be recorded.

TEST. A.C. MURPHY, C.C.

The land, above, was part of the 100 acres that were granted to William Lea on 16 Dec 1714. Earlier in this chapter, reference was made to this land on the north side of the Mattaponi River near Madison's mill in St.Stephen's Parish, King and Queen County.

The NSSAR has approved James Lea for Patriotic Service during the American Revolution. The Division of Archives, State of North Carolina, Hillsborough Treasury Office, Bundle 30, Certificate # 84, states that he was paid for the service on 7 August 1782.

JAMES LEA
1706/07-1792

married
C. 1731

ANNE HERNDON
1706-1777

As this chapter continues, emphasis is directed to the proof, above, that James Lea was born in St. Stephen's Parish, VA, the son of William and Frances Major Lea. James married Anne Herndon about 1731. She, as her mother, was from an influential colonial family, the subject of a separate chapter in this book. They may have lived on William's farm until James could buy the 200 acres recorded in Spotsylvania County in 1739. That county is very near the Lea land on the Mattaponi.

Opportunity was to be found further west and south. James was granted 520 acres in North Carolina in 1756. The land was in Orange County (later Caswell County) on both sides of County Line Creek. For some reason, James made his will on 28 Mar 1771. It was not proved until 21 years later, March 1792. He named sons William, John, and Major as executors, left the farm to wife, Anne, for the rest of her life, then to Major Lea. The rest of the estate would be divided among the children: William, Isabella, Nancy, Luke, Major, John, Lucinda, and **Adelphia**. The will did not name all the children, but the settlement of the estate listed them. That paper was copied and discussed in the Henderson chapter.

While living in Orange County in 1773, James signed the petition for separation of Caswell County, done in 1777. In 1784, James applied for final settlement of his father's estate as discussed above.

The life of Delphia (or Adelphia or Philadelphia) Lea, who married Joseph Henderson was discussed in the Henderson Chapter. Now, after the notes following this chapter, we will turn to the ancestors of Frances Major, wife of Colonel William Lea, Jr.

The story told in this chapter is presented in a straight forward manner as decided by most genealogists who have studied the family. To avoid confusion, notes follow to give more information as indicated.

NOTE 1:

Few references were included, above. The Lea lineage is proved by:

1. Dr. Albert E. Casey, M.D., The History of Amite County, Mississippi, 1699-1890, Vol. III, pp. 548-572, 1957.

2. Martha Lea Hayes and Richard T. Garner, How I'm Kin to Whom, The Lea Family in America.

3. Malcolm Hart Harris, Old Kent County, Some Accounts of the Planters, Plantations, and Places in New Kent County, Vol. I, pp. 400-402.

4. John Frederick Dorman, The Virginia Genealogist, Vol. 5, No. 3, Jul-Sep 1961, pp. 99-106.

Dr. Albert E. Casey died the day after Christmas, 1982. Mrs. Casey lives in Birmingham and Dr. Casey's brother, Powell A. Casey, lives in Baton Rouge, LA. He has Dr. Casey's notes. He has been generous in giving permission for the pages about the Lea family from Dr. Casey's book to be used here. These are reproductions and have not been retyped. Dr. Casey's book is typescript. Note the complete proof given and the accuracy of his remarks. Also, consider his listing of other outstanding genealogists that helped compile his work. Page numbers above the items are from his book.

Lea Family of King & Queen Co. Va, Caswell Co.N. C. & Amite Co. Miss.

(In early records Lea & Leigh were used somewhat interchangeably even by members of the same family. Since 1800 some lines have used Leigh, some Lea, & others Lee or even Lay. The names Lea & Leigh in the deep South, with which I am acquainted trace back almost entirely to Col. William Leigh of King & Queen Co Va.)

The K. & Q. Co records were burned & the wills & estate papers of Col. Lea & of his sons John Lea & William Lea Jr are not available. Both John Lea & William Lea Jr left sons named James Lea & William Lea & both James Leas & one William Lea settled in Caswell Co N. C. & the other William Lea in Amelia Co Va. Because William son of John Lea chose Zachary Taylor as his guardian & because William Lea of Caswell Co named his eldest son Zachary, I assume that William Lea of South Hyco & Cobbs Creek was William, son of John Lea & that James Lea who lived nearby on Kilgore's Branch & father of Capt. Gabriel Lea was his brother & son of John Lea. This leaves James Lea Country Line Creek, Caswell Co N. C., John Lea of South Hyco Caswell Co N.C & William Lea of Amelia Co Va & Francis Lea of Louisa Co Va as sons of William Lea Jr. I assume that Ferdinand & Richard Leigh of K & Q Co were the sons of John Lea Jr since they were not listed as minors in the Spotts Co estate settlement of John Lea Sr.

I assume further that John Leigh Jr b 1699 retained the spelling of the name used by his grandfather, inherited the bulk of Capt John Leigh's lands in K & Q & Hanover Cos and became the father of Richard & Ferdinand Leigh of K & Q Co Va. This compilation is the work of many hands, especially of my cousin Frances Powell Otken of McComb Miss, the late Edwin Holmes Lea of Richmond Va, John V. McElroy of Springfield, Ky, John Goodwin Herndon of Haverford Pennsylvania & Mrs. Maud Florence Harrelson of Yanceville, N.C. I have taken the liberty of integrating my own data with theirs making the best fit I could with the facts at hand.)

William Leigh b c 1588 d c 1653 James City Co Va settled Charles City Co Va 14 Jul, 1608 with his bro-in-law Henry Dawkes (Nugent, Cav & Pioneers p 15) On 22 Mar 1653 William Lee is deceased James City Co Va (Va. Mag Hist. V5 p 101).

William Lea b c 1623 was witness Surry Co Va Feb 28, 1647, executor of Gregory Rawlings June 3, 1653 & sells to William Thomas 1653; buys 500 acres in Charles City Co on Surry border 1654 & lists William Lea as one of 10 persons imported; in 1655 assigns the same 500 acres to Rutherford & Curry in Charles City Co; in 1663 William Lea sold 350 acres of Surry land to Peter Greene on or before Feb 21, 1663. Perhaps had 4 sons James Lea (living with son James Jr 25 Dec 1712 in Beaufort Precinct N.C. see Albemarle papers N C Vol I, 1678-1714 Dept A & H Ralieghe). Francis Lea (Francis Leigh, Esq., Member Executive Council of Va July 15, 1680, 3 Aug 1680 see Exec. Council of Colonial Va p 9, 11 Vol June 11, 1680-Oct 28, 1739.) Allister Lea (York Co Va 20 Dec, 1666 York Co Va Court Min) & William Lea (of K & Q, Col. & President Va House of Burgesses, etc etc see below)

William Lea possibly son of above b c 1654 d 1703 K & Q Co m Mary (Green) ca 1675; In lawsuit York Co Va (bk 6 p 31) Court Feb 1677/8 William Lea sues Elizabeth Brett; 370 acres Apr 20, 1682, 920 acres Apr 25, 1684, 500 acres (from Edward Chilton) Oct 21, 1684, 400 acres Apr 18, 1685, 400 acres Apr 28, 1692 all in St Stephens Parish, on North side of Mattapony River (first in New Kent later became King &

Queen 1691; Land Patent Books of Va 7, p 155 p 390, 418, 490; Bk 8 p 139 copied by AEC Va State Library); with Benjamin Harrison of James City Va 3,474 acres K & Q Co Branch of Mattapony Creek adj. Capt. Wm. Smith. Coll. Goodrich, Stephen Bonbridge, Indian Path & Morris Goodrich(Land Patent Book 9, p 214, 1695-1706 dated June 6, 1699, copied by AEC; apparently purchased Benj. Harrison's part because son John Lea had the entire 6200 acres after Wm's death in 1703; the last grant probably in what later became Spottsylvania Co Va). William Leigh, Burgess New Kent Co Va 1691, Apr 17 (Swen Index 13 V 95) Col. Wm. Leigh, Robert Beverley & John Waller founders of community of K & Q(see Fleet Vol 7 p 12) Capt. Wm Leigh Justice K & Q Aug 12, 1692(Fleet Vol 6 p 1)Burgess K & Q March 2,1692, March 2, 1693, Sept 24,1696; May 13,1702, Jun 18,1702, March 19,1703(Stannard's Register Col Va Albany N Y, 1902) William Bird Burgess from K & Q Apr 20,1704 in the place of Leigh, deceased) William Leigh July 15, 1702 first Judge of the Admiralty Court of Va (Swen Index 22 V 245) Council of Va William Leigh appt'd Member July 1,1699 (Fleet Vol 6 p 15) Coll. Wm Leigh Commander in Chief of Militia K & Q Co , Coll Wm Leigh(Fleet Vol 6, p 11,15) Commander in Chief of Militia K & Q Co Jan 31, 1701-2 Capt Wm Leigh Militia Troop K & Q 1698(Fleet Vol 7 p 5). Col Leigh,Chairman of Comm. for Propositions & Grievances of Va House) Burgesses Aug 26, 1702(Fleet Vol 7,p 19) June 3, 1699 William Leigh, Colonel & Commander in Chief Militia K & Q Co Va(Exec Jour.Council of Col Va Vol I 1680-1739) Oct 25, 1700 Lt. Col. William Leigh represents House of Burgesses before the Council of Va, also ~~WED~~ Dec 18,1700 (Exec.Jour.Council of Col Va Vol I 1680-1739) Capt John Waller removed from job as Sheriff of K & Q Co by the Governor for "discovering" that Coll Leigh(the Governor's then great favorite) had overreached upon the County several thousand pounds of tobacco"(Fleet Vol 7 p 19,27). In tax list of 1699 based on 1698 figures Gloucester Co Va paid largest tax in Va. K & Q Co 2nd largest & a 4th more than the 3rd county. K & Q had the greatest number of men in the militia of all counties of Va(Fleet Vol 6, p 7) In the land grants, & transfers(complete intact files for Col Va in Va State Library examined by AEC July 1948) William Leigh was the only Lea, Lee, Leigh, Ley, Lay who received lands in the New Kent, King William or K & Q Cos Va up to 1704 and none was made to him after May 1703. All of his grants were in St Stephen's Parish(except the large grant of 3474 acres part of which was in Essex on the North side of Mattaponi River totalling 6,064 acres between Apr 20, 1682 & June 6, 1699. No other person by the name of James or Wm.Lee, Lea, Leigh, Lay received land in any part of Va between 1655 & 1704, Wm. Lea's land bordered upon the lands of James Taylor(Capt. in Militia & fellow Burgess) George Chapman, Thos. Kenp, John Atkins, Samuel Clayton, John Stark, Richard Tunstell, Thos. Hall, John Pigg, Robert Bagby, William Herndon, Capt Wm. Smith, Coll Goodrich, Stephen Bonbridge, William Wyatt On July 14, 1703 Col. William Leigh, Burgess for K.& Q Co Va is deceased(Exec Jour Col Va Vol II p 332,1680-1739 AEC) Letter of Benjamin Harrison to Philip Ludwell dated May 28, 1703 "--Coll Leigh fell from his horse lately and cracked his skull and is dead. Tis said he was drunk at Parson Bookers on the Sabbath Day, and going home happn'd to the accident", (B Fleet K & Q Co Abstracts Vol 7 p 30). The quit rent rolls of Virginia for 1704 except for the counties of the Northern neck have been published(Va Mag Hist. Vols-28-34 q.v.) The only persons of the name of Lea, Lee, Leigh in K & Q Co for 1704 were John Leigh who had .6,200 acres & William Lee with 230 acres. No person of the spelling Lea was listed in Va 1704, no James Lea, Lee or Leigh, and only one other William namely William Lee who had 350 acres in York Co. John Leigh is Capt. of K & Q Militia June 17, 1703(Fleet Vol 7, p 10) William Leigh is Justice of the Peace for K & Q Co & James Taylor Sheriff 1704(Public Rev Office London, Col Cff.

Vol 5, 1314, 35, III 1704; Fleet Vol 7 p 41). Petition of Inhabitants of K & Q to his Majesty asserting loyalty March 12, 1701-2. "We are too sencible (Great Sir) of our late Danger of Popery and Arbitrary Power" Signed among others by William Leigh, Coll'; James Taylor, Capt; Henry Madison, Tho. Claiborne, John Waller, Sheriff, W. Claiborne, Capt., Abraham Willson, Corn't, John Leigh. The records of K & Q are lost but since Capt. John Leigh received the bulk of Coll. Leigh's estate(Provision seems to have been made for the purchase of other lands for the widow & younger children q v.) I assume he was the eldest son, & William Leigh, the younger. I am not certain about Matthew Lay across the Mattaponi River (Va State Library, Land Patents' Book #10, p 47 copied AEC July 1948) "William Leigh son of Col. William Leigh hath a quarter in the old Stone Neck below Mr. Fortson's store on the West side of Great Harquaque Creek in the said Parish of St Stephens on the North side of Mattapony River. Guy Smith Clerk of the county of K & Q, 19 Dec. 1711. William Lea, K & Q Co Va dated Oct 16, 1703 Warrant directed to Matthew Page, Esq., Escheator for said county of King & Queen. 100 acres of land in K & Q from Thomas Ware, dec'd. William Lea purchases it ADJ. John Madison's Mill, being on the North side of the Mattapony River in St Stephens Parish. Corner hickory of John Taylor's landing to Anne Wiltshires line, to Thomas Camp's line, Rec. Dec. 4, 1714(Land Pat. Bk 10, p 214 Va State Library copied AEC 7-20-1948). 600 acres K & Q North side of Mattapony River beginning with Frederick Fortson's corner his E N E line. 100 acres, & 500 acres North side of Mattapony River beg. with Fortson's corner near branch of Harquaque Creek adjoining Thomas Hickman to back line of Fortson & William Henderson, & back to Henderson & Harris to land of Peter Ford. 100 acres to Ralph Mazey Oct 1, 1661 New Kent Co. & 500 acres Sept 12, 1665 for transporting 10 persons, escheated from Ralph Mazey(Major?) Aug 21, 1703 & purchased by Mary Leigh, Valentine Ware & William Haines Recorded May 2, 1705 (Land Pat. Bks. 5, p 488, Bk 9, p 657 copied AEC Va State Library). Also on May 2, 1705 Madam Mary Leigh, Valentine Ware(deed K & Q 1731-2) & William Haines purchase 260 acres, K & Q Co (originally New Kent Co. adj. Peter Ward or Ware which he bought of Coll. Wm. Claybourne E N E to lands of Edward ----- (Cardingbrooke) to John -----, Matthew Jennings of William Henderson Feb 22, 1666 Rec Apr 23, 1681 Bk 7 .)

The children of Col. William Lea and wife Mary seem to have been : son , John Lea b c 1677 d c 1729 K & Q Co Va); dau b c 1679 who m William Haines of K & Q Co Va; son William Lea b c 1782 St Stephens Parish'm(Frances) Major; dau b c 1784 who m Valentine Ware of York & K & Q Cos, Va.

WILLIAM LEA & (FRANCES) MAJOR OF KING & QUEEN CO VA.

William Lea son of Col. William & Mary Lea b c 1682 New Kent Co Va d before Mar 1784 probably in King & Queen Co Va(Records destroyed) m c King & Queen Co Va possibly Frances Major of K & Q Co(Va Land Pat Bk 5, 1661-6 p 368) & they had 4 sons (James Lea of Caswell Co N C on 16 Mar, 1784 applies for 1/4 of 100 acres of land in St Stephens Parish, K & Q Co Va granted William Lea Oct 16, 1703(Va Land Pat Bk 10 p 214) In Quit rent rolls of 1704 William Lee has 230 acres K & Q Co(Va Mag Hist. V 28-34) & is J. P. (Bev Fleet, K & Q Co V 7 p 41) On May 2, 1705 Col Wm. Lea's estate is party recorded(he died early in May 1703) The K & Q records were burned but virtually all of the 6200 acres of Col Lea went to eldest son Capt. John Lea according to Quit rent rolls. But dated Aug 21 1703 & recorded on May 2, 1705 in Va Land Pat Book 9 p 657, & 649 Madam Mary Leigh, Valentine Ware & William Haines are granted 860 acres K & Q Co St. Stephens Parish near William Lee. No other Lee, Lea or Leigh in K & Q Co except William & John Lea sons of Col Wm Leigh).

William Lea King & Queen Co Va dated Oct 16, 1703 Warrant directed to Matthew Page, Esq. Escheater for said county of King & Queen. 100 acres of land in King & Queen from Thomas Ware dec'd. William Lea purchases it for 2 lbs of tobacco per acre being on the North side of Mr John Madisons Mill on the North side of the Mattapony River in St Stephens Parish. Corner hickory of John Taylor's landing to Anne Wiltshires line, to Thomas Camp's line, Rec. Dec. 4, 1714 (Ld Pat Bk 10 p 214 Va State Library copied by AEC 7-20-48).

William Leigh, son of Col William Leigh hath a quarter in the Old Stone Neck below Mr. Fortson's store Guy Smith, Clerk of the County of King & Queen 19 Dec, 1711 (Land Patents Book #10 p 47 Va State Library) On the West side of Great Har-quake Creek in the said Parish of St Stephens (copied by AEC July 20, 1948) on the North side of Mattapony River.

Book B, Page 36, Caswell County Records. STATE OF NORTH CAROLINA -

Know all men by these presents that I James Lea (the son and heir of William Lea, decd) of the County of Caswell, have constituted, made and appointed my true and trusty friend Thomas Phelps of the County and State aforesaid, my true and lawful attorney for me, my name and stead, to ask, demand, sue for in law, so as to obtain and good, lawful, right and title to a certain tract of parcel of land lying in King and Queen County in the Commonwealth of Virginia, containing 25 acres on the waters of Matiponi River, lying near Madison's Mill, which said land fall to me by the line of heirship, and upon receipt of recovery of such land as aforesaid, I do hereby empower him to contract, make sale and dispose of said land, and sign, seal and execute lawfully to any person whatsoever a good and authentic deed of conveyance in fee simple and also all and everything needful and necessary whatever to be done touching the above premises, I do include and perform as fully largely and amply to all intents and purposes as myself might or could do if I was personally present. In witness whereof I have hereto set my hand and seal this the 16th day of March Anno Dom. 1784. In the year of American Independence.

Signed, sealed and delivered in presence of: H. Haralson, Jurate, William Lea, James Lea. The above letter of attorney was duly proved in open court by oath of Herndon Haralson, one of the witnesses thereto and ordered to be recorded. A. C. Murphy, C. C.

Besides James Lea of Caswell Co N C the other 3 sons (the 100 acres of 1703 grant was divided into 4 parts) of William Lea Jr seem to have been William Lea

-557-

of Amelia, d 1770; John Lea of Caswell Co N C. & Francis Lea of Louisa Co. Beverly Fleet, K & Q Co Abstracts Vol 6 p 4 - Petition of inhabitants of K & Q to his Majesty asserting loyalty - "We are too sensible (Great Sir) of our late Danger of Popery and Arbitrary Power" March 12, 1701-2 Signed among others by William Leigh Col., James Taylor, Capt., Henry Madison, Tho. Claiborne, John Waller Sheriff, W. Claiborne Capt. Abraham Willson, Corn't. John Leigh.

It would seem from the foregoing that Capt John Lea was Coll. William Leigh's eldest son since he inherited the 6000 acres patented by his father & that William Lee (Leigh & Lea) was the younger son.

James Lea b c 1706 St Stephens Parish King & Queen Co Va d Jan or Feb 1792 Caswell Co N C n K & O Co Va c 1731 Anne Herndon dau of Edward Herndon & Mary Waller (see special treatise for their family)

William Lea & Frances Major possibly had daus b 1708, 1712, 1714, 1717. & 1722.

JAMES LEA & ANNE HERNDON OF K & Q & SPOTTS. COS. VA & OF CASWELL CO N. C.

James Lea son of William Lea & (Frances Major) b St Stephens Parish King & Queen Co Va c 1707 d Caswell Co N.C. . early 1792 n King & Queen Co Va c 1731 Anne Herndon dau of Edward Herndon & his 1st wife Mary Waller(Ref. John Goodwin Herndon) b 1706 King & Queen Co Va d Caswell(Orange) Co N.C. c 1777.

James Lea of St Stephens Parish, King and Queen County planter for F 21 l s 6 d curr buys 200 acres in Spotts. Co. Va from Joseph Brock of St George's Parish Spotts. Co. Gent. & Mary his wife on May 1, 1739. Edmund Waller, witness May 1, 1739 Deed Book C 1734-1742 Spottsylvania Co. Va (Crozier Vol I p 147 copied by AEC)

James Lea, Jos. Brock & John Graves witnesses Aug 6, 1745 to sale of 100 acres for F 26 5 s curr from John(X) Pain & Frances, his wife, of St Georges Parish Spotts. Co. to John Talbert of same Co & parish--part of a tract devised William Samms by his father in Par. & County afsd. Rec. Aug 6, 1745 (Crozier Vol I p 170 copied by AEC)

James Lea granted 600 acres in Orange Co. N.C. on March 3, 1752 Lord Granville Grant #01263 (The Granville Grants were later declared void. Copied by AEC in Sec. State's Office Raleigh July 1948).

James Lea and James (X) Chapman, witnesses May 5, 1752 in St Georges Parish to transfer of 34 acres from James Stevens & wife Alice of St Georges Parish to James Samms sd par. & co. (his brother William Samms) Deed Bk E 1751-1761 (Crozier Vol I p 189 by AEC).

James Lea & Ann his wife of St George's Parish Spotts. Co Va for F 80 curr. sell 200 acres in Spotts. Co to John Chapman of aforesaid parish & county. No witnesses recorded March 3, 1753 Deed Book E. 1751-1761 (Crozier Vol I p 192 copied by AEC)

James Lea, John Sandridge & Richard Poindexter witnesses dated Feb 23, 1754 Rec March 6, 1754 to deed by Thomas White & Betty his wife of Spotts Co to John Thornton & William Waller Gent, Church Wardens of St George's Parish, Spottsylvania Co Va for 640 lbs tobacco 144 sq. poles being a sq yard of 12 poles on each side lately laid off for a Church Yard at the New Church at E N E including said Church which stands in the far center thereof in trust. New Church Yard (Deed Book E 1751-1761 Spotts. Co Va. Crozier Vol I p 195 copied by AEC).

James Lea granted 520 acres in Orange Co N. C. (later Caswell) on both sides of Country Line Creek (#800 issued 12 Nov. 1756 Grant 195 Bk 12 p 449 Sec. State's Office Raleigh N.C. Grants 1663-1800 copied by AEC July 1948)

James Lea made his will 28 Mar. 1771 Proven Mar 1792, naming sons William Lea, John Lea & Major Lea, executors; children not named; inventory Mar Court 1792, Bk B p 454 sale of estate 17 Jul, 1792 (Rec Bk C p 31) Apr Ct 1793; final settlement Apr Ct 1796 (Bk C p 157) Jacob Miles Jr, Luke Lea, Joseph Henderson (for 1st wife), William Lea, Joseph Henderson (2nd wife), Isabella Graves, Paul Haralson & Major Lea, & John Lea executors. (The Caswell Co N. C. records are confusing since James Lea's cousin James Lea also settled nearby on Kilgore's Branch & had a wife Anne Tolbert, George Lea b 1739 d 1825 was the son of William Lea d Orange 1762 & his wife Mary who d 3 Nov 1784; George Lea who m Lucy Tolbert b 1739 d 1813 lived adjacent to Rev Luke Lea, his cousin).

Page 564 has the discussion of Lucinda and Adelpia Lea. That part of Dr. Casey's book was copied in the Henderson chapter.

NOTE 2

THIS NOTE ADDRESSES A BOOK WHICH DOES NOT AGREE WITH THE LINEAGE GIVEN IN THIS CHAPTER. If correct, it would replace William Lea, Jr., with his older brother, John, who inherited the 6200 acres in Virginia, and William, Jr., and his wife, Frances Major, would not be our ancestors. Accordingly, the chapters on Major and Mason would become void. This chapter, as it is written, is considered to be correct.

Louise Graves, of Dallas, Texas, published Graves - Twelve Generations - Some Descendants and Kin, in 1977. The book, as written, gave the same lineage as is used in this chapter. Then, on 20 Aug 1981, Graves published an Addendum No. 1, ten pages, in which she changes her mind. It begins, "Conclusive and documentary evidence is given herein that James Lea, of County Line Creek, Caswell County, N.C. (d.1792), and William Lea, of South Hyco Creek, Person County, N.C. (d.1804), were brothers; that they came to North Carolina from Spotsylvania County, Virginia; and they were minor sons of John Lea and wife, Ann, of King & Queen County, Virginia, when both parents were deceased by 1731".

Graves gives Dr. Casey credit for his work, then says, "Dr. Casey was contacted by me, and in March of 1979 concurred that certain of his conclusions were incorrect and agreed that James and William Lea of North Carolina were brothers and children of John Lea, as projected in this article."

Well, in the opinion of this writer, the ten pages do not include "conclusive and documentary evidence". She shows that John Lea had sons named William and James, brothers. That is considered to be true. One James married an Anne Tolbert. There were more than one James and more than one William. All the brothers and sisters, cousins and kin moved together and lived near each other in those days. She describes a "dim" Bible note "penned" on a "page" where she reads clearly "Jas. Lea brother to Captⁿ William". Again, **there were brothers named James and William - several pairs of them.** Many of the usual old papers are listed that prove nothing new.

Next, Dr. Casey was quoted, but no **evidence** was given. **Heresay means nothing.** Exactly what did Dr. Casey say? Did he understand and was he thinking about the sons of John? As soon as the addendum was read, a letter was sent to Dr. Casey. Much later, a response came from his brother, Powell A. Casey. He said that his brother had died of a stroke in 1982. Powell Casey is elderly, but is very actively writing a history book at this time. He is in frequent contact with Mrs. A. E. Casey. They tried to find some record of the Dr. Casey - Graves interaction, but have been able to find nothing in the notes left by Dr. Casey. In Powell Casey's last letter, dated 26 Apr 1985, he said, "It would be impossible for her [Mrs. A.E. Casey] to verify whether Albert fully agreed with the conclusion Mrs. Graves came to as to the relation of the Leas coming to North Carolina from Virginia. I suggest that you go ahead and use pages 561, 564, 548-550, 556, and 557 from Albert's Vol III of Amite County and also show Mrs. Graves conclusion as another view. I will put your letter with the extensive Lea notes which Albert gave me and let my grandchildren some day restudy it."

The detail and care given Dr. Casey's work makes it hard to believe that he would give an easy answer to a complicated question unless he were ill and aged.

The North Carolina Archives have the 1756 Tax List of Orange County, NC. Numbers that identify it are NC 90A and #3230. The fold of the book made first names be cut off in part, but overwriting is correct.

James	Lea & Servant	2
Mrs Lewis	Hoisell	1
William	Wilson	1
John	Kelley	1
Conck	Prock	1
ward	Williams	1
Samuel	mill Sarratt & Sons	3
Thomas	mas Hues	1
George	oral Grimes	1
gfc	Dublin	1
James	Graford	1
Hugh	igh Lubings	1
James	Mrs Lea	1
William	William	1
William	Lea n	1
Nigrae		1
Benjamin	rtin Carter	1
William	William Lea on Gobs	1
ek n	Nigrae	1
Zachariah	chariah Lea n	1
Nigrae		1
William	William Lea n	1

The page, left, had 75 names in two columns. To the right of each name are numbers of whites and blacks. Names are not alphabetical, so probably, proximity of names shows nearness of homes, such as, along a creek.

So, living near each other are two James Leas, three William Leas, and a Zachariah Lea.

John Lea (1677-1729) son and heir of the great William (1654-1703) had seven children: John, Catherine, 2 daughters, Elizabeth, William (#6), and James, (#7). William (#6), above, had a Jachariah (1715-1788) and a William.

James Lea (#7), above, married Anne Tolbert c. 1746 and lived in Caswell County. They had a William and a James, Jr.

Q.E.D. It would be easy for Graves to find brothers named James and William Lea, even as sons of John Lea. Still, there was another, the second, James Lea, ours, who married Anne Herndon.

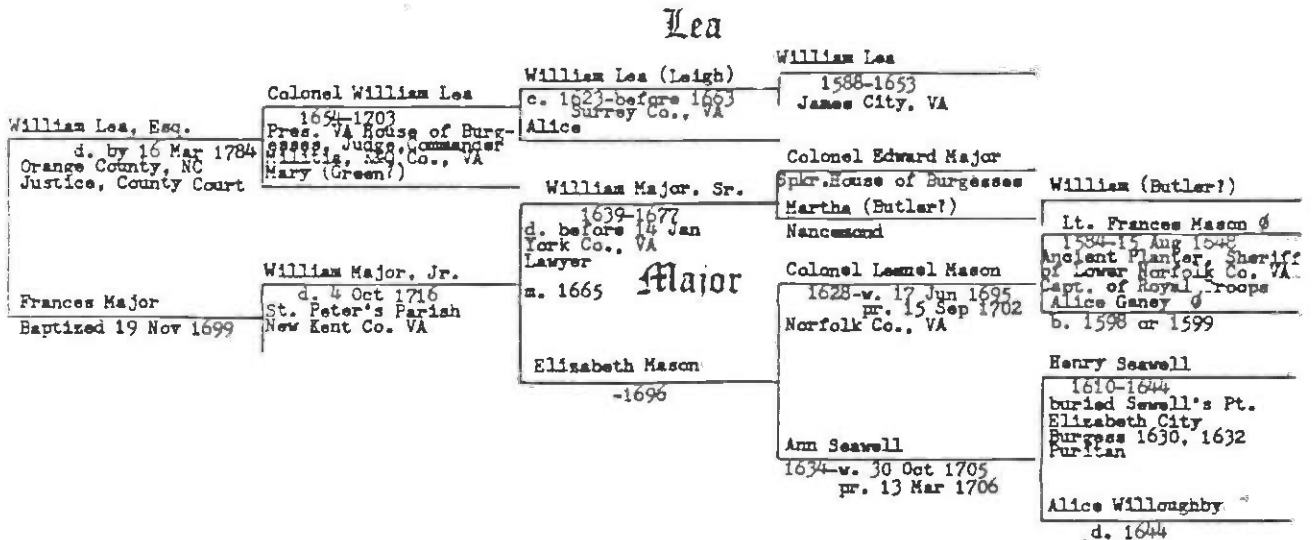
The original Graves book in the Dallas library had been marked and deleted so that pages 71, and 132 could not be read in the original form, so they were read in the Texas State Library.

The one unrefuted fact remains that the Caswell County, NC, Deed Book B, p. 36, has the power of attorney of James Lea. It states, without reservation, that James Lea is "(the son and heir of William Lea, dec.)"

The location of the land on the Mattaponi by the Madison mill makes the identification of William Lea complete.

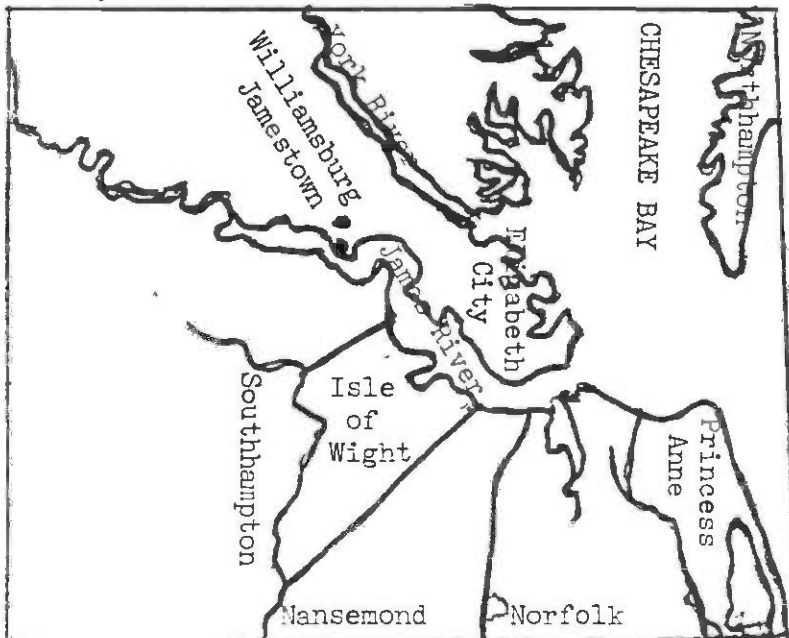
Major & Mason

This chapter is devoted to two surnames for several reasons. Both families were ancestors of Frances Major, who married William Lea, Jr. This chart expands the Oliver chart and shows the relationship with the Leas.



Both Majors and Masons had similar histories. They were early colonists, influential persons, and came from England. They lived near each other in Virginia. Also, a practical reason for discussing both together is that the information in this chapter is taken almost entirely from one great old book published in 1915. James Branch Cabell wrote The Majors and Their Marriages. The book is complete, detailed, referenced, and written in perfect English. The condensation in this chapter may encourage family members to find the book and read, at least, the first fifty pages.

It is appropriate, at this point, to go back again and review a few dates and facts about early Virginia history. The first colonists came to Jamestown in 1607, thirteen years before the Mayflower landed up north.



Starvation, disease, and Indian warfare almost destroyed the first colony in Virginia. Our ancestor, Lt. Francis Mason, arrived on the ship "John and Francis" in 1613. Robert Pitt came in 1637. The second Indian massacre was in 1642. By 1649, about 15,000 English and 300 Negroes lived in Virginia. These dates will give meaning to the stories that follow. The Major family will be first, then the Masons.

Edward Major was born in England in 1615. He came to Jamestown on the "Bonadventure" in January 1634/5. (These two year dates are given because of a calendar change.) He was recorded first as a "head count" by Robert Bennett in Charles River County. The "head count" means that Bennett claimed to have brought, or transported, Edward to America. Accordingly, Bennett got 50 acres of land. Robert Bennett's brother, Richard, was Governor of Virginia in 1652-1655. Both Robert and Richard were close friends of Edward Major. Some believed them to have been related back in England. When Robert died, he left money and a mourning ring to "my friend Edward Major" and another ring to "Martha Major, wife of my loving friend". This type event was usually reserved for kin.

"FFOR the preservation of the puritie of doctrine & vnitie of the church, *It is enacted* that all ministers whatsoever which shall reside in the collony are to be conformable to the orders and constitutions of the church of England, and the laws therein established, and not otherwise to be admitted to teach or preach publickly or privatly; And that the Gov. and Counsel do take care that all nonconformists, vpon notice of them, shall be compelled to depart the collony with all conveniencie."

Edward Major settled in the part of Norfolk County that became Nancemond. He acquired 450 acres on the Nancemond River in 1637 and in 1645/6 added 50 more. Also, at that time, he patented 300 acres in Warwick County. Without doubt, Edward was a Puritan. The Bennetts brought many Puritans from England and Nancemond County was known as a center for that religion. As such, they were non-conformists, not belonging to the Church of England, and in violaton of the law established by Gov. Berkeley in 1642. (see, above)

Then, in 1644, the second Indian massacre came. Many believed that the Lord was angry with the Church of England and Governor Berkeley for the way he had been treating the Puritans.

Being an outlawed Puritan did not hinder Edward. The Governor appointed him Justice of the Peace in 1646 - for the rest of his life. He was called a "most able, honest and judicious" citizen. For every case tried, he got 30 pounds of tobacco from the loser.

All free men from 16 to 60 were in the militia and they fought the Indians. Officers were selected by the Governor. They were always called by their rank and great honor went with the position. Edward Major became a Lieutenant Colonel in 1653.

The Virginia House of Burgesses was the Legislature, Edward served five terms as Burgess and became Speaker of the House in 1652 (The same year that Richard Bennett became Governor.) Edward held the most important position that the House of Burgesses could give him. As such, he was paid by every taxpayer in Virginia.

Colonel Edward Major died about New Years of 1655. He had married twice: first, c. 1635, Martha, probable daughter of William Butler - and, second, c. 1652, Susanna, daughter of Lt. Col. Walter Aston of Charles City. By Martha, he had four children: Edward, William, Robert and Martha. William is our ancestor.

William Major of York is the second generation. He was born before 1639, because he was of age in 1660 when he established his home on the tobacco plantation left to him by his father. His father, the J.P., may have encouraged him to become a lawyer in addition to farming. There was a problem, however. Texans have been heard to say that all lawyers should be lined up and shot down like dogs, but that is nothing but Texas talk! It was worse in old Virginia. Lawyers were despised. Just before William came of age in 1657/8, the House of Burgesses passed this law:

"WHEREAS there doth much charge and trouble arise by the admittance of attorneys and lawyers through pleading of causes thereby to maintain suites in law, to the greater prejudice and charge of the inhabitants of this colony, for prevention thereof be it enacted by the authority of this present Grand Assembly that noe person or persons whatsoever within this colloney, either lawyers or any other, shall pleade in any courte of judicature within this colloney, or give counsell in any cause or controversie whatsoever for any kind of reward or profit whatsoever, either directly or indirectly; vpon the penalty of five thousand pounds of tobacco vpon every breach thereof."

The law was enforced strictly for ten years, then its patent absurdity lead to gradual lack of enforcement, although the law remained on the books. There were no practising attorneys in Virginia from 1657 to 1667. William raised tobacco. Then, he started by representing himself and gradually and cautiously took on very small cases, then larger ones. Many of his suits are on record.

William became to be called William Major, the elder, after his son, William came along. On the plantation, the family lead a good life to the extent that such was possible in those days. There were few luxuries in Virginia. When William, the elder, died in 1677, he had no will, so his estate was appraised at 85 pounds, 16 shillings, and 5 pence. The list of items has over a hundred lines, naming many old household wares. He had three indentured servants. There was quite an amount of pewter and brass. There were three "alchemy" spoons. They were gold plated. In those days there were no eating forks. He had 3000 fourpenny nails - valuable items. Either William or one of his servants must have been in the shoe repair business. Listed were 110 shoe heels, 1500 hobnails, 3 pair of "damified" shoes (old word that means broken or worn), 3 pair of children's "boddies", and 5 pair of children's first shoes. There was some silver, probably brought from England by his father. A "Trunke of writtings" must have been his legal files.

William Major, the elder, married Elizabeth Mason, daughter of Colonel Lemuel Mason of Norfolk County. That family will be discussed further in this chapter. Elizabeth and William had three children, William, Lemuel, and John. Elizabeth outlived William. She was a widow for three to five years and married Captain Thomas Cocke of Norfolk County. They had daughters Mary and Anne.

In old Virginia, widows usually married again, sometimes four or five times. On the other hand, young girls married at age 12 to 16, bore annual children, and died young in many cases. The husbands married again. Young widows on a plantation without grown sons, were surrounded by semi-barbarous blacks newly brought from the wilds of Africa. Many of the white servants were criminals from English jails. The widow married for her security.

William Major, Jr., is the third generation. Less is known about this man than about his father or grandfather, but there is definite evidence that he is the son of William, the elder. William, Jr., was born about 1657, probably,

because he had to be of age when he patented 130 acres in York County in 1678. Young men did not wait very long after coming of age to try for their land. He sold the farm in 1686/7 for 3500 pounds of tobacco and went to St. Peter's Parish in New Kent County, further west. In the deed selling the land, he is described as "son and heir of William Major, late in the county of York deceased".

William Major, Jr., patented 150 acres in New Kent County, 7 Nov 1700 and another 150 acres in 1705. Later, in 1715, he acquired 376 acres that had belonged to his brother, John. William, Jr., died 4 Oct 1716. The name of his wife is not on record, but his children are given in church records. Our ancestor, Frances Major, who married William Lea, Jr., was baptized 19 Nov 1699. She had brothers named John and Thomas. This completes the lineage of the Majors, so we can turn to the Mason family. William Major, Sr., of York married Elizabeth Mason.

Lt. Francis Mason of Elizabeth City and Norfolk Counties was born in 1594 and came to Virginia on the ship "John & Francis" in 1613. At that time, the Jamestown colony was in dire straits. Francis was accompanied by his wife, Mary, and their daughter, Anne. Mary and Francis were living in Basse's Choice in 1623/4, and she was dead before January 1624/5. She lived through the first Indian massacre of 1622.

In 1624, Francis Mason and his new wife, Alice Gayney, were listed on a muster roll. She was born about 1598 in England and came to America in 1622 on the "Margaret & John".

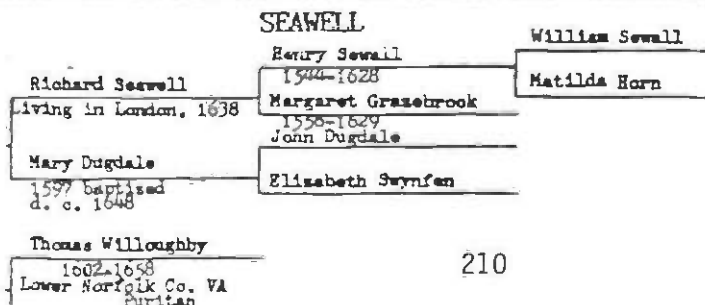
Francis Mason had five servants who came to Virginia between 1619 and 1622. The family settled in Lower Norfolk County by 1636. In 1637, he became a Justice of the Peace, serving on the first court in the county. He continued as a Justice until 15 Aug 1648. He became a Church Warden in 1640 and was Lieutenant Mason in 1642. That year, he patented 1,250 acres at "Hoggon Point" and 200 acres more at a later date. He qualified as High Sheriff 5 Mar 1646. Lt. Francis Mason was dead by 7 Nov 1648. He died without a will.

By his first wife, his children were Anne and Francis. Both died before their father. After the death of Mary, Lt. Mason married our ancestor, Alice Gayney about 1625. They had Lemuel Mason, our ancestor, and Elizabeth, who married James Thelaball.

Colonel Lemuel Mason was the second generation in America. The second son of Lt. Francis Mason, he was born in 1628. He was a Justice of the Peace for Lower Norfolk County from 1650 until his death in 1702; was presiding justice after 1669, a major in the militia in 1658, and colonel from 1665 onward. He was Commander in Chief of the Norfolk County Militia in 1699.

Lemuel Mason represented Lower Norfolk in the House of Burgesses for eleven sessions from 1654 to 1693. His will, dated 17 Jun 1695, was recorded in Norfolk 15 Sep 1702.

Colonel Lemuel Mason married Ann, daughter of Henry Seawell of Elizabeth City and Lower Norfolk Counties. They had ten children. Our ancestor, Elizabeth Mason, who married William Major, was the first child. She was followed by Lemuel, George, Thomas, Frances, Alice, Mary, Dinah, Margaret, and Anne.



The small chart, above, extends the one at the beginning of this chapter. These are the known Seawell and Willoughby ancestors in England. The first Seawell in America was Henry, born c. 1610. He was living in Elizabeth City County, VA, in 1630. He represented the Upper Parish of Elizabeth City as Burgess in 1632 and Lower Norfolk in 1639. He died about 1644.

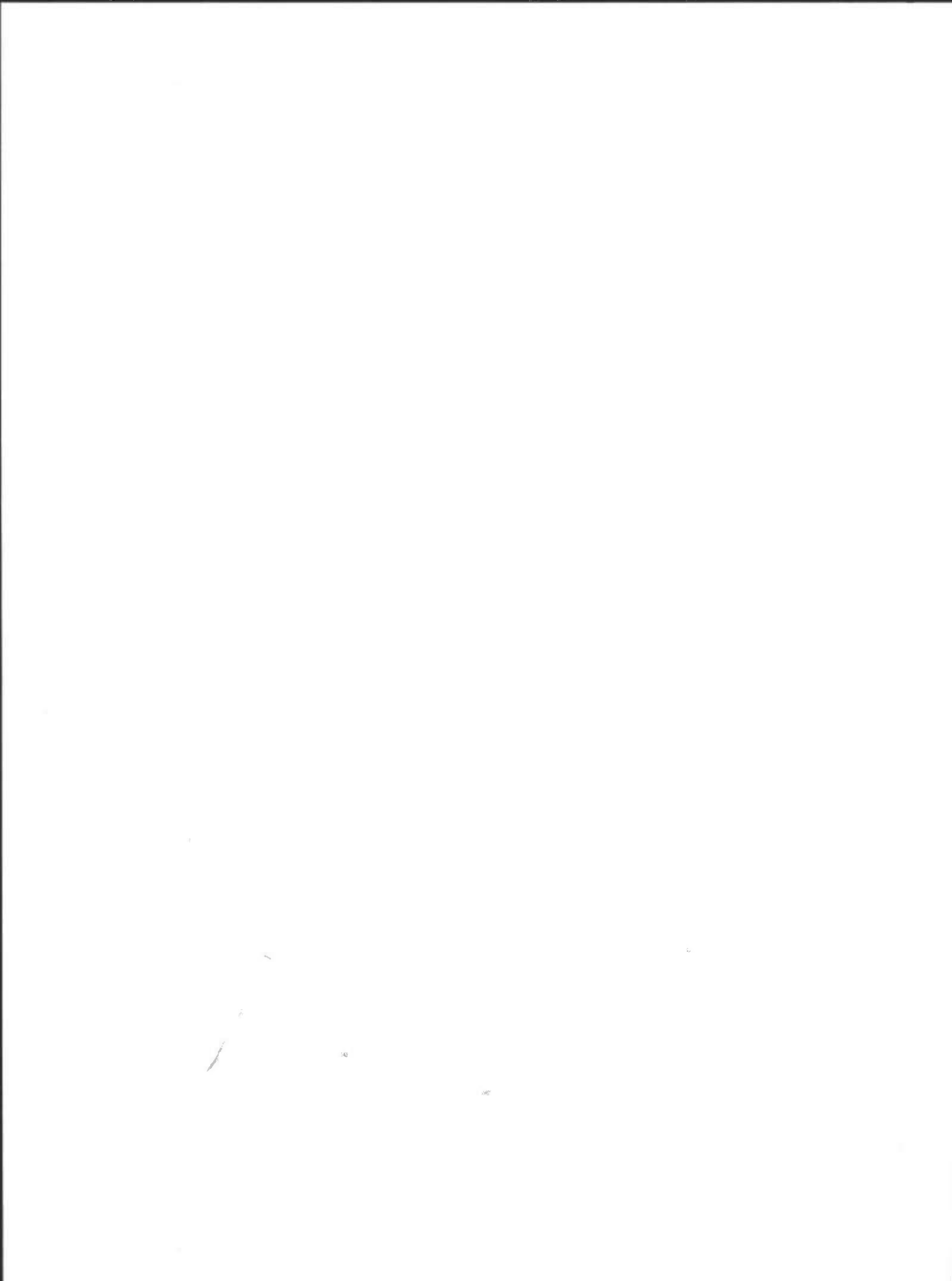
The wife of Henry Seawell was Alice Willoughby, daughter of Capt. Thomas Willoughby, probably. (This marriage is subject to further research.) The children of Henry Seawell and his wife, Alice, were Henry and our ancestor, **Ann Seawell**, who married Lemuel Mason.

“**H**AVING METT Concerning the Estate of HEN: SEAWELL, deceased, by the opinion of the Cort and Consent of Jno Holmes, Overseer, and Mr. Lemuel Mason, who hath Intermarried with Anne, the daughter of the said seawell, *It was agreed as follows:* The estate of Mr. Matthew phillipps, late dec'd, to be responsible for estate of said Hen: Seawell as it was left at the decease of Alice, ye wife of ye said Henry Seawell, by Inventory, &c, and differences to be decided by 4 indifferent men, chosen on ye behalfe of ye Orphants of ye said Seawell, & Mrs. Anne Phillips afsd, Administratrix of said Mr. Mathew Phillips”.

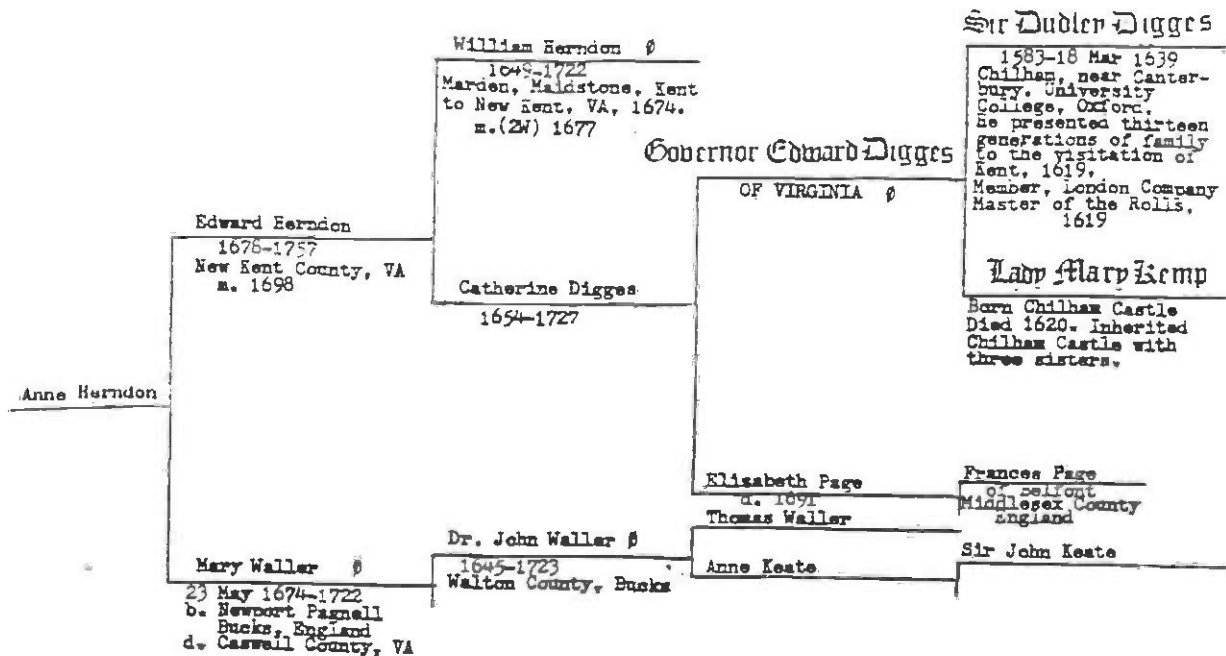
The item, above, as well as the other inserts in this chapter are from The Majors and Their Marriages, by Cabell. This completes the story of the ancestors of Frances Major. Return to the Oliver chart, and find Anne Herndon, the wife of James Lea. The last chapter of the Oliver part of the book will be devoted to the Herndon family.

EDWARD MAJOR OF NANSEMOND

TO ALL &c, Whereas &c, Now Know yee that I, the said SR WILLIAM BERKELY, Knt, doe, with the Advice and Consent of the Councill of State, Accordingly give, grant and confirm unto Mr. EDWARD MAJOR three hundred acres of Land, Scituate, lyeing and being in the County of Warwick: and bounding westerly on the Land of John Salford, Now in the Occupation of Thomas fulkener; and thence Extending along the bank of the Maine river Easterly one hundred and fifty poles, and there bounding on the Land of Thomas Godby Southerly, upon the bank of the Maine river; and thence running into the Woods Northerly three hundred and twenty poles: the said three hundred acres of Land being due unto him, the said EDWARD MAJOR, by and for the Transportation of Six persons into this Colony, all whose names are in the records Mentioned under this Patent: which said three hundred acres of Land was form'ly granted to several persons,— Vizt., one hundred and fifty acres to Pharaoh flinten, one hundred to Giles Allington, and fifty to William Bentley,— but being by them Deserted, is now granted to the Said EDWARD MAJOR: According to the Custome of the Countrey, To have and to hold &c, to bee held &c, Yeilding and paying unto our Said Sovereign Lord the King his heires and success'rs for Ever, or to his or their Treasurer ffor Every fifty acres of Land herein by these presents given and granted, year'ly at the feast of St. Michaell the Archangell, the fee rent of one shilling, to his Majestie's Use:— Provided &c: Dated September ye 24th 1645.



Herndon & Digges



Here we go again - two surnames in another chapter because there were only three American ancestors named Herndon and two named Digges. Both families have great histories back in England. Both came from "county families" in the same part of Kent and both had coats of arms. Another reason for discussing the two families together is that there is controversy about the Digges - Herndon marriage. "Thereby hangs a tale" which must be presented because of the great heritage that depends upon the facts. This book is intended to give American heritage. Easily, the story could be ended with the solid history of the Herndons, but the tales of knights of old and royal blood lines would be lost. The reader must be the judge and jury.

When genealogists disagree, there is no jury to settle their petty arguments. The disagreements arise concerning evidence, direct or circumstantial. As we move further back through the years to early America, the 1600's, there was no census, no birth certificate, no marriage license. Land records and old family papers give some information. Wills were a major source of information, if there was a will, if it is still on file, and if it gave any details. Also, many records were destroyed during the War Between the States and in Courthouse fires. In King and Queen County, VA, some records were destroyed in 1820, and most in 1864. There was another fire in 1886. The Richmond records were burned in 1865. Early genealogists did research and used some of the documents before they were destroyed. But there were no copy machines in those days. They wrote notes on family history, but gave no documentary proof.

The basis for this chapter along with many other papers, comes from the books written by Dr. John Goodwin Herndon, Ph.D, F.A.S.G., F.A.S.P. Dr. Herndon graduated from Washington and Lee for his earlier degrees and gained his Ph.D at the University of Pennsylvania. He was on the faculty of Haverford College

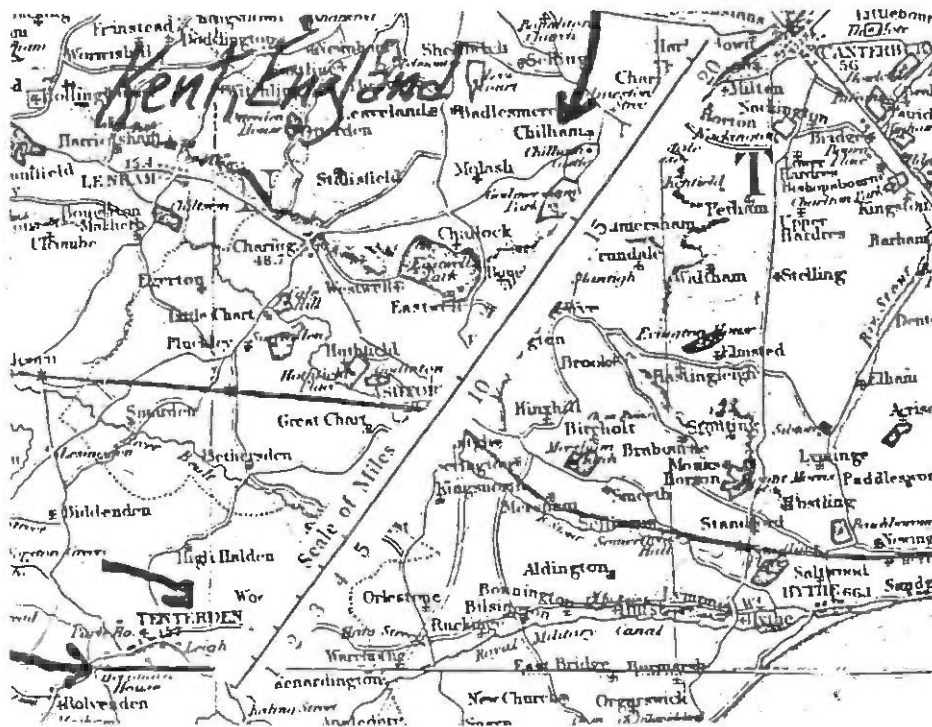
for many years. He was a fellow of the American Society of Genealogists and vice-president of that select group. His reputation as an authority on genealogy is not surpassed by any person living today.

In this book, the subject of coats of arms has been avoided because most of the so-called coats of arms hanging in the homes of Americans are false and of the mail order variety. Actually, knights were given arms to identify **one individual**. Families used similar devices, but each person's differed slightly from the others. Arms are granted by the College of Arms in London as it was in the case of Dr. Herndon or by similar offices in other countries. After long research on the Herndon family, Dr. Herndon applied for arms according to Herndon traditions. He was granted the arms to the left on 3 Nov 1954.



HERNDON

The Herndon name has been spelled many ways. In old England, it was, usually, Heronden or Herenden. At least a dozen other variations are found. In America, it became Herndon. The meaning came from the word spelled Hyringdaenn. In Saxon (about 968), "hring" meant a meadow and stream. "Den" or "Dene" meant that the land was not used for a special purpose, as for a church. The name appears in English records in 833. Today, five locations carry the name in Kent: Heronden, 1/4 mile SW of Tenterden; Hernden, 1/4 mile SE of Estry; Hearndon Green, 10 miles NW of Tenterden, Hurenden, 5 miles NW of Tenterden; and Heronden, 8 miles WSW of Tenterden.



Note that Tenterden is less than twenty miles from Chilham, the location of Chilham Castle, the home of the Diges family.

The charter for the town of Hyringdenne was issued in 833. In 968, the charter was reissued to Hyringdaenn by Edgar, King of England and Dunstan, Archbishop of Canterbury. The location was Heronden. Whether the place was named for a person or the persons were named for the place is uncertain, but there are many references to people with that name.

In 1183, according to tradition, an early Heronden went on the crusade to the Holy Land with King Richard I. The old crusader carved his coat of arms on a stone gateway to the city of Rhodes. The English writer, Hasted, says that there were branches of the Herndon family in Kent and they all "bore in their coat armour a heron but in various attitudes and colors". In 1331, a Sir William de Herendon was "The King's deputy sergeant and chief butler in the port of Portsmouth".

Variations of the Herndon coat of arms were found throughout the ages on tombstones, in a window of the Maidstone Church, and in the Visitation records of the XVIIth Century. There, it was a heron erect, gasping for breath. Blue herons and escallops were predominant. Emphasis on the coats of arms is important because the arms of Anthony Herndon of Lincoln's Inn, in England, were "Argent, a heron volant azure, between three escallops sable". In America, the third generation John Herndon, son of Edward, described his coat of arms in his will as "Argent, a heron volant, in fesse, azure, membered or, between three escallops sable". The almost exact descriptions lead to the conclusion that Anthony was the father of William Herndon. The motto used was Vergil's *Sic Itur Ad Astra*, freely translated "Thus is Immortality Gained" or "This is the Way to Imortality".

The estate in Heronden, Kent was large. The capital mansion, called Heronden, was built in 1585 and was torn down in 1770. By 1782, the new mansion 1/4 mile south of Tenterden had fifty acres around the house and 118 acres nearby. A third mansion stands today on the same location. Family visitors in 1936 described Heronden Hall with its high ceilings, stained glass windows, and broad stairs. At that time, the family that lived in the mansion was named Hernden. More details and complete references can be found in an article by Roy Franklin Nichols, President of the Genealogical Society of Pennsylvania in *The Pennsylvania Genealogical Magazine*, Volume XX, No. 1, 1955, pp. 3-17.

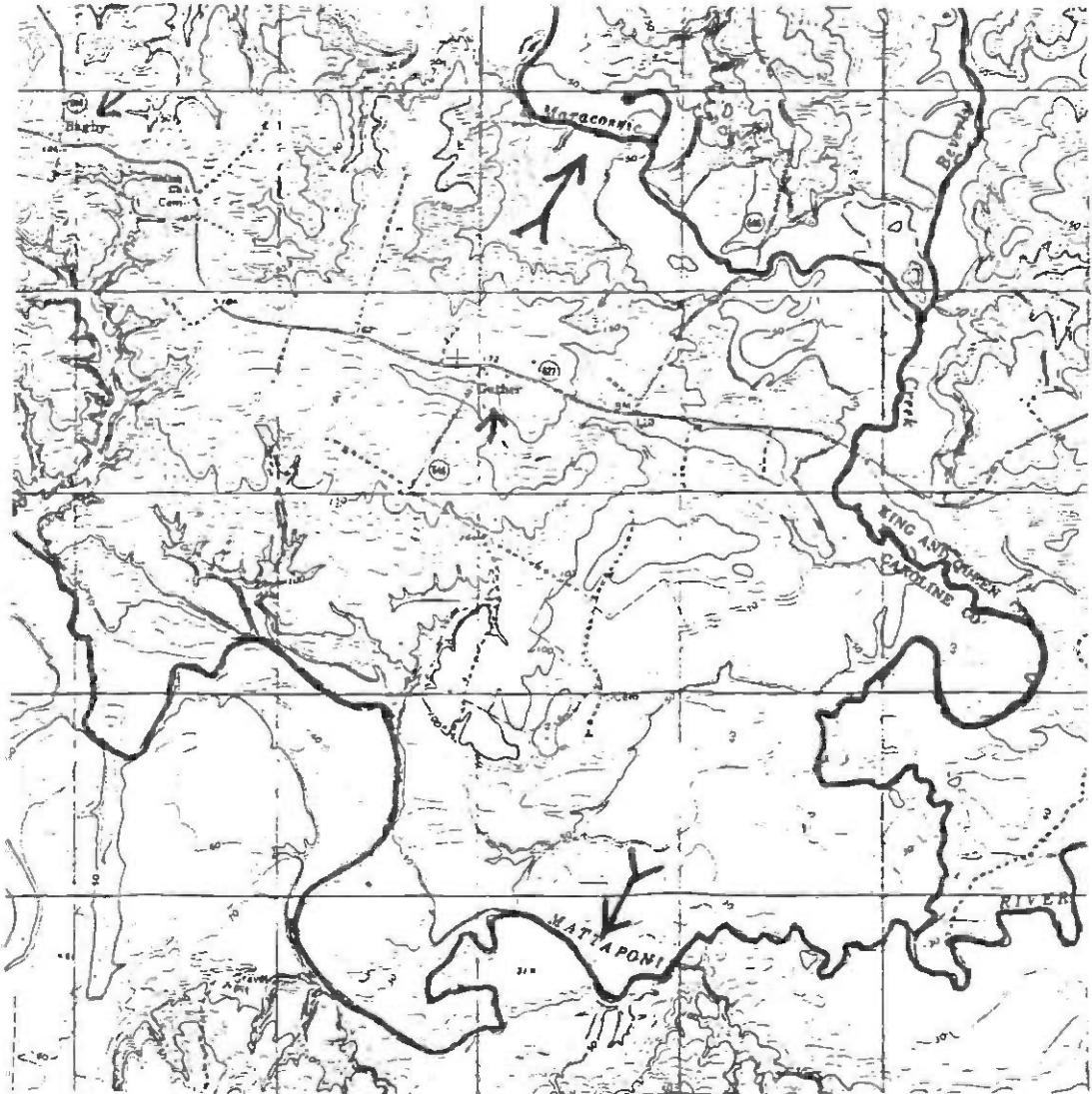
WILLIAM HERNDON	married	CATHERINE DIGGES
1649-1722	1677	1654-1727

Dr. John Goodwin Herndon wrote about William Herndon in the William and Mary Quarterly, Series 2, Vol. 23, p. 333. In less than a page, he tells about William Herndon of New Kent County, Virginia. As the first Herndon on record in America, William was granted sixty-four acres in New Kent County, VA, on 18 Feb 1673/4. The papers said the land was next to property he owned, so he had been there for some time. One of the persons listed as transported was Henry Benskin. He is believed to be a brother of William's first wife, in England. She is not recorded in America and may have died before he came to Virginia. The location of William's land in St. Stephen's Parish was on the north side of the Mattaponi River near the location, today, of the little towns of Gether and Bagby, Virginia. William and a man named Robert Bagby patented 2800 acres of land together and William was issued individual patents for 494 acres.

In the reference given above, Dr. Herndon states: "In 1677 William Herndon married Catherine Digges, youngest daughter of Edward Digges, of Belfield, who had been Governor of Virginia in 1655. The records of King and Queen County show that William Herndon and Edward Digges, who was his brother-in-law, were among its earliest settlers." Here, he states, without equivocation, that William Herndon married Catherine Digges and why he knew it

to be true. Earlier writings may have been evasive, but this statement is positive.

The land in New Kent County became part of King and Queen County, and later, it fell into the southeast corner of Caroline County. In early times, the western border of St. Stephen's Parish was the frontier. The borders moved, but Maracossic Creek stayed in about the same place. Records of the land grants describe boundaries in terms of "red oke" trees, unnamed hills, and neighbors. The Herndon land was in the area of the modern map, below. His farm was about ten miles NW of the old and still standing St. Stephen's Church and about fifty miles along the Mattaponi and York rivers to the home of the Digges family at Belfield.



When produce was taken to market, the rivers were used to go to market. Boats went by the Digges homestead. The land grants place William Herndon north of the Mattaponi River and West of Maracossic Creek. These land grants have the spelling used on the documents.

LAND GRANTS

1673	Thomas Hall & John Pigg	3831 acres	N of Mattaponi westward from mouth of Marocassic Creek.
1673	John Bagby & William Herndon	2600 acres	Northside of the Mattaponi west of Hall-Pigg grant.
1673	William Herndon	430 acres	Inland from Bagby-Herndon grant.

The map is the Sparta quadrangle, 1968, AMS 5559 I NW Series V834. My life long friend, Colonel William Owen Tucker, lives near the area in Virginia. He is searching for additional information about William and Catherine Herndon. That part of Virginia is very rural, today. The very old St. Stephen's Church has a large cemetery which is overgrown and most of it is not maintained. The church has old records, but they are very incomplete. The search will continue.

William Herndon died in 1722. The children of William and Catherine were: Edward, who married (1) Mary Waller and (2) a Miss Leftwich; James, who (?) married Mary George; William, married Sarah Leftwich; and, Philip. Several generations after William and Catherine, Catherine Digges Herndon was born on 25 Feb 1797 in Orange County, VA. Her parents were Edward and Nancy Ann (Rucker) Herndon.

The defensive tone of this chapter is due to a challenge by several genealogists. They have declared that the marriage of William Herndon and Catherine Digges has not been proved. They cannot prove that it did not take place, but believe that evidence is needed. The subject of the marriage will be discussed further and separately after the ancestors have been named.

EDWARD HERNDON	married	MARY WALLER
1678-1757	1698	23 May 1674-1722



Edward Herndon was born in New Kent County, VA, the son of William and Catherine Herndon. When he came of age, he bought 46 acres in the "fork of the Mattapony", near his father's land. Later, on 16 Jun 1727, he was granted 400 acres in Spotsylvania County as "Edward Hertton, of King and Queen County". Caroline County records describe him "as of Drysdale Parish". Again, we must realize that the county boundaries were changing. Dr. Herndon wrote, "His plantation was located at the intersection of the Main Road, down from Douge Town Bridge, and the Courthouse Road, as the later turned up to the Maricosie Bridge. His home was also mentioned as on the road leading to the Spotsylvania Road.

It was probably, therefore, near the dividing line between Caroline and Spotsylvania Counties". (Herndon, The Herndon Family of Virginia, Vol. 1. p. 7.)

Actually, Maracossic Creek runs south of Sparta and dies north of Bowling Green, the county seat, today, of Caroline County. This is a long way from the boundary of Spotsylvania County, now. Dr. Herndon must have been writing of an earlier border. There are several documents about Edward Herndon giving him orders to repair roads. One names the Courthouse to Maracosie Bridge. It would seem that the Herndon farm was close to and north of Bowling Green. His plantation would be the 400 acre land grant.

Edward married Mary Waller in 1698. She was born in Newport Pagnell, County Bucks, England, daughter of Dr. John Waller and Mary Pomfrett who were married 13 Jan 1669 at Walton, County Bucks. Dr. John Waller was the son of Thomas Waller and Anne Keate, daughter of Sir John Keate. (See Annex E)

Mary Waller Herndon died about 1722 and Edward married a second wife, the daughter of Thomas Leftwich. In Dr. Herndon's book, referenced earlier, he

records many documents about Edward Herndon's activities as juryman in 1733, appraiser in 1735, guardian of orphans in 1744/5. and in various law suits. Edward lived all of his life in what is now Caroline County. He wrote his will which was filed in the Caroline County Courthouse. When the War Between the States began, they sent the wills to Richmond for safe keeping. Richmond was burned and Bowling Green was not! There, the probate records remain. William and James, Executors, presented the will on 9 Mar 1758 and brother John (the one who had the coat of arms) was a witness.

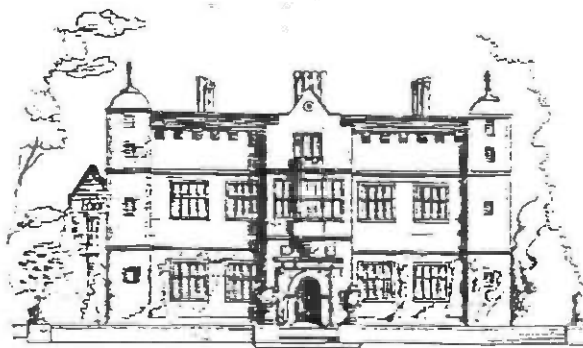
Since the will was destroyed, the names of the children had to be determined to some extent in other ways. Dr. Herndon listed twelve children in his earlier book with some of the names unknown. Later, in the Virginia Genealogical Magazine, Vol. 5, pp. 99-103, Dr. Herndon wrote an article, Ann (Herndon) Lea, where he concludes that Ann Herndon married James Lea, our ancestor. In another book, written late in Dr. Herndon's life and published by his widow, The Descendants of William Herndon and Catherine Digges, an Outline of the Herndon Family in Virginia, he lists Ann Herndon as the daughter of Edward and wife of James Lea. She is the sixth child of Edward Herndon. The book is in the library of the Church of Later Day Saints in Salt Lake City.

This brings the Herndon line to the Lea line on the chart, so we turn to the Digges family.

DIGGES

The Digges family is ancient and honorable. The ancestry has been recorded through the generations back to Edward III, William the Conqueror, and Charlemagne. Sir Dudley Digges and his wife, Lady Mary Kemp descend from many of the most noble families of old England; the St.Leger, Neville, Beauchamp, Stafford. Percy, Kemp and Browne. Charts of these ancestors to the twentieth generation are at Annex E.

EDWARD DIGGES married ELIZABETH PAGE
c. 1620-15 Mar 1675 -1691



Edward Digges was born in Chilham Castle, Kent, England, the son of Sir Dudley Digges and his wife, Lady Mary Kemp. Edward entered Gray's Inn, 19 May 1637, and emigrated to Virginia in 1650. He bought the plantation of Capt. John West, 1250 acres in York County about ten miles north of Williamsburg on the south side of the York River. In 1653, he acquired 3,050 additional acres of land in Gloucester County, north of the York River.

He was appointed to the Council on 12 Nov 1654 and in 1656 became the Governor of Virginia. He served from 30 Mar 1656 to 13 Mar 1658, when he was sent to England to look after colonial affairs.

The Digges home was called "Belfield", on Mulberry Island in the York River. Edward Digges was wealthy, owning half of the island. He was interested in starting a silk industry. Armenians were brought to Virginia and mulberry trees were planted to feed the silk worms. The effort was not successful because tobacco was the money crop of Virginia in those times. (The Governor was given a salary of 25,000 pounds of tobacco worth 250 pounds sterling.)

Edward married Elizabeth Page, sister of Colonel John Page, who, in his will, probated in York County in 1691/2 mentions sister Elizabeth Digges of Virginia". Edward left one will in Canterbury, England, 28 Aug 1669, when he was "now bound upon a voyage for Virginia". Probably, there was another later will in Virginia that was destroyed in the fires. In the early will, he names his wife, "Elizabeth Digges". The early will says, "To all my children being four boys and four girls— but does not name the children. This was in 1669. When he died, 15 Mar 1675, six years later, he was 55 years old. His tomb at Belfield has the inscription, He had 6 sonnes and 7 daughters by the body of Elizabeth, his wife, who of her Conjugal affection dedicated to him this Memorial", The Digges family accounts name only William, Mary, Ann and Dudley. Some books say that an Edward was found later. The Herndon family literature claims that Catherine Digges was the youngest daughter of Edward Digges and Elizabeth Page, and that Catherine married William Herndon.

By old Virginia custom, the oldest son was usually named for the mother's father. The name Edward, as in Edward Digges, was given to the oldest Herndon son and was used many times through the generations. We will now address the marriage of Catherine Digges and William Herndon in 1677, two years after the death of Edward Digges, aged 55.

WILLIAM HERNDON married **CATHERINE DIGGES**
1677

This writer does not know why certain genealogists singled out and took issue with this marriage. Family research, particularly that of the early American ancestors, has been developed through use of every kind of evidence that can be found. When known authorities publish lineage information, it is usually accepted. Here are a few:

1. John G. Herndon, William and Mary Quarterly, Series 2, Vol. 23, p. 333. Name of Article, Six Herndon Immigrants to Colonial America, He states clearly and without reservation that the marriage is correct. The statement has been made that Dr. Herndon never stated positively that the marriage took place. Well, he did so several times.

2. John G. Herndon, The Herndon Family of Virginia, the First Three Generations. This is a long and complicated discussion of circumstantial evidence and of his reasoning on the subject of the marriage, and of other subjects. If this reference, alone, were considered, some doubt of proof can be generated, but this was the first book that Dr. Herndon published in 1947. His early questions must have been answered. (The same may be said of this book ten years or more after I have been buried! Arguments with the late great like Herndon and Casey are easy when six feet of soil prevents an answer.)

3. The Descendants of William Herndon and Catherine Digges, by John Goodwin Herndon was published in 1958. The title and the book are positive.

4. Ruth Shields, The Descendants of William and Sarah (Poe) Herndon This lady is a recognized authority in genealogy. She makes a positive statement about the marriage. She says that the line is accepted by the Colonial Dames of America and the Magna Charta Dames Society. She writes, "William Herndon—came from England to New Kent County, Virginia—.His wife was Catherine Digges, a daughter of Edward Digges—."

5. Virkus, Vol. III, p. 666, The Abridged Compendium of American Genealogy, "Herndon, William (1649-1722), from Eng., settled in New Kent Co., Va., 1674; m 1677 Catherine Digges (1654-1727).

6. Robert Glenn Thurtle, Hereditary Order of Descendants of Colonial Governors, Publication Committee, John Frederick Dorman, Chairman, Library of Congress #80-67264, Published 1980, p. 332. The lineage of James MacDonald Edwards is published, approved, to include Catherine Digges and William Herndon. J. F. Dorman is the editor of The Virginia Genealogist

7. Mary E. Mayo, Sixteen Hundred Lines to Pilgrims, Lineage Book III, 1982, page 480, Ronald Wesley Brennan and on page 492, Alice Ellenor Herndon have approved lines that include William and Catherine Digges Herndon.

8. Mary Louise Marshall Hutton, Seventeenth Century Colonial Ancestors of Members of the National Society Colonial Dames XVII Century 1915-1975., page 123. The lineage is approved!

If the marriage did not take place, quite a few eminent genealogists and authorities are in error!

Another statement has been made that "The Digges and Herndons were quite far apart on the social ladder and no one can explain how parties from several counties apart could have met and courted.". Well, this one will try to explain. First, the families were not far apart on the social ladder. Back in England, they lived about twenty miles apart. Both families were what English called "county families". Both had coats of arms, but neither had titles. Sir Dudley Digges was a knight, but not a baron, earl or duke. Both families were of ancient lineage and lived in manor houses on large land areas. In America, both were large land owners (thousands of acres). William's son, Edward, married the granddaughter of Sir John Keate. The Digges were wealthier, but both were upper class families.

As for courtship, few people today realize how mobile the early Americans were, moving by horseback on roads that were no more than trails. Few of our young genealogists had spent time on horseback. When I went to West Point, the horses were still in the Army. We rode long and hard. The old pony express did a better job of delivering the mail than our U.S. Postal service does today! Herndon raised tobacco. It was placed into large barrels and rolled to the river. The Mattaponi River empties into the York River where the Digges "Belfield" home was located on Mulberry Island. Herndon tobacco went by the Island. Is it natural that a man with a common English background, a planter, would meet these people? They lived only fifty miles apart - less than one day on a horse. That was not far - even in those days. Remember, the older Digges sons and daughters went west to the frontier. Supplies came in and produce went out, past the Digges home. As a large land owner, William Herndon would have travelled to the port on business. He may have supported Digges in politics. They voted on the frontier. Could William have met Catherine? Of course he could!

Further, when Edward Digges wrote his will in 1669, he had 4 boys and 4 girls, alive. Six years later, he had 6 sons and 7 daughters. It is hard to believe that all but 4 or 5 were dead. Catherine was said to be the youngest daughter. In those days, the oldest son got the land. The children at the end of the line got very little. Girls got less than the boys. They were fortunate to get a slave, a horse, and a few silver coins along with their bedroom furniture. With the Digges, the older two sons stayed at Belfield. The older inherited until he died and number two took over. Two girls that married well managed to find a place in the family history. It may have been convenient for a few to forget all the others. Sibling competition is as old as civilization (Cain & Able), particularly in wealthy families. It's the old, old story. Many families have been torn apart by the reading of a will. The "others" went west to the frontier to find land. With both parents dead, Catherine, the teenager,

may have been taken to the frontier by another unnamed brother or sister. William Herndon was a large landowner on the frontier. Soap box? Maybe!

Lastly, Dr. Herndon got his information indirectly from Mr. Moncure D. Conway who researched the family about a hundred years ago. In 1898, in Fredericksburg, VA, he said he got the information from records available at that time. (The fires destroyed VA records in 1886 and 1888.) The data given by Mr. Conway was:

"William Herndon married in 1667 Catherine Digges, youngest daughter of Edward Digges, Governor in 1655.

"Edward Herndon, eldest son of William and Catherine (Digges) Herndon, was born in 1678 and married in 1698 Mary Waller.

"Edward Herndon, eldest son of Edward and Mary (Waller) Herndon, married Mary Brock.

"William Herndon, son of Edward and Mary (Brock) Herndon born in 1706, married Ann Drysdale, daughter of Lieutenant Governor Hugh Drysdale."

Remember, there were no copy machines in 1880. Mr. Conway was born in 1832 and graduated from Harvard Divinity School in 1854, Do you think he would be intelligent? Do you think he would lie about the research? Maybe he thought that his word would be enough! He said that he remembered "looking it up at the time". Many records, burned later, were available to him. Also, he said that he had letters from members of the Herndon family at the time of his research. (1860?) He was a man of the cloth. The other pieces of information have been proved as correct.

Family legends are not evidence, but they are strong. Sometimes exaggerated, but basically true, they lead to real evidence in many cases. Catherine named her first son Edward, after the Governor. Generations later, in 1797, a later Edward Herndon, Jr., named a daughter Catherine Digges Herndon. Were these people trying to fool the genealogist? Unlikely! They wouldn't have recognized a genealogist if he or she were marching across the parade ground!

Early in this chapter, a statement was made that the readers have to be the judge and the jury. If you believe that Catherine, daughter of Edward Digges married William Herndon, then the charts that follow are yours. If you do not believe, then, for you, this is the end of Oliver Part II. The next part of the book is Pillow Part Three. (Again, please see Annex E.)



ELIZABETH PORTER PILLOW OLIVER
Called Bessie, Sister Bess, Mamma

Pillow

Elizabeth Porter Pillow was called "Bessie" by her father, most of the family, and many of the documents that include her name. She was the mother of Gladys, wife of Albert C. Metts, Sr. Part One of this book tells of the ancestors of Albert C. Metts, Sr., father of this writer.

This Part Three will tell about the ancestors of Elizabeth P. Pillow. Her brothers lived around Greenwood, Mississippi, where they headed large and influential families with the Pillow name. All of the cousins of that clan descend from the seventy-five ancestors described herein. Again, this book tells of the direct line. With respect to kinship, remember that mothers are of the same degree as fathers so Pillow is not the only surname of interest. Scales, Porter, Kaigler, Thomas, Allen, Bethell, Stubblefield, Carter and many more are of the same importance as Pillow. This repetition is included because some cousins will be provided this part without the rest of the book.

Not one of the seventy-five ancestors can give today's Pillows reason for anything but pride and admiration. A question is always asked of family researchers: "What is the national origin of the family?" If you examine the Pillow chart, you will realize that at least half of the ancestors are English - the Pillows, Allens, Scales, Carters, Thomases, and Stubblefields. Next, there are quite a few Scotch-Irish - the Browns and Flemings. The Watts were Irish, so Pillows can wear green on St. Patrick's day. The Kaiglers were German Lutherans. Later arrivals, but great people, the Bethells came from Wales.

At least ten Pillow patriots fought in the American Revolution. Captain William Bethell served in the militia and, later, in the Legislature of North Carolina. Lt. Andrew Kaigler, Jr., served in South Carolina. Other revolutionary soldiers were John Pillow, Job Thomas, Jesse Thomas, Nathaniel Scales, Reese Porter, Hugh Porter, Valentine Allen, and Richard Stubblefield. Patriotic Service in support of the Revolution can be credited to Gideon Johnson, Sr., and Andrew Kaigler, Sr. Realize that most Americans cannot point to a single forebear with such service. Major Abner Pillow served in the War of 1812. Lt. Nathaniel Scales and Corporal William Reese Pillow were gallant Confederate soldiers. Descendants should be proud of these men. The only reason for writing a book of this kind is to tell future generations about their ancient kin and to give them pride in their family. As old records are assembled and analysed, one really learns a lot about the nature and character of these people long gone. As the story unfolds, the strong and the weak are evident. As we continue, we start with the Pillow surname, then move to the Scales and other branches of the family.

The Pillow family legend, as passed down through the generations, is basically accurate. The name is English, regardless of the way it is spelled. As with most American names, colonial writers put on paper what they heard, so the name has been spelled **Pillow**, **Pillar**, **Piller**, **Pillars**, **Pillary**, and **Pellow**. The cousins, today, might reflect upon how they pronounce their name. As I remember, it might sound like **Pillah!**

English authorities list the name. One source gives, "Pillow - From Pilhough; a location near Derbysh." Another gives, "Pillar, Piller. - a column or support." Research on early Pillows has not been easy. However, the name is so unique that all early colonials with the name are kin, probably. The family legend held that Jasper Pillow came from England about 1740. But, the

*Should read:
Capt. William Nathaniel ²³⁵ SCALES

immigrants of the 1700's are well documented on shipping lists, particularly those from England, and no one by any spelling of the name has been found. The unusual Pillow name combined with a first name, Jasper, very uncommon, helps a researcher.

One of the basic research documents of early arrivals is the series of books, Cavaliers and Pioneers, by Nugent. The old colonial land records were hand written and are very dim with age. These papers were transcribed by very competent people. Even then, some spelling varied slightly due to illegibility. The only entry of interest is in Patent Book #2. On P. 77, it lists, "RANDALL CREW, 460 acs. Nancemond Co., Sept. 9, 1648, Page 148. Upon Ewd. side of the Southern br. of Nancemund Riv., beg. on Nwd. side of the mouth of Crany Cr., adj. land of William Hatfeild. Trans. of 10 pers; —Jasper Pillary—. " Randall Crew was one of the great Virginia land owners. Land was granted based upon head count. Theoretically, the owner paid for the passage of the new arrivals listed, but the system was not supervised very well. About all that is proved is that Jasper Pillary was in Nancemond County, Virginia, on 9 September 1648. The "y" on the end of the name was a fancy flourish, common in the old writing, read as a "y". Some other references write the entry "Jasper Pillars".

The next document with the Pillow name is dated 20 December 1715, ~~sixty-seven~~ years later. In Essex County, Virginia, a little west of Nancemond, a lady, Mary Duckbary, died. Her will was dated 21 April 1715. Also, oddly, George Ducksbery (note difference in spelling of last name) died with a will made 5 November 1715. Both wills were probated on 20 December. George left Jesper Pellow 550 pounds of tobacco (Tobacco was legal tender in colonial times due to shortage of pounds, shillings and pence.) and a share of the estate to John Pillow. The will of Mary was witnessed by Jasper Pellow.

No more documents were found until the time that family legend and some old books say that Jasper Pillow and his three sons lived in Amelia County, VA. Dawn Smith, probate clerk in Amelia County searched all records in the courthouse and provided a list of all Pillars, Pillows, and Pillers. Nothing shows for Jasper or John. Jasper had three sons: John, Jasper, and William. There are records of land transactions for William. The family may have lived in the part of Amelia County that became Nottoway County, later, but there are no records there.

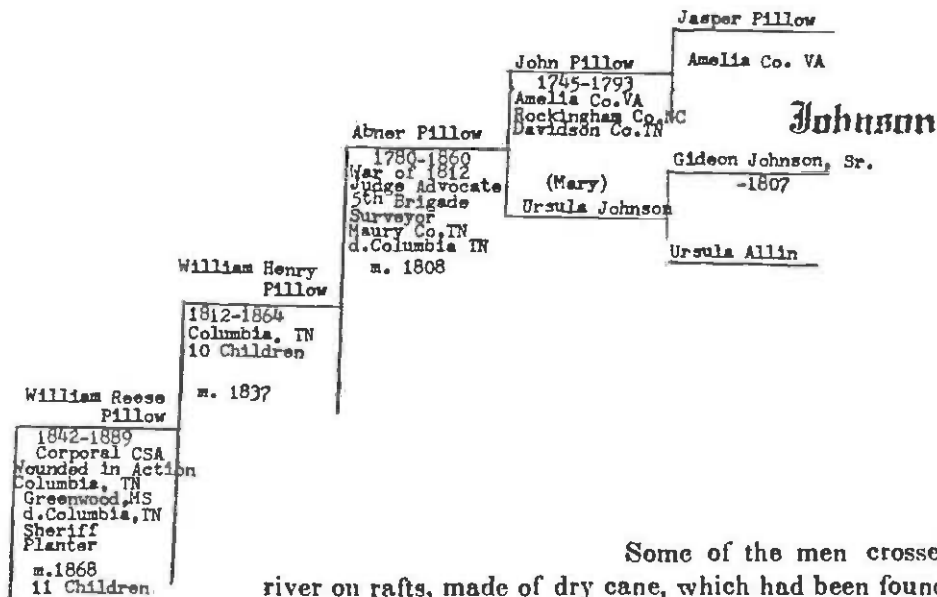
Analysis of the period of 1648 to 1715 to about 1770 indicates that the first Jasper, at least twenty years old in 1648, would have been 87 years old in 1715. He may have been the same Jasper, but, more likely, could have been his son. Then, the next jump is 55 years to 1770. In 1770, the Jasper in Amelia County would be elderly, with three grown sons. John would be grown, but not 55 years old in 1770. He was born in 1745. About all that can be concluded is that there were several generations of Jaspers and Johns. At this point, we move to the chart of the Pillow family starting with Jasper. We do not have dates for his birth or death, nor do we have the name of his wife.

We are told by Dr. Ramsey of Tennessee that Jasper had three sons. Dr. Ramsey was a famous historian in the state historical society. In 1860, he published The Annals of Tennessee. In the preface, he states that he collected the narratives from the "old soldiers and pioneers" and that he used "the language of the original narrator". He does not identify his "narrators" but it would seem that William and Gideon Pillow, the two oldest brothers of our ancestor, Abner, were major contributors. The item below the Pillow chart on the next page may have been provided by Gideon, Sr., or his son, Gideon, Jr.

Understandably, the Ramsey quotation, underlined, has been used many times in NSDAR applications. Some embellished it with purple prose. It seems to show the three sons marching shoulder to shoulder from Bunker Hill to Yorktown, but that was not true. Brother, Jasper, Jr., was an outstanding non-com and his military records in Morton's Company, 4th Virginia Regiment

are well documented in the U.S. Archives. John's service will be discussed later. He served in a different regiment, the 13th Virginia Regiment under the name John Pillar. William did not serve. The NSDAR lists William for PS (Patriotic Service), which means that he sold something or other to the army.

Pillow



Some of the men crossed the river on rafts, made of dry cane, which had been found and gathered by torch light. William and Gideon Pillow, being excellent swimmers, were selected to carry the raft of their mess across the river. The former held a rope attached to the raft in his teeth, and swam and pulled his craft, and its cargo of guns, shot-bags and clothes, after him, while Gideon and another comrade swam behind and pushed it."

Jasper Pillow, the ancestor of the family, emigrated from England and settled in the colony of Virginia, about 1740. He had three sons, John, Jasper and William, all of whom were soldiers in the Revolutionary war, and continued in the service to its glorious termination. at Yorktown.

John Pillow emigrated to Cumberland in 1784. His wife was Miss Johnston, whose five brothers were soldiers of 1776. John Pillow settled near Nashville, where, with his two sons, William and Gideon, he encountered all the hardships, and perils, and privations of frontier life, and of constant conflict with the various Indian tribes, which, to the close of his life, infested and devastated the country.

Gideon Pillow, the father of Gen. Gideon J. Pillow, late of the United States Army, in Mexico, was an active soldier in the expedition against Nickajack, and swam the Tennessee River in the celebrated capture of that Indian fortress.

In the further Annals of Tennessee, Col. William Pillow will be frequently mentioned as a gallant officer under Gen. Jackson, at Taladega, and as a quiet, unobtrusive citizen, as amiable in private life as he was vigilant in camp and courageous in battle.

Probably, old Jasper Pillow had other children, but we do not know their names. The first census was taken in Amelia County, VA., in 1782. In the list

of Edmund Booker, a list of about 85 heads of household, we find a Jasper Pillow with five white persons. Also, there is a Mary Pillow with four. This could be a Mary, wife of old Jasper, then dead. The Jasper is young Jasper living nearby. A few pages further, we find William Pillow. By this year, 1782, John lives in Tennessee.

JOHN PILLOW married **URSULA (MARY) JOHNSON**
1745-1793

John Pillow has been a very interesting subject in the long search. Time and money have been wasted along the way because no help came from anyone in Nashville. The Davidson County officials refuse any help. The Tennessee State Archives in Nashville are open to research there, but mail assistance is minimal. However, gradually, the story of John's life has been put together.

He was born in Amelia County. His birth date is estimated from the birth of his first child, William, in 1772. A son, Gideon, was born 24 Sep 1774. Both sons were born in Guilford County, North Carolina, in the area which would become Rockingham County.

Many families were on the move westward before the Revolution. John's decision to move may have been encouraged by a young lady named Ursula Johnson, the daughter of Gideon Johnson, Sr. The Sr. is underscored because Ursula had a brother, Gideon, Jr.

5.10

Pillar, John.

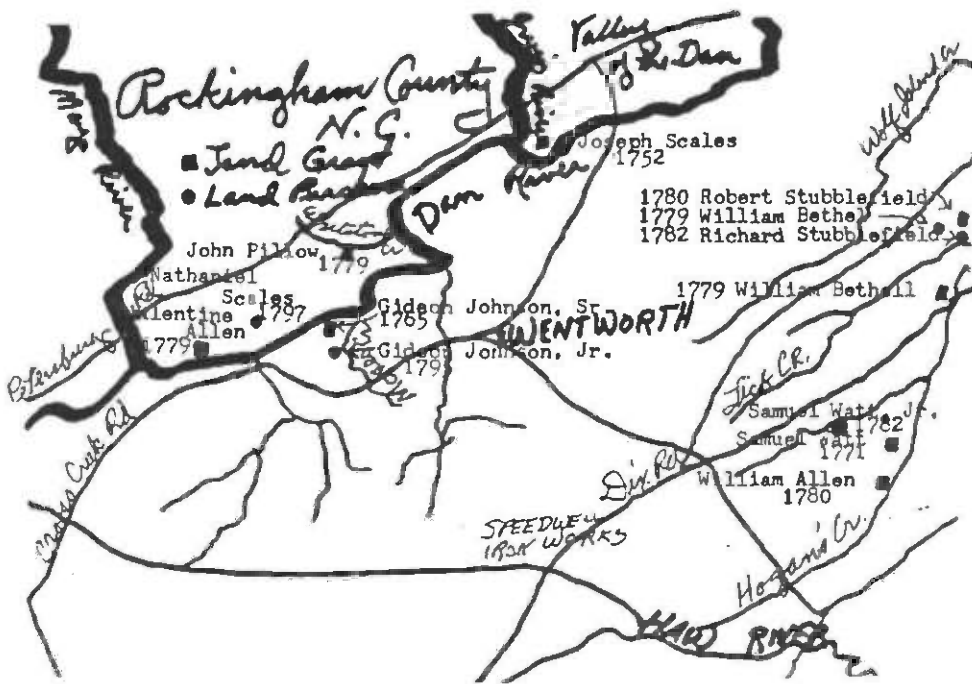
13 Virginia Regiment.
(Revolutionary War.)

<i>Private</i>	<i>Private</i>
CARD NUMBERS.	
135864741	*
4634	*
4690	*
4789	*
4838	*
4890	*
4934	*
4972	*
5007	*

Gideon Johnson, Sr., had been given a land grant in Guilford County, NC, in 1765. To claim the land he took his family west. Young John Pillow may have gone with him and married daughter Ursula in time for their first child, William, to be born in 1772. The young couple must have lived with her parents, helping on the farm until the American Revolution started. Leaving Ursula with her parents, he returned to Virginia and joined the 13th Virginia Regiment commanded by Colonel William Russell. He was in Captain David Steel's Company from 1 Sep 1777 until January 1778. He served under the name JOHN PILLAR. His records can be ordered from the U.S. Archives. John returned to Guilford County, North Carolina, after his service and bought a farm near his father-in-law in 1779.

The map on the next page shows where John and his family lived in North Carolina. That part of Guilford County became Rockingham County. The farm of Ursula's brother, Gideon Johnson, Jr., and the farms of other ancestors are shown. Today, John Pillow's farm is the site of a small airfield called "Shiloh Field" on Whetstone Creek. This is one of the most beautiful areas in America. Also, it lies at the place where settlers passed to spill into the Cumberland and limitless land beyond the mountains.

We do not know why John Pillow packed up and moved his family to Tennessee. Earlier mentioned, Dr. Ramsey, in Annals of Tennessee, written in 1860, page 485, says, "Among other emigrants from North Carolina to Cumberland, was the father of Colonel William Pillow. He came through the wilderness with the guard commanded by Captain Elijah Robertson, and settled four miles south of Nashville, at Brown's Station." This was 1787. The Indians



were killing many settlers and Little John Brown's Station consisted of several log houses built like small forts.

The Pillow family consisted of John, Ursula, and eight children. William was nearly grown at 15 years. Gideon, the second child was 13. Our ancestor, Abner, was 7 years old. Other known children were John, Mordecai and Barbara. Names of the other two might have been Allen, or Lucy, or Stephen.

After a few hard years near Nashville, John Pillow was killed. The inclosure, below, gives all that is known. The old book, printed in 1850, is in the Pentagon. Probably, the information came from the Gideon Pillow branch of the family. Efforts to learn about how John was killed have been futile. The answer may be in the Brentwood hills below Nashville. The intense Indian activity in 1793 in that area justifies a guess that John was killed by the Indians. He left a large family to be fathered by his oldest son, William, now 21, an experienced Indian fighter and in every way, a man. According to law, William made an inventory of John's small estate. (see the next page.)



MEXICAN WAR

AND THE
HEROES: *E* 404

BEING A COMPLETE *1761*

HISTORY OF THE MEXICAN WAR,

EMBRACING ALL THE OPERATIONS UNDER

GENERALS TAYLOR AND SCOTT,

WITH A BIOGRAPHY OF THE OFFICERS

ALSO, AN ACCOUNT OF THE

CONQUEST OF CALIFORNIA AND NEW MEXICO,

UNDER

GEN. KEARNEY, COLS. DONIPHAN AND FREMONT.

TOGETHER WITH

Numerous Anecdotes of the War, and Personal Adventures
of the Officers.

ILLUSTRATED WITH

ACCURATE PORTRAITS AND OTHER BEAUTIFUL ENGRAVINGS.

PHILADELPHIA:

LIPPINCOTT, GRAMBO & CO.,

GRIGG, ELLIOT & CO.,

No. 11, NORTH FOURTH STREET.

1850.

OPERATIONS NEAR THE CAPITAL.

83

The part taken by the general in the storming of Chapultepec,
of the most brilliant chapters of his biography. Under

of grape, canister, and round-shot, his
above the roaring of can-
their side, Pillow's

that eager only for victory, he
press, in order that he might witness

Pillow's wound was severe and painful, and
serious. The season of comparative repose which
taking of the capital, has restored him to his customary health.

* The general's father, Gideon Pillow, was born in Rockingham County,
N. C., September 24th, 1774. He was the second son of John, and Ursula
Johnson Pillow, who, in 1789, removed from North Carolina to Davidson
County, Ten., and settled temporarily with his family at 'John Brown's,' a
thin frontier station four miles south of Nashville. He was killed in the
fall of 1793, leaving William and Gideon to protect six younger brothers
and sisters. One or both of these young men went upon almost every
excursion sent from Davidson County against the savages from 1789
to 1794. In the latter year the Indians discontinued their annoyances.
Both fought bravely at Nickojack. William was colonel of a regiment under
General Jackson in the late Creek war, and was shot through the body at
Talladega, whilst pursuing the enemy. He now resides on his farm in
Maury County. Gideon was a farmer and landdealer, but died from
home (Madison Co., Ten.), February 26th, 1830, leaving three sons and
three daughters.

292

*An Inventory of the Chattel Estate of John Pillow Deased as Delivered into Court October Term 1793
by William Pillow Administrator Viz One Mare & Colt
One Year old horse one cow & calf / one cow & Young Steer Sixteen head of
hogs Some household furniture consisting of three feathers / And furniture one
pot and hooks Two Dutch Ovens and pair of hooks One Pair of Flatt Irons
One Dozen of Knives and forks Two Pewter Dishes and Delph Dish Eight Delph Plates
Ten Tablespoons / One Delph Plate and Teapot and Cream Jugg and Dozen Tea cups
and Saucers, One Glafs Tumbler / Six Tea Spoons, one part to mustard Stick And
Quart Bottle And some farming tools consisting of / two Little plows, and
clevis Thouthors (?). One Narrow Ax And Drawing Knife and hanfaw one pair of
Iron Wedges / Two Spinning Wheels five chairs three water pails - no more come to my knowledge -*

292

An Inventory of the chattel Estate of John Pillow Deased as Delivered into
court October Term 1793 / by William Pillow Administrator Viz One Mare & Colt
One ~~Two~~ year old horse one cow & calf / one cow & Young Steer Sixteen head of
hogs Some household furniture consisting of three feathers / And furniture one
pot and hooks Two Dutch Ovens and pair of hooks One Pair of Flatt Irons / One
Dozen of Knives and forks Two Pewter Dishes and Delph Dish Eight Delph Plates
Ten Tablespoons / One Delph Plate and Teapot and Cream Jugg and Dozen Tea cups
and Saucers, One Glafs Tumbler / Six Tea Spoons, one part to mustard Stick And
Quart Bottle And some farming tools consisting of / two Little plows, and
clevis Thouthors (?). One Narrow Ax And Drawing Knife and hanfaw one pair of
Iron Wedges / Two Spinning Wheels five chairs three water pails - no more come
to my knowledge -

Two

Note: Exact copy. "/" means end of sentence. Total value \$142.25.

240

The possessions left by John Pillow were few, but he did leave them a great older brother, William. This book is about the direct line, but an exception is made in the next section and cousin William is included because he is, in the real sense, the father of the Pillow family. Oldest brother of our ancestor, Abner Pillow, William became the head of the household when his father, John, died. He set the example for the younger children. He was an American patriot, a brave Indian fighter, a Colonel under "Old Hickory" in the War of 1812, a self-educated literate son of an uneducated father, a responsible person, and a true gentleman.

An entire book should be written about William Pillow. The next section gives a few extracts from the pages of history, included because of the admiration felt by this writer.

WILLIAM PILLOW
1772-1868
(Not in the direct line)

John Pillow's oldest son, William, was an outstanding individual. He played a leading role in the development of the Pillow family. He was a great American. We can turn to William's own words that tell about his father, John, and William's role in the family. This writer has a copy of a very long hand written letter that William wrote to Dr. Lyman C. Draper, a famous early American historian. Dr. Draper found the eighty year old William in Tennessee in 1853 and asked him for an account of his experiences. The extracts below are copied from the letter with exact spelling, punctuation, and capitalization.

Draper Ms 6XX 15 1-11

LETTER OF COL. WILLIAM PILLOW TO LYMAN C. DRAPER

"I was born near Dan River in Guilford county North Carolina in 1772 and emigrated to the Cumberland county in 1787 with my Father & his family, came through the wilderness with a guard commanded by Elijah Robertson and settled in a frontier station four miles south of Nashville known as Little Jno Browns station. The next Spring the Indians commenced depredations upon the settlements and kept it up spring & summer until the Breaking up of Nickajack in sept 1794. As I was the Eldest son and nearly grown I had to do the Bear hunting and Indian fighting (which were matters rather of necessity) while my Father and next brother Gideon then a small boy guarded the station and made the corn. As you are acquainted with the Indian mode of fighting it is unnecessary for me to say anything about it. They were Killing and shooting at somebody every 2 or 3 weeks and we chasing them out of the settlements but seldom caught them as they generally had a day or 2 the start of us. They murdered a great many people of Both sexes and usually carried off the scalps of all they murdered. I kept an account of the number of persons that were Killed in their & coming to & going from the settlements in the year I think of 1792 which amounted to 104.

"I was out in the most of the expeditions that went from Davidson county from 1790 until the close of the Indian wars, I was with Capt Rains when the spies came unexpectedly upon a party of Indians in a cane break the discovery was mutual the foremost man Robt Thompson fired & killed an Indian the rest fled through the cane & escaped. We had pursued a party to Elk River and found that we could not overtake them & turned across to another trace and in coming home on the waters of Duck river we came upon a trail coming to the settlements and pursued hotly and soon

overtook them but there was nothing done & I was out with Capt Gordon in pursuit of a party that had Killed a woman near Buchanan's station and near the head of Duck River in a poor dry country we lost the trail and in searching for it we got into what has been Known ever since as the old stone fort to get out we had to retrace our trail we continued to search through the day without effect until Just at night while hunting a suitable camping place we came suddenly in view of a party camped. Capt Gordon thinking that we were undiscovered by them sent fifteen of us around to fire upon them thinking that they would run up the Branch we fired and Killed one Indian they returned the fire and Killed Robt Mcrory they Broke into the cane and made their escape under cover of Darkness. I heard a gun fire and hollowing where I had just come from I dashed my horse up the steep second Bank of the River and saw Davis running towards the camp and 4 Indians after him and very near him I saw one of them throw something at him and when they discovered me they turned and Run Back I put my horse at nearly full speed and gained on them very fast one of them saw that I was alone took to a tree and raised his long axe handle in a position to shoot I saw what it was and did not stop (just at that moment 2 others turned to the right and ran towards the River) I had a British musket, then verry hevily charged with small rifle Balls, I aimed to ride nearly on him and in taking my gun off my shoulder my hands were very cold I lost one of my Bridle Ranes and before I could think my horse ran Close up to his left side he wheeled and struck at me with his axe and I leand so far over to shun the lick that I fell from my horse I think not more than 10 feet from him I ran upon my hands and feet (carrying my gun with me) about 20 yds, I was afraid to look up expecting every moment that he would split my head open with his axe, and I now think that if he had seen me upon the ground he would have Killed me. I think he struck at me with such force and missing me turned his face from me and as each of us were for getting away from the place as fast as possible, when I ventured to look up I saw him running in the opposite direction 40 or 50 yds from me (which afforded me a great relief) I ran after him and being less fatigued than he was I soon ran up within 20 yds of him he heard me cock my gun and Jumped behind a dogwood sapling which I saw protected his vital parts I therefore held my gun to my face and advanced upon him, he attempted to Jump to a larger tree about 15 feet from him and as he left the sapling, I fired and he fell. Just at this moment Capt Murry Thos Cox Robt Evans Luke Anderson and William Ewing rode up to me I pointed in the direction that one had gone and turned over the top of the Ridge and told them to ride on. I soon heard their guns firing. As they turned over the Ridge they saw an Indian catch my horse by the Bridle and Jump with his breast upon the saddle there being a blanket Rolled verry short and tied behind prevented he getting his leg over the horse—he however Kept the horse going in a galop until Thos Cox put his gun almost against him and fired shooting him through the shoulder he held on until they were all up with him Anderson was riding a mule and was near him when he slipped off and scared his mule he run under some Brush which jerked his gun from him. The Indian caught up the gun and/snapped 3 or 4 times at thim before Robt Evans shot him down,—.

"Nickajack

"As you have seen and conversed with Col Joseph Brown and the others I presume that I cannot add much to your stock of Information about this fight however as you have asked I will give you my recollections of it There was seven men in my mess and we made a raft out of dry cane picked up by torch light which carried 6 guns our clothes and shot Bags as snugly as a canoe wold have done and one man who cold not swim (William

Mongomry) hung on to the raft, My Brother Gideon and myself were the best swimmers that belonged to the mess I took the rope that was fastened to the raft in my teeth and Gideon and some others whose names not recolected pushed with one hand, We landed a little before daylight,—."

The letter is eleven pages long and is on file. William signed it as shown in the final retraced words as follows:

I do not think that any of the men who did not cross the River deserved for want of courage but there were many of them that could not swim and on that account was left behind after war and previously too had seen very many of them tried and they fought courageously,

Wm. Pillow

Dr. Ramsey and Dr. Draper were friends and exchanged information. The letter of William's has the authenticity of being "first hand" and the charm of the old spelling and punctuation of the Indian fighter. Ramsey retold the same stories in scholarly fashion in The Annals of Tennessee. This book is in most libraries. It tells of William's heroic action at the Battle of Nickajack. There are many stories about the man. He was given credit for killing the Indian Chief, Big Foot. William was a Colonel under General Jackson during the Creek War of 1812. At the Battle of Talladega, he was shot. In William's words, "The ball entered my left side through the lower part of my vest pocket and passed directly through the body and was extracted from the right side immediately above the hipbone." Only the strongest of men could have survived the wound.

Colonel William Pillow is buried a few miles south of Columbia in an unmarked grave. It is just off the Campbellsville Pike, in the mid-northern section of old District 7, between Glenwood Church and Reece's Chapel (Ebenezer Presbyterian Church). This is southwest of the Ginger Hill area, in the 8th District.

At the Centennial Celebration in Columbia, Tennessee, July 4th, 1876, William Pillow was honored. An address was read which ended in the words, "He was of large frame, perfectly erect, the very soul of honor, sans peur et sans reproche."

ABNER PILLOW	married	MARY S. (POLLY) THOMAS
23 Jan 1784-25 Oct 1860	30 Mar 1808	20 Jul 1788-1822

Abner Pillow was born at the farm on Whetstone Creek near the Dan River in Rockingham County, NC. His life as a child must have been very tranquil compared with the years that followed. When Abner was only seven years old, the family moved to the little blockhouse south of Nashville, TN, and Indian warfare would become his way of life. Father John was killed when Abner was thirteen and brother William took over the family leadership. The school of hard knocks put something into the spines of these children that changed the character of the Pillow family. Burning ambition may be the way to describe what they acquired as they fought to survive death by arrow or starvation.

They educated themselves in some way. Their inherited character may have come from the Pillows, the Johnsons, the Allens, or the Owens, but the basic "stuff" was there. Through the Johnsons, it could have been a gene from the great Robert Bruce, the great hero of Scotland! One never knows.

Abner taught himself to be a surveyor. By personal decision or upon advice, the choice was wise. North Carolina reached all the way to the Mississippi River (or to the Pacific Ocean!) since there was no western boundary. Tennessee did not become a state until 1796. The North Carolina soldiers in the Revolution got very little pay. Instead, they were given land grants west of the mountains. A survey had to be made of each piece of land. Many of the veterans got the land and wanted to sell it right away. The money would buy more and better land further west. The continuous flow of settlers into the Cumberland meant an increasing number of buyers. Abner surveyed the land, bought from willing sellers and sold to new arrivals. He made his fortune. He learned, also, that land is the source of wealth. One document refers to Abner as "a farmer and practical surveyor, was engaged in locating lands."

Documentation of the land sales is abundant in the Tennessee Archives and other publications and will not be reproduced here. However, two documents are very interesting.

In 1812, Abner gave his nephews and nieces land on Brown's Creek, in Nashville. Then, in 1845, for \$400 to John Thomas, he sold the Pillow Brick House, no. 29, on Alades (Sp?) Street in College Hill or Academy lots, extending to Wales Street. Of course, they might be just two more of his land sales!

On 31 March 1808, Abner married Mary (Polly) S. Thomas. She was the daughter of Jesse Thomas and Sally Wood. The father of Jesse Thomas was Job Thomas who married Elizabeth Hoggatt who came from Manchester, England, to Virginia. The information about the Thomas branch comes from a delightful little book called Old Days in Nashville by Miss Jane H. Thomas, printed in 1897. When you open the book, the first thing you see is a quizzical little old lady in a bonnet, our cousin Jane, to the right. You can tell that she missed nothing that happened in Nashville after the covered wagon brought her there in 1804. **It is too bad that she is not alive to help me with my Nashville mysteries today!**



MISS JANE H. THOMAS.

Job and Jesse Thomas served in the American Revolution. Both have been proved to and approved by The Society of the Sons of the American Revolution.

Miss Jane Thomas states that there were several Thomas families around Nashville in those days. That may explain how another ancestor, to be discussed later, W. Reese Porter, could be married to another Mary (Polly) Thomas at the same time in the same general location. The first Polly was Polly S., the second Polly Hamilton. Polly is the universal "pet" name for Mary. No connection has been found between the two ladies.

Abner moved his family from Nashville to Columbia, in Maury County. Thank goodness! The remarks about lack of cooperation and information from Nashville are reversed in Columbia, Maury County. This county has one of the most complete published documentation programs in America. The local historical society deserves great credit. The president of the society has been Mrs. Newsom (Jeanne) Cooper. I am fortunate to be able to call her a friend.

A Columbia newspaper wrote, in 1872, "A log cabin, one of the first in Maury County, on the Pillow farm opposite the mouth of Bear Creek has been torn down." Abner lived in Columbia. For a while, he called McNairy County his residence, as he moved about buying land, but the family was always in

Columbia. A comment is appropriate. The Pillow family seems to "hang together" as a clan. They moved together, competed with each other, and remained very close together - generation after generation.

In Columbia, the family became leading citizens. Abundant information about the members of the family can be found in the genealogical publications of the historical society.

During the War of 1812, Abner served as a Major in the same organization as his brother, William, the 5th Brigade. Abner signed various papers as the Brigade Judge Advocate. The 5th Brigade was commanded by General Isaac Roberts, who was under Major General Andrew Jackson. A story about Abner is told in Garrett's War of 1812 - Soldiers of Maury County, Tennessee, page 152.

"Abner Pillow had a fierce and terrible combat with a fierce and athletic Indian in the water of Duck River. Both parties had emptied their rifles and then grappled in deadly conflict in the water about four feet deep. Abner armed with a sharp butcher knife, and the Indian with a tomahawk. In the midst of the struggle both parties went under the water, a plunge of Abner's butcher knife into the heart of the Indian decided the battle."

The reader may notice that no list of Abner's children has been given. The reason is that all are clearly named in his will which follows. That will, Abner states, was "written deliberately by myself and with my own hand". In clear perfect English and handwriting, he demonstrates his fairness, intelligence, sensitivity, and honesty.

When Abner died in 1860, he was buried beside his wife, Polly Thomas, who died long before in 1828. They lie in Rose Hill Cemetery in the city of Columbia among dozens of Pillows. Nearby are his son, William H. Pillow (1808-1864) and his wife, Elizabeth T. Porter (1817-1902). These are our next generation of ancestors.

September 1987

The service of Job and Jesse Thomas in the American Revolution is:

1. NSDAR, Pierce's Register, p. 501, Both names listed.
2. Gwathmey, Historical Register of Virginians in the Revolution, p.766. "Thomas, Jesse, 3 and 7 CL, 5 CL, 5 & 9 CL, 7 CL. IP" and "Thomas, Job, Inf., nbll. Of Northumberland, E." (CL is Continental Line. IP is Illinois Papers. Virginia troops fought in western Virginia that became Kentucky and Illinois. Nbl1 means that he did not apply for bounty land. E refers to Dr. H.J. Eckenrode's records.)
3. Brumbaugh, Revolutionary War Records, Vol.I, Virginia. pp. 187, 219, 272. Both names are listed for Infantry service.
4. NSDAR, Patriot Index, p. 673. Both names are listed. Jesse is listed with a different wife, but our Sallie Wood was his second wife.

Abner Pillow
Last Will & Testament
Proven 18th November 1860

In the name of God, Amen
I, Abner Pillow of Maury County being in feeble health but
of sound and disposing mind knowing that it is appointed
for man once to die do make and declare this to be my

last will and testament.

first, I will my soul to God who gave it & my body to the ground from whence it came. It is my will that all my just debts shall be paid. first, Anthony L. Pillow holds notes on me for some two hundred fifty or three hundred dollars borrowed money which I wish my hereinafter named executor to pay out of the first money he gets of my Estate with ten per cent interest (not that he required that of me) but I know he is a paying that for want of the money he loaned me & it is but right I should pay him the same & for him to pay all my other debts as fast as he secures money to do it with. I will my son, Alexander H. Pillow my silver Leaver watch & two hundred dollars. I will to William H. Pillow's wife, Elizabeth, my clock & to William H. Pillow my violin, to my daughter, Mary L. * Rucker, my silver tea spoons. to my son, Anthony L. Pillow I will my brown mare, Scinny Lin, my bureau & book case, my bed and furniture & my shotgun & what books I have. If, however, any of the rest of my children should- any of the books, I request him to let them have some of them which I am sure he will do-I also want to divide my wall pictures as they chose. I gave my daughter, Caladonia B. Hatcher my note last spring for one thousand dollars, which it is my will she shall have. I wish my hereinafter named executor to pay said note or to buy her a negro woman of that value. I also will her my silver table spoons. It may seem that I am giving her more than the rest, but owing to embarrassed circumstances I did not have it in my- to do as much for her, as I had and did for Mary L. Rucker & she has been unfortunate & is a widow & I think my duty to do what I have done. An right here I consider I have made them equal not splitting hairs. I have taken in my estimate my things which I have heretofore given to any of them.

I do hereby nominate and appoint my son: Doctor Anthony L. Pillow my Executor and full and discretionary power to sell & convey my land in McNairy County containing by estimation five hundred and thirteen acres, as soon as he can & for the best price he can, but do not limit him but leave him full discretion. I appropriate three hundred dollars which I wish my said Executor to buy a White Marble Head & foot stones to be set up at the graves of my wife, my deceased son Napolion L. Pillow & myself with suitable Inscription on them. I appropriate three hundred dollars for the maintenance and support of my old negro woman, Rachel, if she should outlive me. She having been a faithful servant & is now old and unable to support herself my Executor having supported me and her for the last two or three years & after the expences of my Burial is taken out which I wish to be in a very plain & cheap manner & after my said Executor shall have been amply paid for his services & time in attending to sell my land, wind up estate, etc, which I wish him to be well paid & his time is money to him & he has to support his family by his practice. I then want equal distribution of the balance of my Estate between my son William H. Pillow, Mary L. Rucker, Alexander H. Pillow, Anthony L. Pillow, & Caladonia P. Hatcher. I hope all my children will be satisfied with my will. I however have done what I think right & declare it to be my last will and testament & one which I intend to stand. done this 2nd day of October 1860 written deliberately by myself and with my own hand.

Test

William Pillow
H. J. Pillow
M. L. Martin

Abner Pillow

(Compared)

This transcription was made from a clear copy of the original will which is on file in the Archives of the State of Tennessee, in Nashville, TN.

ACM

* The "Mary L." should read "Mary J." (Mary Jane).

WILLIAM H. PILLOW
15 Apr 1809-6 Dec 1864

married
1837

ELIZABETH THOMAS PORTER
12 Dec 1817-04 Feb 1902

This ancestor was born and died in Tennessee. By the time he was born, his father was a successful man and an outstanding citizen of Columbia. William H. Pillow is conspicuous because he is the only yankee on the family tree. When the War Between the States began, he came forth strongly as a union sympathizer and was so identified in the Columbia newspaper. After the area fell to U.S. troops, he was a leader in organization of the pro union citizens in the area. He did not live long enough to benefit from his actions. His son, also our ancestor, William Reese Pillow, was a gallant Confederate soldier as will be discussed later.

On 13 June 1837, William H. married Elizabeth T. Porter. She was of Scotch-Irish descent, the fourth generation in America. The Porters will be the subject of a separate chapter of this book. William and Elizabeth had ten children. They were Mary, Walter, Augusta, Annie, Robert, Ella, Carrie, William (our ancestor), Elizabeth and Abner.

This generation could be called "the mansion builders" in Columbia. General Gideon Pillow built a stately white pillared home called Clifton Place in 1832. Dr. A.L. Pillow's wife inherited the home of President James K. Polk. A newspaper wrote, "Dr. Pillow, who is having the old James K. Polk residence remodeled into a fine and imposing mansion on last Saturday gave all the workmen a sumptuous dinner." (28 June 1872).

Back to William H. Pillow, he and Elizabeth lived in Halcyon Hall, located, today, at 212 W. 6th Street in Columbia. The U.S. Census in 1850 gives a fairly accurate description of William's home. He was 40, his wife, Elizabeth was 32. The children at home were Mary 12, William 8, Walter 7, Abner 5, and Augusta 2. A 17 year old boy and a 14 year old girl, students, lived with them. Also, there was a 50 year old Mary Pillow, who must have been a maiden cousin. Her birthplace was Virginia so she may have been a relative of one of old John Pillow's brothers. William is listed as a constable. It seems that he was engaged, also, in some sort of mercantile trade. One reference says he, "was a well-known and prosperous money speculator".



HALCYON HALL—Built in 1845 by Joseph Walker. Used as a girls' school in the late 1840s. The hole where a cannon ball crashed through an upstairs door during the Civil War is still visible.

The 1850 census showed William's father, Abner, living alone on his property over in McNairy County.

After William's death, Elizabeth took over as Head of Household, a term used in the U.S. Census of 1870. Humor is evident in the long list of a dozen or more people living in the big house. Before the War Between the States, slaves were listed by first name only. After the war they had to choose a surname. Many, who admired their former masters took the owner's name. The census is taken house to house and neighbor's households are together. As the little shacks around the big house were counted, every black family was named PILLOW. Then, at the big house, Elizabeth 52, is followed by 5 children, then a man and wife called Dry Goods Merchants, a Bookkeeper, his wife and child.

Next, the black servants, who lived in the house, are named. There is a black family; father, mother, and three children. They had taken the surname SHERMAN. This is the most despised name in the South, being the name of General Sherman of the Union Army. He raped, plundered and burned from Atlanta to Savannah.

The Columbia paper stated, "Entered into Rest. At her home on Sixth Street at 6:45 o'clock, Tuesday evening, Mrs. William H. Pillow, aged 84 years, services Friday at 2 p.m. at her residence by Rev. J.H. McNeilly of Nashville, buried at Rose Hill Cemetery, Feb. 5, 1902." Her grave is beside her husband.

So, no more space will be devoted to William H. as we turn to his son. Writing about William Reese Pillow will be a genuine pleasure.

WILLIAM REESE PILLOW married **ELIZABETH JANE SCALES**
23 Feb 1842-29 Jul 1889 18 Feb 1868 11 Jul 1849-18 Jan 1924



William Reese Pillow was born before the war into a well-to-do family of Columbia, Tennessee. His mother, Elizabeth Porter Pillow, gave him the name of her father, William Reese Porter. William was only nineteen when the first shot was fired upon Fort Sumter. Regardless of his father's pro-union feelings, William joined the Confederate forces. He was a corporal in Company E, 48th Tennessee Regiment of Infantry. A newspaper, the Maury Democrat, on 26 April 1864, told of William's service.

"This company was soon completed and officered as follows: Capt. A.W. Gordon; 1st Lieut. Robert Akin; 2nd Lieut. Joe Love; 3rd Lieut. Lucian Friorson; J.C. Wooton, O.S.; W.J. Moore, 2nd Sergt.

"This company left Columbia on the morning of December 10th together with eleven other companies for Camp Maury, a few miles north of Nashville, Tenn., where on the 12th, a regimental organization was effected, it becoming Co. E, 48th Inft., Col. W.M. Voorhies, Commanding.

"In a few days this company was detached and ordered to Clarksville, Tenn., where it was quartered in Bradley's old tobacco factory, awaiting equipment; some ten days elapsed when we received muskets that had formerly been flint-lock and had been changed to percussion locks, one-half of them would not explode a cap. Thus armed we were ordered to Elk Fork Bridge in Todd county, KY., on the line of the L & N Railroad, to guard the bridges. Our camp was located in a bend of the river on the right of the bridge in a skirt of timber. In front was the embankment approaching entrance to the bridge, and on the left a dense skirt of timber and undergrowth. On the opposite side of the river Col. Starnes cavalry was encamped. We were ordered to be very vigilant in guarding this important place as two companies of Federal cavalry had been enlisted in the vicinity. Gen. Johnston with the Army of Tennessee was at Bowling Green.

"With those surroundings and at this point, the subject of this memoir first attracted the attention of his officers and comrades. It was a beautiful night in January; the snow had fallen to the depth of several inches, the full moon shone brightly; objects could be seen far and near, save in front and rear where the dense timber grew. The patrol walked his beat to and from the entrance to the bridge—the bitter cold forbid his standing still. Some fifty feet away the relief sat around the camp-fire; the more fortunate peacefully slumbered in the camp below, dreaming perhaps of the loved ones at home. The cavalry camp-fire on the hill a few hundred feet away had faded and died out; nothing broke the stillness save the murmur of the swift river below and the soft whisper of the relief guard near by. **Corp. W. R. Pillow** had just ascended the embankment to relieve the sentinel for a moment that he might warm his benumbed hands. He measured his beat once—twice, when a musket shot rang out upon the air; the shot was immediately returned. A call from **Corp. Pillow** told his comrades that he had been wounded; this alarm had reached the camp below and men rushed half dressed with musket in hand to the rifle-pits at the mouth of the bridge. Wm Henry Trousdale was one of the first to reach the place. This school boy, 18 years old, sunny faced, modest as a woman, a boy only in years, well proportioned and nearly six feet tall stood there ready to do or die. **Corp. Pillow** was shot through the calf of the leg, another ball passed through his hat. As yet, having heard no response from our cavalry allies on the other side of the river Ord. Sgt. Wooton volunteered to wade the river and ascertain what had become of them. He found but four or five men there, who informed him that Col. Starnes had that morning gone on a scout. This fact accounted for the attack on us."

Because of his serious wound, William Reese Pillow returned home to Columbia. In 1866, the war over, he served as an Alderman in Columbia. Soon after that, he moved to Mississippi. The reason for the move is not known. But, he was a wounded Confederate soldier in a yankee household. Also, Mississippi offered opportunity for young men to get far better land than any in Tennessee for very little money.

In Mississippi, he met Elizabeth Jane Scales, the daughter of a widow whose husband had died for the Confederacy. The widow owned a large plantation near Greenwood. (This was like finding a bird's nest on the ground!) One wonders whether this meeting took place by chance. We will never know. One interesting paper has been found. Up in Williamson County, TN, just above Columbia, way back in 1816, David Kaigler was married by a preacher named Nicholas Scales and his bondsman was a John Pillow (Not our old ancestor, but a descendant). The Kaiglers came down to Mississippi from Williamson County, TN. Regardless of how it came about, William Reese Pillow married Elizabeth Jane Scales on 18 Feb 1868. They made their home near Greenwood, at Elmwood. He farmed and served as Sheriff.

William Reese Pillow and Elizabeth Jane Scales had eleven children:

- | | |
|------------------------------|-------------------------|
| 1. Mattie Scales | 24 Nov 1868-13 Oct 1946 |
| 2. Elizabeth Porter (Bessie) | 09 May 1870-17 Aug 1953 |
| 3. William II. | 20 Nov 1871-29 Jun 1872 |
| 4. Annie Henry | 22 Jun 1873-01 Oct 1899 |
| 5. Addye Pinckney | 16 Nov 1874-06 May 1972 |
| 6. William Nathaniel (Will) | 04 Jul 1876-15 Jan 1946 |
| 7. Robert Lessley (Bob) | 12 Jun 1878-19 Mar 1943 |
| 8. Terry | 03 Feb 1880-15 Jan 1881 |
| 9. Mary Irving (Mamie) | 28 Apr 1882-09 Apr 1935 |
| 10. Infant girl | 20 Dec 1883-25 Dec 1883 |
| 11. Walter Reese (Walter) | 28 Nov 1886-16 Jul 1937 |

By the year 1880, William's household had grown in number. The census shows William at age 38. He is described as a farmer, but he was a plantation owner, a planter. His wife, Elizabeth Jane Scales is called "Lizzie" in the census. She is thirty years old. Mattie is a student, aged 11. My grandmother is shown as Bessie, aged 10 (Elizabeth Porter Pillow). Then, in order, are Annie 6, William 4, Robert 2, and Terry, a son under one year. The census continues to list a 13 year old white servant named Emma Woods. Then, there are four black servants; Luke Wilks 37, Charlie Pillow 12, Ellen Wilks 30, and Sallie Wilks 16.

William was referred to as Captain Pillow in Greenwood. He may have held that rank in the local militia in the years after the war. Greenwood, Mississippi, is in Leflore County, today. The county was formed in 1871 from Carroll, Sunflower, and Tallahatchie counties. The old county lines went through Greenwood, along the rivers, so researchers have to check many records to find the ancestors. William Reece died when he was only 47 years old. Knowing that his life was almost over, he returned to Columbia, TN, to the home of his still alive mother, Halcyon Hall, where he died of "malignant jaundice".

The intent of this family history has been stated several times - to give the direct line. However, for good reason, at this point, Pillow cousins should be reminded that the story to this point applies to you all. You descend from the brothers and sisters of my grandmother, Elizabeth Porter Pillow. I challenge you to pick up the thread of this story and apply it to yourself and your children. You are right there on the spot. I am a thousand miles away.

The dear old lady to the right is Elizabeth Jane Scales Pillow holding a mean little kid named Albert Metts. Great grandmother died soon after this picture was made.



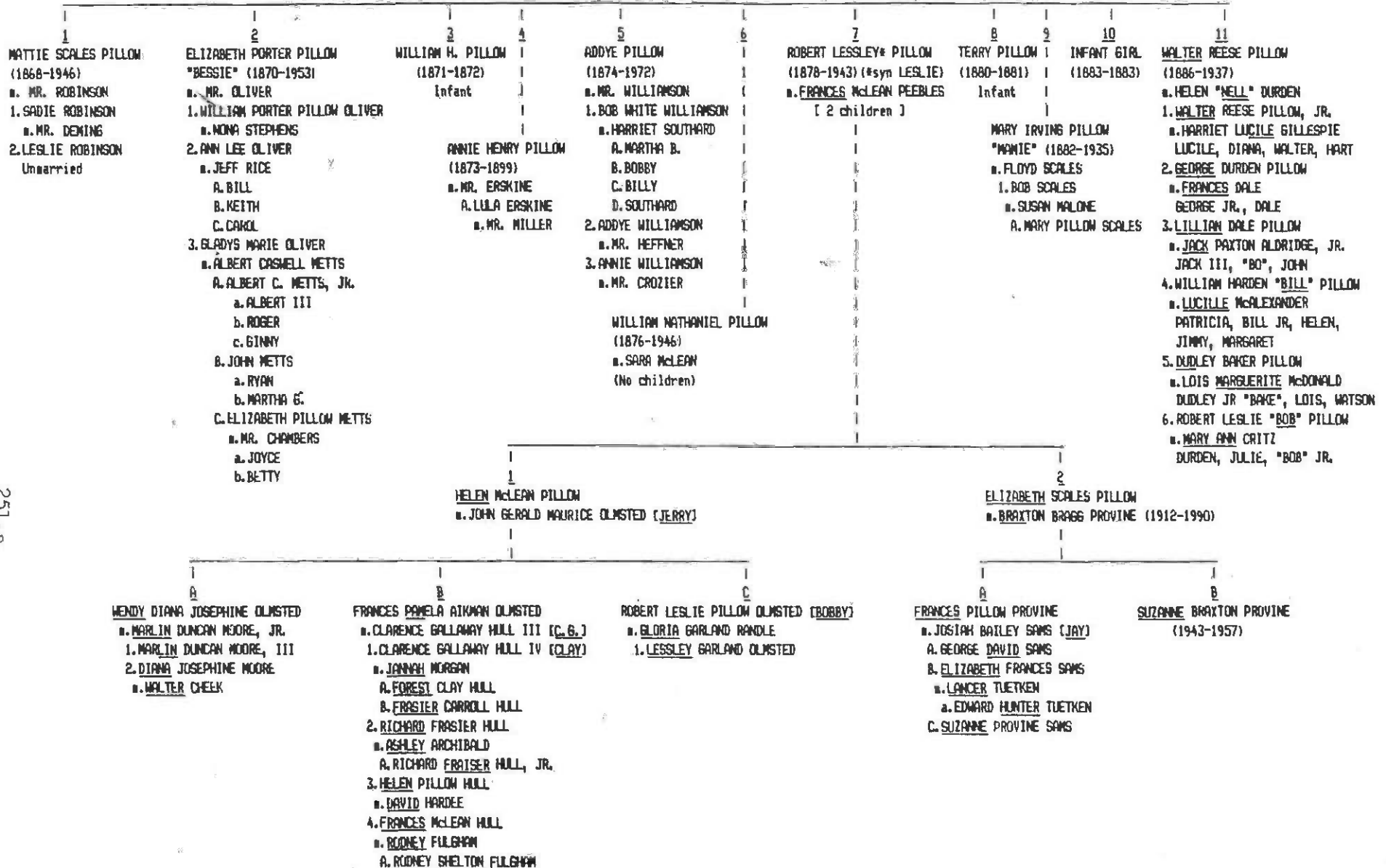
ROBERT LESSLEY PILLOW FAMILY TREE
AS OF 06/01/92

ABNER PILLOW(1784-1860)

WILLIAM HARDEN PILLOW(1812-1864)

WILLIAM REESE PILLOW(1842-1889)

1. ELIZABETH JANE SCALES(1849-1924) [LIZZIE]
[11 children]



251-a

This chart of the WILLIAM REESE PILLOW family was contributed by Gloria Olmsted in 1992.

These papers from the UNITED STATES ARCHIVES in Washington, DC, prove the service of William Reese Pillow in the Army of the Confederacy.

271
Pillow William R.
Co. E, 48 (Voorheis')
Tennessee Infantry.
Consolidated Moh., '65, with 42, 45, 49, 53 and 55 (Brown's)
Reg'ts Tenn. Inf. into one field organization, and finally
became part of 4 Consol'd Reg't Tenn. Inf.
(Confederate.)

Corporal Corporal
CARD NUMBERS.

1	50135777	1
2	5838	2
3		3
4		4
5		5
6		6
7		7
8		8
9		9
10		10
11		11
12		12
13		13
14		14
15		15
16		16
17		17
18		18
19		19

Number of medical cards herein 9
Number of personal papers herein 6

Book MARK: _____

See also _____

(Confederate.)
P | 48 | Tenn.
(Voorheis')

William R. Pillow
Corpl, Co. E, 48 Reg't Tennessee Infantry.*

Appears on
Company Muster Roll
of the organization named above,
for July 31 to Oct 31, 1862

Enlisted:
When Dec 12, 1861
Where Nashville, Tenn.
By whom Capt Beall
Period 1 year

Last paid:
By whom _____
To what time _____, 186

Present or absent _____

Remarks: In the service
but in another
command.

*This company was successively designated as Captain Gordon's Company; and as Company C and Company E, 48th (Voorheis') Regiment Tennessee Infantry.
The 48th (Voorheis') Regiment Tennessee Infantry was organized December 13, 1861. Most of the regiment was captured at Fort Donelson, Tenn., February 16, 1862; released at Vicksburg, Miss., September 23, 1862, and immediately re-organized; and declared exchanged at Aiken's Landing, Va., November 10, 1862. The portion that escaped capture formed a part of the 48th (Nixon's) Regiment Tennessee Infantry from April, 1862, until December 1, 1862, when they were returned to their original command. The remainder of the 48th (Nixon's) Regiment Tennessee Infantry was transferred to this regiment by S. F. O. No. 46, Hdqrs. Army of Tennessee, dated July 14, 1864. In March, 1865, the 42d, 46th, 48th, 49th, 53d and 55th Regiments Tennessee Infantry were consolidated into one field organization.

Book mark: _____

W. Mulhall
Copyist.

ELIZABETH PORTER PILLOW
09 May 1870-17 Mar 1953

married
24 Mar 1892

JOHN MADISON OLIVER
04 Apr 1867-01 Mar 1934

Before moving on to the other chapters about the Scales, Porters, Kaiglers, Bethells, Stubblefields and others, I will shift into the first person and tell about what I remember about my grandmother and the Pillow family. You Pillow cousins may not agree. In Southeast Asia, they say that every man sees through his own eyes. Up to this point the story has been based upon documented facts. I realize that an old man's memories of his childhood can be distorted. After leaving Mississippi forty-five years ago, there were very few visits to Greenwood, MS. On the other hand, memories of this sort can be more vivid because they were not subject to the slow and constant change year by year.

My grandmother, Elizabeth Porter Pillow Oliver said that her family had been wealthy. She described her childhood - a big home, many servants, and a good life. She told of trips on the trains, where each member of the large family took a personal servant along. The large steamer trunks, the many children and all that was involved impressed my grandmother - and it still impresses me.

When father William Reese Pillow died, the five girls were not interested in the land. The three sons offered to buy their shares, and they did. Frankly, I think the girls got more than their share before their long lives came to an end. I know that my grandmother did. If there were ever any unpleasant relationships between members of that family, I did not know. The three sons were always kind and generous with their sisters. They had the means, through their hard work. The sons were wise in their business decisions. I cannot say the same for the sisters.

Out of order by age, I will discuss my grandmother first - Elizabeth Porter Pillow Oliver. She was a remarkable person. If there had been Women's Liberation in those days, she would have been the leader. At the same time, she was always a perfect southern lady. Her education was extensive and directed to the study of music. She played the piano and sang well. Somehow, she managed to live for 83 years without ever doing any physical work of any kind. But, her mind was always busy on one business scheme or another. She learned many ways to lose large sums of money.



Her father called her Bessie. Three years after his death, she married John Madison Oliver, a millionaire from Wesson, MS. His father was half owner of the Mississippi Mills - cotton and woolen factories hiring over 2200

people. Bessie had two children, my mother, Gladys Marie, and my uncle, William.

John M. Oliver took his family to Gainesville, Georgia. There, he built and owned the first telephone company in Georgia. The telephone lines were generally around Gainesville and the countryside of north Georgia. The grand life style continued. The big home in Gainesville had the first indoor porcelain bathtub in the town. The family moved to another home complete with orange groves in Florida for the winter. My mother never went to a public school. She had her own teacher until she went to Agnes-Scott, then Brenau College in Gainesville. She majored in music.

Then, the marriage ended. My mother went to the home of her wealth Aunt Ella Richardson in New Orleans. William went to Riverside Military Academy, and my grandmother went to Paris - to study music. When she returned, she opened a school of music where she taught voice for a while. In the meanwhile, the Bell Telephone Company offered my grandfather one million dollars for his telephone company. He refused and they put in free telephones until he failed. Bessie still had her money. She bought land in Florida and in Oklahoma City. Later, she found that the Florida land was under water and the Oklahoma City property was in the poor section of town. She unloaded both properties and lost her inheritance. Her generous brothers put her on a monthly pension. Even then, she would save and invest - on one occasion in liquid soap. The "inventor" was in her church. After the land deals, she became intensely religious. She became a Christian Scientist and read the Bible many times.

Bessie lived wherever she pleased - Greenwood, Atlanta, Gainesville, and other places including Chicago. For a while, she lived with her brother, Will Pillow. He gave her a new coupe auto. She and the car were found in a tree, the car on its side, with the engine running at full speed. She was sitting behind the wheel with her foot on the accelerator. As a little boy and as an old man, I think that she was wonderful. In the summer, when school was out, I would spend weeks with her. I liked Atlanta best. She would put me on a street car and meet me at the same spot hours later when the street car had made its circuit.

She always stood perfectly erect as though she were on stage ready to sing. Her English was absolutely perfect. If she had an accent, it was Virginian, not Mississippi southern. When she said "house", it sounded like "howoose". She spent a lot of time teaching me manners, or trying to do it. Once, she explained to me, at about age seven, that if you see horse manure in the street, you must pretend that it isn't there! Don't look at it, just be careful where you step.

If Bessie was ever down hearted, it did not show. Optimism was hers. The only thing she left to anyone was the memory of a grande dame - a magnificent grandmother!

Now, Will Pillow lived on a plantation several miles from a very small town rightly called Ita Bena, Mississippi. In those days, a plantation had over 1,000 acres, less was a farm. He was a planter. In the summer, as a boy, I spent long periods at his home with my cousin, Roscoe Crozier, from Richmond, Virginia. Uncle Will had been married, but his wife, Sarah McLean, had died before I ever met her. He must have loved her greatly. He never married again. Her picture was always beside the ancient old bed he used. His home was large, single-story and rambling. It was on a river bank in a large grove of trees. Flocks of geese roamed the yard - a terror to me as a child. Those geese would flap their wings and chase me. Guinea hens sat on the ridge pole of the roof and made continuous noise.

Will was tall, half-bald, with dark hair and he had lost three fingers from one hand in an accident. Those two fingers always held a cigarette. He was very kind to Roscoe and me. Whatever we wanted, he gave to us - mostly, the total freedom to do as we pleased. That's great for a young boy. When we

were older, it meant that we could have any horse in the barn whenever we wanted to ride. The negroes were always ready to help us. Looking back, I wonder why we escaped real trouble. We'd shoot at the pigeons on the barn - leaving holes in the iron roof. No one ever corrected us!

I always thought Uncle Will was happy because he seemed that way to me as a child. But his lonely life and ill health lead to his taking his own life. He was a fine, gentle man.

Robert Lessley Pillow was Uncle Bob - a happy, blond, gentleman who was married to my Aunt Frances. They lived on the south side of the river that runs through Greenwood, MS. The old plantation is called Elmwood. Their daughter, Helen Olmsted lived there and she had a sister, Elizabeth Provine, who lived nearby. I remember Uncle Bob as being quiet. Aunt Frances was vivacious and outgoing. After the others died, Aunt Frances was the head of the Pillow family, it seemed. When my father died, he was buried in Greenwood. I appreciated seeing Aunt Frances and Cousin Helen at the grave.

Walter Pillow was the real planter, in my eyes. He looked like he belonged on a tractor. Sturdy, blond, sunburned, and strong, he raised a great family. His wife, Nell Durden, was a perfect match for him. His plantation is the historic site of Fort Pemberton, where the Confederates sank the ship "Star of the West" to stop the yankee advance toward Vicksburg. Old pieces of the ship could be found there when I was a boy. The skeleton of the ship was exposed at low water.

Walter had a daughter, Lillian, and five boys. All of them became successful. I was told by my grandmother that Walter gave each boy complete control of his plantation for a set period to make their fortune. They were all taught to work hard - a lesson few wealthy boys learn. He was wise enough to know that a plantation divided six times makes six little farms for six poor farmers. This is the story as it was told to me.

On the river bank of Walter's plantation, he kept a herd of long hair goats. When a baby, he had been unable to drink any milk but goat's milk. They had saved his life. He loved those goats - pets, actually. Once, my brother, John, asked for a baby goat. Walter sent a negro to catch one for him.

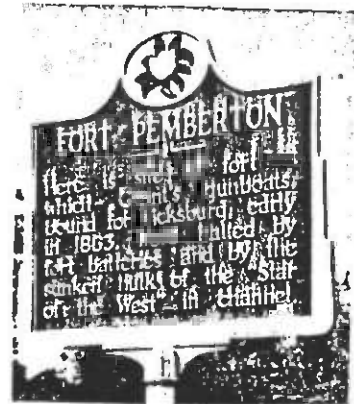
Walter's sons went to Mississippi State, except for Dudley. He went to LSU. They all played football well. The Mississippi State team was great for years - always having at least one of the Pillows.

Addye Pillow Williamson was my cousin Roscoe's grandmother. Just as Walter Pillow looked like a planter, Aunt Addye looked like a grandmother. She was prim, thin, with a good head of hair. She wore black dresses and white lace around the neck. She lived in Gainesville, GA, or Atlanta when I knew her.

Mattie Pillow Robinson was called "Auntly" by the family. She was jolly, fat, and very pleasant. Her home was a white pillared mansion of by gone days. It is in Gainesville, GA. I saw most of Auntly when I was visiting my grandmother in Gainesville.

Mamie Pillow married Floyd Scales, then Edwin French. I can remember seeing her one time, only, in Clarksdale, when I was a small child. She was a gay, happy person.

These personal notes may seem out of place in a serious book of this kind. It is hard to say whether memories such as these can be as important as the cold old tombstones and documents collected to prove that someone walked the face of the earth. But memories die with the person to whom they belonged



unless they are recorded. How easy this book would have been if more of the old ancestors had taken a few moments to tell a few stories in writing. My notes about my grandmother might seem critical. They are not. I loved the lady and respected her great character. The stories tell about the way she lived and thought. I was very close to her and the stories came from her, told to me when I was a child. These memories go back many years. I left home in 1939. Since then, many Pillows have been born. While the army has been sending me all over the world, I have lost contact with the family - a natural thing to happen.

A few years ago, my brother, John, of Yazoo City, MS, sent me a picture of the Pillow family in Greenwood for a reunion. He had cut it from a newspaper. I guess we were left out since our name is not Pillow, but those present were a fine looking crowd.!

Since my retirement, I have spent a lot of time on research of the family history. The Pillow family is included, of course. I hope this information will be well received and will become a source of justified pride in your great ancestors. This completes the Pillow name, Now, a chapter will be devoted to the Scales. You are Scales as well as Pillows.

9 13 Va.	13 Va.	13 Va.
<i>John Pillar</i>	<i>John Pillar</i>	<i>John Pillar</i>
{ Captain David Steel's Co. of the 13th Virginia Reg't commanded by Col. William Russell. (Revolutionary War.)	{ Captain David Steel's Co. of the 13th Virginia Reg't commanded by Col. William Russell. (Revolutionary War.)	{ Captain David Steel's Co. of the 13th Virginia Reg't commanded by Col. William Russell. (Revolutionary War.)
Appears on	Appears on	Appears on
Company Muster Roll	Company Muster Roll	Company Muster Roll
of the organization named above for the month	of the organization named above for the month	of the organization named above for the month
of <i>Dec</i> , 1777	of <i>Sept</i> , 1777	of <i>Sept 1</i> , 1777
Roll dated	Roll dated	Roll dated
<i>Nov 10</i> , 17	<i>Oct 10</i> , 17	<i>Sept 6</i> , 1777
Appointed	Appointed	Appointed
....., 17, 17, 17
Commissioned	Commissioned	Commissioned
....., 17, 17, 17
Enlisted	Enlisted	Enlisted
....., 17, 17, 17
Term of enlistment	Term of enlistment	Term of enlistment
<i>max</i>	<i>max</i>	<i>max</i>
Time since last muster or enlistment	Time since last muster or enlistment	Time since last muster or enlistment
.....
Alterations since last muster	Alterations since last muster	Alterations since last muster
.....
Casualties	Casualties	Casualties
.....
Remarks:	Remarks:	Remarks:
.....
<i>Housterm</i>	<i>Housterm</i>	<i>Housterm</i>
(548) Copyid.	(548) Copyid.	(548) Copyid.

NOTE: July 10, 1996. The NSDAR, in recent years has tried to improve their poor record in genealogy. They wrongly decided that the service of John Pillow had not and has not been proved. Argument with those women is futile. The NSSAR stills continues to accept his service as valid. It is valid.

P | 13 | Va.
John Pillar
 { Captain David Steel's Co. in the
 13th Virginia Reg't, commanded by
 Col. William Russell.
 (Revolutionary War.)
 Appears on

Company Pay Roll
 of the organization named above from *the*
Commencement to the last day
of Sept. inclusive 1777.
 Commencement of time *Jan 25*, 17
 Commencement of pay *Jan 25*, 17
 To what time paid 17
 Pay per month *6 2/3 dollars*
 Time of service *3 mo 6 d*
 Whole time of service
 Subsistence
 Amount of pay *& 20-10-00*
 Amt. of pay and subsistence
 Pay due to sick, absent
 Casualties
 Remarks:

Houston
 (646) Copyist

P | 13 | Va.
John Pillar
 { Captain David Steel's Co. of the
 13th Virginia Reg't commanded by
 Col. William Russell.
 (Revolutionary War.)
 Appears on

Company Muster Roll
 of the organization named above for the month
 of *Dec*, 1777.
 Roll dated *Jan 1*, 1778.
 Appointed 17
 Commissioned 17
 Enlisted 17
 Term of enlistment
 Time since last muster or enlistment
 Alterations since last muster
 Casualties
 Remarks: *Transferred*
to Col. B. Rodhead
Decem. 16"

Houston
 (648) Copyist

P | 13 | Va.
John Pillar
 { Captain David Steel's Co. in the
 13th Virginia Reg't commanded by
 Col. William Russell.
 (Revolutionary War.)
 Appears on

Company Pay Roll
 of the organization named above for the month
 of *Nov*, 1777.
 Commencement of time 17
 Commencement of pay *Nov 1*, 17
 To what time paid 17
 Pay per month *6 2/3*
 Time of service *1 mo*
 Whole time of service
 Subsistence
 Amount of pay *& 7-10-0*
 Amt. of pay and subsistence
 Pay due to sick, absent
 Casualties
 Remarks:

Houston
 (640) Copyist

P | 13 | Va.
John Pillar
 { Captain David Steel's Co. in the
 13th Virginia Reg't commanded by
 Col. William Russell.
 (Revolutionary War.)
 Appears on

Company Pay Roll
 of the organization named above for the month
 of *Dec*, 1777.
 Commencement of time 17
 Commencement of pay *Dec 1*, 17
 To what time paid 17
 Pay per month
 Time of service *1 month*
 Whole time of service
 Subsistence
 Amount of pay *& 7-10-0*
 Amt. of pay and subsistence
 Pay due to sick, absent

Houston
 (638) Copyist

P | 13 | Va.
John Pillar
 { Captain David Steel's Co. of the
 13th Virginia Reg't commanded by
 Col. William Russell.
 (Revolutionary War.)
 Appears on

Company Muster Roll
 of the organization named above for the month
 of *Nov*, 1777.
 Roll dated *Dec 4*, 17
 Appointed 17
 Commissioned 17
 Enlisted 17
 Term of enlistment *man*
 Time since last muster or enlistment
 Alterations since last muster

Houston
 (648) Copyist

April 28, 1988

The death of John Pillow has been a mystery as was mentioned on page 239 of this book. On the next page, these lines from a very old book read, "— John, and Ursula Johnson Pillow, who, in 1789, removed from North Carolina to Davidson County, Ten., and settled temporarily with his family at 'John Brown's', a thin frontier station four miles south of Nashville. He was killed in the fall of 1793, leaving William and Gideon to protect six younger brothers and sisters." The mystery concerned whether John was killed by the Indians.

Determined to find whatever evidence remains, I drove from Chattanooga to Nashville and checked into a high-rise hotel just a stone's throw from the Tennessee Archives. Several derogatory statements in this book have been aimed at people of Nashville about lack of cooperation. Those statements do not apply to the competent and considerate people who work in the Tennessee Archives. They could not have been more helpful and knowledgeable.

First, I learned that copies of all the old Davidson County records are in the archives. Further, none of those records tell how John Pillow was killed. The State Library department of the archives is in the same building. The only documents or books that applied to John Pillow were those that had been found in the past. However, another approach was evident from the vertical files on the Brown name. Going back to the location of John's death - John Brown's Station - the facts about John Brown were very interesting. They show the intensity of the Indian fighting at the station to an extent that it can be concluded that John Pillow must have been killed by the Indians.

A type-script document, The Brown Family of Fort Nashborough and Franklin, by Dr. Douglas Crowder, contains the following statements:

"John Brown and Andrew Ervin were the first of the family to arrive at Fort Nashborough in 1780.—Their names figure prominently in the records of early Nashville. At the end of 1782, Andrew Ervin was one of the staunchest supporters of General James Robertson, who was determined that Fort Nashborough would not close. Indian attacks had been so severe that many settlers had retreated into Kentucky. — Records also indicate that he witnessed the death of James Leeper after the infamous Indian attack of April 2, 1781, at what is now Third and Church Street in Nashville.

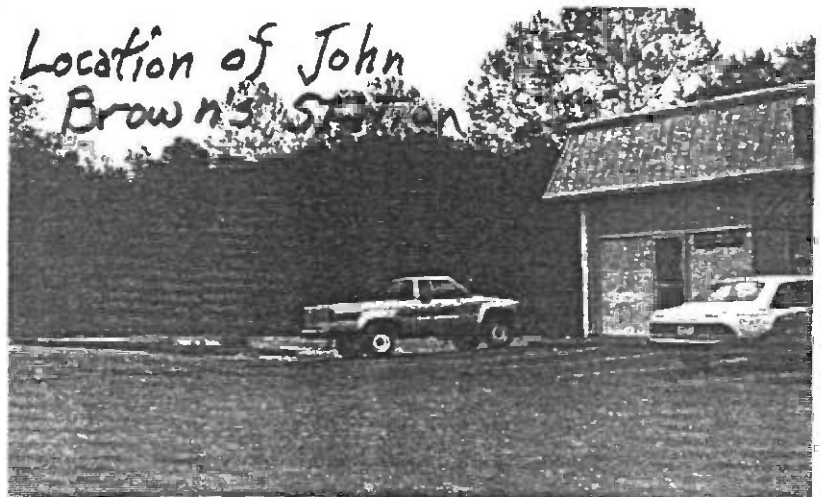
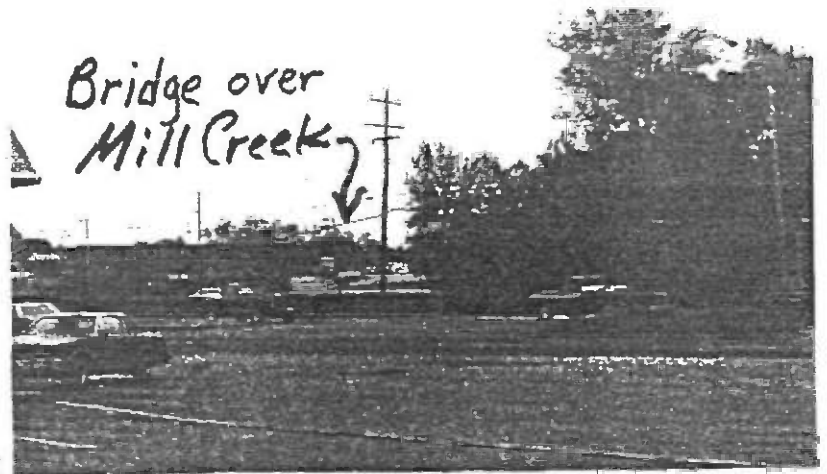
"John Brown, brother-in-law of Andrew Ervin, was also a leader in the early settlements. —On January 6, 1787, John Brown was elected 'Judge of the Superior Court of Law and Equity'. The following year, he founded Brown's Station on the 640 acre land grant which he officially received on March 4, 1788. The station was located on Mill Creek near what is now the intersection of Thompson Lane and Murphreesboro Road in Nashville. Unfortunately, John Brown and his family of three children were able to remain but a few years at the new fort because of the constant attacks of the Indians. In fact, on March 5, 1792, one of his own sons was killed at the station. Ramsey stated in his Annals of Tennessee that 'a mile below Mayfield's, the Indians attacked Brown's Station, and killed four boys—two the sons of Stowball, one a son of Joseph Defton, and the other a son of John Brown" (p. 483). The stockade was closed and the Browns returned to Fort Nashborough.

"Soon afterwards, David McEwen and his wife, the former Margaret Ervin, arrived at the fort on their way to settle what is now Franklin, Tennessee. However, because of the ferocious Indian attacks they were forced to remain at

Nashborough until 1798, at which time they became the first permanent white settlers of Williamson County, Tennessee."

The paper goes on to tell how John Brown, while hunting bear at Holly Tree Gap, in Williamson County, on December 20, 1794, was scalped and killed by Indians. Remember that John Pillow was killed in the fall of 1793. After consideration of the information, above, it seems probable that John Pillow must have been killed by the Indians. Also, since it is believed that every source of information on the subject has been explored, this book will let him rest in peace.

After leaving the archives, I went to the exact location of John Brown's Station. A small shopping center is on the location beside the bridge over Mill Creek. Trees and brush line the banks of the small creek. I walked into a beauty parlor, full of ladies and one odd man. After getting their attention, they were given a short lecture upon the significance of that spot. It was late afternoon, but I took a couple of pictures anyway. A lot of imagination is required to see the wild Indians assaulting the log fort, but I had a feeling that my visit to Nashville had been worth while!



Scales

The Scales name can be found throughout the history of England. We have not connected our family with the many nobles who carried the name, but there is the probability that our Scales originated with those early Norman Noblemen. The derivation of the name goes back to the invasion of England by William the Conqueror in 1066. He had spearmen, **escaliers**, and archers. The escaliers were called, also, **scalers** or **scales**. One of them was named Hardwin de Scales. In an attack upon a besieged city, he had the dangerous task to scale the wall. Hence, the name evolved.

Through the years, Hardwin de Scales was followed by Roger de Scales, Lord of Middleton. Later, came Roger, Lord Scales and many others. In 1468, Anthony Lord Scales commanded 6,000 archers who defended England. With the passage of time and many generations the name became common in England. Also, common first names prevailed, such as, Roger, George, Thomas and Anthony. In America, many people named Scales came with the earliest emigrants. The Mayflower sailed in 1620. In 1622, John, Thomas, and William Scales came ashore. Down in Virginia, George Scales started the parade in 1636, followed by John in 1651, and William in 1656. They multiplied and spread through the Carolinas and other colonies.

Finding our emigrant ancestor and proving the information has not been accomplished. Family legend is very often basically true. It is even better when you know that your first ancestors that have been identified were intelligent and educated. Fortunately, documentation of our first known Scales is thorough. Early generations said and wrote that Joseph Scales came from England to Virginia.

"There is a tradition in the family handed down from father to son which says that the first Scales who came to this country was quite a youth, not more than twelve years of age; that he came from England, and not until the ship had lost sight of land was he found in the cabin. The captain of the vessel was much enraged and threatened to throw him overboard. The little fellow was not intimidated, but entreated the captain not to molest him and that upon his arrival in America he might sell him to pay his passage money, and he would stand by the contract. To this the captain agreed, and so on their arrival in America he was sold. His master proved to be an unfeeling, hard hearted man, who fed him badly, clothed him slightly, and worked him hard. But the lad was active, industrious and faithful. He attracted the attention of a humane man in the neighborhood, who saw the sufferings of the youth, and kindly furnished him with warm clothing, for which young Scales paid him when he became of age, as he had promised. He fulfilled his contract to serve until he was twenty-one, and the first money he made for himself was used to pay for the clothing so kindly furnished by the neighbor. From this boy the Scales family in Rockingham had its origin."

The story must have originated with Joseph Scales, to be retold by his grandchildren. The first trace of Joseph, found in Virginia, is in The Virginia Genealogist, Vol. 24, no.4, It lists British Mercantile Claims, 1775-1803. On page 288, we find these entries:

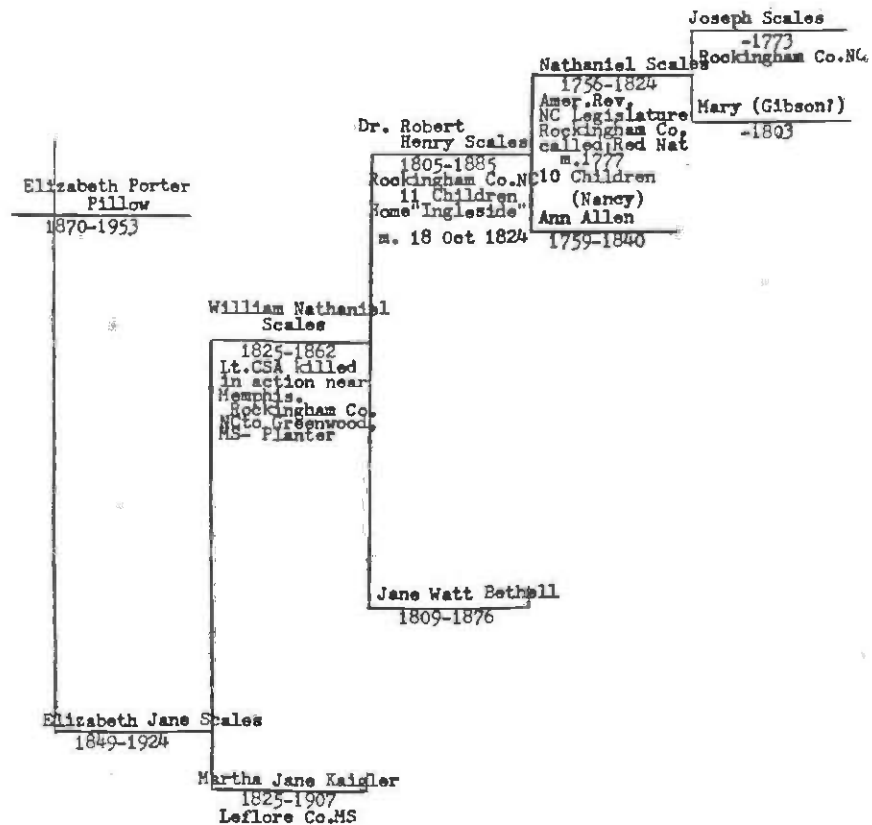
"John Scales. 20.4.7 1/2 pounds, Petersburg Store. He removed many years since to Rockingham County, N.C., where he is very able to pay his debts.

"[P. 37] Joseph Scales. 12.4.8 pounds, same store. He has removed also to Rockingham County, N.C., and is able to pay.

"James Scales. 2.6.1 pounds, Petersburg Store. He has also removed to Rockingham County and is able to pay his debts."

By this time, after 1775, Joseph was dead, but we know that he is our Joseph because he, John, and James appear in Guilford County, NC, in the part that became Rockingham County. A land document, NC No. 108, File No. 106, shows John and James as neighbors. Joseph bought his 200 acres in Rockingham County on 4 March 1752. Granville County Deed Book D, page 16, records the deed. The farm is on the north side of the Dan River, adjoining the lands of Colonel William Byrd. So, we know that Joseph came from Petersburg, VA, to Rockingham County, NC.

A part of the Pillow chart is reproduced below, to show the Scales segment of the family.



Joseph bought 200 acres of land in 1752, north of the Dan River, in the lower loop, eight miles above Wentworth. Fortune smiled. This area is what William Byrd called "The land of Eden" Colonel William Byrd had been one of the commissioners that set the boundary of North Carolina and he was an extensive land owner. He described the land as follows: "The bank of the Dan is a wonderful dwelling, where the soil is as fertile as any in the world; the air is wholesome; and happy will be the people destined for so wholesome a situation, where they may live to fullness of days, and with much content and gayety of heart." There, Joseph Scales would become the head of a great family.

The 200 acres are at the junction of the Smith and Dan Rivers on the northeast side. Today, near the town of Eden, the Lynrock Park Golf Course is on Joseph's old farm. As time passed, Joseph bought more land on Matrimony Creek and Beaver Island Creek in Rockingham County. In Virginia, across the

state line in Pittsylvania County, he bought 1,075 acres on both sides of Cascade Creek. In all, he owned 1,775 acres.

In Joseph's "Will Fo Joseph Scales, Sr., 1774" which is copied on the next page, he names fourteen children. The home place, the old 200 acres, a slave and a still are left to his wife, Mary, with a provision that his "beloved son", Nathaniel inherit it upon Mary's death. This meant that our ancestor, Nathaniel, was responsible for the care of his mother.

Mary's name is not known although it may have been Gibson. Also, she may have been his second wife. She was a widow for 29 years. Her will, dated 7 June 1803, is at the courthouse. Evidently, Joseph had five children by his first wife. They were John, Thomas, David, Anne, and Mary. The second wife of Joseph Scales was Mary. Joseph and Mary had nine children: Henry (called "alias Henry Gibson" by his father); our ancestor, Nathaniel, who married Mary (Nancy) Allen; Robert; Sarah Davis; Hannah Owens; Agnes; and, Betsy. The eight sons of Joseph served in the American Revolution or helped supply the colonial troops.

Joseph, Jr., son of Joseph, Sr., went to the Virginia property, and married Anne Perkins, daughter of the prestigious Perkins family. The old Virginia homestead, "Thornfield", still stands. There are only 75 certified lands in Virginia that have been in the same family for over 200 years. (VA Farm Bureau Federation) This great plantation is one of them, always owned by a Scales. The name of the owner, today, is Joseph Scales. These folk became the Virginia branch of the Scales family. Our ancestors are of the North Carolina branch of the family.

The will of Joseph Scales is in the Rockingham County courthouse in Book A, page 337.

WILL FO JOSEPH SCALES, SR. 1774

In the NAME OF GOD, AMEN: I, Joseph Scales of Guilford County in the Province of North Carolina-Planter, being weak and calling to mind the mortality of my body, but of perfect mind and sound memory do make and ordain this my last will and testament—in the first place I recommend my soul to Almighty God, and the Author of my life, in hope of a joyful resurrection at the last day and direct that my body be buried in a decent and Christian like manner at the discretion of my Executors herein after mentioned as to what worldly substance it has pleased God to bless me with—after all my just debts have been paid, I give, and bequeath and devise as followeth.

Imprimis,—I give and bequeath to my well beloved wife, MARY SCALES all the land and plantation &c whereon I now live containing two hundred acres together with one negro named Samson, one negro woman named Nell, one feather bed and furniture, one grey mare known by that name, six cows and calves, one gelding called Black Jack, one side saddle and bridle, one still now on the aforesaid plantation and six head of sheep for her proper use during her natural life providing she remain unmarried and after her marriage or death that then (except the land before mentioned) all I have given to my said wife the use of be sold by my Executors and ye monies arising there—from to be equally divided among part of my children, to wit:—Henry Scales, alias Henry Gibson, Joseph, James, Nathaniel, Agnes, and Betsy Scales, and Sarah Davis and Hannah Owings.

Item I give and bequeath to my beloved son Henry Scales otherwise Henry Gibson, one negro man named Scicero and one negro woman named Manner and a bond on John Glenn for a certain sum of money the bond he has now in his possession.

Item I give and bequeath and devise to my son Joseph Scales seven hundred and seventy-five acres in the upper end whereon he now lives

(part of a tract containing one thousand and seventy acres lying and being on the great branch of Cascade Creek in Pittsylvania County, Virginia), to hold to him his heir and assigns forever, and also I give to my said son Joseph one negro woman named Bett.

Item I give bequeath and devise to my beloved son James Scales five hundred acres of land (in the north end of a tract of six hundred and ninety-three acres lying on both sides of Beaver Island Creek in Guilford County in the province of North Carolina to hold to him his heirs & assigns forever. And also one negro man named David I give to my son James.

Item I give bequeath and devise to my beloved son Nathaniel Scales the aforesaid two hundred acres of land after the marriage or death of his mother to hold to him his heirs and assigns forever and also I give to my said son Nathaniel one negro man named Jacob and one mare named the sorrel mare.

Item I give bequeath and devise to my beloved son Robert Scales three hundred acres of land the remaining part of the aforesaid tract of one thousand and seventy-five acres on the great branch of Cascade Creek, be the same more or less and also I give my son Robert one negro boy named Robert. I give bequeath and devise to my son-in-law John Davis the remaining part of the aforesaid tract six hundred and ninety-three acres on both sides of Beaver Island Creek to hold to him his heirs and assigns forever, and I also give to my daughter Sarah the wife of my said son-in-law one negro woman named Silvess.

Item I give and bequeath to my beloved daughter Hannah Owings one negro girl named Sall and also one side saddle now in her possession.

Item I give and bequeath to my beloved daughter Agnes Scales one negro woman named Jude and also I give to my last s'd daughter one feather bed and furniture.

Item I give and bequeath to my beloved daughter Bettsy one negro boy named Isaac, one negro girl named Letta and one feather bed and furniture.

Item I give and bequeath to my sons John and Thomas the sum of five shillings each to be paid to them by my executors in sterling money.

Item I give and bequeath to my son David Scales five shillings sterling money to be paid to him by my Executors and my will and desire is that my wife Mary Scales aforesaid clear nor cause to be cleared no more land on the tract I now live on which she is to have the use of after my decease and further my will is that all the residue or remainder of my stock, household goods, personal estate & not herein before mentioned to be sold and money arising therefrom to be equally divided among my wife and part of my children to-wit: Henry Scales alias Henry Gibson, Joseph, Nathaniel, and Robert Scales, Sarah Davis, Hannah Owings and Bettsy and Agnes Scales and further my executors are to get my tobacco carried down by wagon and horses before they are sold in order to pay my debts, and Lastly I constitute and appoint my beloved sons Henry Scales alias Henry Gibson, Joseph & James Scales and Philemon Deatherage to be my Executors of this my last will and testament; thereby ratifying and confirming this to be my last will and testament.

In witness whereof I have hereunto set my hand and seal the seventeenth day of September in the year one thousand seven hundred and seventy-three 1773.

Joseph Scales (Seal)

The will was witnessed by John Morgan, Thomas Walker and Henry Jester. Probate was in May court, 1774.

NATHANIEL SCALES married ANN (NANCY) ALLEN
13 Apr 1756-06 Jul 1824 03 Jul 1777 1759-1840

Nathaniel must have lived at the old homestead until 1797 when he bought a farm on the north side of the Dan River at Deep Springs. (The Deep Springs Country Club is on the land today.) Then, around 1800, he moved to Hogan's Creek in the eastern part of the county. (See the map in the Pillow chapter.) As his father before him, Nathaniel bought land as he had the means. Remember, his father left him the home place of 200 acres after his mother died. Well, she lived for 29 more years! In 1797, he paid 1000 pounds for 335 1/2 acres on the east side of the Mayo River and on the top and south side of Mayo Mountain and on the road to Mountain Meeting House. The same year he bought 200 acres for 200 pounds on Fishing Creek. This land is across the Dan River from the old 200 acres owned by his father and finally left to Nathaniel in 1803.

A lady in Martinsville, Virginia, just across the state border from Rockingham County, Elizabeth LeSueur Scales de Shazo, is our cousin. She has studied the Scales family for many years and is writing a book about the Scales. She refers to Nathaniel Scales and writes that "His record is found in Public Accounts of the State of North Carolina, commencing 22nd of August 1775 - see DAR nos. 235067 and 426664," The problem in absolute proof lies in the fact that there was more than one Nathaniel Scales during the Revolution. However, the records have been sorted out and our Nathaniel served as a soldier in Captain Richard Vernon's Company, North Carolina Militia. He participated in the second expedition to Cross Creek. Captain Vernon's company was part of Colonel James Martin's Regiment, which was sent to Cross Creek to prevent the Tories and the Highlanders from marching on Wilmington. The Heritage of Rockingham County, North Carolina, 1983 was published by the county historical society. The service of Nathaniel Scales is documented on pages 11 and 12. Many pages of the excellent book are devoted to Pillow-Scales ancestors. The book is a real value at about \$43 and can be ordered from P.O. Box 84, Wentworth, NC, 27375. The service of Nathaniel Scales has been proved to and approved by the NSSAR and the NSDAR.

Nathaniel Scales married Ann (Nancy) Allen, the daughter of Valentine Allen. She was a second cousin of Ursula Allen, mother-in-law of John Pillow. The Allen family is the subject of a separate chapter of this book. Nathaniel and Ann lived at their Deep Springs Plantation. The old home still stands and is in excellent condition.

Nathaniel and Ann had a grandson, Alfred Moore Scales. He was a Confederate General and became Governor of North Carolina. In a letter written at the governor's mansion to a cousin, General Scales said, "—the family characteristics, they have been noted for honesty, patriotism, and good citizenship without undue ambition, good lives, paid their debts, and acknowledged in some form their allegiance to God. I never knew one being in jail but I am sorry to say that in so large a family I have known some in the lateral branches that ought to have been, but these are the exceptions. I love the name whenever I find it even among the lateral branches, but I love ten fold more those who descend from Nat Scales, Red-headed Nat, Our Grandfather." We descend from "Red-headed Nat" (Nathaniel) through the brother of General Scales, Dr. Robert Henry Scales.

When Nathaniel died in 1824, his long will left large plantations to each of his sons. General Alfred Scales got Mulberry Island. Deep Springs went to James Madison Scales. Our ancestor, Dr. Robert Henry Scales was given the large home place on the road from Reidsville and Yanceyville where it crosses Hogan's Creek. It can be located on any North Carolina road map. There are two

#1

Scales, Nathaniel

Capt. Vernon's Company,
North Carolina.
(Revolutionary War.)

REFERENCE ENVELOPE

Cards filed with

Scails, Nathaniel

S Capt. Vernon's Co. | N.C.

Nathaniel Scails

Appears with the rank of _____ on a _____

Pay Roll

of Captin Vernons Company of Melitia Light Horse Ordered By Colo. Jams Martin to Collect Delinquents, Disarters, &c., August 20th 1781.
(Revolutionary War.)

Roll dated *Not dated*, 17

No. of Days he served *10*

Remarks:

W. H. C. ...

(548) Copies.

S

Wash^l Scails

Appears as shown below on a _____

Return

of Delinquents, Deserters, &c., taken by Cap^t Vernons Comp^y Light Horse with their Securitys, Forfitures, Witnesses, &c.; by me John Brewer.
(Revolutionary War.)

Return dated *August 13*, 1781

Name *Joac. Control*

Crime *Delinquent*

Security *John Control*

Forfiture _____

Witness *Nath^l Scails*

Remarks:

E. H. ...

(548) Copies.

Hogan's Creeks in the county. This one is on the east side of the county. Daughter, Polly McCain got the High Rock Plantation (Mayo Mountain) and the mills. About 30 slaves were given to the children. Part of Nat's will is inclosed. Nancy lived until 1840. Her will is included with Nat's on a following page.

DR. ROBERT HENRY SCALES	married	JANE WATT BETHELL
1805- 1885	18 Oct 1824	1809-1876

Robert Henry Scales was born and died in Rockingham County. Most of his life was spent on Hogan's Creek. He was a doctor, but the census calls him a farmer. It seems that he may have been a little of each. He was too young for the War of 1812 and too old for the War Between the States. It would seem that little would be known about Robert, but the opposite is true. It may be that he was famous because he was simply a very good man. The letter of Governor Scales, mentioned earlier, states this about Robert, "My Father, of blessed memory one of the best, most sincere, honest, sensible men I ever knew, died nearly three years ago in the hope of a glorious resurrection through faith in Christ. He had for years been a devoted member of the Presbyterian Church. We are all Presbyterians. He loved fine horses, fine dogs, game chickens, good hogs, and in his early life devoted a little too much time to them, but he loved them to the last. He lived and died as his father before him, a man that all men honored and loved." Robert was an elder in the Reidsville church and kept an office in the town. One of the main streets of Reidsville, NC, is Scales Street.

As his grandfather and father, he was interested in land. About 1845, he went to Louisiana and bought a sugar plantation. He mentioned his cane crop in a letter. In 1858, he wrote of his intention to visit Louisiana. This is very important, because it explains how our ancestor, Robert's son, William Nathaniel, went to the vicinity of Woodville, MS, which is just over the line from Louisiana! Also, Robert gave all of his land to his children before he died. His will is very short. His children were given middle names, new at that time, then he called them by their initials. Middle names like Irving, Pinckney, and Moore, may have been surnames of his friends.

Robert married Jane Watt Bethell, possibly the smartest act of his life. She was the daughter of William Bethell. A separate short chapter will be devoted to the Bethells. Pillow cousins would be wise to choose William Bethell for NSSAR or NSDAR applications. In this writer's opinion, he is, by far your most outstanding Revolutionary ancestor. Jane's mother was Mary Watt, called Nancy (1776-1875). Her father came from Dublin, Ireland, to Caswell County, NC. These are real Irish, not Scotch Irish. This is your basis for wearing the shamrock!

The will on the next page has been cut to show several interesting parts. It is not easy to read. From Book A, page 289, in the Rockingham County courthouse, it was signed 4 Mar 1823 and probated in Sep 1824. Wife, Nancy is named. The sons are: Joseph, Henry, Alfred M., James M., and Robert H. The daughters are Sally Neal, Nancy Watt, Polly McClain, and Betsey Wright. Son-in-law John T. Wright is named. Executors are son-in-law Joseph McClain and his sons Alfred and James. There is a statement "—that the legacies left by my dec'd son Nathaniel Scales to Nancy McClain, Mary Wright and Nancy Wright be given to them—".

Nathaniel Seales

Book A
page 289

In the name of God Amen I Nathaniel Seales
of the County of Pickensham and State of North
Carolina do make and enact this my last will
and testament to wit

First it is my will and desire that all my debts
be paid in the manner hereafter provided

Second I give and bequeath unto my son Robert H Seales
all that tract of land whereon I now live being one
hogan acre to come into his possession at the death
of my beloved wife Nancy to him and his heirs for
ever and I also give and bequeath to my said son
Robert H Seales the following negro slaves to wit
Minta and her child Ephraim Gilbert Child and
old Polly and Tom and Dickson children of Dick
with all their increase from this time one horse &
saddle with one bureau a collar and one bed and
furniture to him and his heirs forever

Third I give and bequeath unto my beloved wife
Nancy during her natural life the whole of
my land to wit the land whereon I now live
and by her will I do constitute and appoint my son in law
Joseph McLean my son Alfred H Seales and my
son James H Seales executors of this my last will
and testament in testimony of all which I have
hereunto set my hand and affixed my seal this
fourth day of March one thousand eight hundred
and twenty three
Nathaniel Seales
Witness my hand and seal
acknowledged before me

Nancy Seales. Book B/p 246

In the name of God, Amen. I, Nancy Seales, of the County of Rockingham in the State of North Carolina, being in usual health, and of sound mind and disposing memory, do make and Ordain this my last Will and Testament, as follows, to wit:

First. It is my Will that if I should owe any just Debt that they shall be paid. Secondly. I direct that my Negro boy, Tom shall be sold as hereafter directed & the money arising from such Sale to be divided between my following children and grand children to wit) The Children of my deceased daughter

247) Nancy Seales cont.

ter Sally Seales to have, to be equally divided between them, One seventh part, and my children Nancy Watt, Mary McCain, Elizabeth Wright, Alfred M. Seales, James M. Seales and Robert H. Seales to have each One seventh part, to them and their heirs forever

Thirdly. I direct that my said Boy Tom shall be set up to the highest bidder, for Cash, and that the one of my children who shall be willing to give the highest price for him, shall have him, and that no person shall be allowed to bid for him but my said children, it being my wish and intention that he shall remain in the family.

Lastly. I constitute and appoint my sons Alfred M. Seales, James M. Seales and Robert H. Seales, Executors to this my last Will and Testament.

In testimony whereof I have hereunto set my hand and seal this 19th day of April 1834

Witness

John C. Casuarine Nancy Seales
Jos. H. Bouldin

State of North Carolina
Rockingham County Be November term 1840.
The execution of the foregoing
last Will and Testament of Nancy Seales
was duly proved in Prob. Court by the
oath of John C. Casuarine a Ch. Attorney

I Robert H. Scales of the County of Rockingham and State of North Carolina do make and declare this to be my last will and testament

Having had the land divided which belonged to me and my ^{dearly} wife J. W. Scales lying on the waters of Hogans Creek in said County and State in accordance with the will of my said wife and each child having drawn his or her share which includes the part that belongs to me, I hereby desire and bequeath to Emma J. Scales the lot No 4 that fell to her and also the lot No 1 that fell to E. D. Scales the said E. D. Scales having sold all his interest to the said Emma J. Scales the said lot No 1 is

subject to a mortgage given by the said E. D. Scales to A. M. Scales and I desire and bequeath to Sallie L. Galloway the lot No 3 that fell to her and to Annie E. Macfarlane the lot No 2 that fell to her in the division of said land and my will is that each one take the share of said land both of mine and my wife's land in full of their share to them and their heirs forever. In testimony whereof I have hereunto affixed my hand and seal this the 22^d day of Nov 1881

Signed sealed and delivered in presence of us who at his request and in his presence signed as witnesses
 C. S. Williams,
 N. J. McIlwain

Robt H Scales
 The last will and testament of R. H. Scales made on the 22^d day of Nov. 1881

The War Between the States took its toll from the children of Robert and Jane. They had seven sons and three daughters. Every son was in the Confederate Army but one, who was disabled. Three sons and one son-in-law died for the Lost Cause.

The oldest son, William Nathaniel, our ancestor, married Martha Jane Kaigler (more later). General Alfred Moore Scales married Margaret Smith of Louisiana. James Pinckney Scales followed his brother, William Nathaniel, to Greenwood, Mississippi, then moved on to Carroll County, MS. Other children were Robert Henry, Junius Irving, Sallie Louise Galloway, Erasmus Decatur, Emma Jane, Wallace, Anne Elizabeth Lawson, and there may have been an eleventh child, Mary Bethell Scales.

In The Heritage of Rockingham County, North Carolina, p.548, Kate Le Pine writes about Robert and Jane, "Their family must have been a warm and loving family, with bright intelligent children, endowed with good senses of humor, reflected in letters to each other. The family home was called Ingleside and was near Reidsville. One letter indicated that she had always wanted to visit Louisiana and the writer (son Alfred) suggested that his forthcoming marriage should be a sufficient inducement to go. Whether she did or not is not known."

Kate Le Pine gives quotes from an old newspaper, News and Observer (Raleigh?) as follows:

"—Dr. Robert H. Scales and his sweet, gentle (wife) were among God's chosen ones, and reared a noble family of sons and daughters.

"Old Ingleside, in Rockingham County was one of my favorite visiting places in my early manhood, and many happy hours have I spent under that hospitable roof. In the fall of the year when crops are laid by, Ingleside was a meeting place for the young people for miles

around—the dear old people kept open house the year around. They never grew old.

"The old doctor believed in education and gave his children every advantage, and while he was a great fox hunter and rode to the hounds until he was seventy years old, no one enjoyed cultured society more than he."

WILLIAM NATHANIEL SCALES married **MARTHA JANE KAIGLER**
1825-1864 C. 1846 12 Jun 1825-21 Aug 1908

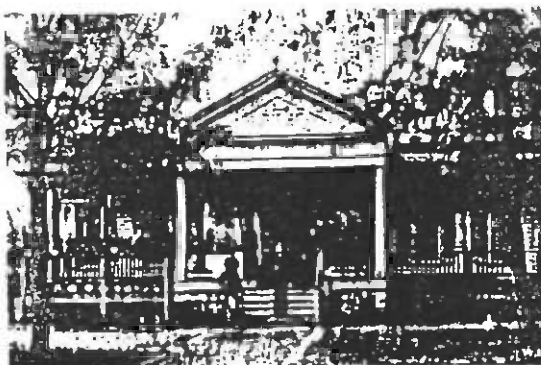
The early life of William Nathaniel Scales at Ingleside has been described. He must have left North Carolina to go to his father's property in Louisiana, near the Mississippi border, Woodville, and the Kaigler family. Many people do not realize that a large part of Louisiana is east of the Mississippi River and south of western Mississippi.

Nathaniel's life in Mississippi is best described by a real authority who lived all of her life in Mississippi and most of it among the Pillows on the plantation.

My dear Aunt Frances Pillow, wife of Robert Pillow was interested in the family history. She would have written this book if she had lived a few more years. Her notes are used as she wrote them in this chapter. Her effort was not in vain. In her notes she wrote:

"William Nathaniel Scales, of North Carolina, came as a young man to Woodville, Mississippi. There he met and married Martha Jane Kaigler. Her father, William Kaigler, early in the 18th century had bought land in Mississippi (near Woodville). This was in the days before The War Between the States."

"The steamer Star of the West was sunk during the War Between the States in the river near where the old Scales house stands, today. The house caught fire from the shooting in this battle between the Confederate and Federal forces. The front part was destroyed before the blaze could be extinguished. The kitchen, dining room and long back porch are the old part that was saved. The front was rebuilt just like the old house.

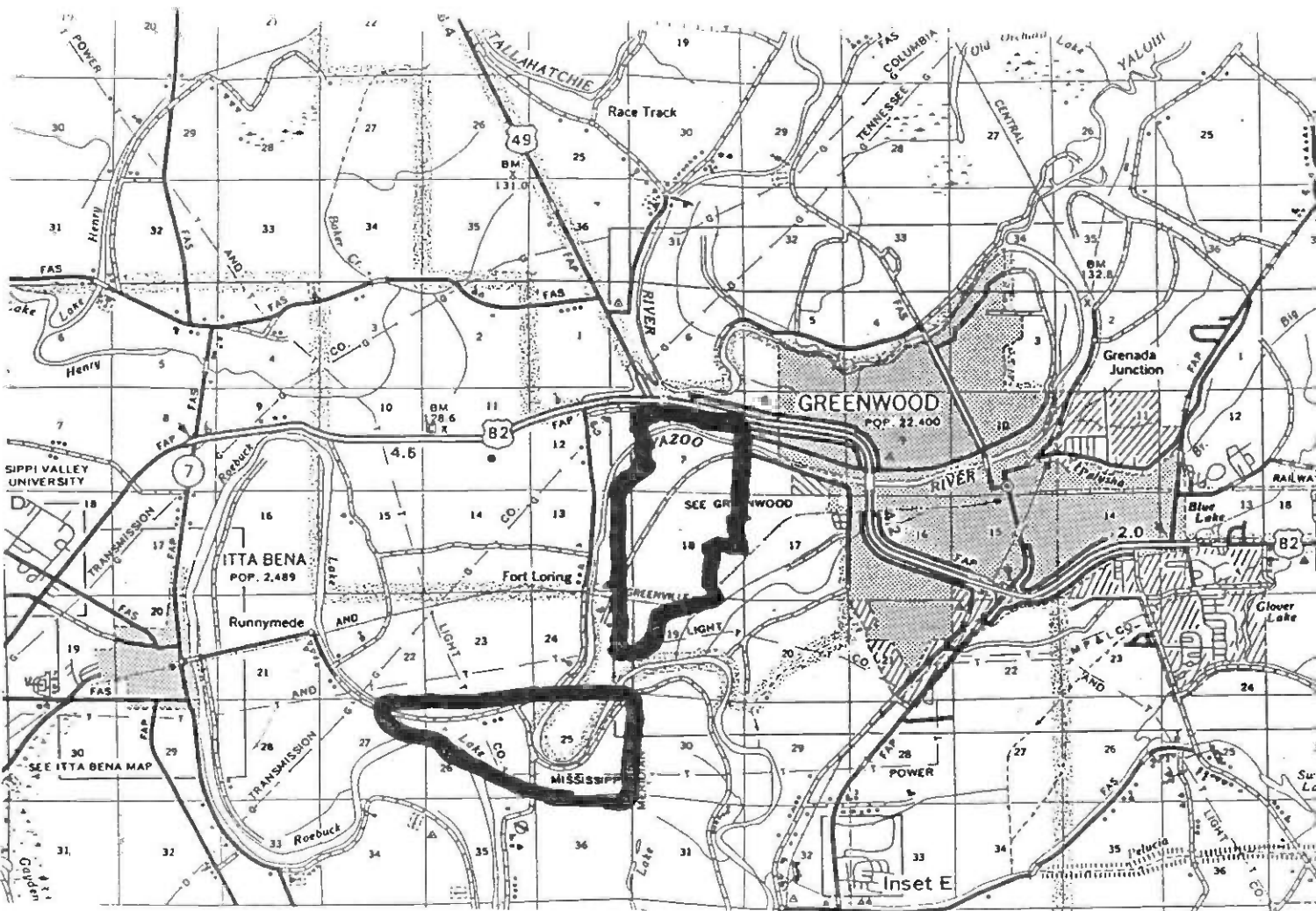


Between 1985, when edition two was finished and 1987, research continued on the history of the Scales and Kaigler families. The family legend about the death of William Nathaniel Scales was wrong. Also, there was the old story that William Kaigler was the great one who had given each of his daughters, on their wedding day, "a plantation, 100 slaves, and \$75,000". It made an interesting story, but it was not true! Captain William Nathaniel Scales was the progenitor and provider of the Pillow-Scales land holdings. He bought the first plantations near Greenwood. He came from a wealthy family in Rockingham County, North Carolina. His wife, Martha Jane Kaigler was one of six daughters of William Kaigler, a man of modest means. She inherited less

than \$10,000, a small part being in cash. That amount may have made a small contribution to the land buys. (See pages after 300 in the Kaigler chapter).

Elizabeth Pollard, of Greenwood, MS, has been very generous with her time and help in developing the true story about William Nathaniel Scales. She held an important position in the Leflore County government for many years before her retirement. Being familiar with the old records, she returned to the courthouse, searched for and found the documents that give the true story. To begin, William Kaigler owned no land around Greenwood. The map below shows, generally, the land bought by William Nathaniel Scales. Lines may not be exact because legal descriptions are vague or locations described have changed over the years. The section boundaries and numbers, however, have not changed. This writer knows nothing about the boundaries, today, but the map should be meaningful to kin who live there.

Note that the map has small squares with a number in the center. These are sections of land, each with a square mile or 640 acres. Thirty-six sections form a township. Then, townships are organized into Ranges. The area of concern is in Township 19, Range one East and Range one West. The land sections break down into lots - usually 16, numbered, oddly, in one direction and then the other. Sometimes, sections were divided by quarters or halves.



In 1857, William Nathaniel Scales bought 482 69/100 acres from Neill Buie. He paid \$8,676 for the land described as Township 19, Range 1 East, Lots 4 & 5, Section 19 (87 74/100 acres); SW 1/4 of Section 18 (174 95/100 acres); Range 1 West, Lots 7 & 12, section 13 (102 50/100 acres); and lots 1 & 6, section 24 (117 55/100 acres).

The next year, 1858, William Nathaniel and Martha Jane Scales bought 792 acres from A.D. & A.J. Winn for \$24,000. The description was: Lots 5 thru 12, section 7, and the north half of section 18 in Township 19, Range one East; in Range one West, Lot 1, section 13; and Lot 15, section 12.

Probably, other land was bought, because the tax schedules show William Nathaniel Scales as the owner of all of section 25; lots 1 through 8 and 12 in section 26; and lots 1 & 2 in section 27 in Range one West. This is the lower plantation on the map. I remember this as the land farmed by my Uncle, Will Pillow.

There are many documents showing buy and sell transactions. Interesting it is that when W.N. Scales bought land, his name was used. When he sold, his name is followed with "et ux". That is a latin abbreviation for "and wife". One interesting document shows that I.M. Walt and William Nathaniel Scales were granted 4 land patents for 1,046 acres in Coahoma County (That's where Clarksdale is located!). No effort was made to track that down.

The land transfers on record are numerous and of no great interest in this book. After William died, Martha Jane bought and sold and gave land to children or kin. In one case in 1900, "In consideration of the love and affection I bear my daughter, Lizzie S. Pillow, & the further consideration of the promise by my said daughter to pay me annually on the 15th day of November of each year during my natural life, the sum of Three hundred and twenty-five dollars—the South half of the NE quarter of section 18—"—and so on. Martha lived for seven years after the deed. In 1875, she "for the natural love and affection which I have and do bear towards my beloved daughter Lizzie—the southwest quarter of section 18". More will be learned about this grand old lady by reading her letters in the APPENDIX "G", called, "Scales Mail". Her mother, Elizabeth Beasley, had taught her to put little trust in men. She and other members of the family continued to buy land after the War Between the States, but not on the scale that the original purchases were made by William Nathaniel Scales.

After the death of Captain William Nathaniel Scales in the War Between the States, Martha Jane Scales lived on in the family home with her son, Leslie, until her death on August 21, 1908. Leslie lived there, alone, until 1920 when he married Mrs. Katie Wade Walt of Greenville, a widow with three children.

The children of William Nathaniel Scales and Martha Jane Kaigler were Elizabeth Jane (Lizzie), Addie Pinck, Mattie, and Alfred Lessley."

The story is supported by the census research below:

U.S.Census 1850 Sunflower County, Mississippi Page 364

22	22	W. N. Scales	24 M	Planter	3000	North Carolina
		-Martha	24 F			Mississippi
		-Elizabeth	2 F			Do " "
		W. Duprez	50 M	None		Mississippi

(Martha Scales was Martha Jane Kaigler before her marriage. Elizabeth, above, is Elizabeth Jane Scales who, later, married William Reese Pillow. Greenwood, MS was located on the boundary between Sunflower County on the north and Carroll county on the south before LeFlore County was formed. The Scales, Pillows and Kaiglers lived near Greenwood.)

U.S.Census 1860 There is no census for Sunflower County for this year. There is a Slave Schedule for Carroll County for 1860. On page 282, W. N. Scales is listed as the owner of 49 slaves.

U.S.Census 1870 Carroll County, Mississippi Page 588

41	41	Scales, Martha	46 F W	Keeping House		Mississippi
		-Mattie	11 F W			Mississippi In School
		-Alford	9 M W			Mississippi

(This is Martha Jane Kaigler Scales, widow of W. N. Scales. This supports the family legend that he was killed in the War Between the States. Martha's daughter Elizabeth is 20 and married to William R. Pillow.)

U.S.Census 1870 Carroll County, Mississippi Page 12

71	71	Pillow William R.	24 M W	Farmer		Tennessee
		-Elizabeth	20 F W	Keeping House		Mississippi
		-Mattie	2 F W			Mississippi
		-Lissa	2/12 F W			Mississippi b.May
72	72	Pillow Walter	26 M W	Farmer		Tennessee
		-Mollie	21 F W	Keeping House		Tennessee

(Plus 1 W male farmer, 26, and 12 black farm workers, 2 with last name, Scales. The next family, no. 73, 8 black persons named Scales. Possibly or probably, these black Scales are the freed slaves of the family of Elisabeth Pillow, above, whose maiden name was Elizabeth Jane Scales.)

U.S.Census 1880 LeFlore County, Mississippi Page 269

24		Scales Martha	W F 54	Widow Keeps House		Miss. S. C. Ga.
		-Alfred	W M 19	Single Farmer		Miss. N. C. Miss.

(One white farmer, one black servant. Right three states are birthplace of the person, their father and their mother.)

The story of the death of Nathaniel Scales in the Mississippi family legend - that he was killed south of Memphis and his body was never recovered is wrong. The true story came from the Texas branch of the family. In Dallas, there is a gentleman named J. Winston Ball, who has taken an active interest in the Scales genealogy. He is a grandson of Dr. John Lewis Ball and Addie Pinck Scales, the daughter of William Nathaniel Scales and Martha Jane Kaigler mentioned above. From the Ball genealogy, there is this statement about the death of Nathaniel: "Captured early in the war, he was a prisoner in the North and assigned to nursing duties in Overton Military Hospital, Memphis, Tennessee, Jan. 1864. His last letter written to his pre-teen age daughter, Addie, cited the fact that small pox was rampant in the hospital." From this information, Winston Ball found the documents that tell a very sad story.

The service of Captain William Nathaniel Scales is documented in the U.S.Archives and in the Mississippi Archives. Copies on the following pages show his first service in 1861 in Co. H (Carroll Minute Men), 2nd Regiment, Mississippi Volunteers, Army of 10,000 as a First Lieutenant. Later, he served with the rank of Captain in Co. D, 5th Mississippi Cavalry. Also copied, is a listing from a very old book by Hamilton. The records from the U.S.Archives tell of his service and his death. He enlisted again in the Confederate Army on 15 August 1863 in George's Regiment, Mississippi Cavalry

for three years. In those days, the men elected their officers. He became captain of his company on 1 November 1863.

Next, on 1 November 1863, George's Regiment was redesignated as the Fifth Regiment of Mississippi Cavalry Volunteers. William Nathaniel Scales commanded Company D, 5th Regiment, Mississippi Cavalry Volunteers, 2nd Brigade, First Division, Forrest Cavalry Corps, Army of Mississippi.

His service in the new unit lasted for only two days. He was captured at Collierville, Tennessee, on 3 November 1863. He may not have known that the unit name had been changed, because he was carried in prison records with the old designation. When captured, he had a sprained ankle and was sent to Overton U.S.A. General Hospital in Memphis. It must have been at this time that he wrote the letter to his daughter, Addie Pinc Scales. He could have been assigned work details at the hospital while a patient. In fact, he may have had other problems than the ankle, because he did not leave the hospital until 26 February 1864. They turned him over to the Provost Marshall in Memphis. After five days he was sent to the Johnson's Island prison to be moved north four days later, 7 March 1864, to Camp Chase, Ohio.

A little over one month later, he died in prison of erysipelas, a very painful death. In those days, there were no antibiotics. However, the condition could have been treated. Poor physical condition contributed to the progress of the disease. The treatment, then, was to keep the wounds clean. The streptococcal infection of the skin produces a dull red rash, chills and nausea. The poor man may have been suffering for a long time. William Nathaniel Scales was buried at Camp Chase, Ohio, in grave number 133. Later, according to lists, his body was "removed" to some unknown place. In the Library of Congress, a book (Class E 616, Book C 4E47), titled "List showing inscriptions on headstones for Confederate soldiers and sailors who, while prisoners of war, died at Columbus and Camp Dennison, Ohio, and were buried in Camp Chase Confederate Cemetery, those dying at Camp Dennison having been thence removed.", Government Printing Office: 1907, on 54 pages lists those who died. On page 4:

No. of GRAVE	NAME	COMPANY	REGIMENT
132	Elijah Rudd	A	2 Batt'n Ky Mtd Rifles C.S.A.
<u>Removed</u> 133	<u>Capt. W. N. Scales</u> John Taylor	<u>D</u> I	<u>5 Miss.Cav. CSA</u> I La. Cav. C.S.A.

The above states, but does not explain why Taylor is in Grave 133. Where is the body of Captain Scales? During 1988, a careful study was made of evidence about the location of Captain Scales. Mississippi Representative "Sonny" Montgomery and Congressman Wylie, of Columbus, Ohio, cooperated completely in the study. The U.S. Archives gave minimal help. The Veterans Administration, responsible for graves registration, gave almost no support. This writer believes that both Scales and Taylor are buried in grave 133. The designation "Removed" is believed to be a lie!

There is no Camp Chase, today. It was a training camp at the beginning of the War Between the States, then it became a prisoner of war prison for 8,000 Confederate soldiers. In 1864 there were more prisoners of war at Camp Chase than in any other prison.

Congressman Wylie, of Columbus, Ohio, was asked to help since the Camp Chase Confederate Cemetery is in his district. He graciously answered the letter and assigned a brilliant young man, William Keese, a staff assistant

in Columbus, to help. His alert observation of a critical point has probably lead to the solution of the mystery.

The 1907 listing, mentioned above, in the Library of Congress, gave grave numbers in sequence, names of soldiers, and their military units and states. Mr. Keesee found a book in the Columbus library that gave the dates of death, but it listed the men alphabetically. The book is CONFEDERATE P.O.W.'S, Soldiers and Sailors Who Died in Federal Prisons & Military Hospitals in the North, compiled by Frances Ingmire and Carolyn Ericson in 1984. It lists many thousands of names including those at Camp Chase. The source of much of the information is the Commissioner for Marking Graves of Confederate Dead, War Department, 1912. This book, with the alphabetical listings, concealed the relationship of death date and sequential location of grave sites. Keesee noticed that Capt. Scales died less than a month before Taylor, the man who is in the Scales grave no 133. Captain Scales was not in any of the other cemeteries. He is not buried in Mississippi. With a copy of the book that Keesee used, found in the Dallas library, the following schedule was made from both lists:

CAMP CHASE CONFEDERATE CEMETERY

Bodies reported as "Removed"

Grave #	Body "Removed" Died	Replacement Died	Days Difference	Name of Person "Removed"	State
8	8-16-63	2-21-64	6 mo.5 days	S.C.Logan	KY
13	8-25-63	9-12-63	18	R.M.Lee	KY
16 1/2	8-29-63	8-30-63	1	J.S.Hendricks	TN
59	11-5-63	12-31-62	56	Wm L. Pope	TN
63	11-11-63	12-24-63	43	H.A.Adkins	VA
101	12-8-64	12-9-64	1	W.T.Newby	KY
<u>133</u>	<u>4-9-64</u>	<u>5-8-64</u>	<u>29</u>	<u>Capt.W.N.Scales</u>	<u>MS</u>
160	5-20-64	5-20-64	0	Owen Edwards	KY
209	8-17-64	8-18-64	1	Phillip Hackett	VA
245	9-15-64	9-16-64	1	R.A.Blackwood	VA
392	11-3-64	11-3-64	0	W.H.Allen	AL
468	11-15-64	11-15-64	0	Capt.E.J.Jarvis	VA
507	11-23-64	11-23-64	0	A.J.Helmsley	VA
510	11-24-64	11-24-64	0	J.W.Luster	TN
511	11-24-64	11-24-64	0	J.P.Lindley 1st	Confed.
512	11-24-64	11-24-64	0	Thos.J.Stephens	LA
513	11-24-64	11-24-64	0	Hiram Blund	GA
580	12-8-64	7-8-64	-5 months	Jno Sanford	AL
582	12-9-64	12-9-64	0	Edw'd G.Saussy	GA
979	1-3-65	1-31-65	28	W.H.Tunison	AL
1120	2-8-65	2-8-65	0	T.S.Norton	GA
1178	2-11-65	2-11-65	0	W.G.Herrington	KY
1232	2-14-65	2-14-65	0	Valentine Hardin	KY
1235	2-14-65	2-14-65	0	T.R.Driesbach	AL
1369	2-18-65	12 21-65	10 Mos 3 days	Rich'd Doherty	LA
1560	3-5-65	3-5-65	0	Walter B.Janney	VA
1645	3-13-65	3-13-65	0	F.A.Skinner	KY
1897	4-19-65	4-20-65	1	Robt.R.Riddell	KY
2002	5-26-65	5-26-65	0	C.F.Wilfong	NC
2045	6-1-65	6-21-65	20	E.L.Moses	SC

people do not realize that our National Archives were organized in the 1930 depression days. The WPA workers made the service files from various records of every kind. In the case of Capt. Scales, they used the registers from Camp Chase, which they had to have had at that time. They showed Capt. Scales in grave 133. The Archives answer to Congressman Montgomery was perfunctory and denied having helpful information. However, the registers for Camp Chase had to have been used in the 1930's to prepare the archives records and those registers must be still in their files.

The Congressman's request placed upon the VA was even less helpful. At least, it got their attention enough to cause them to write a letter. The letter was a negative one, giving the procedure to move a body from a cemetery at no government expense. No responsibility was admitted whereby the VA would have any duty to determine the truth! The person responsible is: Mr. Wilfred Ebel, Chief of Memorial Affairs Directors, 810 Vermont Avenue N.W., Washington, D.C. 20420.

Headstones and lists were made by humans with various motives, both good and bad. Some were conscientious and others indifferent. Both William Keesee and I believe that the thirty-three men with "removed" by their names are still buried at Camp Chase Cemetery sharing the graves with other unfortunate soldiers.

Captain Scales should lie in the Pillow Cemetery in Greenwood, but I agree with Mr. Keesee, that it would not be right to move one of the two, not knowing which is Scales. John Taylor, the other soldier must remain there. He, too, may have descendants.

Again, the Pillow legend that his body was never recovered lead to the thought that he had been killed and buried in a mass grave on some unknown battle field. Well, the legend is wrong. This very important member of the Pillow-Scales family lies in a distant grave long forgotten. A curious fact is - the family knew the exact day that he died. His military unit knew that he was a prisoner of war. They carried him on the company muster roll for about five months, listed as "absent" because he was taken prisoner on 3 November 1863. William Kaigler was given credit for giving the Pillow land to Martha Jane, but that land was bought by Captain William Nathaniel Scales - even the ground that is called the Pillow Cemetery!

Cousins reading this chapter about the Scales will recognize the pleasure this work has given this writer. Naturally, research on some parts of any family will be dull and not rewarding. But, when you find justifiable pride in reporting on truly great kin, there is a temptation to write on. I am proud of the Scales surname.

Now, after a few documents and the pamphlet, "Scales Mail", as promised, we go back to the Allen (or Allin) kin -forebears of both Pillows and Scales.

Please read APPENDIX "G". SCALES MAIL

Neill Bui
do
W. A. Seal

State of Mississippi
Copiah County
I, Neill Bui of the State and County aforesaid,

for and in consideration of the sum of eight thousand six hundred and seventy six dollars (\$8676) to me paid by William N. Sealer of the County of Carroll and State aforesaid in good and lawful money have granted bargained sold and released and by these presents do grant bargain sell and release unto the said William N. Sealer all that tract or parcel of land known and designated as follows, (to-wit) Lots 45 of Sec 19 T 19 N of R. 1 East of 7 1/4 100 acres. SW 1/4 of Sec 18 T 19 R 1 E 174 1/2 100 acres. Lots 7 & 12 Sec 13 T 19 R 1 W 102 5/8 100 acres. Lots 1 & 6 Sec 24 T 19 R 1 W 117 7/100 acres in all four hundred eighty two acres 69/100 more or less all lying and being situated in the County of Carroll State of Mississippi. Together with all and singular the rights titles & hereditaments and appurtenances to the said lands and premises belonging or in anywise appertaining thereto. To have & to hold all and singular the before mentioned lands and premises unto the said William N. Sealer his heirs and assigns against every other person whomsoever lawfully claim or to claim the same or any part thereof. I do here by warrant and force defend the above mentioned lands, unto the said William N. Sealer his heirs Executors and administrators or assigns. In testimony whereof I have hereunto set my hand and seal this the 2nd day of February 1854. Neill Bui Seal State of Mississippi
Nancy Bui (wid) Copiah County
Personally appeared before me William Thompson a Justice of the Peace of said County, the within named Neill Bui and Nancy Bui his wife who solemnly acknowledged that they signed sealed and delivered the within deed to William N. Sealer, on the day and year therein mentioned as their own act and deed. The said Nancy Bui on a private examination, separate and apart from her said husband and acknowledged that she signed sealed and delivered said deed as her voluntary act and deed without any fear threat or compulsion of her husband. Given under my hand and seal this 2nd day of February 1854.
Nancy Bui
William Thompson J.P.

Filed for Record Oct 15 1858. A. M. Nelson Clerk

Deed Book 5 - West - DePue Co

A. P. Wain
vs
S. B. Deed
W. N. Seale

This indenture makes and concludes into this the eleventh day of January 1858, between Augustus P. Wain and Ann J. Wain his wife on the first part, and W. N. Seale and his wife M. J. Seale of the second part, all of the County of Carroll and State of Mississippi, Witness that the parties of the first part for in consideration of the sum of twenty four thousand dollars in hand paid by the parties of the second part the Receipt is hereby acknowledged, have this day granted, bargained sold & conveyed & released and by their parents do grant bargain sell, convey and transfer to the parties of the second part their heirs and assigns forever a certain tract or parcel of land, lying & being in the County of Carroll and State of Mississippi, and State above mentioned and designated by surveys as lots (5) five (6) six (7) seven (8) eight (9) nine (10) ten (11) eleven and (12) twelve Section seven, also the North half of Section 18, Township (19) nine ten Range one east. Also Lot (1) one Section (13) thirteen and lot (15) fifteen Sec (12) twelve Township nine ten Range one west containing seven hundred and thirty seven and 3/4 Acres with a course of one quarter of an acre lying between Ross & Stapp Ferris in Section (7) unto the parties of the second part their heirs and assigns forever, with all the privileges hereditaments and advantages thereunto belonging - the parties of the first part further more Covenant and agree that they have good title to said Land and do bind themselves their heirs executors and administrators to warrant the title to said Land to parties of first part, their heirs and assigns forever against the claims or Claims of any or all persons whatever in law or equity. In testimony whereof the parties of the first part have hereunto set their hands and seals this the day and year above written

A. P. Wain Seal
Ann J. Wain Seal

from the Irish
Military Annals
 OF
Carroll County.

SKETCHES OF THE COMPANIES THAT WERE ORGANIZED
 IN CARROLL COUNTY FOR SERVICE IN THE CONFEDERATE ARMY FROM 1861 TO 1865.

BY
W. F. HAMILTON,
 A member of Co. K, 11th Mississippi Regiment.

Carrollton, Miss.
By Mr. John T. Stanford.

The Conservative Print, Carrollton.

Mahon, Alex McMillan, J. J. Matthews, R. L. Peters, Benjamin Peters, John J. Prewett, John B. Price, M. W. Rogers, Bernard Rogers, John J. Rogers, M. Richmond, G. B. Reeves, Byrd Reeves, Samuel Shelton, B. F. Shelton, W. Spencer, T. J. Stout, W. G. Sullivan, R. T. Talliaferro, Thomas J. Tyler, M. R. Tyler, W. N. Tyler, William Tindall, Albert G. Terry, Lee Taylor, J. M. Trotter, Buck Trotter, J. W. Whitley, B. F. Wimpacy, B. F. West, J. D. Williams, Wm. Wimberley, E. Y. Wright.

Men of Carroll county who enlisted in University
 Grays, Company A, Eleventh Regiment, organized at Oxford:

Third Lieutenant Jeff H. McLemore, First Sergeant Price P. McLemore, Needham Dabney.

Company — Thirtieth Mississippi Regiment, organized in Sunflower county:

John V. Tye.

Company I, Twenty-first Mississippi Regiment, Sunflower Guards:

L. T. Basket, Captain.

John W. Bandy, John C. Fields, John W. Hemphill, Jesse Barnes, John H. W. Money, Dr. J. Z. McCarroll, Gilbert Patterson, Stephen H. T. Shaw, First Sergeant, Barksdale's Brigade, McLaw's Division, Longstreet's Corps, Army Northern Virginia.

List of members of Harvey's Scouts, who enlisted from Carroll county or who settled in the county after 1865:

Lieutenant W. L. Tyson, John H. Barrow, John Freeman, Thomas L. Haman, William Hemingway, Walter P. Kennedy, R. S. McLemore, H. H. Neill, William H. Perkins, G. G. Tyson, John E. Tyson, Thomas J. Whitehall.

List of men who enlisted in the Durrant Rifles, Company I, Twelfth Mississippi Regiment:

Z. Blackman, John H. Carter, Thomas Michie, James Reed, Daniel Shipp.

List of men who enlisted in Company D, Fifth Mississippi Cavalry, from Carroll county:

Captain W. N. Seales, J. H. Fields, J. B. Malone, J. M. Moreland, "Jack" More.

Colonel Victor H. Rhodes enlisted in Alabama and



(Confederate.)

S. H. SealerW. N. Sealer
Capt. Co. D. Engin. Regt. Miss.

Appears on a

Register

of the sick and wounded prisoners at Overton Hos-
pital, Memphis, Tenn.Ward A or BComplaint Sprained ankleAdmitted Nov. 4, 1863.Returned to duty Feb. 26, 1864.

Deserted _____, 186

Sent to Gen. Hosp. _____, 186

Died _____, 186

Remarks: Admitted athospital at theNov. 3, 1863Transferred to thecare of Provost MarshalTenn. Reg. No. 583 (Memphis), page 70.

(439)

R. P. Duncan
Copyist.(Confederate.) MissS. H. SealerW. N. Sealer
Capt. Co. _____ Reg't _____

Appears on a Descriptive Roll of

Prisoners of War

at Camp Chase, Ohio.

Arrested: _____

Where Collierville Tenn.When Nov. 3, 1863.

Received at Camp Chase, Ohio:

When Nov. 7, 1864.Whence Memphis Tenn.By whose order Brig. Gen. R. P. Buckland

Description:

Height _____ ft. _____ in.; age _____

Eyes _____; hair _____; complexion _____

Date of departure Apr. 9, 1864.Remarks: DeadCamp Chase, Ohio, Register No. 2; page 402

(439)

R. P. Duncan
Copyist.

(Confederate.)

S. H. SealerW. N. Sealer
Capt. Co. D. Engin. Regt. Miss.

Appears on a register of

Prisoners of War

belonging to the Rebel Army, in custody of Pro-
vost Marshal, Memphis, Tennessee.When received Feb. 26, 1864.Where captured Collierville Tenn.When Nov. 3, 186Disposition of prisoner Sent to John-sons Island, March 3, 64.

Remarks:

Memphis, Tenn., Register No. 2; page 202

(639)

O. J. Taylor
Copyist.Confed.
Miss.S. H. SealerW. N. Sealer
Capt. Co. D. Engin. Regt.

Complaint, _____

Admitted Nov. 4, 1863.To Overton U. S. A. General Hospital,
Memphis, Tenn.

Ret'd to duty _____, 18

Deserted _____, 18

Disch'd from service _____, 18

Sent to G. H. _____, 18

On furlough _____, 18

Died _____, 18

Remarks Feb. 26 to PrisonTenn. Reg. No. 583; Hos. No. _____; Page 76 1/2

(204)

Shadwell
Copyist.

(Confederate.)
S 5 Cav. Miss.

W. N. Seales
Capt. Co. D, 5 Reg't Mississippi Cavalry.*

Appears on
Company Muster Roll
of the organization named above,
for March & April, 1864.

Enlisted:
When Sept. 10, 1863
Where Westville, Miss.

By whom
Period

Last paid:
By whom never paid
To what time _____, 186

Present or absent absent
Remarks: Taken prisoner 3rd Nov. 1863.

*Early in 1865 the members of this company appear to have been transferred to Company F, 28th Regiment Mississippi Cavalry.

Book mark:

D. J. Stinson
663 Copyist.

(Confederate.)
S 5 Cav. Miss.

W. N. Seales
Capt. Co. D, 5 Reg't Mississippi Cavalry.

Appears on
Company Muster Roll
of the organization named above,
for Jan. & Feb., 1864.

Enlisted:
When Sept. 10, 1863
Where Westville, Miss.

By whom
Period 3 years

Last paid:
By whom
To what time _____, 186

Present or absent absent
Remarks: Taken prisoner 3rd Nov. 1863.

Book mark:

D. J. Stinson
642 Copyist.

(Confederate.)
S 5 Cav. Miss.

W. N. Seales
Capt. Co. D } George's Regiment,
Mississippi Cavalry.*

Appears on
Company Muster Roll
of the organization named above,
for Sept. 28 to Oct. 31, 1863.

Enlisted:
When Sept. 28, 1863
Where Brenada, Miss.

By whom to Col. Patrick
Period 3 years

Last paid:
By whom pay due from enlistment
To what time _____, 186

Present or absent Present
Remarks:

*This regiment subsequently became the 6th Regiment Mississippi Cavalry.

Book mark:

D. J. Stinson
643 Copyist.

(Confederate.)
S 5 Cav. Miss.

W. N. Seales
Capt. Co. D } George's Regiment,
Mississippi Cavalry.*

Appears on
Company Muster Roll
of the organization named above,
for Aug. 15 to Oct. 31, 1863.

Enlisted:
When _____, 1863
Where

By whom
Period 3 years

Last paid:
By whom
To what time _____, 186

Present or absent Present
Remarks: Left Sept. 1 Sept.

*This regiment subsequently became the 6th Regiment Mississippi Cavalry.

Book mark:

D. J. Stinson
642 Copyist.

270g

Confederate, Miss

(Confederate.)

(Confederate.)

(Confederate.)

W. N. Scales
Capt., Co. D., 5 Reg't Miss.
Appears on a

Military Prison Record.

Date of death 1864.
Cause of death *typhoid*

No. of grave 123
Locality of grave *W. N. Scales*

Remarks:

W. N. Scales
Capt. Co. D. Genie Regt

Prisoners of War

belonging to the Rebel Army, in custody of Provost Marshal, Memphis, Tennessee.

When received *Feb. 26*, 1864

Where captured *at N. Canton Miss.*

When 186

Disposition of prisoner

Remarks:

Memphis, Tenn., Register No. 1: page 20

W. N. Scales
Capt., Co. D., 5 Reg't Mississippi Cavalry.

Roster

of Commissioned Officers in 5th Mississippi Cav.

Roster dated

not dated, 186

When elected *Sept. 28*, 1863

When commissioned *no commission*, 186

When assigned to duty *Sept. 28*, 1863

By whom *Brig. Gen. G. Palmer*

On what duty

Remarks: *Prisoner*

Book mark:

W. N. Scales
Capt., Co. D., 5 Reg't Mississippi Cavalry.

Roster

of the (5th) Fifth Regiment of Mississippi Cavalry Volunteers, 2d Brigade, First Division, Forrest Cav. Corps, Army of Mississippi; organized Nov. 1, 1863; mustered into Confederate service Nov. 1, 1863, for 3 years or the war.

Roster dated

not dated, 186

Date of entry or muster into State service, } 186

Date of entry or muster into Confederate service, } *Sept. 28*, 1863

Date of rank, and whether by appointment, election or promotion, } *Sept. 28*, 1863

Date and cause of vacancy, } 186

Name of successor

Remarks:

Captured by the enemy at Collierville Nov. 3, 1863.

Book mark:

2704

Camp Chase, Ohio, Register No. 1: page 2

W. N. Scales
Copyist

W. N. Scales
Copyist

Allen

The Allen surname is an oldie. From England or Wales, it was recorded first as ALAWN, the name of a legendary British poet in the first century A.D. The name means "harmony". The spelling has more variations than the name, Metts! It has been ALLIN, ALUN, ALON, ALAN, ALLIN, and ALLEN. In old England, there was Allan-a-Dale, the minstrel of Robin Hood, so well known to children. Of course, a dale is a valley, so he was Allan of the Valley. In the Metts-Oliver branch of the family, we have Baron John Fitz Alan in the 20th generation. He was Marshal of England in 1377. The Fitz means "son of". In very early times, men had only one name. First and middle names came later. Allen has been used as a first name and, also, as a last name. The use as a surname seems to have developed through spellings as ALLEYN, ALLEYNE, ALLIN, and ALLEN. But, they all mean the same thing-harmony.

In America, we know that our Allen ancestors were among the first to come to Virginia. One Richard Allin, aged 22, sailed on the ship "Safety", from London on 22 August 1635. He went to Northhampton County, Virginia. Most of what we know of these early settlers comes from the records of land grants, buys, or sales. Problems come up when there is the possibility that there was more than one man with the same name. So, we are not certain about whether the Richard, above, was the first ancestor or whether one Richard Allen, recorded in 1653 was our first. Of course, one could be the father of the other.

The land transactions are tedious. If anyone wishes to read more into the subject, there is the book, Historical Southern Families, Vol. III, pp. 1-21, by John Bennett Boddie. He was a renown genealogist, historian, and writer. His book documents most of the information in this chapter.

The Allen story in Northhampton County begins to come out of the shadows of the dim past when Richard Allen and his wife, Mary, sold 300 acres to a John Hagamond. The deed said, "And further I do hereby desire that the said John Hagamond and his family may have and enjoy the benefit of my pew which I bought in Hungar's Church as well as if I had remained in the said parish, myself."

Richard left Northhampton County and moved to St. Peter's Parish in New Kent County. Here, again, the trail becomes a little hard to follow. But, remember that there were few Englishmen in those outlying counties. The name on the deeds and the passage of time indicate that there was a father named Richard and a son with the same name. In those days, first sons were usually named for their fathers.

The Richard Allin of New Kent County was married to Elizabeth and he died 17 June 1725. He must have been very religious. He was a vestryman in the church from 1704 to 1725, a church warden 1706-1707 and 1718-1719, and he held other positions in the church.

In 1721, New Kent County was divided and the Allen land fell into the new Hanover County. They lived on the south side of the Chickahominy Swamp. We find that his wife's name was Elizabeth because she sold the land after his death.

Richard Allin and Elizabeth had four children listed in the St. Peter's Parish Register. They were:

1. Abraham Allin. His granddaughter, Ursula, was John Pillow's mother-in-law.
2. William Allin. His granddaughter, Ann, married Nathaniel Scales—old "Red Nat" of Rockingham County, NC.
3. Samuel Allin.
4. Robert Allin.

THE PILLOW BRANCH

ABRAHAM ALLIN married Mary —
1704-1751

Abraham Allin and his wife, Mary, lived in New Kent County, Virginia. He was still living there in 1724, when his first child, Drury Allin, was born. (Fortunately, he gave his son this unusual name, instead of William or John!) Abraham moved to Cumberland County where he wrote his will on 20 October 1770, probated February 1771. He named his wife, Mary, and unborn child, to whom he left 300 acres in Northampton County. Later, on 19 June 1758, a William Gowers deeded land to Drury Allin, "part of 910 acres which the said Allin and his brother, William Allin have agreed to divide—.". Another deed said that William lived on the land. So, you see, above, that the unborn child was William Allin.

WILLIAM ALLIN married ANN OWEN
1714/28-1786 ~c. 1750

William was born in Hanover County, Virginia, between 1714 and 1728. His will was probated in 1786. He married twice with five children by his first wife, Ann Owen, and seven children by his second wife, Frances Grant. In 1758, he lived in Granville County, NC. This was late in life after his children were born.

William's wife, Ann Owen, was the daughter of Elizabeth Brooks and Thomas Owen. Ann gave William five children; Elizabeth Morgan, Susanna Burton, Mary (Polly) Allen (married her cousin, William Allen), Sarah Walker, and Ursula. Ursula is our direct ancestor. She married Gideon Johnson, Sr., the father of John Pillow's wife, Ursula Johnson.

William's second wife, Frances, had Hannah Howard, Isabella Owen, Francis, Ann Howard, Mildred Berry, Thomas, and Grant.

In the Pillow chapter, the marriage of Ursula Allin and Gideon Johnson, Sr., was mentioned. Gideon had lived in Amelia County, Virginia, along with the Pillows before he moved to the area that became Rockingham County, NC (see map in the Pillow chapter.). He made his will on 7 October 1807 and died before November. Boddie gives him credit for Revolutionary War service as a private in Capt. John William's Co., 2nd Bn., NC Troops. This may be true, but this writer has not found the proof. He can be credited with patriotic service. An indent is in the NC Archives showing that he provided supplies to the troops. Here, a word of advice is appropriate. You should not apply to the NSDAR or the SAR using Gideon Johnson, Artillery Captain. He was another man, not our ancestor. Several of our close kin have claimed him with the NSDAR in error.

Gideon Johnson and Ursula Allin had ten children: William; Peter; Gideon, Jr.; Mordicai; Abner; Ursula (our direct ancestor); Nancy; Elizabeth; Judith;

William, on Sharp's Creek. The same year, he bought 390 acres next to what is, today, the Deep Springs Country Club. The road to Lone Island Ford goes through the land. The map in the Pillow chapter shows where he lived—very near to the land of Nathaniel Scales and John Pillow.

Valentine Allen served in the American Revolution. He started spelling Allin with an "e"—Allen. He was spoken of as "Colonel Allen" in his home area, but the only records found prove that he was a soldier. (Revolutionary Army Accounts, Vol. 1, p.11, Folio 2, North Carolina, dated 30 July 1782.) The lineage and service of Valentine Allen has been proved and approved to and by the National Society of the Sons of the American Revolution by this writer.

Valentine Allen died in Rockingham County on 17 September 1798. His will is on file in the county courthouse in Will Book A, p.204. He named his nine children:

1. Ann (Nancy) Allen, born 1759, died 1840, Rockingham County; married 3 July 1777 Guilford County, NC, Nathaniel Scales, born 13 April 1756, died 6 July 1824, Rockingham County.
2. William Hunt Allen; married 3 July 1777, Guilford County, NC, Agatha Scales.
3. Elizabeth Allen, married 23 Nov 1773, Guilford County, NC, Elijah Joyce. (Guilford County marriages are Marriage Bond dates.)
4. Valentine Allen, Jr., married 17 December 1823, Williamson County, TN, Betsy Peay. (Marriage Bond date, Ree Joyce, Bondsman.)
5. Patricia (Patty) Allen, married Mr. Scales.
6. Mary Allen, married (1) John Chadwell (2) James Peay.
7. Biddy Allen, married Mr. Hill.
8. George Allen.
9. Samuel Allen, born 22 July 1778, Guilford County, NC, died 15 Feb 1855, Rockingham County. (Dates from family Bible.)

It is to be noted that four of the nine children married members of the Scales family.

Valentine's actual will is over three legal pages long. He listed all the things he wanted his wife, Nancy, to have. Included were seven slaves, cattle, horses, and furniture in detail even to the "looking glass". He gave, "Item, I give and bequeath to my daughter, Nancy Scales two negroes to wit, Thena and Arrow to her and her assigns forever." Later, he lists the children to get shares of what was not specified and Nancy is included. Her husband, Nathaniel Scales, is one of the Executors and he is described as his son-in-law.

The Allen family cemetery is located near Valentine's Dan River home on the present Motsinger farm.

Again, the story brings another branch of the family tree to join those already recorded. Valentine's daughter, Nancy, was included with her husband, Nathaniel Scales.

The Pillow-Scales kinship is interesting but unimportant. William Reese Pillow married his fifth cousin, once removed. Such marriages were common in olden times and are legally and morally acceptable. It is unlikely that the couple knew that they were related!

September 1987

This is the proof that Valentine Allen served in the Revolution:

1. James Hunter Chapter, DAR, Early Families of the NC Counties of Rockingham and Stokes with Revolutionary Service, pp. 1, 5, & 6.
2. J.B.Boddie, Historical Southern Families, Vol. III, p. 18.
3. Rodenbough, The Heritage of Rockingham County, NC, 1983, p.146.
4. NC Archives, Vouchers of Revolutionary Army Accounts, Vol. I, p. 111, Folio 2. Copies are on the next two pages.

State of North Carolina
 Salisbury District No. 100 } Agreeable to an Act of the General
 Assembly passed in Wake County the 15th July 1791
 Valentine Allen was allowed money for his services
 as Sheriff of said County for the year 1790
 Claimed by the lower board of Auditors Next 22nd 1791
 By order
 Richard Foster Esq } David Wilson } Aud^r
 195.5
 14.15.7
 110.0.7

State of North Carolina } 8. 19. 6. No 89
 Salisbury District } 9. 18. 6
 This to certify that Valentine Allen
 was allowed 14th hands Hurdson Shillings
 for public services by the upper Board
 of Auditors 30th day of July 1782
 By order
 Sam Hurdson Esq } Charles Bruce } Aud^r
 James Hunter }

State of North Carolina } 8. 19. 6. No 89
 Salisbury District } 9. 18. 6
 This to certify that Valentine Allen
 was allowed 14th hands Hurdson Shillings
 for public services by the upper Board
 of Auditors 30th day of July 1782
 By order
 Sam Hurdson Esq } Charles Bruce } Aud^r
 James Hunter }

N.C. Archives

Vol I, p. 111, Folio 2 N.C. Archives

PROOF OF REVOLUTIONARY PATRIOTIC SERVICE BY WILLIAM ALLEN

William Allen, whose life is described on page 272 of this book, was an old man when the Revolutionary War started. His is qualified as a patriot because he signed the Oath of Allegiance on or about May 22, 1778.

Proof:

The STATE RECORDS of NORTH CAROLINA. Published Under the Supervision of the Trustees of the Public Libraries, by Order of the General Assembly, collected and edited by Walter Clark:

Volume XXII, page 168:

AN ACCOUNT OF PERSONS WHO TOOK THE STATE OATH 1778.

I will bear faithfull and true allegiance to the State of North Carolina and will endeavor to support, maintain, and defend the independent Government thereof against George the third, King of Great Britain and his successors----etc----.

Following took oath, or affirmed, 22 May, 1778.

Page 178 - list continued:

William Allen.

The NSDAR Patriot Index, Vol I, page 11:

Allen, William b.c. 1700 d 1786 m (1) Mary Owen (2) Frances Grant
PS NC.

THE ROSTER OF TEXAS DAUGHTERS REVOLUTIONARY ANCESTORS, Pannill,
Volume 1, page 32-33.

Proved to and approved by the Sons of the American Revolution.

Porter

Elizabeth Porter Pillow, called Bessie, was named for her paternal grandmother, Elizabeth T. Porter, wife of William H. Pillow. This chapter may inform the Pillow cousins for the first time about why Bessie had Porter for her middle name. The Porters are a very interesting branch of the Pillow family. Also, this story can be told with very little documentation. The reason is that the information is taken from two excellent genealogy books by Helen H. Rugeley, 2202 W. 10th Street, Austin, Texas 78703. Her work is thorough, precise, and proved. Any cousins who develop a deep interest in the family history should write to Mrs. Rugeley and buy her Brown, William and Margaret (Peggy Fleming), Descendants of. There are two volumes. Refer to the Pillow chart and you will notice that William Brown and Margaret Fleming were the parents of Jean Brown who married Reese Porter in 1768. Accordingly, the Porter chapter will begin with a discussion of the Browns and Flemings.

WILLIAM BROWN married MARGARET (PEGGY) FLEMING
1687-28 Dec 1757 before 1720 1 Apr 1701-17 Sep 1801

In Northern Ireland, in the most northern part, are Londonderry and County Antrim. A narrow channel separates this land from Scotland. Wigtown, Scotland, is less than one hundred miles from Londonderry and Antrim lies between the two. In ancient times, people who came to England from Flanders were called Flemings. The chief of the Fleming clan in Scotland was Fleming, Earl of Wigtown. The Presbyterians in Scotland were persecuted by King James I, the Stuart (1603-1625). He conducted a "pacification and resettlement program". The Scottish Presbyterians were forced to move to Ireland. Earlier, Henry II had forced the Flemish merchants in England to flee to Scotland in 1155. Now, in Ireland, they did not intermarry to any extent with the Irish. The refugees came to be called "Scotch-Irish".

William Brown was born in Northern Ireland in 1687. When grown, he was the custodian of the estate of a wealthy land owner named Joseph Fleming. The land was in County Antrim, near Londonderry.

Joseph Fleming's daughter, Margaret Fleming, was born 1 April 1701 on the estate. She was called "Peggy", the universal pet name for Margaret. William was 14 years older than Margaret. Also, he was an employee on the estate. When they were married before 1720, it is not surprising that the marriage was a deep dark secret.

So the story goes, Peggy had a maid who knew about the marriage. Then, one day, Peggy threw a bucket of water out of her window. In those days, people washed themselves in bowls of water in their bedroom. Peggy should have looked before she poured because she doused the maid who knew! The maid yelled, "You need not be so smart, even if you are married!". The cat was out of the bag. Father Fleming threw them both out. They went to Londonderry. Where they lived, Peggy said she "could hear the bells of the city tolling".

All went well. William prospered and "was the wealthiest" of the many Brown kin in the area. He became a large land owner. William and Peggy had seven children. One of them was little Jean, our ancestor, who was born

18 August 1745 in Pennsylvania. The family moved to America in 1745, so one might say that Jean was made in Ireland.

When the family went to the ship to sail to America, Peggy's father sent a going away present. One account says it was a "shot bag of gold" and another called it a "bushel of silver coins". In the family retelling it became a "bushel of silver dollars". Of course, there were no dollars in 1745! Her brother brought the money and a message that this was all she would ever get.

The ship sailed to New Castle, Delaware, south of Philadelphia. The family spent the next ten years in Pennsylvania and Virginia. William had come to America because of his burning desire for more land. There were several moves as they followed the migration route of the settlers. A William Brown had land grants in Lancaster County, PA. Family letters say that Culpeper County, VA, was their home for a while, but they were on the move to Guilford County, NC, where on 5 May 1757, William was given a land grant for 411 acres by the Earl of Granville for George II of England. The family settled on the farm on the south side of North Buffalo Creek. This creek runs into the Haw River. (The land is just off the map in the Pillow chapter that shows John Pillow's farm in Rockingham County, NC.

William did not live very long to enjoy his success. He died three days before Christmas in 1757. There is no stone on his grave, but his son erected a monument in his memory in Anderson, SC.

The seven children of William and Peggy were:

1. Frances/Fanny m. George Hamilton.
2. David m. Isabella McClintock.
3. Joseph m. Mary Porter.
4. William m. Mary Dorchester.
5. James m. Jane Gillespie.
6. Elizabeth m. John Duffield.
7. Jane/Jean m. Rees Porter (our ancestor)

Our Jane is the only child born in America. Peggy outlived old William by forty years. When the old problem came up of needing more land with so many children, the family made another move.

When Peggy was 84 years old, she "traveled over the mountains from North Carolina to Tennessee in a wagon and on horseback with some of her children." Would you cousins like to guess where they went? Right! They went to Nashville in Davidson County, TN! We can thank their children for the information that we have.

Peggy lived over a hundred years. Her old age was spent with her youngest daughter, Jane, our ancestor. Peggy died in the home of Jane and Rees Porter on the farm, now in the city of Nashville. In Spring Hill Cemetery, in Nashville, is a worn old stone, "here lies the body / of / MARGARET BROWN / She departed this / life Sept. 17th 1801 / Aged 100 years, five months, and seventeen days." She is buried beside Jane who died five years later. The other grave next to Jane is Rev. Thomas B. Craighead, the first Presbyterian minister in Middle Tennessee. He lived near the cemetery. In those days, the area was called Haysboro.

This may be an appropriate comment. Study the Pillow chart and check death dates in cases where husband and wife can be noted. The men in the family died young. Wives lasted a long time! Ambition and moderation need to be balanced.

NOTE: Before going on, please read Pp. 280-e through 280 - h.

REES PORTER
26 Feb 1744-15 Feb 1821

married
30 Aug 1769

JEAN (JANE) BROWN
18 Aug 1745-30 Aug 1806

Reese Porter was the son of emigrants Hugh Porter (1715-1795) and his wife Violet Mackey (1717-1791). Both were born in Ireland and married in 1735. They died in Guilford County, North Carolina. In 1757, Hugh Porter was commissioned a Justice of the Peace of Orange County, NC. He owned 393 acres on the east side of the north fork of Haw River and High Rock Creek. His farm was in the center of the Revolutionary War battles around Guilford Courthouse. Hugh was not a young man, but he signed on as a private in the South Carolina militia under the command of Captain Rossman after the fall of Charleston. File 6037 in the South Carolina Archives has papers on two soldiers named Hugh Porter, but they are easily separated because the other man was dead before our Hugh Porter served. His service and the lineage have been proved to and approved by the SAR.

In the discussion of William Brown, the early life of Jane Brown was described. She was born in Pennsylvania 18 August 1745 just after her parents came to America. After several moves about Pennsylvania and Virginia, they settled in North Carolina when Jane was twelve. She met and married Rees Porter in Rowan County, NC in August 1769. Poor Jane was the mother of "eight sons and no daughters". This may be the reason that little more is known about her life, that she outlived her mother by only five years, and that her husband, Rees, left to fight in the American Revolution. The eight sons (and no daughters) were:

1. William m. Jane Bradshaw (our ancestors).
2. Joseph Brown m. Elizabeth Thomas.
3. John m. Lucy Hopkins / Martha Hobson.
4. Rees m. (1) Mary Whitsett (2) Sally D. Ewing.
5. James Brown m. (1) Polly G. Hudson.
(2) Frances W. (Doherty) Bond
6. David Washington m. Margaret Rennick Crawford / Nancy Reid.
7. Elias.
8. Thomas Craighead m. Jane McCann.

The care of her husband, eight sons, and a very old mother meant real work for Jane. After her hundred year old mother died in 1801, Jane's son, James was converted in the Presbyterian Church. Then, he took his mother, Jane, now 56, on a long trip from Nashville to South Carolina. She visited her brothers David and Joseph who had been in South Carolina for over fifteen years. Jane was described as being a "woman of haughty bearing, said to have been exceedingly proud of her family". A family legend tells of Jane having stolen through the enemy's camp during the Revolution to free her husband, Rees, who was confined in a log cabin.

Rees Porter, Jane's husband, was six feet six inches tall - a giant in days when men were barely five feet tall. He was born 26 Feb 1744 in Pennsylvania (probably Lancaster County). Rees and Jane farmed in North Carolina from their marriage in 1769 until 1785. Reese bought part of the farm her father had owned. It was 211 acres on North Buffalo Creek that he had bought in 1770 from Jane's brother. There are many reasons to believe that the Porter and Brown families had been close friends going all the way back to Ireland.

The period mentioned above, 1769-1785, included the American Revolution. In North Carolina, heavy fighting took place in Guilford County. The Rees Porter farm was on the battlefield. The nature of military service in those days allowed soldiers to serve short periods. In Helen Rugeley's book, pp.

53-57, she gives adequate justification to prove his service. Rees (or Reese) served in the American Revolution as a soldier in the North Carolina Militia in Captain Robert Bell's Company, 2nd NC Regiment, at the Battle of Eutaw Springs. He was captured during Battle of Guilford Court House and released in a prisoner exchange. This information comes from an old book, printed in 1874, Brief Biographical Sketches of Some of the Early Ministers of the Cumberland Presbyterian Church, by Richard Beard, D.D., pp. 70-71. His military service and lineage have been proved to and approved by the SAR. He is listed in the NSDAR Patriot Index.

In 1785, the Porters moved to the great old town of Nashville. As stated earlier, Jane's mother, Peggy Brown, was with the family. They settled at Haysboro, now in the northeast part of Nashville. They joined the Cumberland Presbyterian Church. Jane died in Nashville. Her stone, beside her mother's reads, "Here lies the body of Jane Porter - She departed this life Aug. 30, 1806 - Age 61 years, 12 days".

After Jane's death, Rees married again - a widow named Lucy. Members of his family were against his remarriage, but "she was a gracious cultivated Christian and all became devoted to her".

At the end of the Revolution, veterans were allowed to enter land claims in certain areas. Rees entered:

No. 1271 - 1,000 acres - TN River & Duck Creek.

No. 1272 - 2,000 acres - East of Duck Creek.

No. 2245 - 640 acres - Elk River & Little River.

The problem was, however, that the Indians still had rights to the land. That is why Rees and his family stayed in Nashville. Then, in May 1806, just before Jane died, the government bought the land from the Indians. After her death, Rees moved his family - sons, Rees, John, David, James B., and Thomas C., to Giles County, TN. He had extensive land and gave the ground for the Mount Moriah Church, where he was buried in February 1821, "Aged 77 years Lacking 11 days."

The will of Rees Porter is in the Columbia courthouse. This is in Maury County. The old will was not found until 1980. The document is long and complicated, but it speaks for itself. Second wife, Lucy, did not fare very well, but in those days it was quite usual for wives to get little, being left in the care of the children. Rees left over 2,500 acres of land. Also, he seemed to hold our ancestor, William, in less regard than the other children. A few parts of the will, in order are as follows: "In the name of God, amen. I Reese Porter of Giles County and State of Tenn. being weak in body but of perfect mind and of sound memory & calling to mind the certainty of death and the uncertainty of the time it will happen, do make and ordain this as my last will and testament—

"In the first place I give and bequeath to my son William Porter five dollars and I have conveyed to his children Nimrod Porter, Reese Porter, Hugh Porter, John Porter & Jane B. Porter two hundred and eighty one acres—expressing on the face of said deed that the said William [have?] liberty to cultivate fifty acres of said tract du[ring] his life—it is expressly my will— that they—keep the said William in peaceable possession of the above fifty acres for his support during his life and during the life of his wife Jane."

Tracts of land were given to other children. Then "My plantation in Davidson County—to sell—proceeds—to be divided amongst my sons" William was included.

"I give and bequeath to my beloved wife Lucy Porter one horse called dick one cow (her choice of my stock) three sheep three or four breeding sows (also

her choice) one hundred bushels of corn a sufficient quantity of wheat and meat to support her one year with liberty to live in my dwelling house one year if she should think proper and should she wish to remain I recommend to my sons to whom my plantation is devised to suffer her to retain possession of a part of my house with them and to pay her fifty dollars out of the monies now in hand together with all her own property now in my possession."

Sons John, James B., and Thomas C. were Executors. The will was signed on 27 September 1817, partly proven November 1822, and probated in Pulasky, TN on 4 Feb 1832.

WILLIAM PORTER	married	JANE BRADSHAW
3 Mar 1769-24 Dec 1843	before 1792	19 May 1836

The study of a person who died 140 years ago starts with the collection of facts - proven truths. You learn about the birth, marriage and death. His worldly possessions are determined and the children are listed. Every move is checked. Some of the interactions with kin and friends are documented. Then, when you read between the lines, you may be able to surmise the character and stature of the person. Old sis foot six Rees, just discussed, was a powerful man in many ways. William Porter may have been quite different. Add another demension. Human greed is a vice that has torn many families asunder. Particularly, this is true when the ownership of land is involved.

William was born in Orange County (now Guilford County) NC on 3 March 1769. He was seven when the American Revolution started and only 16 when the family moved to Nashville. Those places and those years were characterized by severe Indian fighting. The Revolutionary soldier in North Carolina had more Indians than redcoats as enemies. Then, around Nashville, as was true with John Pillow, the Indians were ever present.

William married Jane Bradshaw. She, as were the Porters, was Scotch-Irish. Her father was Hugh Bradshaw, Sr. and she had brothers, William and Hugh, Jr., in Maury County. The marriage was in Davidson County, probably about 1792. Hugh Bradshaw, Sr. performed Patriotic Service, Revolution.

Research on William is complicated because there was more than one William Porter in the area. Our William may have had service in the War of 1812. His cousin, Lt. Col. Joseph Brown commanded the 27th Infantry Regiment. In that regiment in 1812 was a Lt. William Porter. Later, in 1814, a Captain William Porter served in the 51st Regiment. (Interestingly, this writer has served in the 27th Infantry Regiment and the 51st Armored Infantry Regiment.) Remember that Abner and William Pillow were in the same unit. William Porter may have served with his cousin.

William and Jane lived on their small farm on Little Bigby, three miles south west of Columbia, within a mile of his brother, Joseph B., and cousin, Joseph Brown. (Another William Porter lived on Big Tombigby/Bigby Creek.)

William's wife, Jane Bradshaw died in 1836. The couple had five children:

1. Nimrod m. Dillahunty Magdalene Hamon
2. W. Rees m. Mary (Polly) Hamilton Thomas (Our ancestor)
3. Hugh Bradshaw m. Rachel C./G. Roberts
4. John (Jack) m. Martha A. (Patsey) Roberts
5. Jane Brown (Jincie or Janie) m. Thomas Crofford/James Thomas

Crawford.

With mother in the grave, human greed raised it's ugly head and the kids tried to take poor ole William's fifty acres away from him. Remember the will of Rees? He jumped William and gave land to the grandchildren, William's children. Then, he instructed the children to let William keep the fifty acres

as long as he and Jane lived. In his dotage, Rees must have forgotten that he had deeded the land to the grandchildren before he died. So, the greedy sons, Nimrod and Hugh, with deeds in their hands, took poor old William to court. Do you think that Dillahunty Magdalene and Rachel could have encouraged their husbands? Who knows? Well, cousin Joe Brown stood up for William in court, swearing that Rees gave the land to William. The court asked Joe, "Did, or did not, William Porter put a good comfortable hughed (hewed) log-house on said west end of said land?" Colonel Joseph Brown said that he did put up the walls, "but did not entirely complete or finish said house." The son said that he did not live on the land. Nimrod had bought the shares of Hugh B., John and Jane. Our ancestor, Reese Porter, their brother had died in 1822, a year after his grandfather. William seems to have kept the house. (Moral of this story - don't trust anyone named Nimrod or Dillahunty Magdalene!)

William died of palsy on Christmas Eve 1843. His son Hugh B. Porter was executor of his will.

W. REES PORTER	married	MARY (POLLY) HAMILTON THOMAS
7 Jan 1795-15 Mar 1822	22 May 1816	26 Sep 1800-26 May 1873

W. Rees Porter lived for only twenty-six years. He must have been born on the farm on the Little Bigby, three miles southeast of Columbia. That was still North Carolina when he was born on 7 Jan 1795, because Tennessee became a state the next year, 1796.

W. Rees married Mary (Polly) Hamilton Thomas on 22 May 1816. She was born in Bedford County, Virginia, on 26 Sep 1800. Efforts to find her lineage have been futile. Please refer to the Pillow chart. Note that Abner Pillow was married, also, to a Polly Thomas, who lived at about the same time and in the same general location in or near Columbia, TN. No basis for any relationship between the two Polly Thomas wives has been found.

W. Rees is said to have served in the company commanded by Captain Nathan Davis, NC Militia, Infantry, in the War of 1812, but the service has not been proved. Reese died in Maury County, TN, on 15 March 1822. Polly did not remarry for thirty years, when she married George M. Martin, whose wife had died in 1843. Polly had no children by George Martin. She and Reese were the parents of:

1. Elizabeth T. m. William H. Pillow.
2. William B.
3. Nimrod Reese was a Major in the Mexican War. He was killed at Cerro Gordo, Mexico on 21 April 1847. His pension went to his mother, Polly.

Our ancestor, Elizabeth T. Porter was the only child that married. She was the wife of William H. Pillow of Columbia, TN. Her life was discussed in the chapter about the Pillows.

September 1987

The proof for Revolutionary service for Hugh and Reese Porter is:

Hugh - Patriot Index, NSDAR, p. 541. South Carolina Archives, File 6037 - see next three pages.

Reese- Rugeley, Brown, William and Margaret (Peggy Fleming), Descendants of, pp. 54-56, N22. Richard Beard, Brief Biographical Sketches of Ministers of Cumberland Presbyterian Church, pp. 70,71. Maddox & Carter, NC Revolutionary Soldiers, Sailors & Patriots, p. 170. NSDAR, Patriot Index, p. 542. NC Archives, Vouchers for Rev. Accounts, Vol. XII, p. 1, Folio 4, see following page 280-d.

State of North Carolina } No. 151
 Salisbury District } L. 1-16-7-1-19-7
 This is to certify that Recd Porter - was allowed
 for ~~four~~ ^{eighteen} shillings for a public claim
 by the ~~Upper~~ Board of Auditors 29th August 1782
 By order }
 James Hunter }
 Aud^{rs}
 J. M. H. H. H. H.

State of North Carolina } L. 66, 19. or N 867
 Salisbury District)
 This is to certify that Recd Porter
 was allowed ~~four~~ ^{eighteen} shillings
 for a public claim by the Board
 of Auditors 28th Day of June 1782.
 By order
 Sam Henderson C. S. }
 Charles Brown }
 James Hunter } Aud^{rs}

From N. C. Archives.

State of North Carolina } No. 224
 Salisbury District } L. 0. 19. 0
 This is to certify that Recd Porter - was allowed
 Eighteen shillings
 for a public claim by the Upper Board of Auditors
 By order }
 James Hunter }
 Aud^{rs}
 J. M. H. H. H. H.

1851
 in Dec. of Duty
 in the Militia as
 Private done since
 the reception of
 Charles Town Am. of
 to Cur. 4/2. 43:10/2
 1/2 to 6: 4: 9/4

Six Pound four
 Shillings, & three
 Pence fourth of
 etc.

43: 4: 10 1/2
 1/2 1/4

M. J. C.

Received full satisfaction for the within
 from M. J. C. of P. B. B. of
 M. J. C. of P. B. B. of

5m

North Carolina } To Peter Boquet & James Mitchell Esqrs
Hillsville County }

you will please to deliver to James
- Braden the Indent due to me from the purchase for
Molton duty done under Capt. Wefeman with several
Indents for the Interest of oblige - Hugh Porter

12th April 1797

I do hereby Certify that I did see Hugh Porter affix
his name to the above order - William Wainwright

This file in the South Carolina Archives contains papers on TWO Hugh Porters. The two papers attached are for the Hugh Porter who married Violet Mackay - my Hugh Porter. Charleston fell to the British in the Spring of 1780. Here my Hugh Porter signs for money 12 Apr 1787 and is certified.

6037
Porter, Hugh

The other Hugh Porter was dead in March 1780 and had a wife, Elizabeth.

The proof of Patriotic Service in the American Revolution for Hugh Bradshaw, Sr. is:

Hugh Bradshaw, Sr. provided 73 rations to soldiers on June 18, 1782 in Greenbrier County, Virginia (now West Virginia).

References:

Anne Waller Reddy, "West Virginia Revolutionary Ancestors", Pp 8 & 16.

Janice L. Abercrombie and Richard Slatten, "Virginia Revolutionary Claims", Pp. 417 & 418.

April 28, 1988

Nine generations before this old man walked upon the face of the earth, we had a great ancestor named Margaret Brown. She is the lady that you have read about beginning on page 275 of this book - the Margaret Fleming of Londonderry who secretly married William Brown. There is no need to repeat the adventures of her hundred years here. However, after visiting the Tennessee Archives in Nashville and finding these interesting clippings and after having visited Margaret's grave in the Spring Hill Cemetery, these pages must be added to the book.

In the prestigious old cemetery, the **three** graves of Margaret Brown, her daughter, Jean (Jane) Brown Porter, and Jane's infant son, William Porter are side by side. Time has taken its toll on the old gothic stones, but after almost two hundred years, the inscriptions can still be read, barely. The 1935 picture printed in the Nashville newspaper and the one of this writer standing beside the stone shows the deterioration of 55 years.

The inscriptions are:

Here lies the body of
Jane Porter
She departed this life
August 30, 1806
Age 61 years, 12 days.

William Porter
Infant Son

Here lies the body
of
Margaret Brown
She departed this
life Sep. 17th 1801
Aged 100 years
5 months &
17 days

The grave of infant William Porter is easy to explain. The curious may note that, on page 277, Jane had our ancestor, William Porter, who married Jane Bradshaw. How, now? Well, in the olden times, many little babies died. They were named, they died, and the same name was given to the next child that was born.

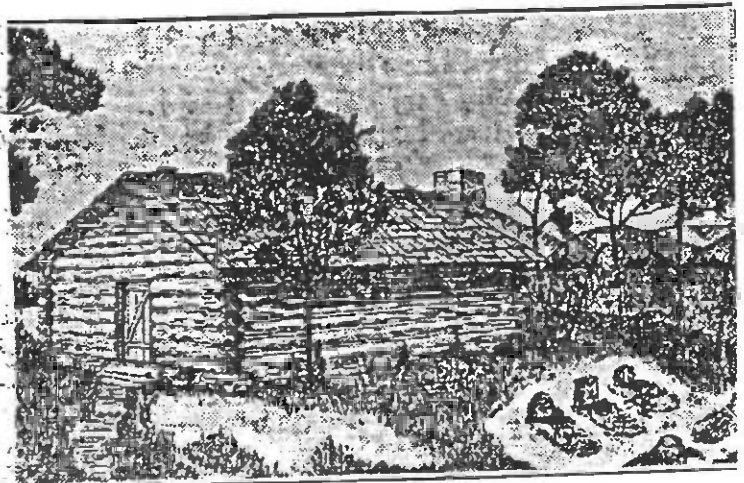
Finding these graves in Nashville is very easy. Drive north on the Gallatin Pike until you cross the Briley Parkway. In a short distance, turn right into the cemetery and bear right about 200 yards to the southwest corner. The large old square tomb of the great Presbyterian minister, Thomas B. Craighead, is obvious. Margaret Brown is buried about 30 feet away.

The lives of these ancestors were described earlier. The following clippings tell their own story.

WHEN TENNESSEE WAS PART OF NORTH CAROLINA

1785

In 1785 the settlers at Fort Haysboro called The Rev. Thomas B. Craighead and established the first Presbyterian Church in Middle Tennessee. This church was located on the old part of the Spring Hill Cemetery and the ground adjacent to the church was dedicated for burial purposes and has so remained since that time. With this humble beginning Spring Hill Cemetery has grown steadily and with its growth it has always kept faith with lot owners.



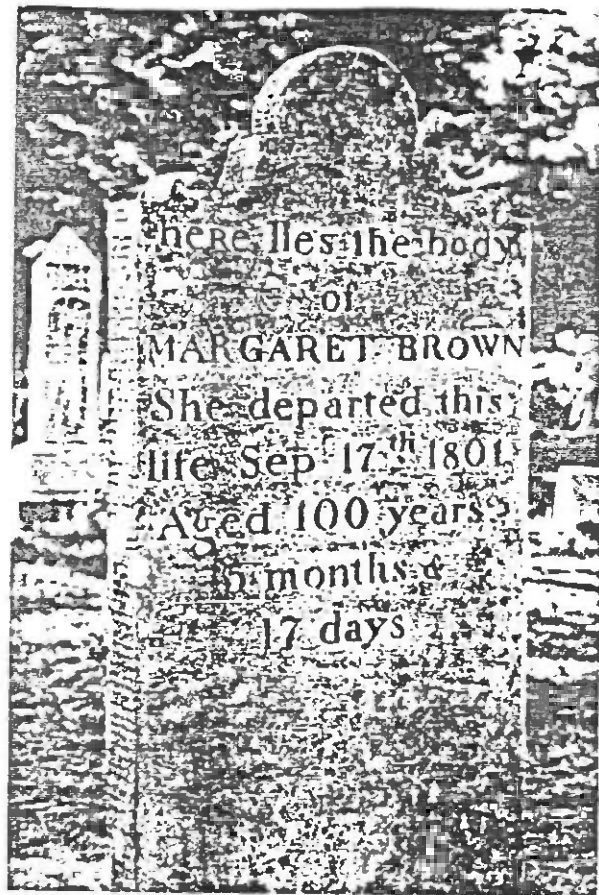
Journal of the
Gallatin, Tenn
April 28/33

Spring Hill Cemetery Is Historic Ground

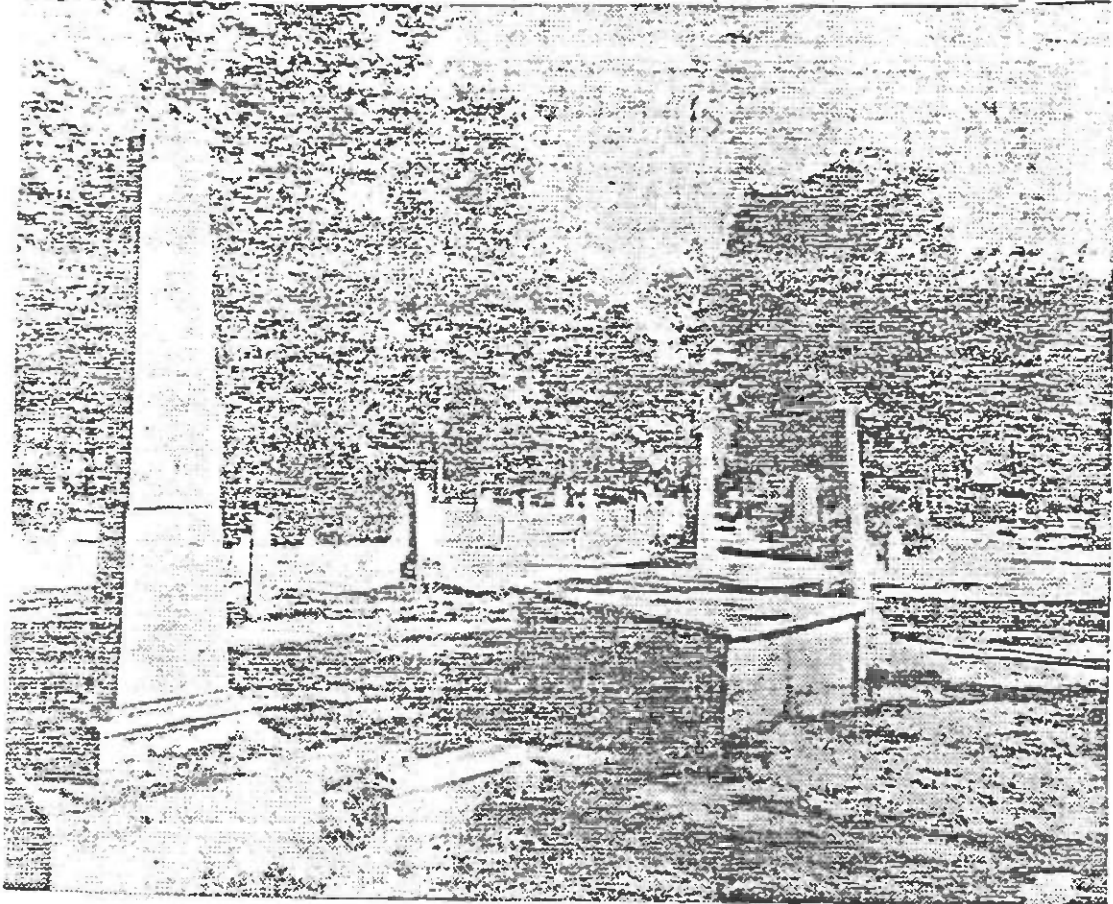
It is probable that there is no spot in Middle Tennessee which has more historic interest, or one in which the passage of the last century and a half is more definitely marked than in old Spring Hill Cemetery on the Nashville Pike, which we all drive by every day without a thought as to its origin or what it has meant to the community.

Back in 1775 when the Rev. Thos. B. Craighead established the first Presbyterian church of Middle Tennessee in the "Old Haysboro Meeting House," with its inevitable church yard burying ground, Spring Hill really had its inception, and undoubtedly many of the pioneers who were buried here at that time lost their lives in encounters with the then hostile Indians.

Recently the management of Spring Hill has unearthed the stones which were the foundation of the "Old Haysboro Meeting House" and these stones are preserved in the form of a pyramid on the original location of the building. Near this spot we find the headstone marking the grave of the Rev. Craighead and many of the other notables of his day; but that of the most interest to us is a quaint old Gothic stone inscribed to the memory of Margaret Brown, born in 1701, died in 1801, aged one hundred years, five months and seventeen days. There was a real pioneer, a woman approximately eighty years of age who braved the hardships and perils of hundreds of miles through hostile Indian territory in the trip from Carolina to Haysboro, when this settlement was made in 1779.

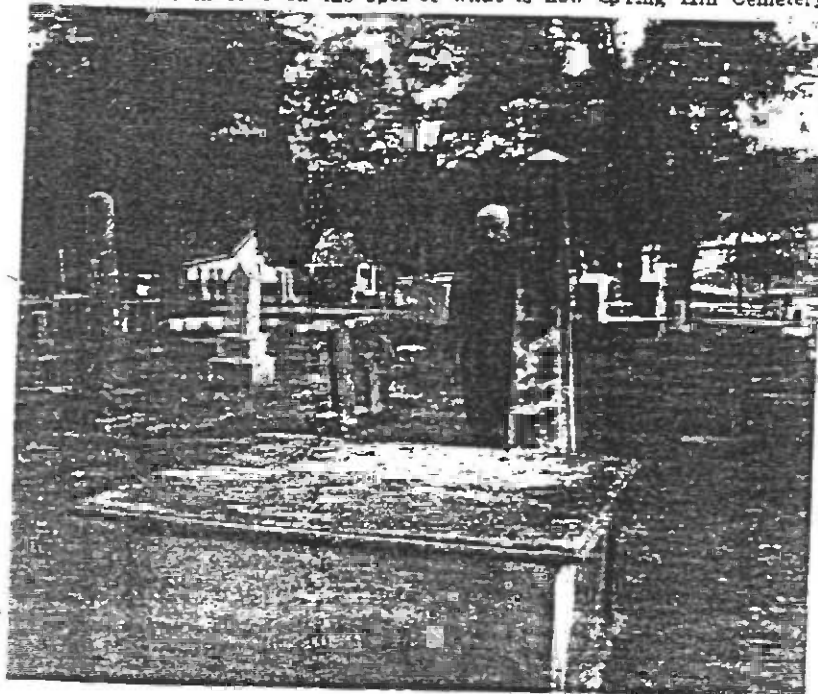


SPRING HILL'S OLDEST SECTION



—Photo by Wiles.

The oldest section of Spring Hill Cemetery, started over a century and a half ago as a church burying ground, still receives the same attention that is given to the newer section of the cemetery. In the foreground of the picture is the box-like tomb of the Rev. Thomas B. Craighead, pastor of the Bible church he established in 1785 on the spot of what is now Spring Hill Cemetery.



Tuesday Evening, November 5, 1935.

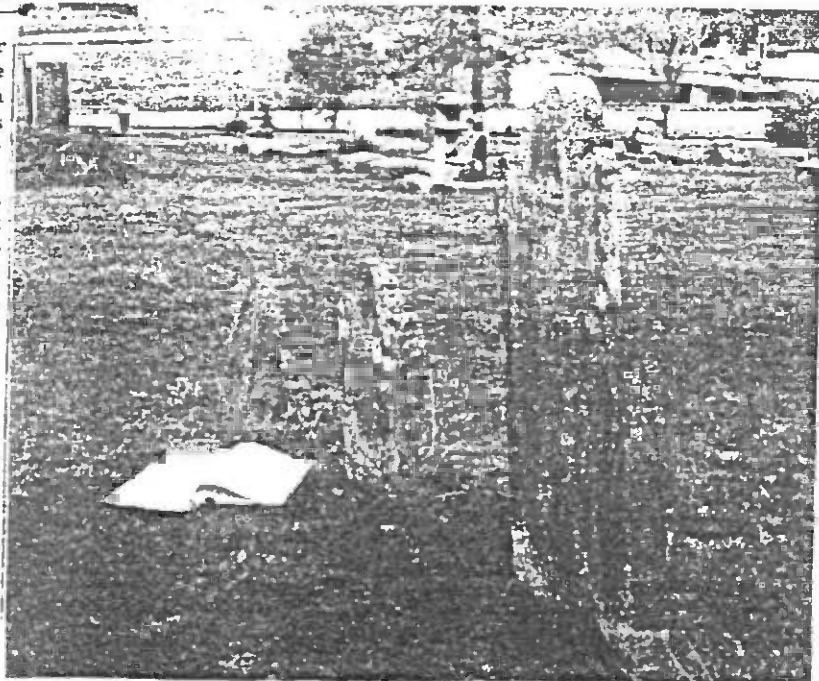
Meticulous Care Graphically Shown in Spring Hill Cemetery

Quaint Headstones Mark Resting Places of Many Nashville Pioneers.

It is doubtful that any other spot in or near Nashville shows the passage of the last century and a half more graphically than does the historic old Spring Hill Cemetery.

Starting at the southwest corner, the visitor comes upon many quaint old headstones, with dates running well back into the Eighteenth Century, marking the last resting place of the real pioneers of this community. It is here that one will find the tomb of Rev. Thomas B. Craighead who, in 1785, established the church burying ground which grew into the Spring Hill Cemetery of today.

In an adjacent plot is a stone marking the grave of Margaret Brown, who was born in 1701 and died at the ripe old age of 100 years, five months and seventeen days. This grand old lady had made the two thousand-mile trip to the new settlement in 1779 when she was at the age of eighty years.



Jane

William

Margaret



Bethell

Jane Watt Bethell, the wife of Robert Henry Scales was the granddaughter of William Bethell, Sr., 1744-1804.

State of North Carolina } 34-10-10 } N 1184
 Salisbury District } Thirty four pounds Shells
 This may Certify that William Bethell
 was at Thirty four pounds Shillings
 Service for publick Claims by the
 Board of auditors of the Day August
 1789. } 34-10-10 }
 By order } 3-14-10 } James Hunter
 Sam Henderson } Charles Bruce } Clerk

William Bethell, Sr. of Rockingham County, North Carolina, was a plantation owner, a soldier, and a statesman. Descendants should claim this man with pride. In every way, he seems to have been an outstanding individual. According to family legend, he was brought from Wales to America about 1750, a child six years old. No records have been found to identify his parents. He appears in North Carolina records in the accounts of the American Revolution.

The North Carolina Archives have a pay voucher, "Revolutionary Army Accounts" (Vol. IV, Page 86, Folio 4.), which proves that he was paid 70 dollars, 45/90ths for military service, May 1779.

William Bethell, Sr., was a captain in the North Carolina Militia from Guilford County. During the Revolutionary War, he participated in the Moore's Creek Campaign in 1776, fought the Tories in the Yadkin River Valley in 1779, and was in the campaign to force the evacuation of the British from Wilmington in 1781.

Heitman, in his Historical Register lists "Bethel, William (N. C.) Captain North Carolina Militia at Guilford, 15 March 1781." The Battle of Guilford Courthouse is considered to be of great strategic importance. General Greene out-manuevered Lord Cornwallis by marching his army across what is now

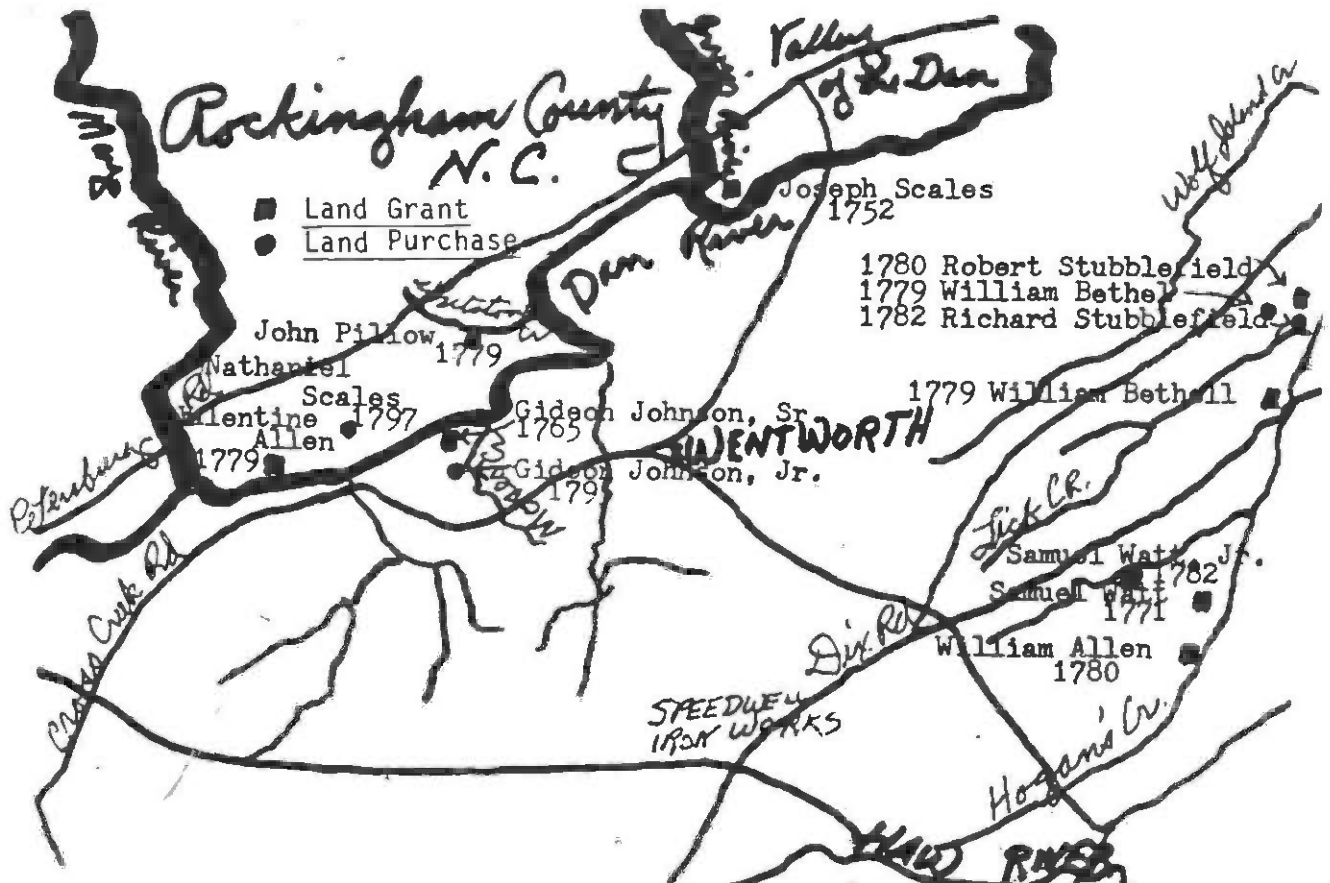
Rockingham and Guilford Counties. The battle was a turning point in the American Revolution.

William Bethell served in the General Assembly of North Carolina in the House of Commons 1786-1789 and in the Senate in 1790. He represented Rockingham County.

He was a member of the Constitutional Conventions of 1788 and 1789. A leading issue at that time was ratification of the United States Constitution. William Bethell tried to block the ratification at the conventions at Hillsborough in 1788 and at Fayetteville in 1789. In the final Vote, he voted "Nay".

Later, he served as Clerk of Court in Wentworth and was on the committee appointed to lay off and sell one-acre lots which might be "deemed proper" for the town of Wentworth, the county seat of Rockingham County, NC. He was one of the first Justices of the Peace when Rockingham County was formed from Guilford County.

His home was near today's east border between Rockingham and Caswell Counties. He had two land grants in 1779, one above Lick Fork Creek, the other on Hogan's Creek. Within about a mile of his property were land grants to Robert Stubblefield 1780, John Stubblefield 1762, and a land buy by Richard Stubblefield in 1782. Also, Samuel Watts had a land grant in 1771. It was close to Bethell land. Is it possible that these families were, in some way, connected before the marriages that followed?



William Bethell married Nancy Stewart Stubblefield (1750-1826). Captain William Bethell, Sr. and Nancy had eight children: William II (1764-1833) married Mary Watts; John P. (d.1845) married Mary Moore; Jane Ann (Jeany) (1777-1846) married Thomas Johnston; Susan (Sukey) (1778-1844) married Dr.

David Lawson; Sinia (1794-1865) married Otway Bailey; Alfred M. may have married Elizabeth Campbell; and, Pinckney, who died between 1804 and 1829.

William Bethell died a wealthy man, owning over 10,000 acres of land. The County of Rockingham had lost a leading citizen. His will is in the Rockingham County courthouse, Will Book A, pp. 4-8, 30 March 1804. In the long, handwritten document, he recommends his soul to Almighty God and his body to the earth. Then, he leaves 450 acres, the land on Hogan's Creek, to his wife, Nancy. He names all of his children, leaving the slaves, possessions and land—all carefully specified. Our ancestor, William II, was given "my negroe man Natus, boy George, Charles, Sukey, and Natl (Nathaniel) together with the land." The land was "1,240 acres more or less," but he describes the various plots by origin. Also, William II got all the stock, the house, and the kitchen furniture that had already been given. The last provision is that 180 of the acres willed would go to William when his mother chose to give the land up. Finally, after leaving all his children wealthy, he left all the sugar, coffee, and "spirits" on hand to his wife, Nancy.

In Reidsville, NC, the William Bethell Chapter, National Society, Daughters of the American Revolution, is named in his honor.

Widow Nancy Bethell, later, married George Roberts and her will was written 17 Feb 1826, and probated in May 1826. (Will Book A, p. 267.)

WILLIAM BETHELL II married **MARY (NANCY) WATT**
1764-1833 1776-1875

The footprints were hard to fill, but William Bethell, II did his best. He married a lady named Mary (Nancy) Watt (1776-1875). Her family lived on a farm nearby. Her grandfather was granted his land in 1752, long before the grants to the Bethells and the Stubblefields. Samuel came from Dublin, Ireland and his wife's name was Margaret. His son, Samuel, Jr., was her father.

Up to this point, the Pillow cousins have been told of a few Scotch-Irish ancestors. But, here, we have real Irish, so you will be entitled to wear green on St. Patrick's Day!

William, Jr., as his father had, served in the General Assembly of North Carolina. He, also, was called "Captain William" for an unknown reason, but there may be more to learn on that score. He wrote his will in Natchez, MS, where he died. A newspaper in Natchez listed the death of "General William Bethell of Rockingham County". He had served as a Brigadier General in the state militia from 1818 to 1829.

William had moved to Mississippi where he bought a large plantation. Later, he moved again to St. Mary's Parish, LA, where he bought another large sugar plantation. The flat ground, heat and mosquitoes must have caused his family to return to the mountains of North Carolina. His will, written in Natchez, refers to his wife as "now living in Caswell County, North Carolina". William and Nancy had nine children. Ann C. married Mr. Nash and had two sons. Jane Watt married our ancestor, Dr. Robert Henry Scales. Their story is in the Scales part of this book. Mary Ann married Samuel Moore of Caswell County. Samuel may have married Rebecca Patton. William D. was born in his parent's home at Spring Grove Farm in 1815. The beautiful old southern home may still be standing near Eden. It was very near the Virginia line, nine miles above Ruffin, NC. William married Mary Jeffreys. Pinkney C. (1816-1884) married Harriet E. Smith. Agnes G. married Dr. Thomas Toryann in 1836. Maria Louisa married Mr. Sneed. The last child, Attelia, must have died without issue.

As is true with many families with many children, the young left home and scattered. They went to TN,MS,AR,LA,VA, and several other states. There are many descendants of William Bethell.

William Bethell, II left a will that was even longer and in more detail than that of his father! It is filed in Caswell County, NC, Will Book N, pp. 150-155. He signed the will on 13 Feb 1833, then added codicils on 16 Mar 1834, two the same day. The last add-on gave the three youngest daughters an extra \$500 each in cash. This was in addition to the \$5000 each got in the will.

The basic will was written in Natchez, Mississippi. He states that he is sick in body and begins, "I recommend my Soul to the mercy of God through Jesus Christ." Then, he provides generously for his wife, Mary, our ancestor—"I give and bequeath to my daughter Jane W. Scales all the slaves that I have already given into her possession and the sum of one thousand dollars and I give and bequeath to her eldest sons each the sum of two hundred and fifty dollars, to be placed at interest until they shall respectively become of lawful age." Also, Jane got half of any land not specified in the will.

Our ancestor, daughter Jane, is discussed with her husband, Dr. Scales in the Scales chapter. Remember, in the discussion of Jane's son, William Nathaniel Scales, we questioned his going south to Mississippi where he met Martha Jane Kaigler. Probably, the explanation lies in his father's interest in that part of the South. That "unspecified land" that Jane inherited could have been the Mississippi plantation.

This chapter is devoted to only two generations. They are very important to the family history. We are indebted to two ladies who gave us the information. They are Miss Nancy Withers and Mrs. Peggy Ellis Osborne of Wentworth, NC. Many people have asked about how the details and the facts have been found. They are given by friends, usually. Such coverage cannot be bought. In most cases, family members provide the stories, then, book by book, the research is completed.

Mary (Nancy) Watt's father was Samuel Watt, Jr., who wrote his will in 1802. Her mother was Jeane Nickells. Her father was James Nickells, who wrote his will on 14 May 1796. He has been proved and approved by the NSSAR for Patriotic Service during the American Revolution. (p.284.b)

September 1987

Samuel Watt has been given credit for Patriotic Service during the Revolutionary War based upon the document below. It is from the State of North Carolina, Salisbury District, Indent number 3402, dated 6 Aug 1783, to certify that Samuel Watt was due nine pounds and twelve shillings. The receipt for payment, number 34, is dated 30 Sep 1791.

State of North Carolina Aug 12 0
 Salisbury District N 3402
 This may certify that Samuel Watt
 was allowed Nine pounds twelve Shillings
 & pence for public claim by the upper board of Auditors the
 6 day of August 1783
 By order } Charles Brauer } Audg
 John Henderson Esq } }
 James Hunter }

Received on the 30th day of September 1791, on loan to
 the United States, and same by order,
 Wm. Leitch Commiss^r

1791
 N. 34

From TREASURER'S AND COMPTROLLER'S PAPERS
 Revolutionary Pay Vouchers

State of North Carolina }
 Salisbury District } L^o 13. 3. 1347
 This may certify that James Nichols
 was allowed Six pounds thirteen shillings & three pence
 for publick labor the upper Board of assessor
 7 day of August 1782.
 By order }
 Sam. Henderson C^o } James Hunter } Audy

Principal £ 6-3-3
 Int^r 2-10-6
 9-1-9

Principal 6-18-3
 Interest 2-16-0
 9-9-3

Allen Williams
 To Wm Clark
 & J

January
 1790

No. 1560

ticket

XEROGRAPHIC COPY BY
 JUN 17 1995
 NORTH CAROLINA

Stubblefield

When William Bethell married Nancy Stewart Stubblefield he gave us a surname that is much easier to trace than the more common names. In the 1600s and 1700s the English population of Virginia was small. Among the settlers, the finding of a single man named Stubblefield would be unusual. On the other hand, records in those early times were far from complete. Of those that were made, many were destroyed in courthouse fires or as a result of the many wars that have been fought. During the War Between the States, Richmond, the capital of Virginia was burned and many records were lost. Further, in early times, birth and death certificates were unknown. The best sources we have are wills, church records and land documents that were not lost. So, for the early generations of the Stubblefields, there are lots of "ifs, ands and maybes" with a lack of total proof. But remember, if a man named Stubblefield was in the right place at the right time and no other Stubblefield is around, you can draw a conclusion that you have your man. This Stubblefield story will be told without apologies and when the point is reached where facts are proved with documents, an announcement will be made.

While the research for this book was under way, many letters were exchanged with other genealogists. Without actually meeting these generous people, they became friends. In one of the letters, a lady wrote that she had heard that a Miss Nancy Withers of North Carolina had a chart of the Bethell family under a glass table top in her home. A request to a good friend, Peggy Osborne, President of the Rockingham County (NC) Historical Society, was answered with a pile of very valuable papers. On top was a note in Peggy's handwriting which says, "Miss Nancy (Withers) is a pillar of strength in the Rockingham County Historical Society and was delighted to let me use it. She is a darling-". She had loaned her a book, The Early Bethells and Their Descendants by Virginia Mohler Garde and other papers. One of the papers by Francis Anderson tells of the early Stubblefields.

Simon (Symon) Stubblefield was born in England about 1640. He sailed for America and was living in Virginia before 1672. In those days, new arrivals would work for the person who paid their passage, save their money, and get their own land. Simon claimed that he had brought four persons, by name, to America. Upon application, he was given 288 acres of land near the courthouse of Gloucester County, Virginia. Simon was the first Stubblefield, but one generation later the name appears a number of times in Gloucester, Charles City, and other counties. One of the Gloucester County Stubblefields was George.

George Stubblefield was born about 1675 and lived all of his life in Gloucester County, Virginia. He married a lady named Ann. There is a record that shows that he paid quit rents—a sort of taxes—on 400 acres over in King William County, but he continued to live in Gloucester County. Date wise, in the next generation, we find Robert in Gloucester County.

Robert Stubblefield was born about 1702. When he was grown, he was involved in land transactions in King and Queen County in 1726. Then, we see his name in land records in Spotsylvania County in 1730, 1734, and 1738. The

frontier was moving gradually westward. Next, Robert moved to Amelia County to the part which became Prince Edward County, but he did not own land. He may have been preparing for his next big move, because, in 1756, he moved his family to Orange County, North Carolina. His farm on Hogan's Creek eventually became a part of Rockingham County. In March of 1758, he requested permission to build a grist mill on his property. A grist mill would have had a large water wheel, turned by the stream. The wheel turned heavy stone grinding wheels which turned corn into corn meal. Farmers usually brought their corn to be ground and the miller kept part of the meal which he used, traded or sold. Between 1763 and 1769 he gave or sold land to Wyatt, Richard, and Thomas Stubblefield. Also, there was Abraham Womack. Robert died about 1775. More information can be found in American Origins, by D. B. Trimble. Robert's wife must have been the Anne Stubblefield who bought 30 acres in Wilkes County, NC, on 1 March 1780. She sold it on 1 March 1787 and must have died soon afterward. Her last name might have been Stewart, the middle name of the granddaughter who married William Bethell. The Trimble book lists several children, one being Richard. Another child was Elizabeth, born about 1736, died March 1780. She married Abraham Womack and they have many descendants in the area around Reidsville in Rockingham County. This is where the Bethells lived.

Richard Stubblefield, Sr. was born about 1730. This is an appropriate time to announce that the story is now upon firm ground! Richard's will was dated in 1802. He married Susannah Carter of Prince Edward County, Virginia. (DAR application # 266905.) The next chapter of this book is about the Carter family. The DAR and the SAR have approved the service of Richard Stubblefield, Sr. The paper, below, is Treasury Paper 1163 (NC). It shows that he furnished supplies to the Revolutionary Army.

State of North Carolina \$ 1163
 Salisbury district \$ 1163
 18 14 1

This may certify that Richard Stubblefield
 Was allowed sixteen pounds eight shillings
 for Public Claims by the upper Board of
 Auditors the 11th day August 1782

By order Charles Bruce
 Sam Henderson James Hunter } Auds

Also, The Heritage of Rockingham County North Carolina 1983 by Rodenbough, p. 12, gives a list of Militia Officers who served in the American Revolution from Rockingham County. It quotes sources as, "Treasurer's and Comptroller's records in NC Archives, 1779 List of Guilford County Militia Officers in NC Archives, and pension applications". The list contains the names of Capt. William Bethell, Capt. Valentine Allen, and Ensign Richard Stubblefield.

Now, in explanation, the son of Richard, Sr., named Richard, Jr., served in the American Revolution for a short time. His pension request for benefits under the Act of Congress, passed 7 June 1832, was made 14 August 1844. In the request he tells of his enlistment for three months as a private in the company of Captain William Bethell. Richard, Jr., is kin, but not our ancestor. His sister, Nancy Stewart Stubblefield, is our ancestor. We descend from Richard Stubblefield, Sr., who was the Ensign listed above. He died on his property in Rockingham County in 1802. The family of Susannah (Nancy) Carter, wife of Richard Stubblefield, Sr., will be the subject of the next chapter.

The National Society
of the
Sons of the American Revolution



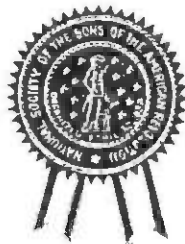
Supplemental Ancestor Certificate

Albert Caswell Metts, Jr.

National No. 118709

Descendant of

Richard Stubblefield



Approved: 26 June 1984

President General

State of North Carolina

Department of Cultural Resources

Division of Archives and History



This verifies that the following information is recorded in a manuscript volume in the custody of the State Archives titled "Revolutionary Army Accounts" (Volume XII, Page 8 Folio 4):

Heading: An Account of Specie Certificates paid into the Comptroller's Office by John Armstrong Entry Taker for Land in North Carolina — (viz^t) —

Number: 1163

By whom Granted: Bagge and Bruce

To whom Granted: R^d Stubblefield

Date: 1 Aug 1782

Sum: 16 pounds, 18 shillings

Interest: 1 pound, 16 shillings, 1 penny

To what Time: 20 May 1784

Total Amount principal & Interest: 18 pounds, 14 shillings
1 penny

Other information: None

Raleigh, North Carolina

May 23, 19 84.

Frank A. Gittson
Chief, Archives and Records Section

Carter

Let this Republican writer make one positive statement. Our Carters are no kin to President Jimmy Carter unless it occurred way back in old England before any of them came to America. His family tree is on record.

Our branch of the Carter family is described in a rare and wonderful book by General William Giles Harding Carter, United States Army. In 1909, he wrote Giles Carter of Virginia - Genealogical Memoir. It is written in the beautiful and perfect English used by highly educated persons of that period, remindful of the writings of Douglas MacArthur.

A few words from General Carter's Foreword are appropriate. Better than I could explain, he writes, "The constant shifting of county and parish boundaries in Virginia, and the tales maniac beckoning which ever lured colonists on in the search for more and richer lands, have created more perplexing conditions for those who now enter upon the study of Virginia genealogy of the past three centuries. The frontier life bred a love of independence and adventure that induced the virile men and women of Virginia to cross the mountains to the West and South, in ever increasing numbers, where, for lack of reliable means of communication, they gradually lost touch with their kinsmen who remained along the tide water and the valleys of Virginia."

Our Carter kin seem to have come from Gloucestershire, England. Those Carters used the same unusual Christian names and they appear to have been of the landed or agricultural class. In like manner, in America, our Carters have not been prominently identified with high public office nor with great industrial or commercial undertakings. They were land and slave owners, living the simple life of planters, enduring the hardships which were ever the lot of pioneers. Our emigrant ancestor was Giles Carter.

GILES CARTER married HANNAH CREWES 1634-1699

A Giles Carter of Gloucestershire, England, sailed from Bristol September 25, 1620 (OS), on the Supply, for Berkeley Hundred, then returned to England. Possibly his son, another Giles Carter, born 1634, was recorded on 7 April 1653 near the head of the Chichamony River, Henrico, Virginia. This county embraced the English settlement, Henricopolis, established by Sir Thomas Dale with 150 settlers in 1611. Giles lived on Turkey Island. This is not a true island, but a hairpin bend in the James River. Many wild turkeys lived there. It was also the home of Colonel James Crewe, whose life provides a very interesting story, a lesson in American history, and the first real information about the Giles Carter family.

The year 1676 is the date of Bacon's Rebellion. Many Americans in Virginia, about 300, turned against the English King Charles II, claiming corruption and unfair trade restrictions and taxation. The Virginia Governor, Sir William Berkeley raised an army of 1000 and crushed the rebellion. Our Oliver ancestor, Joseph Bridger, was the Paymaster General of the King's forces and a close friend of the governor. Some historians consider the rebellion to have been the first American Revolution. In effect, it was a

civil war in Virginia. One of the leaders in the rebellion was Colonel James Crewe, a very wealthy owner of thousands of acres of land. Colonel Crewe was tried, found guilty of treason, and executed. Before he died, he left a strange will. He had no wife. His will was of the kind expected from one of close kinship.

WILL OF JAMES CREWE

July ye 23d, 1676

In the name of God Amen I James Crews of Turkey Island planter in Henrico County being of sound & perfect memory prayed be God doe make and ordaine this my last will testament in manner & forme following first & principle I committ my soule into the hands of Almighty God my creater hoping & assured by beleiving through the merritts death & passion of Jesus Christ my only Saviour and Redeemer to have & obtaine free and full remission & pardon for all my sins, as touchinge concerninge all my worldly estate, either here in Virginia in England or elsewhere dew either by bill or accoumpt.

(NOTE: This Apple IIe computer's spelling checker is going crazy, but the actual spelling and punctuation in the will is copied!)

Imprimis. Item I give & bequeath unto Mary Carter daughter to Giles Carter tenn thousand pounds of tobo: & cask one feather bed two blanketts & one good rugge, this to be payd in three years after my decease, the interest hereof to be towards her clothinge.

Item I give unto Susan Carter tenn thousand pounds of tobo: & casq: one feather bed two blanketts & one rugge to be payd as above said

Item. I give unto my man Tero his freedome he servinge three years after my decease, and at the expiracon of the said tyme I give unto him one Cow, one sow if I have any left, and as much land as he shall tend for him and another during life.

Item. I give unto Hannah Carter wife of Giles Carter my negroe maid Keate for ever and her increase.

Item. I give unto Daniel Price my best suite & coate I have.

Item. I give unto Giles Carter what he owes me by bill or booke and further the plantacon which I have formerly lett him that he & his wife Hannah Carter shall have it during both their lives rent free, only paying one Graine of Indian Corne when demanded and further it is my will that what I have given to the said Giles Carter's children, that if either of them should dye it should come to the rest of his Children. It is further my will that the said Hannah Carter wife to the said Giles Carter shall die, then the said negroe wench returne to Theoddrick Carter her son and if shee hath children them to be at her disposing who she will give them too.

Item. I make my loving Cozen Mr. Mathew Crews my sole executor of all my lands here in Virginia, or else where & all the rest of my estate to him or his heirs forever, my just debts being payd.

Item. It is my desire that my loving friend Giles Carter shall live here in my said house & command my servants & make crops or any other things as shall be convenient & necessary for the said plantacon, and soe to give an account yearly as my Executor shall order.

Teste

Ja:Crewes

thence A Tho: Forehand
Devenot Enroughty.

The probate was on 2 August 1680. The question raised is obvious. Was this will an act of friendship or could James Crewe be the natural father of Giles Carter's wife, Hannah? We do not know. Another question can be asked. Why do we have such interest in old wills? Is it morbid interest? No, there are several good reasons for reading the old wills. First, factual data is found—dates, names, relationships, and locations. But more interesting, we learn a lot about life in those times. Tobo is tobacco. It was used as currency in old Virginia. The old spelling, word usage, and punctuation, or lack of it, are shown. More important, you learn much about the life of the person. Above, he shows his attitude concerning the slaves, servants, friends, and family members. The things that he owned are indicative of his life style. The Carters left interesting wills and we will use them. Now, back to the story.

Turkey Island is very near Brems, the old home of the Cocke family. Nora, wife of John P. Metts, of Greenwood, MS, was a member of the Cocke family.

There are many entries in the records of Virginia concerning Giles Carter and his descendants. Henrico County tythables, in 1679 showed Turkey Island with Richard Cocke 5, William Randolph 5, Giles Carter 6, Thomas Cocke 8, and William Cocke 2. The number shows how many people in the house had to pay poll tax.

In 1687, Giles went to court and got 800 acres for transporting 16 persons to America. Later, the same year, he was granted 552 acres in Varina Parish at White Oak Swamp. This land was still in the Carter family one hundred years later.

Giles Carter signed his will on 14 December 1699.

WILL OF GILES CARTER

In the name of God Amen. I Giles Carter: being of a weake and infirm body yet (Blessed be God) of a sound and perfect memory: And considering the frailty and uncertainty of man's Life and not knowing the time of my departure hence; I doe make Constitute and appoint this my last Will and Testam't: hereby Revoaking all other wills by me heretofore made whatsoever Imprs: I commend my Soul into the hands of my Blessed Redeemer Jesus Christ Relying only upon his merits for Salvation. My Body I commit to the Earth to be decently therein Interred. And for what worldly Goods and possessions God hath bestowed upon me, It is my will and desire they may be disposed of in the form and manner following.

I Give and bequeath to my son Theodrick Carter five shillings Sterl'g to be paid by my Deare wife Hannah either in Silver or to the full value thereof as to her shall seeme most convenient. Item I give to my daughter Susanna now ye wife of Thos. Williamson five Shillings Sterling to be paid as above s'd. Item I give and bequeath to my daughter Mary now ye wife of Thomas Davis five Shills. Sterl'g to be paid as aforesaid. Item. I give to my Daughter Ann now the wife of James Davis, one fether bed and Bolster, one Rugg, one blanket, and one Cow. Item. I give to my son Giles one mare called Nanny with her increase forever. It being a mare formerly given to him by William Sewell she then being but a Philly.

These legacies being paid as also wt debts have or shall be lawfully by me contracted, being fully satisfied. It is my will and desire that what of my Estate shall Remaine (one fether bed and furniture only excepted) for my wife Hannah (which I give unto her) may be equally divided into two parts, the one part whereof to belong to my wife

Hannah the other to my son Giles. It not being my intent or design'd in any wise hereby to disannull or make void a deed of Gift formerly by me made to my son Giles and entred upon Record. But I doe by this my last will and testament Rattifie and confirm the same. Item. It is my will and desire that what Estate shall appertaine to my son Giles that he may receive the same when he shall arrive to ye age of eighteen years: and also enjoy the benefit of his Labour, my wife Hannah not being any wise mollected or disturbed upon the plantacon wee now live upon during her life.

And lastly I make Constitute and appoint my dear and loveing wife Hannah full and sole Execx: of this my last will and Testament, the which I own to be my Last; All others being hereby Disannulled and made voide. As witness my hand and seals this 14th day of December 1699.

Giles Carter (Seal of Red Wax)

The will was probated 2 Feb 1701/2
As is obvious, the will names his wife, Hannah, and gives the names of his children as Theodrick, Giles, Sasanna Williamson, Mary Davis, and Ann Davis.

THEODRICK CARTER I married ELIZABETH —
1677-1737 -1747

The name Theodrick appeared for the first time in our family in America. From that time on, nearly every male Carter named a son Theodrick. In each future generation, there were several Theodrick Carters. Regardless of the will of father Giles, he did give Theodrick I more than five shillings. The land on Turkey Creek was sold in 1781 for 10,000 pounds of tobacco. Records of the sale show that Theodrick got the land from his father, Giles.

Next, Theodrick bought property called "Round Hills" on the south side of Chickahominy Swamp. (Do you remember reading that in 1721, Richard Allin lived on the south side of Chickahominy Swamp?)

Theodrick I wrote his will which was probated in April 1737 in Henrico County, VA. The entire will is not copied, but some parts are as follows: "In the name of God Amen I, Theodrick Carter of the Parish & County of Henrico being sick but of perfect memory do this Twenty Second day of July one thousand seven hundred thirty six make this my last Will and Testament,—I give and devise unto my Beloved wife Elizabeth so long as she shall live sole my plantation Land and Appurtenances and after her Death or Marriage, I give unto my Son Theodrick Carter and his heirs forever my said plantation with two hundred and eighteen acres—unto my son John Carter — one hundred and Twenty acres—my negro woman Judith and a Mullato Girl named Lucy—my great Chist, one pot and Hooks, and two Cows, I give unto my Daughter Mary Carter one Cow and Calf one fether Bed, Rug and Blankets, two Ews,—I give unto my beloved wife Elizabeth all the rest—In Witness whereof I have hereunto set my hand and Affixed my seal the day and year aforewritten. Theodrick Carter (Seal)"

Other household items were distributed. He named his wife and three children. After the will was signed, and before the probate, another child was born, Elizabeth Carter, born 22 August 1736. Her birth was registered in the St. Peter's Parish register. Elizabeth, wife of Theodrick I, lived for ten more years. She wrote her will in December 1751. In the will, she named the daughters not mentioned in her husband's will. They are Anne, Susannah, and

The Pedigree of GILES CARTER is at Appendix F.

Kaigler

The Pillow family descends from many wealthy ancestors who owned land, money, and many slaves. Also, the ancestors had many children. In the wills, some came out better than others. The others went west to make their own fortunes. So, William Nathaniel Scales, William Reese Pillow and William Kaigler came to Mississippi. Financially, William Nathaniel Scales provided the real basis for the Pillow fortunes, while through the years, the family gave credit to the grouchy, old German named William Kaigler. He was the father of Martha Jane, wife of Nathaniel Scales.

The Kaigler history, back in South Carolina was very similar to the story of those named Metts, Suber, Weyman, and Miller. They were a hard lot to trace. They were sly! Names were spelled every way possible. They asked for land grants under more than one spelling. They concealed their identity because of suspicion of lawful authority. Few wrote wills. They were very religious Lutherans but believed in witchcraft. They were farmers, worked hard, and had many children. They were heavy drinkers. In those days, a gallon of whiskey could be bought for less than a dollar.

The reader will realize that excuses are coming forth again. The title of the next book may be Excuses for Genealogists! Our ancestors lived in the part of South Carolina on the route of General Sherman's march to the sea. There were few Kaigler records, anyway, but Sherman burned many of the records that did get filed. Further, in early frontier South Carolina, there was no granite. The native stone was soft, so the early tombstones have melted away with time.

Doing the best we can, there are some educated guesses about the early times until the evidence gets firm. Now, a short history lesson, repeated here from Metts, Part I. Pillow cousins will not have that part of the book.

The first Kaigler in America came from Germany. He was a Palatine. This means that he came from the area called the Palatinate of the Rhine. It included Mainz, Katzenellenbogen, Wurtemberg, Baden, Alsace, Lorraine, and Treves. Many Lutherans lived in this area. The upper Palatinate was Bavaria, where people were Roman Catholics.

The Thirty Years War (1618-1648) had left Europe in turmoil. Voltaire said that Germany was doomed to eternal poverty. By the early 1700s, Louis XIV, the Catholic emperor of France, was fighting to take the Palatinate. Frederick the Great, the German ruler, cared little for the German people. He spoke French and his only interest was continuous warfare. The War of Spanish Succession, (1702-1713) with France against England, Germany, Austria, and Holland, gave Louis XIV the Palatinate. In 1732 the public exercise of Protestant worship in France was forbidden on pain of torture, the galleys, or death. He persecuted the Lutherans until they left their homes.

Good Queen Anne, of England, offered to help the Palatines. Thousands left for England, where they lived in London as best they could. With no money, they lived in make shift shelters. They spoke no English. Parliament decided to help them sail for America. Any sea captain who took one German to America was paid five pounds and the German received twenty-five shillings.

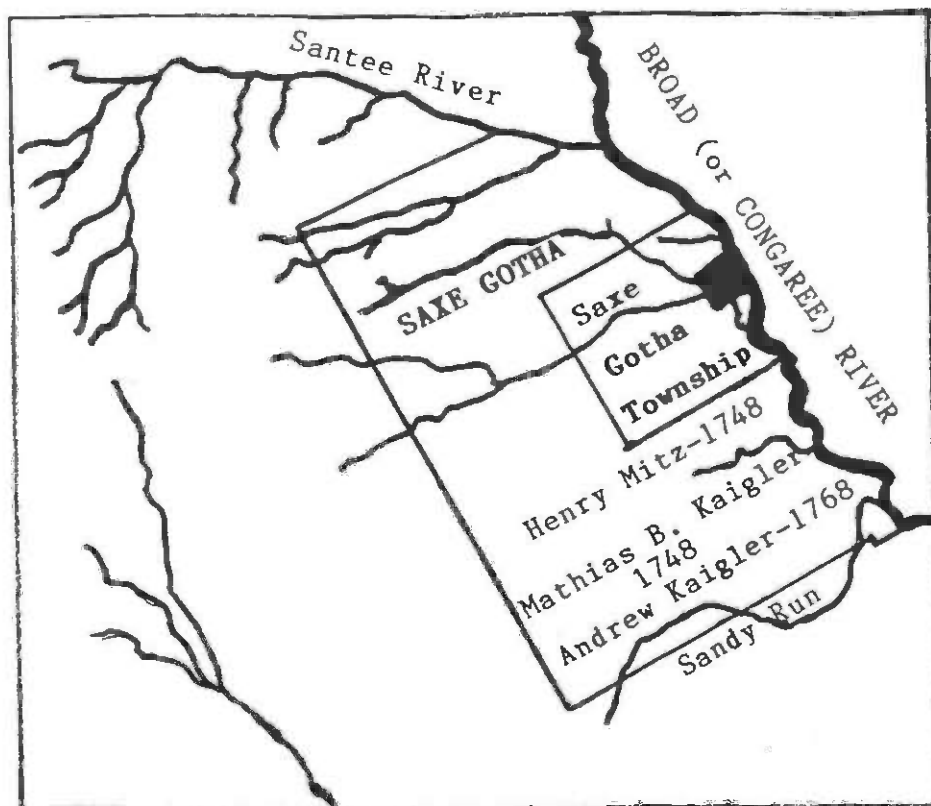
In America, the Saxe Gotha Tract, a large area east of the present location of Columbia, SC, was set aside for land grants. Procedures were established. The immigrant went before the King's Council where a written

petition was presented. The request stated that the person was a Protestant Palatine and requested land according to the size of his family. When the petition was approved, the council ordered a survey. The surveyor produced a plat (map) of the land. Then, the land grant was given to the German. These papers are on file in the S. C. Archives in Columbia.

German Palatines sailed from England and also from other parts of Europe. Those from England had their passage paid by Queen Anne. Others, such as those from Rotterdam, were often indentured for their passage and had to work and repay their debts before they could petition for land grants.

Saxe Gotha was considered to be far inland. When the first settlers went to their land grants, many were killed by Indians. These farmers were not fighters, so many of them moved over to the Dutch Fork area which is now Newberry County.

There is good reason to believe that the first Kaigler in America was Mathias B. Kaigler, who was given a land grant in 1752. On the map, below, you will see that the first Kaiglers lived very near the first Metts emigrant, old Henry.



Saxe Gotha was one wild place in those early days. The Cherokee Indian Wars were from 1759-1762. Many of the German farmers were killed in cold blood. Most of them moved over to the safer area in the Dutch Fork. It was the fork of the Broad and Saluda Rivers, a few miles to the west. Many Germans lived there. The name "Dutch Fork" came from the way the word "Deutsche" was pronounced by the Germans. It means "German", but it sounded like "Dutch" to the English settlers. The Kaigler and the Metts folk moved. The Metts family stayed in the Dutch Fork, but the Kaiglers returned about 1768 to their farms on Sandy Run in Saxe Gotha.

A little more history is needed. Early South Carolina had counties which had no western boundaries. North and south borders were extended to the edge of civilization. Old Berkeley County was the area north of the Broad River. The Broad River was also called the Congaree. Surveyors of land were confused in many cases and made errors on the plats by writing the wrong county. The old counties were reorganized. Saxe Gotha became the Congaree District in 1733, the Saxe Gotha District in 1735, and Lexington County in 1785, as it is today.

Mathias B. Kaigler (or Kueghlor) may have been in America for years before he was granted land in South Carolina. He could have gone to Pennsylvania, first - even been granted land there. Many Germans tried Pennsylvania, then moved down the emigration routes east of the mountains to North Carolina and on to South Carolina. His first land grant in Saxe Gotha was in the name KUGLER. He got 150 acres, which means that he had a wife and child. Then, two years afterwards, in 1754 he got another land grant near the first for another 150 acres. The sly old square-head used the name KEGLER. After he got the grant, he had to go to Charleston to get what they called a "Memorial" proving ownership. He appeared in person and signed in German script, MATTHIAS B KUEGHLOR.

In Revolutionary times, the South Carolina woods were full of Kaiglers! The old German families lived and moved together like a covey of quail. Children were numerous and were named for grandpa, brothers and uncles (or grandmas, sisters, and aunts!). With few real records, the sorting of the names is arduous. Frances Pillow made a remarkable effort with the information that she had. My guess may be no better, although I have the advantage of having the Leonardo Andrea files from the S. C. Archives. He was a noted genealogist who searched out available records. Also, I have the records in John Bennett Boddie's Historical Southern Families, Vol. X, pp.145-153. This is an outline of the Kaigler Family.

We do not know the name of the wife of Mathias. For good reasons, it seems that his children were Andrew, John, Mary Magdalene, Michael, and others. There may have been a Thomas and an Ursula. The birth date of Mathias is not known. Probably, he died about 1768. Why? The old Germans held on to their possessions until they died. About 1768, the children named, above, bought farms in Saxe Gotha. Where do you suppose the money came from?

ANDREW KAIGLER, SR.
c.1730-November 1814

The existence of Andrew Kaigler on Sandy Run in Saxe Gotha is proved by land documents and supported by family papers and NSDAR files. As mentioned earlier, Historical Southern Families, Vol. X, pp.145-163, by Boddie outlines the Kaigler family from Andrew, Sr., down to the generation that includes Elizabeth Jane Scales. After her name is the statement, "Descendants now living in Greenwood, Miss." The book says that, probably, Andrew was born in Germany and emigrated to America. This writer questions the statement, unless he came to America as the child of an emigrant. Andrew did not have the characteristics of the typical German emigrant. They all knew about land grants for emigrants, and how to get the papers together. Then, as now, the lawyers led them down the trail for a fee. Andrew didn't get a land grant. He bought his land - lots of land - in Saxe Gotha. He might have been the one child that Mathias claimed upon entry. If so, then he could have been born in Germany. The Boddie book tells, also, about the family background in Germany, based upon research by Germans. That, too, seems to be incorrect. Based upon

research on the Metts, Suber, Weyman, and Miller ancestors, with the advantage of the Leonardo Andreas files, the version stated earlier is more likely. Another important point is that Andrew had money to buy the land. German emigrants were poor. The Boddie book is valuable, however, because the author has done laborious effort in the sorting out of the many early Kaiglers and searching out the following generations. As for Andrew, Sr., we are certain that he lived on Sandy Run and that he loved land.

1760 - 150 acres - Bk 8 p. 436. He went to Charleston for his Memorial on 8 May 1769, under the name KEGLER.

1787 - 400 acres - Sandy Run, KEGLER.

1787 - Another tract - Sandy Run, KAIGLER.

1787/90 - Three tracts in Orangeburg County. (next county)

1790 - 400 acres, Sandy Run, KEIGHLER.

1794 - 136 acres, Orangeburg County. (Note: Sandy Run is a small river that crosses in and out of Orangeburg County from Saxe Gotha.)

Fortunately, the land records were in Charleston and were not burned. Sherman headed for Savannah. Andrew became a prosperous farmer. As we come to the American Revolution, another history lesson is needed. We all studied about Lexington, Bunker Hill, and Yorktown. Little was said about Germans in backwoods South Carolina. These Germans loved England, the country that had rescued them from the Catholics, sent them to America, and given them farms. They did not give a damn about the price of tea in Boston. (If the tax had been placed upon whiskey, it might have been a different matter!)

Our Andrew Kaigler, Sr., became the Saxe Gotha "Inquirer and Collector of Taxes" in 1777. (SC Statutes, Vol. IV, p.369, 16 Jan 1777.) The American Revolution started in 1776. Andrew didn't keep the job for very long, but a Colonel William R. Thompson published a list of TORIES. Andrew and his uncle Michael were on the list. There were many tories until the fall of Charleston.

Received the 20th Nov. 1781. of Mr.
Andrew Kaigler Twenty one
Bushels of Rice for the use of
the Cavalry of the State Troops.
W. Hampton
L. E. Comd^g

1140 = F. Account of
 Mr. Andrew Kaigler
 his Acco^t of Provisions
 for Cont^l State Troops,
 & militia. Amo^t £
 8:19: 2/2
 less on Beef p^a: 8:2
 8:11:07 1/2
 Eight Pounds, Eleven
 Shillings & One half
 Penny Sterling.
 Ed^d
 M^d

The National Society
of the
Sons of the American Revolution



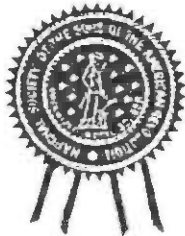
Supplemental Ancestor Certificate

Albert Caswell Metts, Jr.

National No. 118709

Descendant of

Lt. Andrew Kaigler, Jr.



Approved: August 30, 1984

Carl J. Bessent
President General

Revolutionary War Proof for Andrew Kaigler, Sr. & Andrew Kaigler, Jr.

Andrew Kaigler, Sr., did not have military service during the war. In the early days, he was listed as a tory. This was common for many South Carolinians of German descent. He had prospered under the king. He had land and a good life. What did he care about the Boston yankees and their tea? However, when Charleston fell to the British, his loyalty shifted. From that day on, he provided supplies to the troops. This qualifies him for Patriotic Service. References are:

1. A.S.Salley, Jr., The History of Orangeburg County, p. 271.
2. The SC Magazine of Ancestral Research, Vol. V, p. 29.
3. South Carolina Archives, File No. 4167 has six records of supplies provided by Andrew Kaigler.

Andrew Kaigler Jr. had military service as a Lieutenant in Colonel Robert Goodwin's South Carolina Regiment. The references are:

1. The Leonardo Andrea Collection in the South Carolina Archives, has 31 pages about the Kaigler Family. Items 28 and 31 document the military service of Andrew Kaigler, Jr.
2. Ervin, South Carolinians in the Revolution, p. 121 lists "South Carolina Soldiers to Tennessee" and Andrew Kaigler is listed.
3. A.S.Salley, The History of Orangeburg County, pp 270-271.
4. The South Carolina Magazine of Ancestral Research, Vol. V, p. 29,
5. NSDAR, Patriot Index, Vol. I, p. 377.

In 1815, John Ogden deeded land in Wilkinson County, MS, to Andrew and William Kaigler of Tennessee. The 1822 State Census of MS shows Andrew Kaigler as being over 70 years of age.

Catherine Coplepower Kaigler had died in Tennessee between 1805 and 1808. Andrew Kaigler, Jr. died in Wilkinson County, MS, about 1821. His will was proved in 1825. The children of Andrew, Jr., and Catherine were John, Esaias, David, Mary, William, and Margaret.

WILLIAM KAIGLER married **ELIZABETH H. BEASLEY**
c. 1785-c. 1835 15 Apr 1812 -1840

The life of William Kaigler from his birth on Sandy Run in Saxe Gotha, S. C., has been covered along with his father and brothers, as they moved to Tennessee and left for Mississippi. One important event during the years in Williamson County, TN, is that William married Elizabeth H. Beasley. This is well documented. There were many Beasleys in the county. More research is needed to find this lady's heritage. The H. may stand for Harris. She gave that name to one of her children. Elizabeth seems to be the first non-German to appear in the Kaigler story, poor girl! More will follow on this subject, but an interesting sidelight is worth mentioning.

In the Williamson County, TN, marriage records, there is another wedding, "Kaigler, David to Nancy Miles, Sept. 8, 1816, by Michael Scales. Bondsman: John Pillow." The John Pillow is kin, but not our John. The preacher is a Scales kinsman back through the NC Scales. The David Kaigler descends from old Uncle Michael, son of Mathias. Odd? Yes!

Back to Mississippi, Wilkinson County is on the very bottom of the state on the western corner where we find the town of Woodville. (That county deserves the title, "bottom place", in my humble estimation. A polite letter to the Chancery Clerk asking for information about the Kaiglers was answered by a woman who returned my letter with a short handwritten note telling me she did not have time to answer my questions. The opposite has been true in Leflore County. Elizabeth Pollard, of Greenwood, MS, did her best to help and gave information that was valuable.) Father Andrew, his son William, and cousin David lived in Wilkinson County. Brother John lived in Pike County, MS. John was born in 1777 and lived until 1843. He and Rebecca Colson Wells had 12 children. John seems to have been the oldest of the male Kaiglers. The family story is that John came to Holmesville (between Bogue Chitto and Otopasas - everyone must know where that is! - sounds like Texas.) prior to 1810. What follows is too good to exclude, even if John is not direct line. His wife, Rebecca Wells, "Rode horseback part of the time and he walked carrying his noted double barreled shotgun-rifle - John Kaigler was a hard working man and careful manager and the beautiful South Carolina girl helped him build his home and fortune." I like that!

Meanwhile, back in Wilkinson County, TN, William Kaigler was accumulating wealth. Records in Tennessee show that he owned slaves, but no land is listed. As will be described later, he and his kin gradually made the move to Mississippi. Family legend about his wealth has been grossly exaggerated. Since edition two of this book was published, extensive research has been directed to the William Kaigler - William Nathaniel Scales mystery! In Woodville, MS, the Kaiglers became "well off", if not wealthy.

We may have never known very much about the illusive William. One person who found him was Uncle Sam. Even without the help of Wilkinson County, the U. S. Census shows the family in 1820, 1830, and 1840. In 1820, we find William

Kegler, John, Andrew, and David. William has three little girls and a wife, aged between 16 and 26.

In 1830, William was between 40 and 50 years old. Two little girls were under 5, one was between 5 and 10, and two were between 10 and 15. Wife, Elizabeth was between 30 and 40. David Kaigler had one little girl. William claimed that he owned 59 slaves, listed by sex and age.

The 1840 census has two listings. One shows "Est. William Kaigler" and two young men - employees - probably. The next line gives us "Mrs. E. H. Kaigler." This meant that William was dead. In 1840 they claimed 41 slaves.

Analysis of the census papers tell the approximate birth and death dates of both William and Elizabeth. Also, we see when the little girls were born. Elizabeth signed her will on 21 May 1840. This was after William's death. Martha Jane Kaigler, our ancestor, was born in 1825. Therefore, she was only fifteen years old. She had two sisters younger than she and two sisters older, but still teenagers.

When William Kaigler knew that he would die in the near future, he did not write a Last Will and Testament. Instead, he made an "Indenture" which accomplished the same purpose. It was a long legal document (Wilkinson Co., MS, Deed Book F, Pp 176-179.) signed on April 1, 1829, which named his children and gave them their inheritance. First, he listed his possessions. Then, he named his brother, John Kaigler trustee to distribute the items after William's death. Our ancestor was included as follows; "To Martha Jane Kaigler the following of the above named slaves Newport, Sam, Lent, Able, Nell & Franklin twelve head of the above mentioned cattle and two of the above mentioned horses called Dolphin & Nell. To have and to hold the property in this clause mentioned in her own absolute right from the time of the death of the said William Kaigler." William's wife is not mentioned!

When this document was made, Ellen A. Kaigler had not been born. At that time, William and Elizabeth had 2 girls under 5 years old, 1 between 5 and 10, and 2 between 10 and 15. Then, William died.

Elizabeth H. Beasley Kaigler named her children in her will. They were:

1. Adeline, who married a man named Harris, then one named Darnall. She has descendants in St. Mary's Parish, LA.
2. Martha Jane, our ancestor, married William Nathaniel Scales.
3. Ellen A.
4. Catherine F. married William W. Kaigler, then, after his death, John D. Kaigler, her first cousins, sons of John of Pike County.
5. Mary Ann married Sam Lessley.
6. Elizabeth married (E.B.?) Lovie. She is buried in the Pillow Cemetery.

Elizabeth Harris Beasley Kaigler was the daughter of Robert C. Beasley and his wife, Fanny. William Kaigler married Elizabeth in Williamson County in Tennessee before the Kaiglers and the Beasleys came to Mississippi. (Land papers in Book L, p.502 in Wilkinson County, MS) Elizabeth inherited 42 acres from her father.

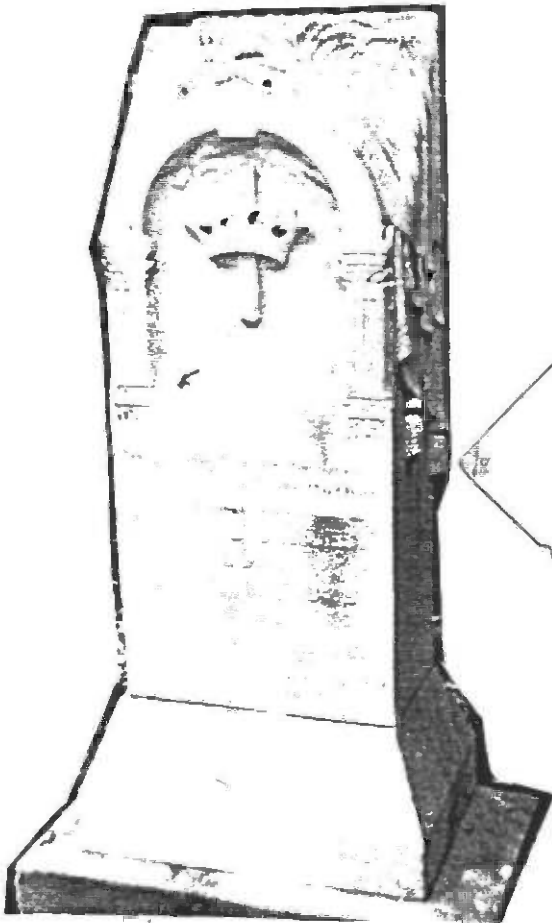
Elizabeth, wife of William Kaigler made her will on May 21, 1840. Obviously written by a lawyer, the will is six pages long. To our ancestor she leaves; "I give to Martha J. Kaigler my Bureau Glass, that stands on said bureau, a new Cherry bedstead, the middle table of my set, one small table, all my nesh bottom chairs, one wooll matrass, one Mafs a large Wash Kettle & one Cedar Bucket.

After individual gifts, the rest was to be equally divided, stated as follows with advice: "All the remainder and residue of my estate and property both real and personal both in action and in possession and not herein before devised after paying all my just debts, I give and devise to all my children & to be held in equal parts by all my children each child to hold her portion as

her own separate property apart from her husband as a "FEM SOLE" free from all legal control or disposition of the same by her husband during her natural life, and at her death her portion to go to the heirs of her body if she leave children, or the descent of children, but if such child or children have no issue, then her portion and any part thereof to revert back to my right heirs at law."

When Martha Jane Kaigler was given this great advice, she was 16 years old and unmarried. Now, let's see what she inherited from her parents. Her father left her 6 slaves, 12 cows and 2 horses. Her mother left her one grown slave and a slave child, \$500 cash, the items mentioned in the will, and a fifth share of the live stock and land.

The family lived in what was called a "plantation house". It was not a mansion. The land was 477 5/12 acres. Divided by five, Martha Jane would have received less than 100 acres. After studying the documents, a liberal estimate of her inheritance would be \$10,000. This is an appropriate time to read again pages 267 to 269. The marriage of Martha Jane Kaigler Scales was discussed in the Scales Chapter.



MRS. M. J. SCALES
BORN
JUNE 12, 1825
DIED
AUGUST 21, 1908



MARTHA JANE KAIGLER SCALES
Pillow Cemetery, Greenwood, Mississippi

Johnson

Now, we come to the last chapter of Pillow - Part III. To some this will be the frosting on the cake. There will be those who will not believe what is written here. Some may be inspired to read and study to learn more than can be included here. The history of medieval Scotland is an endless collection of tales of knights in armor, crusaders in the Holy Land, castles being defended or destroyed, maidens in distress, and continuous warfare. You have ancestors who were Kings and Queens, legendary ones like Lady Godiva and Ole King Cole, and barons who took the oath to enforce the Magna Charta. Needless to say, the scope of this book is violated as we cross the Atlantic. In a few pages, you will get a sample of what can be found in many books on the library shelves. When you prove your lineage to a point where it enters the royal blood lines, history takes over. The documentation has already been accomplished and recorded.

First, however, we must get to the emigrant. In the chapter on John Pillow, his marriage to Ursula Johnson, the daughter of Gideon Johnson, Sr., was discussed. Gideon Johnson, Sr., was first mentioned in the records of Amelia, Prince Edward, and Lunenburg Counties in Virginia. In a deed dated 1756 and another in 1757, he was selling land preparatory to moving to Rowan County, NC, where he bought land, 19 Mar 1765, on the south side of the Dan River - in the part that became Guilford and, later, Rockingham County.

He was born about 1724 in Virginia; died in Rockingham County, NC, in 1807. He was a Quaker (but was disowned in 1760). His will was dated 2 Oct 1807, and proved at the November court in 1807. He married Ursula Allen, daughter of William and Anne Owen Allen. Anne was the daughter of Thomas Owen and Elizabeth Brooks Owen.

Mentioned in Gideon's will were: William b. 27 Dec 1749, d. 8 Feb 1830, married Sarah McClaran, daughter of Daniel McClaran; Peter B., b. 1752, married Nancy Hubbard; Gideon, Jr., b. 1754, d. 1843, married Mary Baker de Graffenreid; Mordecai; Abner, b. 1759, married Nancy Brackett; **Ursula who married John Pillow**; and, Nancy who married James Cotton. His father was a Tory and was driven from North Carolina back to England.

The father of Gideon Johnson, Sr., was Benjamin Johnson, born in Hanover County, Virginia in 1701. He died before 1739. Benjamin married Margaret Massey, born in 1705. The family were Quakers. Benjamin attended, as a representative, the Virginia Yearly Meeting of Quakers in 1718. Their children were: David married Mary Woody; **Gideon, our ancestor**; Micah; Nathan married Judith Woody; Squire, married (1) Agatha Crew and (2) — Williams; Robert married Sarah Ellyson; Jesse married Hannah—; Ashley; Margaret married William Wright; and, there may have been a James.

The father of Benjamin was the emigrant, Edward Johnson. He was born in Scotland. Why did he come to America? He came because he was a Quaker. In Scotland, the Quakers were persecuted because of their religion. A man named George Keith was a famous Quaker missionary in Scotland and later in America. He had been imprisoned many times for his religious acts. He married Elizabeth Johnson, a cousin of Edward, son of Dr. Arthur Johnson. In 1676/7, Keith sailed from Edinburgh for the yearly meeting in England, accompanied by his wife, Elizabeth, her cousin, Edward, and Keith's daughter (who married George Walker). After the meeting, Elizabeth and her relatives were escorted to Virginia by William Edmundson, who had attended the meeting and was returning to Virginia. It is unlikely that anyone will ever find a passenger list with

Edward's name. Ship captains were severely punished for transporting Quakers, so these passengers were not recorded. Edward married Elizabeth Walker, sister of George who married Keith's daughter. Elizabeth was the daughter of Alexander Walker, who was excommunicated for being a Quaker in 1661. He came to New Kent County, Virginia. Alexander descended from John Walker, who lived in Daviot in 1550. His son, John, 1599-1615, was followed by his son, Samuel. That brings us back to Alexander.

The name of Edward Johnson is found in a number of documents. For example, the Blissland Parish Vestry book shows his signature on a list of grievances presented to the King's commissioners who had come to investigate the rebellion in 1677. The Vestry Book of St. Peter's Parish in New Kent County, Virginia, has the records of the baptism of six of the children of Edward and Elizabeth. Thomas was born 5 May 1680 and baptized on the 30th. Elizabeth, born 7 Jul 1682, baptized 6 August; Penelope, born 4 Aug 1684, baptized the 17th; Rachell, born 8 Dec 1686/7, baptized 2 Jan 1677; Rebecka, born 8 Nov 1698, baptized the 11th; and the sixth child was Benjamin, who was born 17 Aug 1701. Edward's other children were Anthony, John, Arthur named for his grandfather, Michael, Marjory and there may have been a William.

At this point, we are ready to cross the Atlantic and look at some of Edward's ancestors in Scotland and England. A little late, but for good reason, we will examine the background of the surname, Johnson. As is true for most names, it has been spelled several ways.

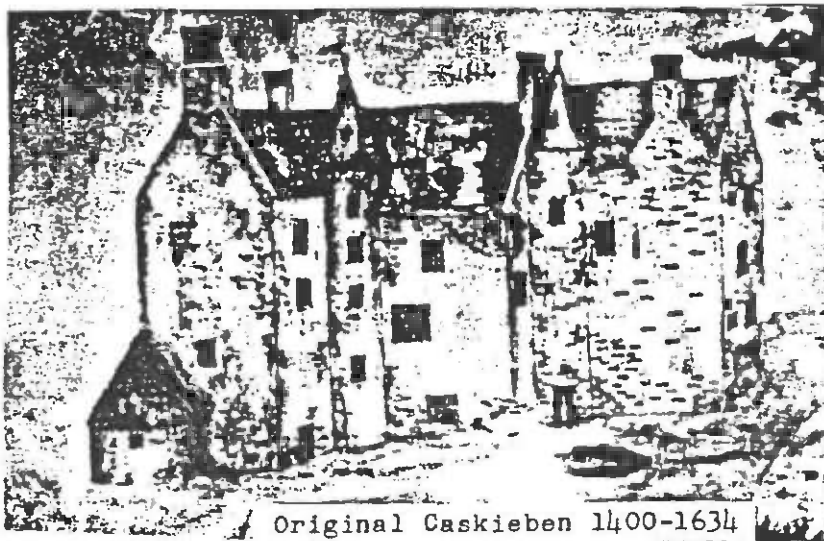
"In Annandale dwelt the Johnstone clan, mainly in the region which stretches from the town of Lockerby to Wamphray. Their original family was Jeanville, the equivalent of the present French name Joinville. The Norman Chronicler names 'Le Seigneur de Jeanville' along with Robert de Bruis, Pierre de Balleul, and other names of Scottish families subsequently eminent, among those who took part in the battle of Hastings. Partly Saxonized into Janvil, it appears in that form on the roll of Battle Abbey. Thence it was angicized into Johnestoun, and appears in that form as witness to a grant to Sir Robert Bruce in 1249. It next became Johnstone, and is to this day indifferently Johnstone or Johnston, according to the scholastic or phonetic taste that predominates with the individual bearer.' In America, it has become Johnson or Johnston. For those who wonder how "Jeanville" becomes "Johnson" - the French word for "John" is "Jean", and for "town" is "ville". The quotation, above, is taken from The Ancestry of William and John Johnson by Dr. Lorand V. Johnson, of Cleveland, Ohio. He and Miss Katherine Reynolds of Houston, Texas, are our benefactors for the information in this chapter. Both have spent many years engaged in research to prove and give us what is included in this chapter.

The reader will soon realize that many books would be needed to tell the whole story. Bits and pieces are to be presented. Accordingly, the first Scot, father of Edward was Dr. Arthur Johnson, an eminent Latin poet and physician. He was born in Caskieben, Aberdeenshire, the ancient home of the Johnson clan. His father was George Johnson and his mother was Christian, the daughter of William Lord Forbes. Dr. Johnson was famous in England and in France, where he lived for over twenty years. His poems were about the great men of his day and were addressed in some cases to politics. Arthur Johnson was buried in Oxford.

The lineage of the Johnsons is well documented. Our direct line is spelled out in the pedigree included in Appendix F. The Annandale clan of Johnsons was famous for their ability to



respond when called upon for help in defence of the border. Their crest was a winged spur, and the motto was *Nunquam non paratus*, latin for "Ready, aye ready"(loosely interpreted!).



Original Caskieben 1400-1634

The Johnsons had a feud with the Maxwells. After one battle, the Maxwells burned the Johnson's castle at Loughwood. In the 1300's, Sir John de Johnston was the leader of the clan of Johnstons of Annandale. He had an older brother, Stiven, who was called The Clerk because he was educated in times when such knowledge was rare. He left Annandale and became the principle secretary of the Earl of Mar, a powerful noble. Stiven married Margaret, the daughter and heiress of Sir Andrew Garioch, knight, of Caskieben. He and Margaret inherited the lands and the Castle of Caskieben. From that time, our Johnsons have been called "The Johnstons of that Ilk and Caskieben". "Of that Ilk" means "by that name".

Starting with Stiven de Johnston, the family is documented in the British museum, generation by generation through 1798. The picture, above is of the ancient fortified Castle of Caskieben, home of the Johnson clan. We claim the direct line of Johnsons back to the 20th generation, as shown in the pedigree on p.377.
~~in this chapter.~~ There, you will see, in the 12th generation, that George Johnson married Christian Forbes. This brings another great family into the story.

The Forbes family is documented, also, back to the eleventh century. Duncan Forbes had a land charter from Alexander III about 1271. The names which appear on the pedigree trace only one of the many lines that can be followed as the names of the great families of Scotland appear: the old earldom of Mar - ancient and powerful - was the family of Sir William Keith, the 1st Earl of Angus - George Douglas, the Stewart royal family, members of the Carrick family, the powerful de Clares, and most prestigious of them all - the Plantagenets. Each offers the opportunity to trace another great line of ancestors. The information is available. The records are there!

* called

September 1987

Gideon Johnson, Sr. was an old man when the Revolution started. His main contribution was his sons and the husbands of his daughters who were soldiers in the Revolution. The old man is given credit for Patriotic Service based upon the document below. It is Certificate No. 168, Salisbury District, North Carolina, dated 30 March 1782 from the Archives of North Carolina. The signature of Gideon Johnson, Sr., is the same as found on his will. The Salisbury District included territory later taken into Rockingham County, NC.

State North Carolina L. 5-2
Salisbury District No. 168 } Agreeable to an Act of the General
Assembly passed in Wakelet. on the 1st July 1781 Gideon
Johnson was allowed four 40 Six Shillings and ten
pence for a public Claim by the lower board
of Quarters Nov. 20 1781
By Order } David Wilson Esq. Clerk
Richard Foster Col. } Hittabaugh

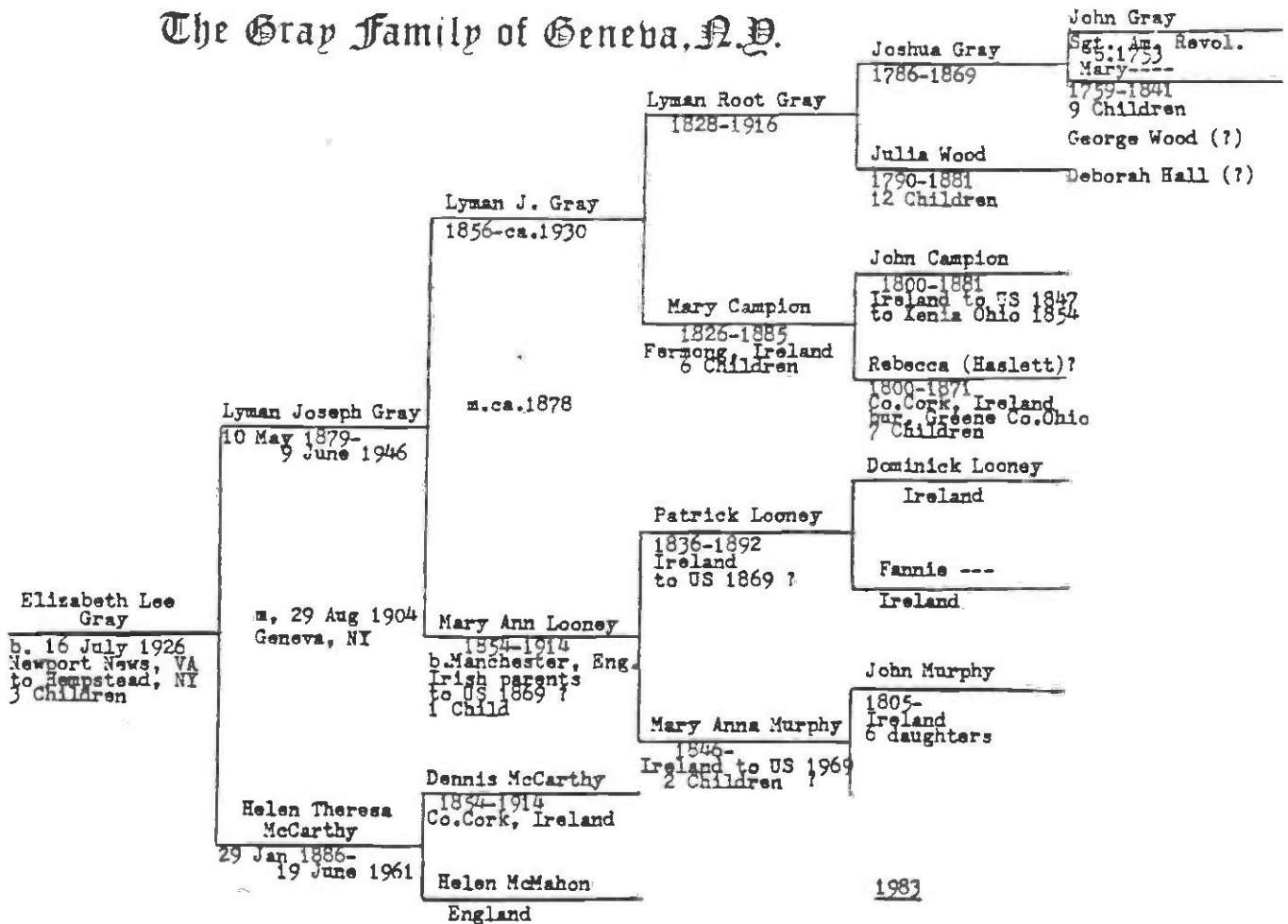
30
Gideon Johnson
Richard Foster
David Wilson
Hittabaugh
1781
1782
1783
1784
1785
1786
1787
1788
1789
1790
1791
1792
1793
1794
1795
1796
1797
1798
1799
1800

PLEASE NOTE: PAGES 9 and 10 have been removed.

GRAY

Part Four

The Gray Family of Geneva, N.Y.



Direct Line of Elizabeth Lee Gray Metts...

Gray

THE GRAY FAMILY

The Origin of the Name

The Gray name is well known throughout America. It is seen in business titles, in telephone books, on television screens, and almost anyone would consider it to be a typical American name. In the history of surnames, people were given their names for various reasons. Some came from their trade, such as Taylor. Others came from locations or parentage. Gray seems to be one of the type chosen for physical characteristics and, probably, it meant "Gray haired". There were 668 Gray "Heads of Household" in the first United States Census which was in 1790. Included were 3,130 persons with the Gray name. Gray can be spelled several different ways. In this case, the name is English. The early members of the family were Presbyterians. Eventually, by choice or persuasion, Grays became Roman Catholics.

In ancient England, the name, spelled "Grey", was a noble name. Greys came to England with the Normans in the tenth century. For example, before the year 1394, a lady was born whose name was Elizabeth Grey (de Ruthyn). She married a Baron named Lord Robert de Poynings. This study can make no claim of kin or descent for our Grays from those of old England, but it is possible. Some future genealogist may find the link! But, noble or not, throughout this story, the Grays will be found to be hardworking, honest, and religious people. Their families were large and well supported. None were wealthy and none were poor.

Sergeant JOHN GRAY

Soldier in the American Revolution

The earliest member of the Gray family identified in this study is John Gray. He was born in England in 1753. As a young man, he sailed to America and landed in Philadelphia. In those times, many people came to America by paying their passage with a work contract called an "indenture". It promised that the person would work for a set period of time. Recognizing that there were many men named John Gray who came to America, and after studying records available, it is considered probable that our John Gray landed at Philadelphia in 1772. (In one Immigration Index, there are 49 John Grays listed between 1620 and 1878.) The 1772 date coincides with another record on a List of Indentures, "Feb 17th, 1772, Gray, John, Indentured to George Campbell and his assigns, Residence Philadelphia, Term 5 yrs, Amount 14 Pounds." Although we cannot claim these statements as facts, probably, they are true. However, it is factual that John Gray was born in England in 1753, that he learned a trade as a cabinet maker, and that he served in the American Revolution as a sergeant from Pennsylvania.

During the Revolution, it was common for men to serve short enlistments with intervals between, during which they returned to their families. The records in the Archives of Pennsylvania show John Gray, from Northumberland County, Pennsylvania, as a private in a list of soldiers. (PA Archives, Third Series, Vol. XXIII, 1897, Northumberland County, pp. 254-8.) Probably, this entry resulted from his first enlistment.

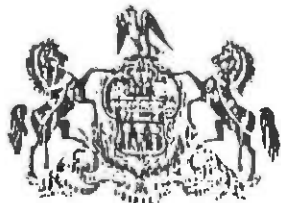
3974.8

Charles P. Addams,
Carlisle, Pa.



Second Series

Reprinted under direction
of the
Secretary of the Commonwealth.



Edited by

JOHN H. LINN AND Wm. H. EGGLE, M.D.

VOL. XI.

166

HARRISBURG:

Clarence M. Beach, State Printer of Pennsylvania.

1900.

Property Of
SAN ANTONIO ZOOLOGICAL & HISTORICAL SOCIETY

314

NEW ELEVENTH PENNSYLVANIA. 69.

Baldwin (or Bohannon), William.
Blaw, John.
Blaylock, Daniel, twenty-eight; five feet six inches; cooper;
Ireland; February 22, 1777.
Bower, John.
Bramble, Nicholas, five feet four inches; farmer.
Whelan, Edward, March 1, 1777; promoted sergeant.

ROLL OF THE SEVENTH COMPANY.

(Age, height, trade, where born, and when enlisted.)

Captain.

Hweeney, Isaac.

Lieutenant.

Davis, Septimus.

Ensign.

Huston, William.

Sergeants.

Wilson, Thomas, discharged April 10, 1780; resided in Orange
county, New York, 1818, aged seventy-four.

Gray, John, twenty-five; five feet five inches; cabinet-maker;
England; September 2, 1778.

Clemens, Patrick, discharged April 10, 1778; resided in High-
dolphin in 1845, aged eighty-two.

Corporals.

Miller, Andrew (or), twenty-five; five feet six inches; shoemaker;
Pennsylvania; March 22, 1777.

Blake, Edward, twenty-five; five feet seven inches; stocking-
weaver; Ireland; March 5, 1777.

Smith, John, thirty-one; five feet eleven inches; brooch-
maker; England; June 28, 1778; disabled by rammer of
cannon at a rejoicing at Sunbury July 4, 1780.

Drummers.

Hunter, Robert, forty; five feet two inches; shoemaker; Ire-
land; February 23, 1777.

Piper.

McKroy, John, twenty; five feet eight inches; farmer; No-
vember 15, 1776.

Soldiers of the Revolution

This alphabetical list, 1906, seems to be, to a large extent, repetition of lists published in the Pennsylvania Archives, Third Series, Volume XXIII, 1897, which are reprinted following this list, to avoid the risk of omissions.

Pennsylvania Archives, Fifth Series, IV

NORTHUMBERLAND COUNTY. (c.)

Acker, Leonard, private.	Badin, Isaac, ensign.
Alkman, John, private.	Bailey, David, private.
Aitken, Jno., lieutenant.	Bailey, James, private.
Aitkinson, Charles, private.	Baird, James, private.
Aitkinson, Cornels., lieutenant.	Barclay, George, private.
Aitkinson, James, private.	Barges, Stephen, private.
Cordt, Chrstr., private.	Barley, George, private.
Gordon, Thomas, private.	Barnhart, Matheas, private.
Gost, Chrstr., private.	Barnhart, Matbias, private.
Gostee, Christian, private.	Barrett, James, private.
Gould, Samuel, private.	Barrett, John, private.
Gowen, Michael, private.	Herman, John, private.
Gray, John, private.	Hern, John, private.
Gray, Wm., quarter master.	Hernot, Joseph, private.
Green, Joseph, private.	Herold, George, private.
Green, Joseph, captain.	Herold, Simon, lieutenant.
Greenlee, William, private.	Herpster, David, private.
Greer, James, private.	Herpster, Jacob, private.
Grove, Michael, private.	Herpster, John, private.
Grove, Vendel, private.	Hersteller, Marten, private.
Grove, Wendie, private.	Hertlurn, Jacob, private.
Grover, Michael, private.	Hesler, John, ensign.
Hacket, Richard, private.	Hesler, John, private.
Haffig, Jacob, private.	Hesler, William, private.
Haisling, Jacob, private.	Hesler, Wm., ensign.
Hamelton, Robert, private.	Hester, Peter, private.
Hamerly, James, private.	Hewett, Thomas, Esq. (No rank stated).
Hamleton, Robert, private.	Hide, Jacob, private.
Hammell, Charles, private.	Hill, Daniel, private.
Hammer, Thomas, private.	Hime, George, private.
Hammon, James, private.	Hime, Peter, private.
Hammon, Thomas, private.	Himrod, Andrew, private.
	Hines, John, private.

Another entry, (PA Archives, Second Series, Vol. XI, p. 69.), reads as follows: "Continental Line—NEW ELEVENTH PENNSYLVANIA—Role of the Seventh Company, Age, Height, trade, where born, and where enlisted. Captain, Sweeny, Isaac—Sergeants—Gray, John, twenty-five; five feet five inches; cabinet maker; England; September 2, 1778." A corporal and the company drummer were shoe makers. Evidently, John served a first enlistment, then, a later one as a sergeant. Although, as will be discussed later, we have found no more military records, there is reason to believe that he continued to serve until the end of the war. Before, or between the enlistments, he married his wife, Mary (Surname unknown), and he started his family.

Someday, someone may find out more about Mary Gray and her life during those trying times. We are fortunate to be able to see a very detailed picture of John's life for one period of his service. The commander of his regiment, The New Eleventh, Lt. Col. Adam Hubbley, wrote a detailed description of their campaign in the form of a diary. The period of his report was 30 June 1779 to 7 October 1779. His final report was made on 15 September 1780, forty-three pages, which is the basis for the short version which follows. (PA Archives, Second Series, Vol. XI, pp. 5-48.) The entire account is recommended for reading and study.

In the 1700's, Pennsylvania was a vast wilderness except for the cities along the coast. There is a Northumberland County today. Its area is small compared to the county then. All of northwest Pennsylvania was Northumberland County. Indians, untamed and often on the warpath were constant problems. Law, as we think of it today, did not exist. Militia forces had to be called out when Indian affairs were completely out of hand. Settlers were scarce. Farms were far apart. From time to time, bands of outlaws roamed the country side making travel very dangerous. Few roads had been built. Indian and animal trails were highways in most cases. Life on the frontier was not easy. Then, the American Colonies declared their independence from England and the Revolutionary War began.

THE AMERICAN REVOLUTION The Campaign from Sunbury to Genesee

John Gray was only 23 years old when the war began. We can guess that he finished his indenture, married, and enlisted. The story that we know starts in Northumberland County, Pennsylvania, near the town of Sunbury. This town is north of Harrisburg on the Susquehanna River. In Sunbury, the New Eleventh Pennsylvania Regiment was given orders to organize an offensive against the Seneca Indians, driving north along the Susquehanna to Newtown (It's Elmira, NY, today.). From there, the route followed the east shore of Seneca Lake, and, after circling the lake, westward to Genesee (Geneseo). The English had caused and were directing the Indian uprising.

By 1779, the Indians were in control of the entire county. The settlers had been driven from their homes during what they called "the great run away". Buffalo Valley, the most populated area near Sunbury suffered greatly. The first entry in Col. Hubbley's diary, written 30 July 1779 at Fort Wyoming, North of Sunbury, reads as follows: "Wyoming is situated on the East side of the East Branch of the Susquehanna, the town consisting of about seventy houses, chiefly log buildings; besides these buildings, there are sundry larger ones which were erected by the Army for the purpose of receiving stores &c., a large bake and smoke houses.

"There is likewise a small fort erected in the town, with a strong abattis around it, and a small redoubt to shelter the inhabitants in case of an alarm. The fort is garrisoned by one hundred men draughted from the western army and put under the command of Col. Zebⁿ Butler. I cannot omit taking notice of the poor inhabitants of the town; two thirds of them are widows and

orphans, who, by the vile hands of the savages have not only deprived some of tender husbands, some of indulgent parents, and others of orphans, who, by the vile hands of the savages have not only their furniture and clothing. In short, they are left totally dependent on the public, and are become absolute objects of charity."

The regiment had 249 men. John's company had 35 men. Most were foot soldiers. They had several artillery pieces plus wagons and flat boats. Generally, the plan was to let the foot soldiers follow the right bank of the river with the flat boats following with the supplies and ammunition.

The trail had to be cut along the river. Streams had to be crossed. Progress was slow - several miles per day. Contact with the enemy was intermittent. The Indians fought a retrograde action. Casualties were inflicted on both sides, but no decisive battles were fought until the assault upon the final objective, Genesee. (Spelled several ways.)

As the forces pushed ahead, they destroyed all the fields, the food supplies, and cabins that they found. The intent was to starve the Indians into submission. This, they accomplished.

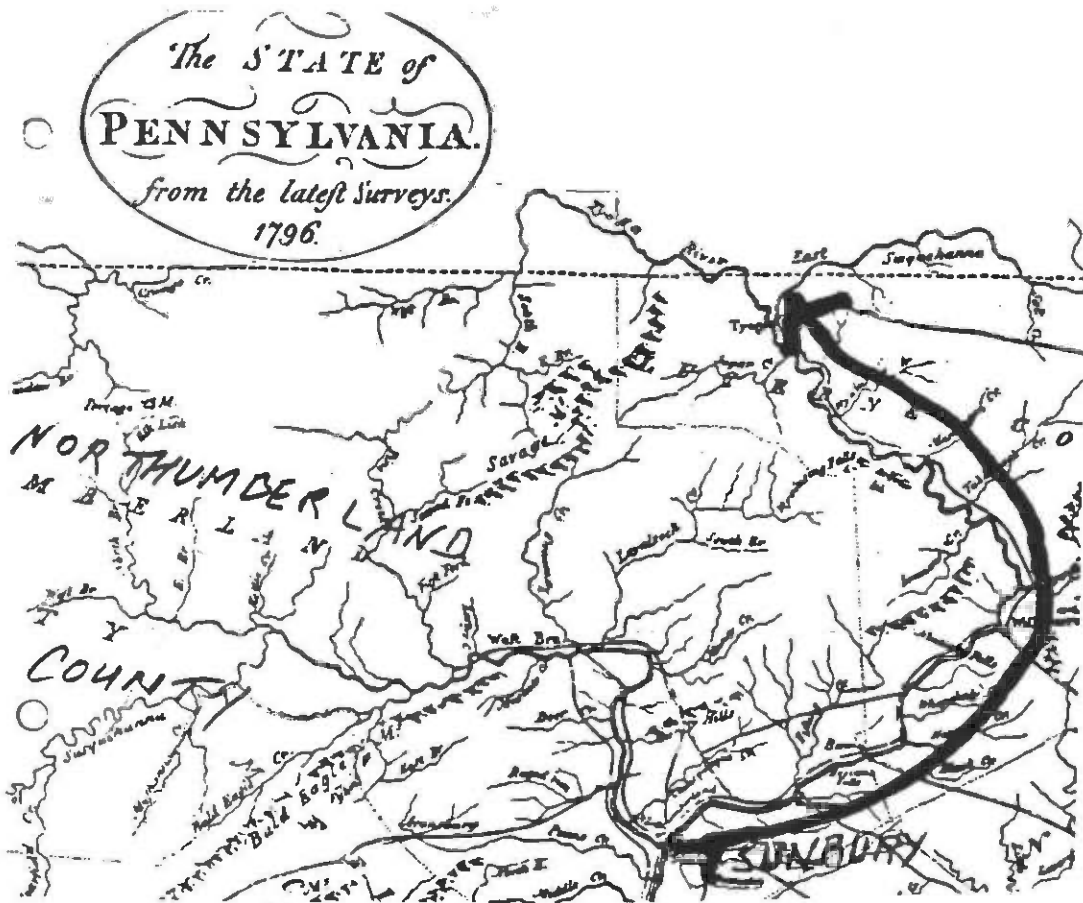
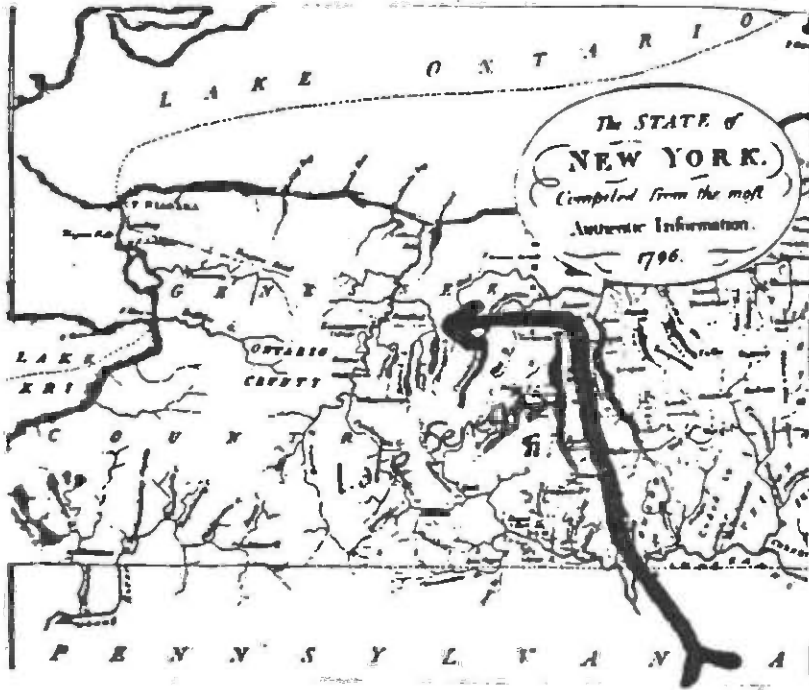
Colonel Hubley, in his interesting and perfect English, gives vivid descriptions of events and the horrors seen during the campaign; a white woman scalped, but alive; soldiers tortured and killed; an old Indian woman abandoned by her tribe to starve. The regiment reached Newtown (Elmira) and had to leave the flat boats. Other regiments joined the force and they moved overland north to the lower end of Seneca Lake. The old maps on the next page show the route of the expedition through Pennsylvania and New York. They continued overland along the right side of Lake Seneca.

Again, the words of Colonel Hubley are used as he describes the area: "We then ascended a rising country, which was in general level, excepting a few defiles which we had to pass, but were by no reason dangerous or difficult. The lands are rich, abounding with fine, large and clear timber, chiefly white oak, hickory, walnut, and ash; abounded on the left for about three miles with excellent marsh or meadow ground, after which precedes the beautiful Seneca Lake, which abounds with all kinds of fish, particularly salmon, trout, rock, that which resembles perch, as also sheep-head."

As the units rounded the head of Lake Seneca and pushed westward, they crossed Flint Creek, which, as would Lake Seneca, play a role in the later life of John Gray. The old maps show the route of the expedition.

The attack on the town of Genesee, now called Geneseo, was costly in casualties, but that objective marked the end of the campaign and the defeat of the Seneca Indian tribe.

The return to Pennsylvania was along the original route of march, but the movement was twice as fast. The trail was made through the wood land. The enemy was not there, and the road lead to home. John Gray had learned many things on this campaign which would be put to good use in the years ahead.



THE MOVE TO NEW YORK STATE

The end of the war was to begin one of the most difficult periods in the history of the United States. The military units melted away with the end of the fighting. Before the war, the English had been responsible for law and order. Now, they were gone. The problem was more acute on the frontier. Add the always present resentment of the returning veteran who has fought the war and returns to very little. He sees those who have stayed behind and he recognizes how they have profited by their failure to serve their country. The result can be extreme social unrest. It is not at all surprising that John Gray decided to uproot his family and move to greener fields. He had seen the beautiful finger lakes of New York State. He knew the route from his service and he had already figured out how he could make the move - the same way he had seen it done by Colonel Hubley.

By this time, he was married to Mary and was the head of his household. The first census of the United States was made in 1790. The records are brief and not too dependable. Census takers were at work before the year 1790. That was when it was finished. Maybe that is why we find the Gray family recorded in Pennsylvania. Also, as we shall see, the move took years.

The 1790 Census show:

HEADS OF FAMILY - PENNSYLVANIA. Northumberland County

Gray, John

2 -Free White males of 16 years upward, including heads of household

3 -Free White males under 16 years

3 -Free White females, including heads of families

0 -All other free persons

0 -Slaves

It means that we have John and his oldest son, William, who will help him drive the wagon to New York. There are three little boys. One is Joseph, another is Joshua Gray, 3 years old. There are 3 girls. One is Olive, one is Polly, and the name of the other girl is Mary Gray, John's wife. The name of the third boy is not known.

The family started the big move in 1789. From time to time, they would have to stop and settle down until the next year or until they could collect enough supplies to go on. Rivers would freeze. Lean-tos or other shelters were built and crops were planted. These delays explain why moves sometimes took years.

John Gray's plan, very similar to his war campaign, was that he and the older boy would travel overland driving the team pulling a wagon and three head of cattle. The problems mentioned earlier as to Indians, robbers, and poor roads apply here. The river would freeze for long periods. Snow and ice would block the trail. Mary and the small children were to travel by flat boat to Newtown, now called Elmira, New York. The family would assemble there. The flat boat was owned by a Mr. Miller who was paid to take them up the river. The trip would be upstream and slow along the Susquehanna and Tyoga rivers. Boats had to be pulled by horses or mules. Sometimes the passengers had to use long poles to push. The advantage of this means was that household items could be taken along. This would include food and seed to plant crops when the time came.

At this point, it is appropriate to explain how the details used in this story were found and how the conclusions are supported. Below is a copy of the obituary of John's son, Joseph.

Obituary—Joseph Gray.

Died, in Seneca, October 21, JOSEPH GRAY, aged 74 years, four months and eighteen days.

This moment of love and esteem is respectfully dedicated to his numerous friends and family connections, by one who received from his lips the following condensed history of his life.

To the question, "Would you, if it were possible, live your life over again; a complete duplicate of your present one?" answered, with animation beaming from his countenance, "No! I prefer to go as!" This probably would be the answer of a majority of unasked who have lived their three-score years and ten.

Joseph Gray was born in the state of Pennsylvania, Northumberland county, in the year 1785—one of a family of nine children. Two survive him, Polly, widow of Lucas Stanley, aged 84, and Olive, nearly 83, living now in Cleveland, Ohio.

Mr. Gray's father was in the revolutionary war from its commencement to its close—and of Morgan's celebrated raiding; and truly it may be said of the deceased that he inherited a love of country from him who fought for its independence. Soon after the close of the war John Gray, his father, moved from his native place with his family to the state of New York, then (1789) a wilderness. The subject of my sketch was then four years old. His father and one son came by land, driving a team and three head of cattle; his mother and the rest of the family came by water in a flat boat, owned by a Mr. Miller, who was hired to carry them to New Town, now Elmira. Arrived at Cashong point July 1795, and finally located, two miles south of Geneva, west side of Seneca Lake. In 1805, the subject of my sketch moved or went to live in Geneva, then containing two dwelling houses, two lots—one the Mansion House kept by Mr. Crow, and a coffee house kept by Mr. Harmer on the corner of Canal and Water streets. One alone only, kept by S. Clark. (This was at the time his father first came in this state). Was counting fourteen years and collector two years. Married in 1810 daughter of Peter Mackiner. After getting married he left home and located near the Hutchinson farm, then owned by Doctor Woodworth; lived there two years. Lived in Benton three years—moved from there to Flint Creek. His wife died in 1826, leaving three children who survive him, Mary, the widow of B. Putnam, being the youngest, and at the time of her mother's death about three years of age; Jane, about seven, and John, nine.

His father sold the farm mentioned and located on the farm now owned by J. Wood at Flint Creek, where Joseph found himself after leaving Benton. After the death of his wife he took up house-keeping, and after making suitable provision for his children moved to Geneva. In 1811 he went to Canada on business; was there at work when the war of 1812 broke out, taken prisoner by the authorities, refused to take the oath of allegiance, gave bail for 2,000 pounds sterling, and was set at liberty. Finally found himself at St. Catharines. Saw Fort George taken by General Dearborn; was taken prisoner by the American forces, and in June, 1817, landed in the States.

ANALYSIS OF THE OBITUARY OF JOSEPH GRAY

This obituary was published in the Geneva Gazette, Geneva, New York, 31 October 1879
Joseph Gray was the brother of Joshua Gray.

-This statement means that John Gray, the patriot, was living in Northumberland County, Pennsylvania in 1785. Other documents will prove his military service in the New Eleventh Pennsylvania Regiment which initiated the action against the Indians at Sunbury, the county seat of Northumberland County.

John Gray seems to have served several enlistments of varying lengths during the war. He was not one of the 96 Virginians that marched out of Winchester with the famous Daniel Morgan. But Morgan picked up units as he marched north to Quebec, where he was captured. Later, when freed, he commanded in other battles. As the war went on, Gen. Morgan commanded over 30,000 men. All of them would consider themselves to be Morgan's men.

The movement of John Gray's family up the Susquehanna from Sunbury to Elmira and on to Lake Seneca, then to Geneva was conducted exactly like the military action where the 11th PA Regt. marched along the river bank as the barges followed on the river with supplies. The route and destination is the same.

This document was obtained by Mrs. Eleanor Clise, the Archivist of Geneva, New York.

Joseph Gray named two of his three children John and Mary. John Gray named a daughter Polly- the same name as Mary.

Colonel Hubley's diary described many of the places mentioned; Flint Creek, New Town, Cashong point, Northumberland County, and Tyoga Lake.

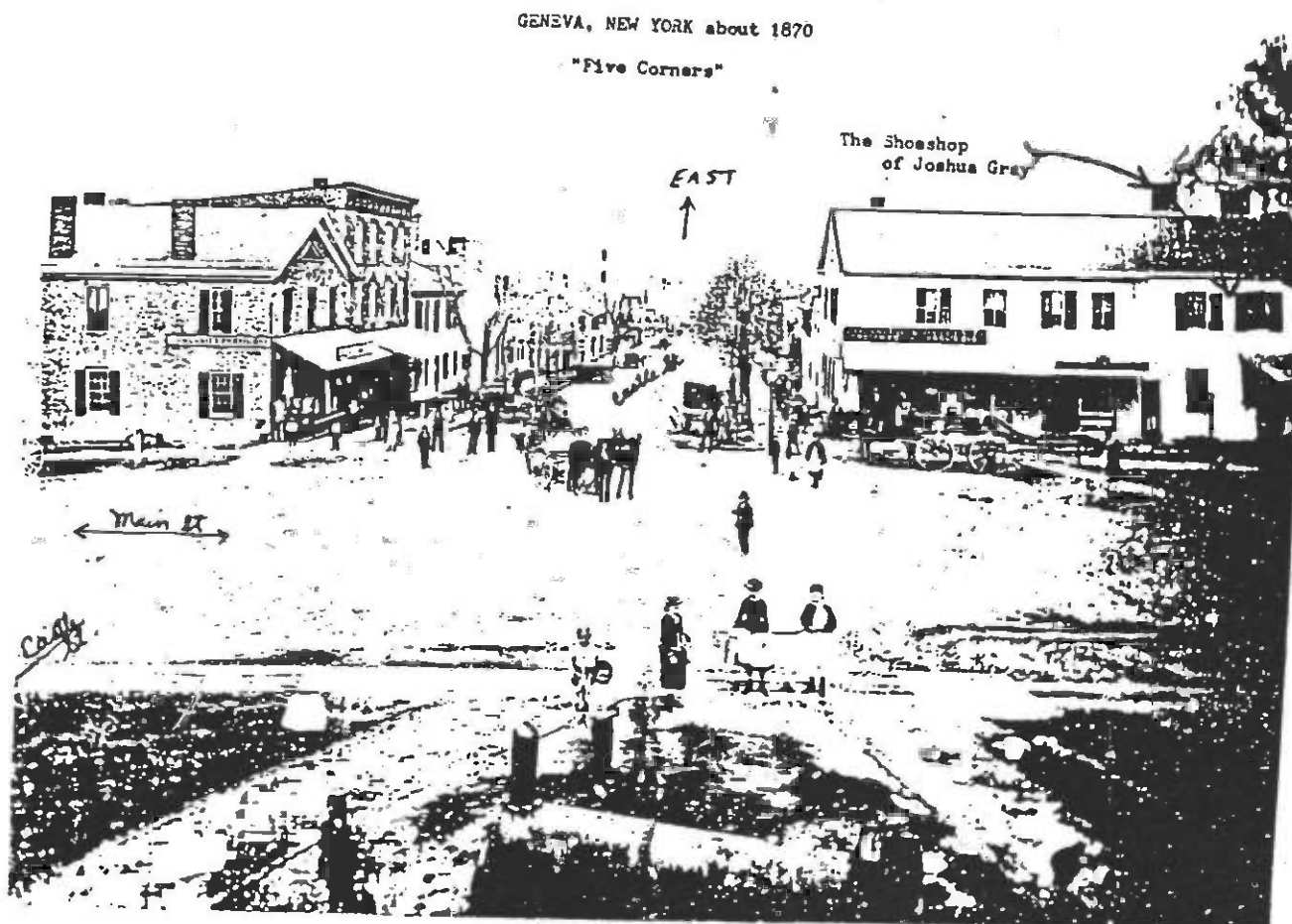
Having read Joseph's obituary, we can continue the story. The family made the trip and finally settled five miles south of Geneva. Little Joshua Gray was three years old when they started in Sunbury. Now, He was nine. The year is 1795. The month is July and they live near Seneca Lake in the small town of Seneca, about five miles from Geneva, New York. The family is documented in the 1800 U.S. Census.

p. 500	Gray, John	2 Males under 10	2 Females under 10
		2 Males 10-16	2 Females 10-16
		1 Male 16-26	1 Female 26-45
		? Male 45 and up	

The question mark must mean that the original handwritten figures could not be read. This has to be a 1 and refer to the head of household - John Gray. At this time, the Gendex Corp. Index shows only three Gray families in the entire Geneva area and the other two, Benjamin and Simeon can in no way be related.

The male over 45 is John Gray. The 1 Male 16-26 is William, the older son who helped drive the wagon north with his father. During the next ten years we will see him become grown, marry and set up his own household in Seneca. The two males 10-16 are the brothers Joseph and Joshua. We will see both of them mature, move to Geneva, and father many Grays who will help populate the thriving little city. Also, they will make the shoes that protect their neighbor's feet from the cold, cold winters.

Geneva, New York at the Turn of the Century

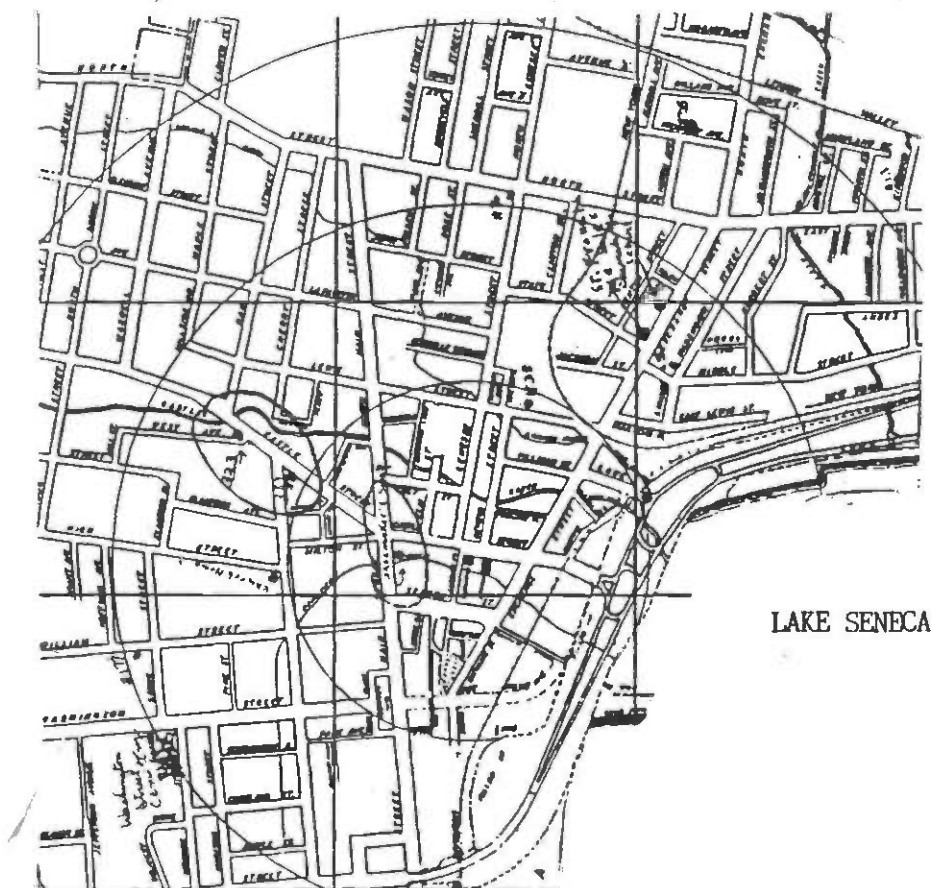


The beautiful little town of Geneva had only 325 people in 1805. Even today, the area is not heavily populated. The powerful hand of nature fashioned this lovely spot so many years ago that a couple of hundred years are like one second in the life of a man. In the prehistoric ages, the great glacier came sliding down from the north and gouged long, deep crevasses into the earth. These were to become the picturesque Finger Lakes of upper New York State. One of these lakes is Lake Seneca. The great glacier came to rest and over many years, gradually melted, letting the soil it had collected during the great slide settle to form the odd shaped little hills called drumlins. The new soil was rich. Heavy forests grew to provide ample building materials. Naturally, Geneva prospered. There was a steady influx of settlers after 1790.

The brothers, Joseph and Joshua Gray, the second generation of Grays, moved to Geneva after 1805, but before the census of 1820. The time was probably closer to 1805 than 1820 because the 1820 census shows clearly that he was firmly established in Geneva. Joshua is 34 years old. He is a shoemaker with 3 males "engaged in manufacturing or trade". He lives in house #49 and he has two boys under 10 and two over 10. Two girls are under 10 and one is over 10. His wife, Julia Wood Gray, is 30.

The reference to census reports is tedious, but these reports are basic to genealogical study and give the best trail available in searching out the old ancestors. Geneva had very good city records in the form of directories. Houses were described with numbers.

GENEVA, NEW YORK



Many families seem to have one person or one pair of people who are more remarkable than all the others. In the Gray family, Joshua and Julia win the brass ring. These two started the shoemaking industry that was to be the family enterprise for generations. While they worked hard making shoes, somehow they found time to produce twelve children. At this time the family were Presbyterians. Joshua joined the First Presbyterian Church in Geneva on 3 October 1819. He was 33 years old. Julia Wood Gray came from Camden, NY, (?) and joined the same church on 4 November 1821. Probably, she was the daughter of George Wood and his wife, Deborah Hall Wood, who joined the same church. The Gray children were of the type that parents could be very proud. Even though this record is intended to adhere to the direct line, it is proper to take a tangent and describe some of these children.

Dr. Calvin Seylor Gray was a medical doctor, born in 1815. Lucy A. Gray, 1816-1901, never married. She was a school teacher and was well known and highly respected during her long life of service to the community. It is very interesting that her kind nature provided the first clue to the unravelling of this story. The influence of this lady upon her nephew, a lonely little boy with no father, left such an impression upon the child that the memory of his Aunt Lucy withstood the erosion of time to be the only real clue to the Gray bloodline in Geneva.

Another son, W.H. Gray moved to Illinois. Two other sons died as infants. Then, a girl, Julia, married a Mr. Hitchcock in Lyons, NY. The seventh child was Lyman Root Gray, the third generation, and another Gray who would become a shoemaker in Geneva. He was baptized in the Presbyterian Church on 30 October 1828. We will discuss this Lyman later in the story. Child eight married a Mr. Randall of Lyons, NY. Charles P. Gray served in the 126th Regiment during the Civil War. He moved to Florida after the war. Henry was another child that died as a baby. Then, little George was born and died at the age of two. One daughter, Caroline, married Edmund F. Barnes and moved to Colorado.

The tragedy of infant deaths was typical of the times. Little children of rich and poor alike were taken by ailments, such as worms or typhoid fever, which, today are controlled by modern medicine.

Every ten years, the census takers counted the Grays again. The census of 1830 came and went. On page 83, it showed Joshua and Julia in Geneva with 6 sons and 3 daughters of various ages. In 1840, 4 sons and 4 daughters are at home with two people "engaged in manufacturing or trade". Dr. Calvin has become head of his own home. It is noted that, although he was a doctor, he was still "engaged in manufacturing or trade" in the census. That means he was still making shoes.

The year 1850 was the time that the method of taking the census was improved greatly. For the first time, the names of all persons were listed with their occupation, age and origin. If all this information could be depended upon to be true and accurate, the task of the ancestor searcher would be simplified. But, the census taker wrote down what he was told by whomever answered the door. Some answers were not correct. Part of the problem was that some of the people could neither read nor write. This means that all facts available to them were in their memory. Even though they may have tried to give correct information, it would be subject to error.

The practical answer to the problem of accuracy is to compare data from various sources and correct obvious errors. Church records, tombstones, newspaper articles, death certificates, birth certificates, marriage records, and other government records have been used (and copies are on file) in the preparation of this report. This statement is made to avoid the impression that census data only was used to make the conclusions basic to the Gray genealogy. Now, we can return to the story of the Gray family. The Grays of

the eighteen hundreds seem to have been involved in two major occupations. One was making shoes. The other was having children. They were successful at both. Whichever came first is unknown, but this report will start with the shoes.

The Gray Shoemaking Enterprises

John Gray may have developed an interest in shoemaking from his fellow soldiers during the war. He could have passed the interest on to his son Joshua. At any rate, Joshua Gray was mentioned in the GENEVA GAZETTE, a weekly newspaper, on 7 July 1824 with the statement that "J. Gray sells groceries, liquors, and leathers in store formerly occupied by E.M. Bayley."

By they year 1857, Joshua owned the shoeshop on Main Street. This is the store shown in the old picture of Geneva. The location was, and still is, the center of the city. At the time, he lived on Castle Street, west of Main. His son, Lyman R. Gray, the third generation, was living in Joshua's home and working as a shoemaker in the shop. Joshua's son, Calvin, the doctor, had his office established at 90 Main Street, not very far from the shoeshop. Joshua's son, Charles P. Gray, was working for a Mr. McConnell as a shoemaker. Reference should be made to the street map on the previous page. Exact locations are given for any descendent with enough interest to go to Geneva and visit the surroundings frequented by their ancestors. Many of the old houses still stand.

Business must have been thriving for the five years after 1862, because Charles opened his own shoeshop in his home. Joshua and Lyman R. became partners. They bought a farm of 106 acres. The shoeshop continued to operate under the name of Joshua Gray and Son. Then, Joshua died at the advanced age of 82. He had come to Geneva with very little and left it a prospering business and a large family. (It is interesting to note that business went on as usual while the nation was in the crisis times of the War Between the States.)

After Joshua's death, his wife, Julia, continued to live at 90 Main Street. Lyman R. Gray moved the shoemaking business to his home on Catherine Street. A three story brick building was built on the corner where the grocery store and the shoeshop had been.

As the years went by, the shoeshop was moved again to Main Street, but the last shoemaker was getting old. He was 72 at the turn of the century. By 1915, Lyman R. Gray had retired to his home at 283 Castle Street. In less than a year, the following announcement was made:

LYMAN R. GRAY

Lyman R. Gray, aged 88 years, died this morning at 5 o'clock at the home of Edward Williams, Pulteney Street, after an illness of a few days. He is survived by two sons, Thomas Gray of this city and Lyman Gray, Jr. of Binghamton. Mr. Gray was a member of Swift Post No. 94 GAR. Announcement of funeral will be made later. Mr. Gray was almost a lifelong resident of this city and for many years conducted a shoe repair shop on Main Street next to the Gasper Block. A general breakdown from old age was the cause of death.

Geneva Daily Times

Tuesday, Feb. 22, 1916

(Note: The GAR reference, probably, is an error, because there seems to be no record of his Civil War service. Also, the fact that Lyman, Jr. was there and the date are important to events to be discussed later in this report.)

An era had ended. The old shoemaker was the first Lyman Gray of a long list of successive generations of Lyman Grays that is still continuing today.

The Gray Family in the Eighteen Hundreds

The story of Joshua has already been told. Also, we have discussed much of Lyman R. Gray's life - the part that he spent at work. At home, he married **Mary Campion**. She was born in Ireland and so were her parents who lived in Geneva. They were John Campion (1800-1881) and Rebecca Haslett (1800-1871). Lyman R. and Mary had six children: Caroline R., Thomas, John H., George W., Mary H., and **Lyman J. Gray**, the fourth generation. This Lyman must have decided that he would not continue the shoe business. He married **Mary Ann Looney**.

Mary Ann was born in England of Irish parents, Patrick Looney, (1836-1892), and Mary Anne Murphy, b. 1846. In Ireland, the parents of Patrick Looney were Dominick and Fanny Looney. Mary Anne Murphy's father was John Murphy.

Lyman J. Gray and Mary Ann Looney Gray had one child, **Lyman Joseph Gray**, the fifth generation.

For unknown reasons their marriage ended in a short time. Lyman J. left and moved to the city of Binghamton, NY, where he was single for many years - until Mary Ann died in 1914, when he married again in 1915.

This is a very sad chapter in the history of the family. Lyman R. and Mary Ann had grown up as near neighbors. The story could become the theme of one of the modern TV programs, "The young shoemaker and his nextdoor teenage sweetheart". There were only a few houses on Catherine Street in the 1870's.

After the father left home, young Lyman Joseph and his mother made the short move to the Looney household. They were Mary Ann's family.



The Looneys and the Murphys had come from Ireland in 1869. Now, it is twelve years later. These were people who worked hard - all of them. They were staunch Roman Catholics. They raised Lyman Joseph Gray in that faith. He had very little use for Protestants and it is understandable with the lesson given him by his father. There are some strange circumstances, however. His grandfather Gray lived on the same street where he grew to manhood. Were they friends? We don't know. One thing we are certain of is that Lyman Joseph had one good friend, his father's Aunt Lucy Gray, the spinster school teacher.



On August 30, 1904, an article in the Geneva Gazette announced: "Lyman Gray of West Avenue and Miss Helen McCarthy of Exchange Street were married early yesterday morning and started on a short tour east". Helen McCarthy was the daughter of Dennis McCarthy, born in County Cork, Ireland, and Helen McMahon, born in England.

The bride and groom lived at 323 Castle Street. He went to work to support his new wife. First, he was a commercial traveller. He continued this occupation until 1915, when he went to the Geneva Boiler Works.

The couple moved several times during the period. The reason may be that they needed more room every year. John Edward was born 11 April 1905. Mary Elizabeth was born 16 April 1907 - they moved to 88 Wadsworth.



Elizabeth Lee Gray, called Betty, lived in Newport News, Virginia and Hempstead, New York, until she was married to the man who wrote this family history.



Lyman, Jr. was born 29 October 1909 - they moved to 28 Prospect Avenue. Helen Honora was born 18 January 1912 - but they did not move until 1915. Then, they moved to 38 Lewis Street. In 1917, they lived at 13 Kirkwood. At this time, Lyman Joseph Gray was 37 years old. Years would pass before the last two children were to be born.

Then, there was Gloria Augusta Gray, born on 12 October 1922. Her mother left her home in Newport News, Virginia, and went back to Geneva so Dr. Nieder could deliver the child. He had delivered all the others.

The last little baby was born on 16 July 1926 at home in Newport News, Virginia. She was given the name, Elizabeth Lee Gray. That event brings this family history to an end.

DEATH RECORDS FROM CITY HALL, GENEVA, NY.

(copied from microfilm in Geneva, NY)

Mary Ann Gray of 38 Lewis St., a widow, died of pneumonia April 17, 1914. No age given. Born in England to Patrick Looney and Mary Anna Murphy; both born in Ireland. Information given by Lyman J. Gray.

Lyman R. Gray, a widower, died Feb. 22, 1916. Age 87-7-24. Born June 28, 1828. Father: Joshua Gray, born U.S.A.; mother's name not known. Information given by Thomas Gray.

WASHINGTON STREET CEMETERY RECORD - Geneva, New York

Gray: Joshua, died March 17, 1869, aged 82 yr.
Julia Wood, wife of Joshua Gray, died Nov. 4, 1881, aged 91 yr.
Lyman R., born July 14, 1828, died Feb. 22, 1916.
Mary, wife of Lyman R., born August 21, 1826, died August 29, 1885.

(Note: According to the record, Joseph Gray purchased the south half of Lot 65, where these Grays are buried. The other half belonged to a different family.)

RECORDS OF THE FIRST PRESBYTERIAN CHURCH OF GENEVA, ONTARIO COUNTY, NY
Baptisms, Marriages, Deaths - Copied by permission by Harriet M. Wiles.

(Copy from microfilm of LDS Roll 1939 # FO 2622 845023.)

DEATHS:

Joshua Gray died 17 March 1869.

BAPTISMS:

2 June 1822: William, Ch of Joshua and Julia Gray.
30 Oct 1826: Lyman Root, Ch of Joshua Gray.

NEWSPAPER ITEMS FROM THE WEEKLY GENEVA GAZETTE (GG) OF THE 19TH CENTURY

Death 3/17/69,	Aged 82	GRAY, JOSHUA	GG 1869, #13.
Death 11/13/81,	Aged 90 years,	GRAY, MRS. JULIA	Widow of Joshua Gray GG 1881, #44.
Death 9/29/41, in Brantford, Canada;	aged 82. A resident of the town of Seneca for many years.	GRAY, MRS. MARY	GCR 10/19/1841, #44.

SOME GRAY FACES



This is John Edward Gray with his dog in Geneva. The houses are typical of those discussed in the story. The little boy is brother Lyman

This is John Edward Gray as a cadet at Virginia Polytechnic Institute. When this picture was taken in 1928, Elizabeth Lee Gray Metts was 2 years old.



To the left is John at another period in his life. He has a son named John Edward Gray, Jr.

MORE GRAY FACES

Helen Theresa McCarthy Gray



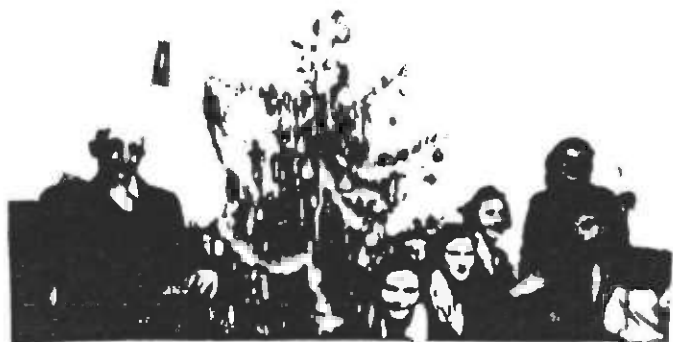
Gloria and Betty



Betty Metts



Jeffrey Scott Gray



Lyman Joseph Gray, his girls & Arthur

DESCENDANTS OF THE GRAY FAMILY

Lyman Joseph Gray (1879-1946) m. 1904 Helen Theresa McCarthy (1882-1961).

- I. John Edward Gray (1905-1978) m. 1932 Elsie Virginia Gunther (1906-).
 - A. Mary Lee Gray (1933-).
 - B. Helen Virginia Gray (1935-) m. 1976 Walter R. Ketring (1930-1983)
 - C. Jacqueline Gray (1935-) m. 1966 William Gomez (1939-).
 - 1. Steven Moran Gomez (1969-).
 - 2. Michael Alden Gomez (1969-).
 - D. Janice Gray (1942-).
 - E. John Edward Gray, Jr. (1946-) m. 1969 Mary Catherine Martin (1947-)
 - 1. Virginia Kate Gray (1972-).
 - 2. Jeffrey Scott Gray (1982-).

- II. Mary Elizabeth Gray (1907-1979) m. 1939 Stafford J. Connor (1896-1978).
 - A. Michael Jude Connor (1945-) m. Margaret Schultz (1946-).
 - 1. James Michael Connor (1967-).

- III. Helen Honora Gray (1912-1983). m. 1937 Arthur Leopold Schwarz (1909-).
 - A. Helen Theresa Schwarz (1945-) m. 1966 Roger Francis Frazier (1943-)
 - 1. Roger Francis Frazier, Jr. (1966-).
 - 2. Stephen Boyd Frazier (1969-).
 - 3. Todd Allen Frazier (1973-).
 - B. Susan Johann Schwarz (1947-) m. Roger Dale Anderson (1945-).
 - 1. Phillip Arthur Anderson (1976-).

- IV. Lyman Joseph Gray, Jr. (1909-1976) m. 1931 Drucilla Hussey (1912-).
 - A. Mary Maxwell Gray (1932-) m. 1950 Jodie Atkins (1931-).
 - 1. Jodie Lee Atkins, III (1951-) m. 1972 Dona Parks (-).
 - 2. Mary Suzanne Atkins (1955-) m. 1975 Harry Michael Cash (-)
 - a. Jason Michael Cash (1977-).
 - 3. Gregory Gray Atkins (1960-).
 - B. Lyman Joseph Gray, III (1938-) m. 1960 Katherine Clark (1940-),
 - 1. Joseph Brad Gray (1961-).
 - 2. Mark Alan Gray (1964-).

- V. Gloria Augusta Gray (1922-) m. 1950 William B. Devine (1908-1977).
 - A. William Michael Devine (1952-).

- VI. Elizabeth Lee Gray (1926-) m. 1944 Albert Caswell Metts, Jr. (1921-).
 - A. Virginia Lee Metts (1946-) m. 1968 David Wendell Kennamer, II (1942-).
 - 1. Charles Albert Kennamer (1973-).
 - 2. John David Kennamer (1979-).
 - B. Albert Caswell Metts, III (1951-) m. 1979 Patricia Coy Jurgens (1952-)
 - 1. Michael Albert Metts (1981-).
 - 2. Stephen James Metts (1984-).
 - C. William Roger Metts (1952-) m. Rosemary Lindsey (1952-).

APPENDICES

The first edition of this book was privately published in 1984. The manuscript was prepared on a typewriter. By that time, considerable research had been accomplished over a period of about ten years. Much of that accomplishment was made by writing to the family members and other genealogists. Naturally, this kind of interaction lead to interest by those involved and their contributions to information collected was great. Finally, when the first edition was distributed, another surge of new material and corrections began to arrive. This ancient computer went into service (an Apple IIe with a Brother Daisey Wheel printer). It is still being used because all the files are on "Floppy Disks". Three improved versions of this book were completed. When errors were found, they were corrected. Pagination was not changed, so new material was added by extending page numbers (p. 104 became 104-a through 104-z) Eventually, large additions caused a loss of continuity. Therefore, here, these additions are placed in appendices at the end of the book. They are considered too interesting to be lost.

This is an appropriate time to repeat that this book is a collection of some original research and writing, but most of the information is compiled from many sources. In genealogy, proof is a fragile determination.

The appendices are:

Page

- APPENDIX A - American Wartime Service
- APPENDIX B - Obituary Pamphlet, "Death of General Hodges".
- APPENDIX C - Elizabeth Hodges - Mother of John Hodges.
- APPENDIX D - Frances Anderson Hodges of Abbeville.
- APPENDIX E - A Visit to Rockingham County, NC, 1988
- APPENDIX F - Pedigrees to Medieval Ancestors in Europe.
- APPENDIX G - Scales Mail - Letters from Martha Jane Scales.
- APPENDIX H - Willie Loves Lizzie
Love Letters from William Reese Pillow.

APPENDIX A

AMERICAN WARTIME SERVICE

COLONIAL WARS.

Lineage and service certified by the General Society of Colonial Wars.

1. Joseph Bridger, Colonel, Paymaster General-Bacon's Rebellion, p.174.
2. Thomas Godwin, Jr., Colonel, Indian Wars, p. 170.
3. Reuben Long, Lt., French and Indian War, p. 69.
4. Robert Pitt, Lt. Colonel, Indian Wars, p. 186.

Lineage and service documented by societies indicated.

5. Thomas Godwin, Sr., Col., Indian Wars. (Society of Colonial Wars), p. 69.
6. Francis Mason, Lt., Virginia. (Sons and Daughters of the Pilgrims), p.210.
7. Lemuel Mason, Colonel, Lower Norfolk Militia. (same as #6), p. 210.
8. William Lea (Leigh), Colonel, King and Queen County Militia. (SAC), p.196.

AMERICAN REVOLUTION Page numbers for proof.

Lineage and service certified by the National Society of the Sons of the American Revolution. (Asterisk, * , means that the person is listed in the NSDAR Patriot Index.)

1. *Valentine Allen, NC Militia. p. 274-A.
2. *William Bethell, Captain, NC Militia, Moore's Creek, Yadkin Valley. p.281
3. *Joseph Bonner, 6th Virginia Battalion. p. 96.
4. *George Cowan, Captain, Rowan County, NC, Militia. p. 164.
5. *Captain John Paul Froman, Sr. p. 104-P
6. *John Hodges, Old Ninety-six and Chaota Town, SC, p. 74.
7. *Andrew Kaigler, Jr., Lieutenant in Goodwin's SC Regiment, p. 299.
8. *Reuben Long, Lt., 3rd Virginia Regiment. p. 70.
9. *Henry Mitts, SC Militia after the fall of Charleston. p. 15.
- 10.*James Nash, Virginia Artillery. p. 56.
- 11.*John Nash, Virginia 9th and 13th Regiments. p. 57.
- 12.*John Froman Overall, p. 104-C.
- 13.*John Oliver, North Carolina 10th Regt.p. 134.
14. John Pillow, Virginia 13th Regiment. p. 238.
15. Hugh Porter, SC Militia, Rossman's Company. p. 280-B.
- 16.*Reese Porter, NC 2nd Regiment at Eutaw Springs. p. 280-A
- 17.*Nathaniel Scales, Vernon's Company, NC Militia at Cross Creek. p. 262.
- 18.*Richard Stubblefield, Ensign, NC Militia, Guilford County. p. 286.
- 19.*Jesse Thomas, Virginia Line. p. 245.
- 20.*Job Thomas, Virginia Line. p. 245.

Lineage and service certified by the National Society, Daughters of the American Revolution, only. (Not by NSSAR)

- 21.*John Gray, New Eleventh Pennsylvania Regiment. p. 315.

Both NSDAR and NSSAR recognize so-called "Patriotic Service". These names have been proved to and approved by the NSSAR.

- | | |
|----------------------------------|----------------------------------|
| 22.*William Allin p. 274-c | 31. Walter Anderson p. 80. |
| 23. Agnes Cock p. 104-1 | 32. James Lea p. 198. |
| 24. George Cock, Sr. p. 104-1 | 33.*Michael Suber p. 49 |
| 25. John W. Cock p. 104-1 | 34 *Rachel Suber p. 49. |
| 26.*Joseph Henderson p. 190-A | 35.*Ward Taylor p. 84. |
| 27.*Gideon Johnson, Sr. p. 310-1 | 36.*Joseph Twedy p. 104-2 |
| 28.*Andrew Kaigler, Sr. p. 298-2 | 37.*Samuel Watt p. 284-A |
| 29.*Ephraim Leath p. 104-S | 38. John Henderson p. 190-c |
| 30.*James McKay, Sr. p. 104-S | 39. James Nickells p. 284. |
| | 40. Hugh Bradshaw p. 279 |
| | 41. Joshua Callaway, Sr. p. 149. |
| | 42. George Suber p. 47. |

WAR OF 1812

Lineage and service certified by General Society of the War of 1812.

1. Elias Taylor, SC Militia. p. 87.
Lineage and service documented, but not submitted for certification.
2. Reuben Nash, Lt. Col., SC Militia. p. 60.
3. Wiley Oliver, Creek Indian War. p. 125.
4. Abner Pillow, Major, TN Militia. p. 245.
5. Willis Shivers, Captain, GA Militia. p. 156.
6. Colonel Abraham Overall. p. 104-G

The WAR BETWEEN THE STATES - CONFEDERATE SERVICE

Lineage and service is documented, but these names have not been submitted to any society for certification.

1. Michael Albert Metts, Captain, Cavalry. p. 23.
2. William Oliver, Captain, 31st LA Regiment. p. 114.
3. William Reese Pillow, Corporal, TN. Wounded in Action. p. 249.
4. William Nathaniel Scales, Lt., MS. Died for the Confederacy. p. 270-D
5. Dr. Ward J. Taylor, Co. F, 19th Texas Infantry. p. 28.

WORLD WAR I

1. Albert Caswell Metts, Sr., Major, Battery C, 14th Field Artillery. p. 35.

WORLD WAR II

1. Albert Caswell Metts, Jr., Captain, Infantry, Europe. p. 37.

KOREAN WAR

1. Albert Caswell Metts, Jr., Major, 23d Infantry. p. 37.

VIETNAM

1. Albert Caswell Metts, Jr., Colonel, Infantry, USARV. p. 37

Albert Caswell Metts, Jr. is a member of the following societies:

1. National Society Sons of the American Revolution - #118709 TX 4699.
2. Somerset Chapter, Magna Charta Barons - Emigrant ancestor, Edward Digges.
3. The Plantagenet Society - Emigrant Ancestor - Edward Johnson.
4. The Military Order of the Crusades - Hugh Magnus, A Leader of 1st Crusade.
5. Society of Colonial Wars - Ancestors, Joseph Bridger & Robert Pitt.
6. National Society Sons of the American Colonists - Col. William Lea.
7. General Society of the War of 1812. - Ancestor, Elias Taylor.
8. Jamestowne Society - #3691 - Colonel Joseph Bridger.
9. Family of Bruce Society in America - Robert Bruce, King of Scotland.
10. San Antonio Historical and Genealogical Society.
11. King and Queen County (VA) Historical Society.
12. Callaway Family Association.
13. Overall Family Association.
14. Order of Washington - Captain William Bethell.
15. The Sovereign Colonial Society Americans of Royal Descent - Robert the Bruce
16. Colonial Order of the Crown - Hugh Magnus, A leader of the First Crusade.
17. Sons of Confederate Veterans - Captain Michael Albert Metts.
18. The Order of the First Families of Mississippi - William Kaigler.
19. First Families of Tennessee - Margaret (Peggy) Fleming Brown.
John Pillow.

APPENDIX B

Albert C. Metts, junior
4019 Sylvan Oaks Drive
San Antonio, Texas 78229

This supplemental information is provided with a copy of a 14 page pamphlet, DEATH OF GENERAL HODGES - A Story of the Revolution. This pamphlet was sent to me by The Caroliniana Library, The University of South Carolina, Columbia, SC 29208.

Obviously, the pamphlet is very old, but no date or author is provided. It is well written and printed, in old style English. Evidently, since the pamphlet is an obituary, it would have been printed shortly after the death of George Washington Hodges. Valuable historical information about the Abbeville area is included.

This book seems to be the source of repeated versions of the account about the Indians murdering our first South Carolina Hodges. Moragnes in America and Related Families, by Nell H. Howard and Bessie W. Quinn, 1973, Pp 396-398, and Greenwood County Sketches, by Margaret Watson, 1972, Pp 261-262, repeat the story. Dallas Griffin, South Carolina genealogist has copied the entire pamphlet into his computer file. The story is very interesting.

George Washington Hodges (03 Sep 1792-24 Mar 1876) served as a Sergeant, orderly to Captain William Ware, in the War of 1812. An extensive file is in the U.S. Archives, Pension File 13086. Hodges was a substitute for Richard L. Anderson, his mother's brother. G.W. Hodges was well educated, wrote well, told his story and signed the pension and land applications. In these papers, he did not claim to be a general.

The father of G.W. Hodges was John Hodges, who married Margaret Long (2 children) and Frances Anderson (18 children - G.W. Hodges was her 2nd.) John Hodges, Jr., served as a soldier in the American Revolution for 21 months (U.S. Archives file No. W.10117) He entered service as a volunteer and private at age 15. Under oath, he stated that he was born in Essex County, VA, in 1765. He stated that records of his birth were burnt in & with a house in the State of South Carolina". He was a private. However, in his company, he performed the duties of a second lieutenant for a short time. He was a young, brave, patriotic Revolutionary soldier.

The story that John Hodges, Jr., had a father named John Hodges, killed by Indians while on military leave, is believed to be true. The story is typical of the times. The fact that young John's birth records were "burnt", his young age when coming from Virginia, and the lack of further record of his father after the Revolution support the story. The will of young John's mother, wife of John, Sr., is at page 352. She died in 1810, when G.W. Hodges was 18 years old. Surely, he would have known from his grandmother the details of the murder of and service of his grandfather. It is logical that young John would volunteer at age 15 after his father and sisters were murdered by the Indians.

Albert C. Metts, Jr.

So Car

92

H 66

Death of General Hodges.

A Story of the Revolution.

INCIDENTS OF A REMARKABLE FAMILY.

CLOSE OF AN HONORED LIFE.

George Washington Hodges, one of the oldest and most respectable citizens of Abbeville County, died at his late residence in the town of Hodges on Friday night last, after an illness of two days, at the advanced age of 84 years, and as his career has been an eventful one, we append some sketches or incidents connected with his life, which we doubt not will be read with much interest:

Gen. Hodges' grandfather, of Culpepper, and his grandmother, of Richmond, Virginia, were married and emigrated to this country prior to the Revolution and settled near where the town of Hodges now stands. They were the first settlers of that vicinity, where they bought a tract of land, a portion of the English grant to Salvador, the Jew, which had been sold to Rapley, an Englishman, and comprised perhaps one-fourth of the land of Abbeville County, and was for a great many years known as "The Jew's land." At that time the lands of the county were covered with original forest growth, and game of all sorts could be readily caught anywhere, while the streams furnished an abundance of fish, which enabled those disposed to hunt to make an easy living.

2

General Hodges was a contemporary of the father of General James Gillam, who now lives in Greenwood, and also of the Caldwells and of the Calhouns, who first settled this county, all of whom being strong Whigs, suffered much from the depredations of the hostile Indians who were much more numerous than the whites and who then occupied almost this entire country. At that time General Gillam's father's family were very influential citizens of the community and were of the most prominent Whigs of the County, and were noted for their intrepidity and daring services during the Indian and the Revolutionary wars, and many of whom lost their lives in the service of their country. The General is still in a fine state of preservation, both mentally and physically, and his bearing is such as to impress upon those whom he meets, the fact of his being a gentleman of the highest type.

HIS GRANDFATHER SHOT—THREE OF HIS AUNTS BURNT—
AN INDIAN CHIEF COMPELS HIS AUNT
DORATHY TO MARRY HIM.

During the Revolutionary war Gen. Hodges' father, John Hodges, who held the commission of Major in the army of the Revolution, and the General's grandfather were actively engaged in the war against the Tories and the red-man. On one occasion the grandfather was at home on leave of absence, when the fact was ascertained by the Indians who came to his house unexpectedly, shot the furloughed soldier dead in the presence of his family, tied the ladies, his daughters, some four in number, preparatory to burning them and the house, when the Indian Chief, who was with the murderous gang, became enamored of the beauty of one of the sisters, Dorothy, and proposed to her that if she would become his wife her life should be saved. Her condition then might not be easily imagined. Here she was in the hands of the murderers of her father, in the presence of his lifeless body, tied with

her sisters in the house which was soon to be enveloped with the consuming element. This indeed was a dreadful position, but her only rescue from the impending doom was to swear that she would ever love, cherish and obey, and keep in sickness and health a natural enemy and the murderer of her father and sisters. The exultation of the demoniac fiends over the grief and heart-rending exclamations of these defenseless and distressed creatures was beyond description. Finally, when this young lady, more beautiful than the rest, was forced to a choice, she reluctantly consented to be the wife of the Indian Chief, and was loosed from the cords which bound her limbs, to be the more firmly bound soul and body by a solemn oath to the leader of these cruel assassins. Being removed from the dwelling she was rescued from the flames whilst the torch was applied to the house, and her sisters perished in her presence whilst the war dance and the song kept up the fiendish carnival.

THE UNHAPPY BRIDE.

Dorathy was perhaps the most unhappy and the most unwilling bride upon whom the genial sunlight of South Carolina had ever fallen.

Having just seen her father murdered and her sisters burned to death in the ruins of the parental roof, and she a captive, the wife of the Indian Chief whose manners must have been as repulsive to her finer nature, as the wooings of the hawk to the turtle dove, is it any wonder that gloomy forebodings bore down her hitherto happy heart. The family broken up by the murder of four of its members, the destruction of the homestead and she in the hands of the enemy of her people—all this occurred in less time than it takes to tell the story.

Under these circumstances she became at once despondent, and often regretted that she did not perish with her sisters, and felt like murmuring at the dispensations of

Divine Providence. But Hope, which springs eternal in the human breast, did not entirely desert her in this her hour of darkness, and she began to anticipate that something might occur to relieve her from this cloud, which lowered on her soul. She knew not how it would be, but she felt that a kind Providence who numbers even the hairs of our heads and who had promised to hear those who cry unto Him, would avert the present doom which rested like a pall on her spirits. She was

COMPLETELY FETTERED

and being carried West with the retreating foe of the white man, as the whites gained supremacy, and as the days, weeks and months passed, she was farther removed from the pale of civilization. In the meantime, however, her husband loved her with a devotion not characteristic of the Indian. The Chief was proud of and rejoiced in the possession of his beautiful "pale faced wife." His love for her, and his association with her, had a wonderfully refining influence over the red man. At the birth of their son his affection seemed warmer than before. If Dorathy had not now learned to love her husband this child was loved by the mother as only mothers can love. Away from the presence or association of a white person, it seemed that her whole soul concentrated in her babe, and the love of father and mother met in the infant boy, and they held sweet communion with each other as to their child.

Years passed by and the Indian was as kind as one of his nature could be, and she had almost become reconciled to her fate, though she was expected to do the housework, the cooking, washing, and scrub work generally.

AFTER THE WAR

had "smoothed his wrinkled front," Dorathy expressed to her husband a desire to see her friends and relatives in

Carolina, and her husband having unbounded confidence in her loyalty now, arrangements were soon completed for a visit to her old home. They were then living in Alabama. The Indian Chief accompanied by Dorothy and her child set out on the journey. When the husband had come to the borders of the State, as far as it was safe at that time for him to come, pledging anew their faith and love for each other, and after making arrangements as to when he should meet her at the same place, on her return, they separated. Little did either think that this was

THEIR FINAL SEPARATION,

but it was even so. At that time in this country there was but little facility for the conveyance of letters anywhere but especially was this true as regards communication between this place and the territory occupied by the unfriendly Indians. As a consequence no word had been heard from her since her capture years before, and her friends had mourned for her as for the dead.

DORATHY'S RETURN.

Very unexpectedly to everybody she returned to Cokesbury, and her friends greatly rejoiced. At the meeting of her relatives tears of joy were shed, and the father of General Hodges gave a grand feast to which all the relatives and neighbors were invited, and they assembled in joy to greet the long lost friend and relative.

Once more in the bosom of her family, she became the prey of a thousand conflicting emotions, until at last when the time arrived for her return, she yielded to the intercession of her friends and cast in her lot with them henceforth. In the course of years

SHE SEEMED TO FORGET HER TROUBLES,

and being yet of fine personal appearance and possessed of attractive manners a citizen by the name of Rosemond

sought her heart and hand in marriage. In the course of time they were married, after which they remained in this County for a number of years and to them were born a number of children. The family moved West taking all the children by the second marriage, and it is believed that there is now no descendant of this branch of the Hodges family remaining in Abbeville County. Before their departure

THE LITTLE INDIAN

grew up, was sent to school, soon began to show the characteristics of the race, and having heard of his father and wishing to learn more of his father and his people, he set out before he had arrived at the age of maturity for the Indian territory from which he never returned, and from him nothing was ever afterwards heard. The action of this boy certainly was a proof of the truth of the old saying that "blood will tell."

Gen. Hodges remembered seeing the Indian boy, and heard the story, which we have just related from his mother's own lips, and the narrative above recited is believed to be literally true in all the main points and facts stated.

A REMARKABLE FAMILY.

Gen. Hodges' father lived within a mile and a half of the present site of Hodges' Depot, where to them were born twenty children—ten sons and ten daughters—and they were all noted for their activity and longevity, as out of this large number of children not one of them died under sixty years of age. The General was the oldest and remembers sitting down to the table with all his brothers and sisters—none missing—an unbroken household.

His grandfather Anderson, at the age of 105, had been known to walk from Swansey's Ferry to his house, a distance of thirteen miles, before dinner time.

REMINISCENCES.

Having lived all his life within a mile and a half of his birth place, he witnessed the great changes that had been effected in the last three-quarters of a century. When he first went to house-keeping there was but little cleared land in the County, and game was so plenty that it ravaged the crops—Mrs. Hodges once having shot a deer that was feeding in their turnip patch.

In his early days the people rolled their tobacco to Charleston in hogsheads with a shaft in the centre and drawn by a horse. This was before the days of cotton gins and very little of the great staple was then planted—tobacco being the chief money product of the country. The General remembered the first carriage that was ever in this country, which vehicle was brought here by Rapley, the Englishman who owned all the lands which was afterwards known as the "Belford Tract," and being a portion of

"THE JEW'S LAND,"

the original grant of which was from the English Crown to Salvador, the Jew, and hence that vast body of land East of Abbeville Court House to Cokesbury, including all the lands about Smithville, Douglass' Mill, Dead Fall, Hodges, the Belford, and other lands, was known as "the Jew's Land." The Jew lived in England before the war, and Rapley was sent here after the Revolution as his agent and he settled on the Belford tract, which is now known as the "Rapley's Shoals tract," and which contained some three thousand acres. *He lived on this place until he died*, at an advanced age, and at his death, which is supposed to have occurred between 1828 and 1830, was buried close to his log cabin, and his grave was walled around with stone, and afterwards, when Nicholson got possession of the land his body was taken up and carried either to Charleston or England.

Although he lived in a small log house, half a mile East of Rapley's Shoals, he was perhaps the most aristocratic man of his day in the upper part of South Carolina, and prided himself upon being the owner, and the first introducer, of the fine English blooded stock to this country. He tried to imitate and live

LIKE THE NOBLEMEN OF ENGLAND,

and had his stables of blooded stock, his race course, to which the best horses of England were brought, a large number of dogs, and an immense park enclosed for deer. To carry out his aristocratic notions he imported from England the first carriage that was ever brought to the upper part of South Carolina, and was considered the greatest curiosity of the age. It was a greater curiosity than the railroad cars were in 1850. People went for miles to see it. It was a costly vehicle having been made in Liverpool. It was sold at Rapley's sale and bought by Mr. Frank Connor, the father of Col. F. A. Connor of Cokesbury, and after his death at the sale it was bought by the Rev. Mr. Porter, and remained in the community until a comparatively late date. It is not known what finally became of it. The house in which Rapley

KEPT THIS CARRIAGE

was a frame building carefully built of hewn timber, and was a finer and more costly house than his dwelling. In 1844

DR. J. W. W. MARSHALL

removed it to his residence near Smithville, and again in 1858, he removed it to his present residence, on Magazine Hill, at Abbeville, where it now stands with the original frame and weatherboards.

His dwelling was a small hewed log house of one room, with a loft, and in this house he was fond of entertaining

PERSONS OF DISTINCTION

who might visit this portion of the country. It was his custom during the sitting of the Court at Abbeville, to send his carriage on Saturday to bring the judge and other distinguished guests to spend Sunday with him, and as he was a man of culture these dignitaries always found a visit pleasant.

After the death of Rapley, James Nicholson, another Englishman, and a boon companion of Rapley, became the owner of these lands. Nicholson died in 1836 or '37, and the lands were sold by his Executor, James Jervey, of Charleston, S. C., at private sale to

DR. SAMUEL MARSHALL

in February, 1838, at about one dollar and a quarter an acre. The Doctor afterwards in 1844 divided the tract by Long Cane creek and gave the Eastern part on which Rapley lived and died to his son Dr. J. W. W. Marshall; and the tract on the West side of the creek to Col. J. F. Marshall.

THE OLD RAPLEY HOUSE

remained intact until 1846, when it was removed by Dr. Marshall to another part of the tract to be occupied by his overseer, and was afterwards moved again, and we suppose that the house is still standing and occupied by negroes, on Mr. Wesley Cromer's lands.

GENERAL HODGES

was a hard worker, always temperate and prudent in the management of his monetary affairs. In his younger days he has been known to "run around" his cotton in the afternoon and then after supper to "plow out the middle" by moonlight, and by his industry and economy he managed to amass a considerable fortune, and when he built his late dwelling fifty-four years ago, it was considered the finest house above Columbia. The result of the war

swept away almost his entire estate. He, unlike many others, surrendered his property and adapted himself to the new situation as readily as could a much younger man. He never allowed his temper or spirits to be crossed or soured by anything, but remained always the friend and neighbor to the last. The General was

A PUBLIC SPIRITED CITIZEN.

and whether in church or State affairs he was always foremost. In the war of 1812, (sixty-four years ago,) he was among the first to respond to the call for soldiers, and served in that war as lieutenant, and up to the time of his death drew for his services in that campaign eight dollars a month from the pension office at Washington.

HE WAS SHERIFF

of Abbeville County from 1826 to 1830, during which time Mr. James Wardlaw was Clerk of the Court, with his son Robert H. Wardlaw as assistant clerk. The business at that time was of course not so great as now, for in those days "agricultural liens" were unknown, but Mr. James Wardlaw was feeble in health and depended upon his son Robert for the performance of the mechanical or clerical work of the office. In this connection we might mention that

MR. R. H. WARDLAW NAMED THE GENERAL'S YOUNGEST BROTHER,

Mr. R. H. W. Hodges, who is now more than sixty years of age. It occurred in this way: General Hodges' father being a friend of Mr. James Wardlaw, the father of Robert, who was Clerk of the Court and lived at Abbeville, and as people had not got into the habit of stopping at the hotels the town people and especially those expecting the suffrage of the voters were expected to entertain friends in attendance upon the Court. To be better able to oblige friends the citizens would sometimes send their

children to the country, and Robert was among the children so disposed of during a court, and was sent to the General's father's. The youngest boy who was quite young had not been named, Robert saw the babe and wanted to know its name. Mrs. Hodges told Robert that her names had given out (she had named only nineteen up to that time) and asked Robert for a name, who promptly asked her to name it for him. She agreed to it, and the infant babe then is now Robert Henry Wardlaw Hodges, who wears a gray beard and is over sixty years of age. He says he has long been expecting Mr. Wardlaw to do something for his namesake, but so far he has seen no tangible evidence of material aid from that quarter.

During General Hodges' term as Sheriff he hung a man of the name of Matthews, who was convicted of stealing a horse from Governor Noble's stables, then located on the Enoch Nelson lot. For the prisoner he entertained great sympathy, and treated him with all the kindness in his power, and his feelings were so much overcome at the execution that he wept like a child.

He was once a member of the State Legislature, and long held a commissioned office in the militia of the Savannah Regiment. In all matters of public interest he always took an active part, and at one time he was sent as commissioner to the Indians, (the Seminoles, we believe,) with whom he was exceedingly popular, and who were delighted because of his

SMOKING WITH THEM "THE PIPE OF PEACE,"

The General could send up volumes of smoke so much larger than they could, and they were so much delighted that great numbers of the men and women of the neighborhood assembled on the second day after his arrival "to see the white man smoke the pipe of peace."

SKETCHES OF THE FAMILY.

His father reared twenty children—ten boys and as many girls. The only survivors being Mr. R. H. W. Hodges, of Williamston; Mr. James Hodges, of Mississippi; Mrs. F. R. Davis, of Cokesbury; Mrs. Sarah Agnew, of Belton, who now lives at that place with her son, by her first marriage, Mr. George Washington McGhee.

The General married in 1816, Miss Rebecca Douglass, the sister of Col. Donald Douglass, once owner of the Douglass Mills on Long Cane, with whom he lived happily for fifty-two years, until she died some eight years ago. To them were born eighteen children—nine of whom lived to be married—the others died before maturity. He left six living children, thirty-two grand children, and nine great grand children. His oldest son, Col. W. L. Hodges, was a soldier in the Mexican war, and responded to the first call for volunteers in the Confederate war. He entered the service as Lieutenant and was promoted to Captain of his company which served in Virginia. His second son, Capt. J. Fletcher Hodges, went into the war as a private and was Captain at its close. His third son died in camp at Adam's Run. The fourth son, Mr. G. M. Hodges, went through the war and was twice wounded on the field of battle. The living daughters are: Mrs. F. A. Connor, Mrs. L. R. Dantzler, and Mrs. E. J. Wiss. He is related more closely or more remotely to more than one-half of the community of Hodges and Cokesbury.

The town of Hodges was named for him, on the establishment of the Railroad Depot at that place.

When the telegraph line was finished to that place a few years ago the first message, a congratulatory epistle was addressed to him as the "Patriarch." He preserved this message, which is still in possession of the family.

He was a most active member of the Board of Trustees of Cokesbury school and contributed largely to its

success in its palmyest days. He was the *Pater Familias* of the town which bears his name, and the community can ill afford to lose such a man. His example was on the right, and in this "though dead he yet liveth." A strictly temperate man, a devoted member of the church which he joined in 1832, and an official at the time of his death, he literally died with the harness on.

THE BURIAL.

On Sunday morning of the 26th inst., at 11 o'clock, the remains of Gen. Hodges were carried from the residence of his son Mr. G. M. Hodges, to the Methodist church at Hodges, for the purpose of having the last sad rites performed in honor of the deceased. The funeral services were read by Rev. Mr. Smart, pastor of the Methodist church at Cokesbury.

Mr. Smart, on account of the wishes of the deceased, and also of his family, said but very little of the life of the deceased, although much could have been said for one who had lived so useful and upright a life for so many years.

After the services at the church the remains were carried to the family cemetery, near Hodges, followed by a very large procession of relatives and friends. The funeral procession truly attested the high esteem and respect in which Gen. Hodges was regarded by his friends and neighbors. At 12:30 P. M. the coffin was lowered in the grave and the sod then covered the remains of one whose place cannot be filled, and whose loss will be sorely felt by the whole community.

Thus has passed away one of Abbeville's most honored and public spirited citizens; one of the old landmarks of the historic past, who carry us back to the days of Indian wars and Revolutionary struggles. One by one they are sinking into the tomb, and whilst we cherish their memory let us seek to emulate the virtues which signalized their lives. Gen. Hodges was a

NOBLE SPECIMEN OF A MAN,

with a superb physique, a brightly beaming countenance, a warm-hearted grasp of the hand, and popular and winning manners, which mirrored forth the genial traits of his character, and endeared him to the wide circle of his acquaintances. The energy of his character was tempered by rare kindness of heart and affability of temper which enabled him to secure alike the love and esteem of his associates. Few better men have ever lived, and Abbeville will long mourn the noble hearted gentlemen, the kind neighbor and friend, the true Christian and the public spirited citizen.

Albert C. Metts, junior
 4019 Sylvan Oaks Drive
 San Antonio, Texas 78229

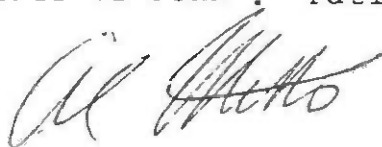
ELIZABETH HODGES - MOTHER OF JOHN HODGES

John Hodges, Revolutionary soldier of Abbeville, South Carolina, was born in Essex County, Virginia, in 1765. He came to Abbeville before the war, volunteering for military service on April 1st, 1780 at the age of 15 years. In his pension request, (W. 10117), made in 1832, he answered several questions about his age and birth place. He stated that the records of his birth were destroyed when his home burned in South Carolina. His signature is on the original pension papers.

The 1876 obituary of George Washington Hodges, son of John Hodges and Frances Anderson, is in the Caroliniana Library in Columbia, SC. The printed pamphlet states that the father of John Hodges², above, also was named John Hodges¹. The Hodges family came from Virginia before the Revolutionary War. The obituary tells a wild story about Indians killing the first John Hodges¹, before his family, then burning three of his daughters in the home² cabin and abducting a beautiful daughter named Dorothy. The John² pension request and the obituary fail to mention any other members of the family - nothing about the mother, wife of the John who was killed, or any other children except John². Books about the Hodges family fail to mention the mother of John Hodges², the young soldier who married Frances Anderson. Frances was one of eight Anderson children, one of whom was Samuel Anderson. John Hodges² and Frances had 20 children. One was named Elizabeth, who married a man named Bowie, so she became Elizabeth Bowie.

Due to the kindness of two gentle South Carolina ladies, Judge Carol Speer and Jennifer Roosmann, the Probate Court Clerk of Abbeville County, we have a copy of the original last will and testament of Elizabeth Hodges, of Abbeville. The will was written May 6th, 1799 and was not proved until October 7th, 1816. She names two sons, Charles Hodges and John Hodges. Is this the same John Hodges mentioned above? Yes, it is! The original will of Elizabeth is witnessed and signed by John Hodges and Samuel Anderson. The signatures by John Hodges on the pension statement and on the will are the same! Both documents are copies of originals. Copies of the signatures are on the next page. Samuel Anderson is the brother of Frances Anderson, wife of John Hodges. Samuel Anderson signed the proof of the will in 1816. Q.E.D. John Hodges had a mother named Elizabeth and a brother named Charles. No daughters were mentioned in the will.

This is one more piece of the Hodges puzzle. In a way, it will support, and not contradict the story about the Indians, as did John²'s statement that his birth records burned with his home in South Carolina. Now, we know that Elizabeth Hodges was the wife of John¹ and the mother of John². Patience and persistence!



In the Name of God Amen. the sixth day of May one
Thousand Seven hundred and Ninety-nine Elizabeth Hodges
of the District of Ninety six State of South Carolina Abbeville County
being weak in Body, but of Sound and perfect memory, praise be
Given to God for the same, And knowing the uncertainty of this
Life on Earth, and being desirous to settle things in Order, do
make this my Last Will and Testament in manner and form
following, that is to say, first and Principally, I Commend my
Soul to Almighty God my Creator assuredly believing, that I
shall receive full pardon and free Remission of all my Sins, and be
saved by the Precious Death and merits of my Blessed Saviour and
Redeemer, Christ Jesus, and my Body to the Earth from whence it
was taken, to be Buried in such Decent and Christian manner, as my
Executors hereafter named shall think meet and convenient, and
as Touching such worldly Estate as the Lord in mercy hath lent
me my Will and meaning is, The same shall be employ'd, and be-
stowed as hereafter by this my Last Will Expresseth, And first
I Do Revoke, Renounce, Frustrate, and make void all Wills by
me formerly made and Declared, and do appoint this my Last Will
and Testament. Item, I give and Bequeath unto my Son Charles
Hodges all that Tract or Parcel of Land whereon I now Live
Containing one hundred and Seventy Acres, & Lying on Mulber-
ry Creek the Waters of Saluda River. The Title whereof I have
made to me from Adam Grain Jones Esq. The said Land I do give
unto the said Charles Hodges, His Heirs or Assigns for ever, together
with all that the Lord hath been pleased to bless me with in this Life
And I do hereby constitute appoint and ordain my said Son Charles
Hodges, and my son John Hodges Executors of this my Last will and Tes-
tament, Revoking all wills by me formerly made and this only to be taken for my
Last will, in Witness whereof I have hereunto set my hand and seal the Day
and year first above written and in the Twenty third year of the Independ-
ence of the united States of America
sign'd seal'd and Deliv'd in presence of
Samuel Anderson
John J. Craig
James Dougherty
Elizabeth Hodges
mark

Last Will & Testament
Elyah Hodgges and

Devised Book

Wm. P. P. & Co

of Livingston

107-8885-

Ms. Col. 1816

South Carolina, Beaufort County Office.

Personally appeared Samuel Anderson
who being duly sworn deposes that he saw
Elyah Hodgges sign, seal, & declare the within
instrument of writing to be and contain his true
last Will & Testament, that the said Testator
was then of sound & disposing mind, memory
& understanding, to the best of his knowledge & belief
and that John Hodgges & James Dougherty, together
with this deponent subscribed their names as
witnesses thereto at the request of S^r Testator
in his presence & in the presence of each other.

Deposited this 4th
October 1810

Samuel Anderson

Jas. Livingston C. A. D.

The applicant John Hodges also hereby relinquishes every claim
whenever to a pension or annuity except the present, and declares
that his name is not on the pension roll of the agency of
any state.

Sworn to and subscribed
the day and year above said
Test J. A. Wardlaw
A. C. K.

John Hodges ←

The John Hodges signature, above, is on his pension application, written at age 67.

354

Last will, in Witness whereof I have hereunto set my hand and
and year first above written and in the Twenty third year of the Independ
of the united states of America
signed sealed and Delivered in presence of
Samuel Anderson
John Hodges ←
James Dougharty
Elizabeth Hodges
mark

The John Hodges signature, above, is on the Last Will and Testament of Elizabeth Hodges.
John Hodges was 51 years old, here. Note that it seems that he wrote his mother's name
for her before she made "her mark", an "X".

FRANCES ANDERSON HODGES
of ABBEVILLE

by
Albert Caswell Metts, Jr.

Frances Anderson came with her father and the rest of her family from Caroline County, Virginia, to Abbeville¹ in May of 1790. Soon after her arrival, she met a Revolutionary soldier² named John Hodges (1765-1834). The only information generally known about her parents and family, until recently, 1994, was that she came from Virginia with her father, whose first name was not known, and her brother, Richard L. Anderson.³ Her father had lived to be over 105 years old, at which time he could walk from his home to Swancey's Ferry, thirteen miles away, in a few hours.

John Hodges had been married to Margaret Long, who had given him two children, Lucy and Reuben, then Margaret died early in 1790, about the time that Frances arrived in South Carolina. John married Frances in late 1790 and this lady gave him EIGHTEEN fine children⁴, all of whom lived to maturity! As his mother had done, one son, named George Washington Hodges, and his wife also had eighteen children. Most of those named Hodges lived all of their lives in South Carolina. It was natural that the town was named Hodges, SC.

John Hodges is known to have been born in Essex County, Virginia, but the search for information about the lineage of Frances was futile until a book was published by Barbara R. Langdon⁵ in 1994. The father of Frances was Walter Anderson, Senior. Now, the key to the mystery was found and the search began in earnest! A letter to the South Carolina Department of Archives and History in Columbia was answered promptly with 22 pages of 11" X 17" copies of hand written documents: Abbeville, Box 70, Pkg. 3579, Samuel Anderson et al Walter Anderson et al 1829. These papers included a deed that Walter, the father of Frances Anderson, had signed, instead of a will. Being very very old, on 11 June 1823, he deeded all of his property to his children, naming them. The deed has been transcribed^{5a} and is long^{5b}, so partly, it states:

"-- in consideration of the good will and affection that I have for my children, Samuel Anderson, Rich. L. Anderson, Walter Anderson Junr., Susannah Wright, Frances Hodges, Tabitha Davis, Sarah Hodges, & Lucy Pullium hath thought proper to give & by these presents doth give unto my said children the whole of my estate, both real and personal, consisting of the land whereon stands my dwelling house, containing two hundred sixty-two acres more/or lefs (sic less) of land, horses & stock of all kinds and kitchen furniture, and the crop that may be on a growing----"

¹ This is the first of the notes which are listed at the end of this article. Abbeville is in South Carolina.

He lists his nine slaves by name and names his children again; names Walter, Jr.; as executor; then he continues; "will immediately after my departure from this life, take unto their possession (sic. possession) & make an equal division thereof among themselves in such way and manner as they may adjudge most for their interests, either by sale or otherwise, and I the above named Walter Anderson do hereby warrant and defend the right of the above mentioned property unto my sd. children ----" Walter signed the document with:

his
Walter X Anderson (Sl)
mark

Walter died - we still do not know exactly when, but it was after 11 June 1823.

The court finally ordered that everything be sold. The land brought about \$1.90 per acre. The 9 slaves were 11 by now, and sold for \$125 to \$375 each. Total for the sale was \$2,800. All signed, most with an "X". John Hodges signed "For self and wife". George Washington Hodges, son of John and Frances signed. He was guardian for three grandchildren.

Times have changed! The costs and lawyer fees amounted to only about \$140.

At this point, a proper question was, "What about the mother of Frances?" What was her name? She was not mentioned in the deed. She must have been dead by then, 1823, because she would have been included in the legal papers. Census information indicates that she was still alive in Abbeville in 1820. Son, Richard L. Anderson, was alive in Abbeville in 1855. Son, Samuel Anderson, died in Abbeville in 1848. Susannah, who had married Pleasant Wright, died before her father, Walter, who died several years before 1829. Daughter Tabitha Anderson married Thomas Davis. After 1830, he died and Tabitha went to Greene County, Alabama, where Pleasant Wright and her sister's children were living in 1827, when and where Pleasant married again, Elizabeth Alston. He died in Greene County, in 1844. Sister Sarah married Charles Hodges. Sister Lucy married a man named Pulliam. Later, we will return to the question about the mother of Frances, Attention must be directed to the state of Virginia.

To look for a Walter Anderson in the great state of Virginia would seem to be like looking for a needle in a hay stack, but a curious discovery soon became apparent. Why? Who knows? Just plain luck! There were thousands of Andersons. They had common names like Thomas, William and John. However, strangely, there were almost no Walter Andersons. Walter is a good ole name, too! Starting on the genealogy shelf, checking Virginia books: Nugent, Hotten, Torrence, Beverly Fleet, Gwathmey, Stanard, Greer, Draper, Vanlentine - no Walters! Even S.W.E.M. was no help. There were only two unlikely references that had the wrong time

or place. Finally, my friend, LLOYD D. Bockstruct, of Dallas, in his Virginia's Colonial Soldiers, entered one Walter on page twenty! He is in King George County in 1724. That's what we call a "clue".

On to King George County, we find the will⁶ of John Anderson, in 1721. He refers to his brother Walter and names two minor children, Sarah and a younger Walter, probably named after his brother. John's brother is the Walter listed by Lloyd Bockstruct. How do we know? The land! In John's will, the children are left to a brother-in-law, William Browne. Likely, then, John's wife was a Browne, unless John had a sister in Virginia, which is unlikely. More later! John's brother Walter died in 1732⁶, so after that date, there is only one Walter Anderson.

Before going on, both John and Walter lived in a valley near and west of where Warrenton, Virginia, is today.^{6a} Terrain features mentioned in land papers are Carter's Run, Watny (later Watney) Mountain and Rappahannock Mountain. This was about as far as settlers were found in the early 1700s. As the old poem goes, "There's no use in going further - it's the edge of cultivation, So they said, and I believed it - broke my land and sowed my crop - Built my barns and strung my fences in the little border station tucked away below the foothills where the trails run out and stop." ⁷ The Andersons lived at the foothills of the Blue Ridge Mountains, the beautiful country of dogwood, rhododendron and mountain laurel. Near here is where the battles of Bull Run were fought. Today, the wise people of Warrenton have refused to allow the Disney folk to spoil the lovely country, rich in history, by building a so-called theme park.

Back to genealogy, looking even further back in time, before picking up with Walter, father of Frances, let's check on the brothers John and Uncle Walter.

The origin of Father John and Uncle Walter is interesting. Virkus,⁸ writes, "ANDERSON, Walter (d. Va., abt 1732), said to have come from Wales to Va., and was settled as a planter in Richmond co., before 1710; had grants from Lord Fairfax in 1728 of 818 and 395 acres on the west side of Rappahannock Mountain;---" Virkus names Uncle Walter's wife and continues to tell about Uncle Walter's family. The death date and location of land checks out! Howard and Quinn wrote that Frances came from "Richmond".

Looking back "before 1710" and for a few years thereafter, brothers John and Walter were active and visible. John Frederick Dorman's books on⁹ Westmoreland County deeds, patents and wills during the period show John in an argument about shooting a wild hog on 24 April 1675. He is called a "sloope man" (sic. a sailor). A sloop is a sail ship with one mast and a single jib.

On 21 November 1677, John is involved in shipping a man's possessions to an address in England.¹⁰ On 30 June 1703, Walter gets a receipt for 11,436 pounds of tobacco. Walter is a witness in 1703. John is a witness in 1704.

Next, as per Virkus, above, Headley's Wills of Richmond County, Virginia, 1699-1800 shows that Walter proved a will in 1689 and was a witness in 1720. John was an executor in 1716.

Time marches on! In 1752, John and Uncle Walter are long dead. A "Poll For Burgess Election" was held at Port Conway.¹¹ In order to vote, a man had to be over 21, and own "100 acres unimproved or 25 acres with a house and plantation". Walter Anderson, of King George County, voted.

Following a person in Virginia in the olden times requires use of whatever documents still exist. The War of 1812, the War Between the States and courthouse fires destroyed many documents. We have to turn to land records which are not very interesting, but they give names, dates and locations. In Virginia's Northern Neck,¹² we find Walter by reading where other land owners were his neighbors, where he was a witness, or is mentioned at a time or place. The land listings are from 1694 to 1800. In eleven cases, for Walter, the dates start in 1736 and the last date is 1788. This can indicate that Walter was an adult land owner, perhaps a married one, in 1736. Remember that his father, John died in 1721 and Walter was a child, then. The fact that the listings go through 1800, and he has none after 1788, can indicate that he had left for South Carolina.

Now, a little geography and history may be helpful. Westmoreland County was created in 1653. Just south, Richmond County was created in 1692. King George County was cut out of Westmoreland and Richmond Counties in 1720/21 (just before John Anderson died). King George is east of old Stafford County and Prince William County. Further west is Fauquier County. Prince William was cut out of King George and Stafford in 1730/1 (After John and just before Uncle Walter died). Then Fauquier was cut out of Prince William in 1759. Caroline County is across the Rappahannock, down stream, and was formed in 1727/8. What seems like a lot of movement was, in some cases, county boundary changes. There were family moves, too - west, then back east and on down south to Abbeville, SC. A man on a good horse could ride from Richmond County to Fauquier County in a couple of days. By boat (Sloop?), downstream, it might be easier and faster. Both old John and young Walter were rovers! The central terrain feature in this part of Virginia is the Rappahannock River.

Still in Virginia, Walter Anderson continued to own land on the Fauquier side of the Rappahannock River. Downstream about 40 miles, we find Caroline County. John Frederick Dorman¹³ writes about a Walter Anderson trying to collect money in Caroline County on 11 May 1732 (The same year that Uncle Walter died!). Then, 11 April 1733, the case is dismissed because Walter is

dead. Later, in June, Walter's wife collects the money! We know his wife's name from his will and from the Virkus entry. Of course, this is Uncle Walter! Much later, Campbell¹⁴ lists Walter Anderson as Executive of a will in 1771. This time, it is the younger Walter in Caroline County. He is over 50 years old.

Time passed and the Revolution took place. Where was Walter? He was in Caroline County, Virginia, about 60 years old. He did what has come to be called "Patriotic Service". He provided food for the colonial soldiers and horses. John Broadus was a Commissioner of Caroline County. He collected the supplies and gave the providers certificates for the value of the articles "impressed". The provider was paid in Continental currency which was practically worthless, so one might say that the giver was, indeed, patriotic! Walter Anderson gave two cows, bacon, oats and wheat.¹⁴

Notice that Walter Anderson is very visible in Virginia records of the time. His name appears until 1788, then he is found no more! He is listed¹⁶ for tax on 276 acres in 1787 and 1788. Then, in 1790, they "transfd" (sic. transferred) 275 acres (bad arithmetic!) to John Chapman and Edwards Mathews. Now, Chapman and Mathews owned Walter's land. He had sold out and had headed for South Carolina.

The first U.S. Census of 1790 and the one for 1800 for Virginia were burned by the British in 1812. A reconstituted version for 1790 was developed based upon state enumeration from 1782 to 1785.¹⁷ Caroline and Fauquier were not included along with other counties. Many Andersons are listed (154), and there is not a single Walter. However, "The 1787 Census of Virginia" was compiled by Yantis and Love.¹⁸ There are three thick volumes and an index. Again, there are many Andersons, and there is one and one only, Walter Anderson. He is in Caroline County. This census was made from tax lists. Caroline and Fauquier counties were included this time. Walter is shown with two white males above 16 and under 21. No women are counted. Slaves, horses and cattle are counted. Walter, son of John, now called Walter, Senior, is about my age (73). Remember that Walter and his family went to South Carolina in 1790.

Next, to tie the knot, VIRGINIA TAXPAYERS 1782-1787, by Fothergill and Naugle, lists Virginia taxpayers in 1783.¹⁹ There are many Andersons named George, James, Robert, John, Thomas and William, but there is only one Walter Anderson with one "Poll" and 5 slaves. He lives in Caroline County.

Before leaving Virginia, let's return to questions asked earlier about the wife of Walter Anderson, Senior - the mother of Frances Anderson. Also, this is as good a time as any to summarize. We can conclude that John Anderson and his brother Walter came from Wales to Virginia before 1675. From the tide water, they sailed up the Rappahannock River until they could go no further by sloop and settled beside Watny Mountain and Carter's Creek. John had a

wife with the surname Browne, and they had two children named Sarah and Walter, both minors when John died in 1721. Young Walter inherited the farm, but lived with his mother's brother, William Browne. Walter was an adult in 1739.

Walter was married to a lady named Ann Thornton.²⁰ Records state that she "died prior to 1762; she was survived by her husband, Walter Anderson, and heir-at-law, John Anderson." This lady was not the mother of Frances Anderson, but it does mean that Frances had a half brother named John. It is natural that Walter would name a son after his father John. Also, it is a fact that his children by another wife named in his final deed did not include a John. His future sons were Samuel, Richard L. and Walter Junior. He named a daughter, "Sarah" - remember that he and his sister, Sarah, were the only two minor children of John Anderson who died in 1721.

Then, on September 12, 1771,²¹ in Caroline County, Virginia, "-A deed indented from WALTER ANDERSON and TABITHA his wife, she being first examined was acknowledged and ordered to be recorded." It was hoped that, since Tabitha was "examined", that Walter was selling land that she had inherited. Maybe, he was, but the actual document is on file in Caroline County and The Virginia Library, and the abstract included every word of the indent. No Help! So, Walter remarried between 1762 and 1771 ! Remember that he had five daughters named in his final DEED and one of them was named TABITHA, no John, but a TABITHA. This is an unusual name from a Greek word for gazelle. This wife fits the time and place requirements to be the mother of Frances Anderson. Walter was old, but not too old ! Tabitha, the new wife must have been young.

In 1762, Walter was over 41 years old. In 1771, he was over 50. When he moved to South Carolina in 1790, he was over 69. Tabitha gave Walter 8 children. She, Walter, their children and all the slaves made the trip to Abbeville in 1790. The Abbeville, South Carolina, census records of 1800, 1810 and 1820 show a man and a woman over 45. When did she die? What was her maiden name? The SC Census of 1790 shows a Walter Anderson with 1 Male over 16, 3 males under 16 and 5 females. (A wife and 4 daughters - Frances is listed married to John Hodges.)

Now, in final summary, a review of the arithmetic may help. In 1721, John died and left a minor child named Walter, so little Walter was born before 1721. In South Carolina, he signed his deed to his children in 1823, so he died after 1823 - age, over 102 years. That's close, but he was said to be able to walk 13 miles at 105 years and lived longer. Did Walter fight in the American Revolution? No, he was about 60 years old, but he did do what is called "Patriotic Service" by providing a couple of cows, some oats and other supplies. We need to know the surname of Walter's wife. She must have died in Abbeville. Tabitha married Walter in Virginia after 1762 and before 1771. In Abbeville, SC, there should be some sort of document to record

the death of Walter's wife, Tabitha, possibly between 1820 and 1823. Long ago, I thought that I would never find the first name of the father of Frances Anderson. Then, one clue broke the dam. That is the way things happen, sometimes, in genealogy. If I live long enough, I may be lucky again. I was interested because I thought that Frances Anderson Hodges was a wonderful woman. Now, I feel the same way about Tabitha, even if I do not know her daddy's name.

NOTES

1. This is the first of the notes which are listed separately at the end of this article. Abbeville is in South Carolina.
2. NSDAR # 686732. NSSAR # 118709. These Supplemental Applications claiming John Hodges were proved and approved.
3. Nell H. Howard and Bessie W. Quinn, "Moragnes in America and Related Families", Pp 389, 399.
4. Ibid. Pp. 389-394.
5. Barbara R. Langdon, "Abbeville County Marriages / 1780-1879 / Implied in Abbeville County South Carolina Equity Records." Pp. 128, 129. The marriage of John Hodges and Frances Anderson is stated with her father named as Walter Anderson Sen^r. and her sisters Lucy, Sarah, Savannah, and Tabitha. Further, she provides the reference to Box 70, Package 3579, "LIVED" 1823. Also, information is in the book to order the document from the South Carolina Archives in Columbia.
- 5a. Transcription of the deed by Walter Anderson as included in Box 70, Package 3579, Samuel Anderson et al Walter Anderson et al, 1829, in Abbeville, SC.
- 5b The entire document mentioned above in 5a, consisting of 22 pages of legal documents which force Walter Anderson, Junior, to allow sale of the estate and to distribute to the children of Walter Anderson, Senior.
6. George Harrison Sanford King, "King George County / Virginia / Will Book A - 1 / 1721 - 1752 / and Miscellaneous Notes", Pp. 5 - 7 (Will of John Anderson, 1721, Probate 1 Dec 1721), 214-215 (Will of Walter Anderson, 1732, Probated 2 Mar 1732). John names this Walter, the man listed by Lloyd Bockstruck, as his brother. John names his two minor children as a younger Walter and Sarah. This younger Walter was the father of Frances Anderson Hodges. After older Walter died in 1732, the only Walter left was young Walter.
- 6a. Map of Early Roads, FAUQUIR COUNTY, From a Map Published With "Landmarks of Old Prince William".
7. Rudyard Kipling.
8. Frederick A. Virkus, Immigrants to America Before 1750., P. 55. Here, Walter Anderson is addressed as coming from Wales. Since John is Walter's brother, he will have come from Wales. Peggy Shomo Joyner, Abstracts of Virginia's Northern Neck Warrants & Surveys (lists counties) 1697-1784, Volume IV, P. 121. The Walter Anderson warrants for 395 acres and 818 acres in the

Watry Mountain, Carter's Run area that were mentioned by Virkus are described.

9. John Frederick Dorman, WESTMORELAND COUNTY, VIRGINIA / DEEDS, PATENTS, ETC. / 1665 - 1677 / Part Three, Pp. 33,34. The court heard this case about the hog in 1675. This interesting story tells of John Anderson, a "sloope man" coming from "the eastern shore". He was trying to shoot wild hogs for food. It is logical that Anderson had a ship that was sailing the waters of the Rappahannock. That may be the way John and Walter went west as far as the river could be negotiated - to the Warrenton area.

10. John Frederick Dorman, WESTMORELAND COUNTY, VIRGINIA / DEEDS & WILLS NO. 2 / 1691 - 1699, P. 22. Here, John Anderson has valuable items consigned to him to "gett freight" (sic. - ship) to various places in England. P. 47, Walter Anderson receipts for 11,436 pounds of tobacco in 1703.

11. George Harrison Sanford King, King George County Virginia Will Book A - 1 1721 - 1752 and Miscellaneous Notes, Pp 287-8.

12. Gertrude Gray, VIRGINIA Northern Neck Land Grants / 1694-1800. Three volumes. Dates are important. From land descriptions, all listings for Walter Anderson are in the present Warrenton area. (Watry Mountain, Carter's Run, Hedgman, etc.) I:122 - 1736, I:124 - 1739, I:126 - 1739, I:128 - 1740, I:131 - 1740, I:139 - 1741, II:96 - 1764, II:109 - 1779, II:192 - 1767, III:61 - 1787, III:73 - 1788. Dates in the three volumes run from 1694 to 1800. More land records for Fauquier County are available in John K. Gott, Fauquier County, Virginia Deeds 1759-1778, Pp 3,4,6,29, 77, and 153, but they add nothing to this story. Indication is that Walter was an adult land owner in 1736 and had left the area in 1788.

13. John Frederick Dorman, CAROLINE COUNTY, VIRGINIA / ORDER BOOK / Part One / 1732-1734/5, Pp 4, 29, 40.

14. T.E.Campbell, COLONIAL CAROLINE / A History of Caroline County, Virginia, P. 483. Walter Anderson is Exec. or Adm. for Decedent William Wisdom.

15. Janice L. Abercrombie and Richard Slatten, Virginia Publick Claims, CAROLINE COUNTY, Pp iii-vii, 37, 38, 41, 42, 44, 46, 50, 53, 60, 61, 68. These pages are for the reference, above. The page numbers below are for the court booklets in the Public Service Claims files in Richmond.

Page 13 June to July 1781 1 L450 ("L" for Pounds).
Page 15 July to September 1780 Bacon L 97
Page 20 13 to 25 Oct 1780 10 "Bushells Oats" L50
Page 27 1781 1 "Beeves" (Cow) L450
Page 33 May to June 1781 23 1/2 pounds of bacon L141
Page 16 11 Sep to 31 Dec 1781 1 "Beeves" L1500
Page 21 Oct 1781 5 bushels wheat L600

16. T.L.C. Genealogy, Caroline County, Virginia Land Tax Lists, 1787-1799., Pp. I, 5.

17. Government Printing Office, 1908, HEADS OF FAMILIES AT THE FIRST CENSUS OF THE UNITED STATES TAKEN IN THE YEAR 1790 - VIRGINIA, P.122. All Andersons listed, no Walter.

18. Netti Schreiner-Yantis and Florene Speakman Love, The 1787 Census of Virginia, Three Volumes and separate index. Only one Walter Anderson is listed. He lives in Caroline County.

19. Augusta B. Fothergill and John Mark Naugle, VIRGINIA TAX PAYERS 1782-87 Other Than Those Published by the United States Census Bureau. Introduction and P. 3. Only one Walter Anderson is listed with one "Pole" and 5 Slaves in Caroline County.

20. George Harrison Sanford King, MARRIAGES OF RICHMOND COUNTY VIRGINIA 1668-1853, P.4. This gives a lot of information about the family of Ann Thornton - wealthy people. Does the "prior to 1762" mean that Walter had remarried by that time? It is interesting that the marriage listed on the same page is the marriage of old Uncle Walter to Susanna Prou by 5 April 1715!

21. Ruth and Sam Sparacio, VIRGINIA COUNTY COURT RECORDS / Order Book Abstracts of Caroline County, Virginia / 1771-1772 This book is part of Caroline County Order Book 1770-1772. The first 207 pages of this book were published by the Antient Press in Order Book Abstracts of Caroline County, Virginia 1770-1771. This book covers Court held from the 13th Of June 1771 through the Court of 9 April 1772. Page 38 of the book, but page 296 of the Caroline County Court of September 1771, "-A Deed indented from WALTER ANDERSON and TABITHA his wife, she being first privately examined was acknowledged and ordered to be recorded." On page 66, along with Charles Pemberton, William Poe, and Joseph Timberlake, Walter Anderson was ordered to inventory the estate of Edward Bowler, November 1771.

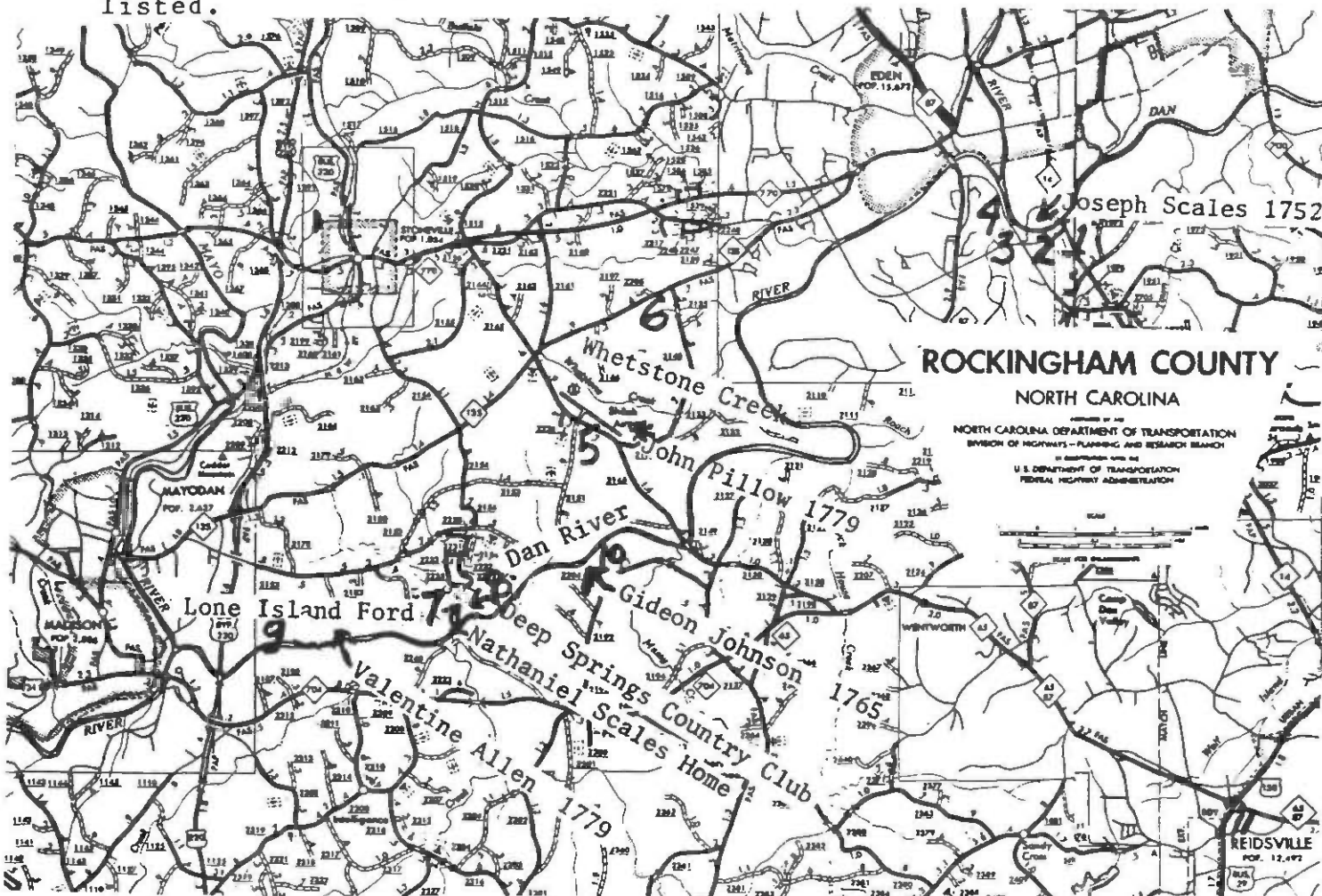


APPENDIX E

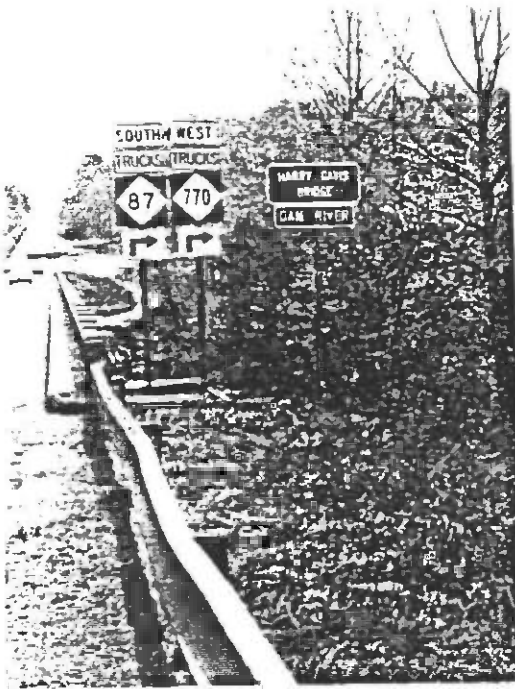
A VISIT TO ROCKINGHAM COUNTY, NORTH CAROLINA - 1988

The best way to write about a special location which plays an important role in a story is to visit the place, study the land and the people, then go on with the description. In this case, however, the cart is being put in front of the horse. After writing about all the ancestors that came through Rockingham County, North Carolina, long ago, the opportunity came to visit the land where the Pillows, Bethells, Scales, Watts, Johnsons and Stubblefields claimed their land, cleared the fields and raised their children over two hundred years ago.

On April 11, 1988, my wife and I drove down highway 87 to Eden, North Carolina. Two maps will be used to show the locations visited. The first, below, has the names of some of the ancestors with the dates of their land grants. Numbers refer to the pictures shown separately. The pictures were taken in the order listed.



I had read about how William Byrd came to this land and described it as "the garden of Eden". In those days, virgin timber covered the low hills, wild animals roamed at will, and



1. The bridge over the River Dan near where Joseph Scales lived



2. The Dan River west of the bridge. The land on the other side is where Joseph Scales settled.



3. Another small bridge west of the one above.

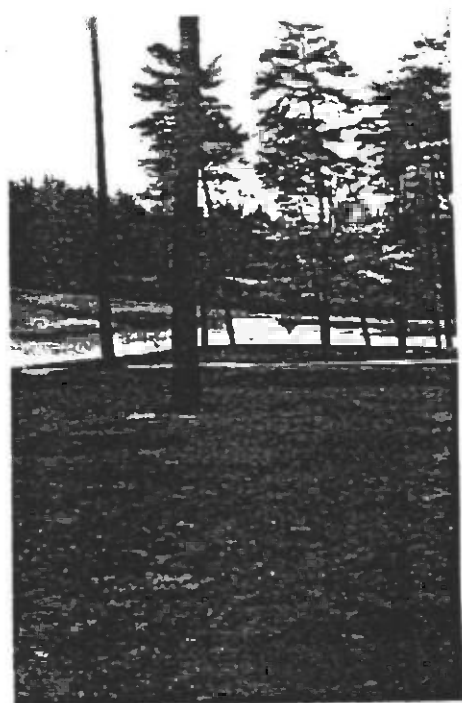


4. The bridge in 3. The land on the other side belonged to Joseph Scales.



5. John Pillow lived on Whetstone Creek. The creek is almost gone. Construction of Shiloh Airport may have filled the creek.

6. A road circles the land that was owned by John Pillow.



7. "Red Nat", Nathaniel Scales lived in this old home on the Deep Springs Country Club.

8. A golf fairway on the land once owned by Nathaniel Scales.

man had not left his scars on the landscape. The tall trees are gone. Much of the land has been used and used, then left to the trees again. The little cities and towns are like those seen anywhere else in America - the same gas stations, hamburger shops and asphalt highways. However, with imagination and careful planning, using the excellent information that has been developed by Peggy Osborne and her genealogical society, the precise locations could be found. The story of this five hour trip into the past will be told with a couple of maps and some pictures of the terrain. If your imagination can add log cabins and tall trees, you may be able to see those old ancestors doing the things that let them survive.

Joseph Scales settled in the loop of the Dan River southeast of where Eden is today. We drove south on NC 14 to the bridge across the Dan River and took pictures 1 through 4. The entire area is covered with cut-over timber and brush. From the several small bridges, you can see the little river. Fishermen were along the banks. In the pictures, the land beyond the river would have been the plantation of Joseph Scales. Of course, no traces of the old dwellings would be found.

We drove around Eden to route 135 to search for the home of John Pillow. He had lived on Whetstone Creek. There, a small, but modern airfield has been built. The bull dozers must have buried the creek when the land was leveled for the airfield. A loop-type road called Whetstone Creek Road goes around the area where the Pillow farm was located. Some agriculture goes on with cattle in the fields. What remains of the creek crosses the road. Pictures 5 and 6 apply. The trees beyond the field would have been on John Pillow's land.

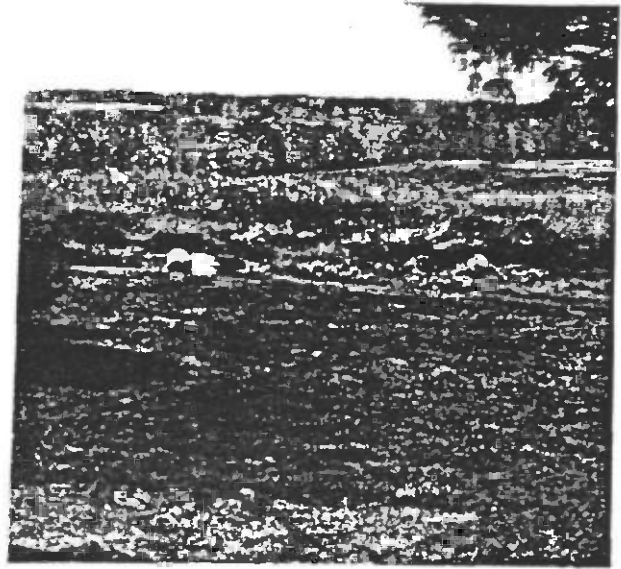
After asking a few questions of the friendly people, we found the Deep Springs Country Club. The gentleman who was the golf pro was helpful. He told us of the old home of Nathaniel Scales, a wonderful ancestor (Reread the Scales chapter!). The old home of "Red Nat" still stands and is in very good condition. A family named Harrison lives there. Picture 7 shows the home. The people were not there when we called. The home is owned by the country club. Nathaniel Scales owned the land where the golf course is located. One of the fairways is in picture 8. We were told that the porch on the rear of the home has been added.

We drove along River Road and various private roads in search of Lone Island Ford. Questions addressed to several people were not answered, so it seems that there may be no Lone Island Ford, today. However, using the old maps, I found a family that is developing a recreational camp area near the Dan River about where the old ford would have been. Brush had overgrown the area to make access to the river difficult. Picture 9 shows the brush in the distance and should be about where Valentine Allen lived.

Returning to the main road, we drove across to the south side of the Dan River and headed east. Following secondary roads, we found the general location where Gideon Johnson had lived. Picture 10 was taken from a farmer's back yard looking toward the Dan River in the distance. Here, the soil seemed to be



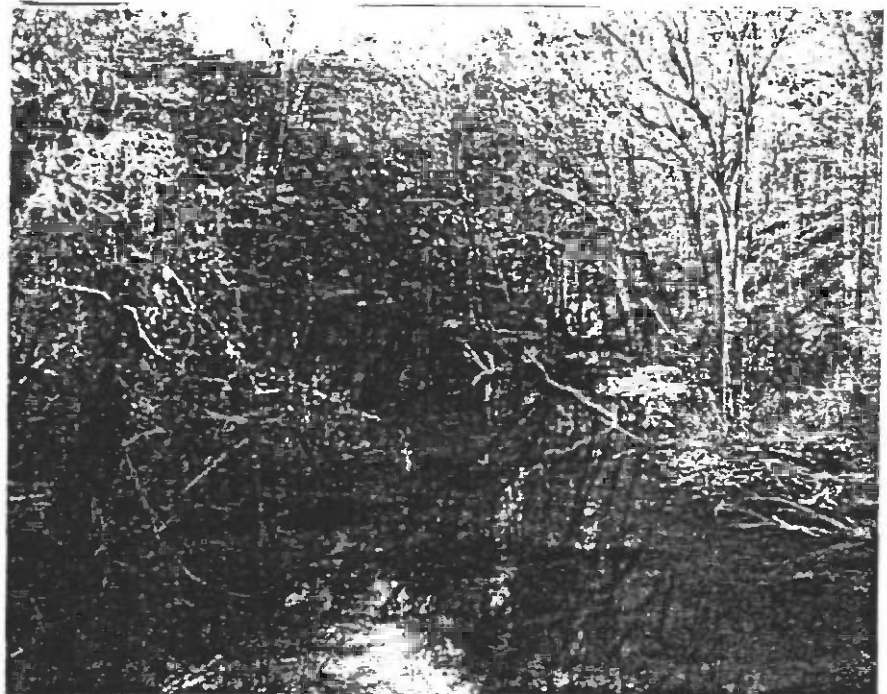
9. Valentine Allen lived on the north side of Lone Island Ford. A camp site is near the river.



10. Gideon Johnson lived in the area south of the Dan River.



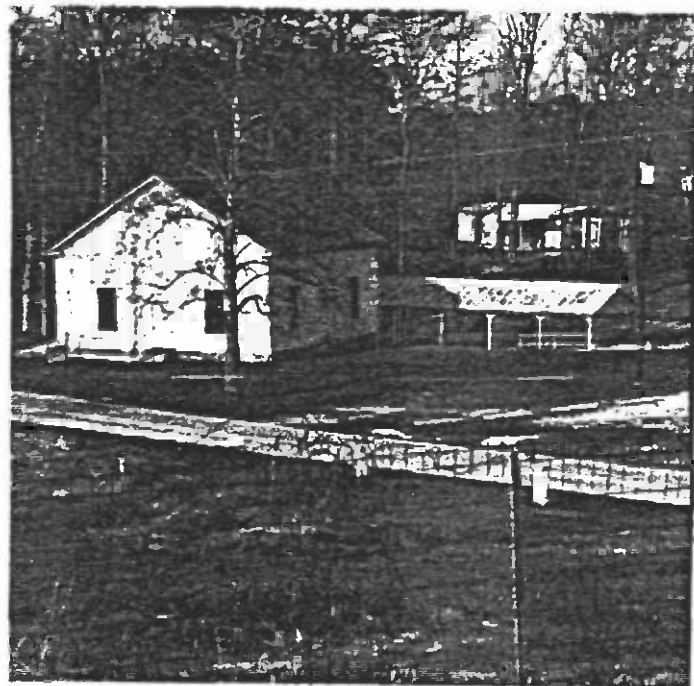
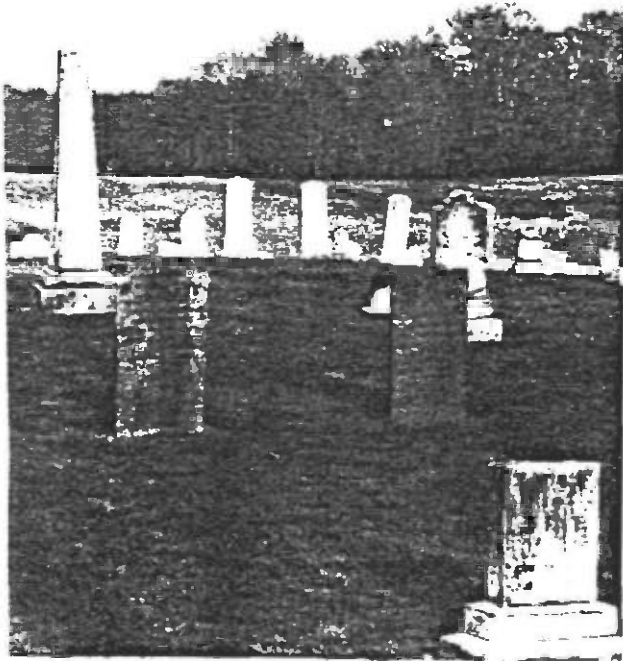
11. Scales Street is the main street of Reidsville. It was named for Dr. Robert H. Scales. He had an office in Reidsville.



12. Dr. Robert H. Scales lived below the Yanceyville Rd. where it crosses into Caswell County, on Hogan's Creek. 13. Hogan's Creek.



14. and 15. The land that belonged to Robert H. Scales.

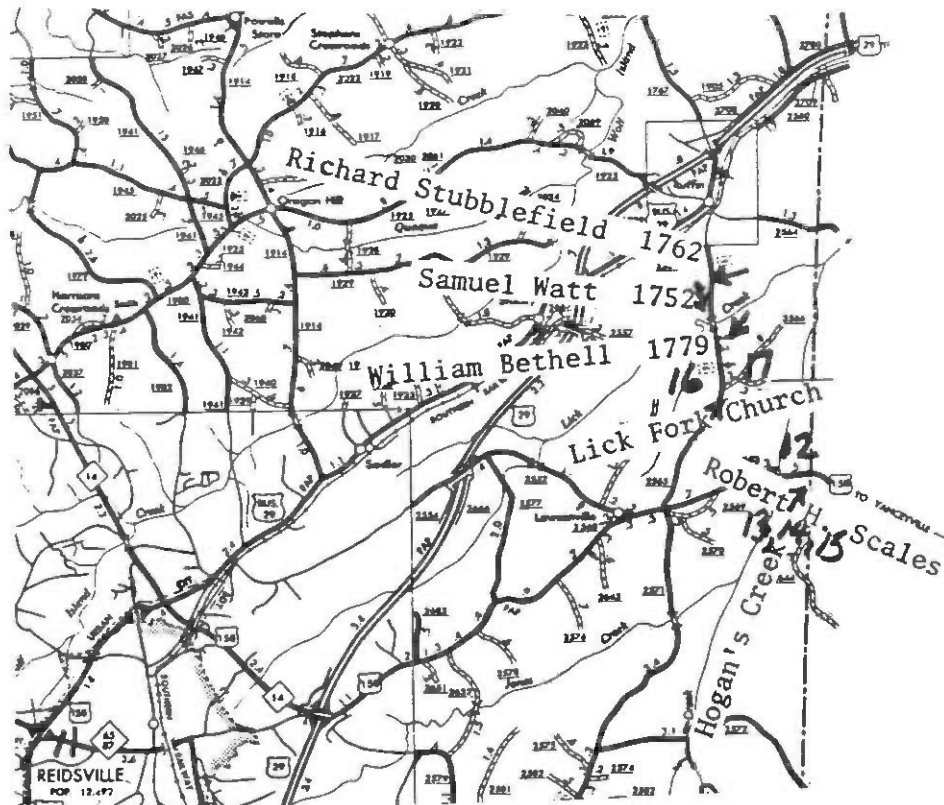


16. and 17. The cemetery and church that William Bethell donated the land for that use. William Bethell lived near here.

fertile. The farmer was not at home, but he had a nice home and a prosperous farm.

Now, the second map will be useful. Please note that Reidsville is common to both maps.

Back to the highway, we went to Reidsville - a nice little city. Here, I took a picture of the sign on Scales Street, the main street of the town. Dr. Robert H. Scales was a medical doctor and he had an office in the town. I explained to my wife that few people today can understand how well a man could travel about when horses were the best transportation. You see, Dr. Scales lived out on the Yanceyville road where it crosses the Caswell County line. See pictures 12 through 15. The Scales lived on Hogan's Creek. A private road to the area had a cattle gap and a gate that was closed. I went over the gate and walked about half a mile into the farm. There was a well developed cattle operation as the pictures show. I did not continue until I found a house, although there may have been one. This was the land that Dr. Scales farmed and where he lived - about 20 miles from Reidsville.



After backtracking several miles, we headed north on another secondary road and found the area where William Bethell lived. We walked through the cemetery. William Bethell had donated the land for the cemetery and the old church. Tombstones over two hundred years old are seldom found in most parts of America because there was no granite available in most places until railroads came through, so I did not expect to find one for any of the ancestors discussed in this article. However, one member of the Bethell family had a stone in the cemetery. It is

for his daughter, who he called "Sukey". She was Susan Bethell (May 3, 1778-April 17, 1844). Also, her husband, Rev. David Lawson (27 Mar 1770-1 Aug 1895) is buried beside her. A very old and large house was near the church. I wondered whether it could have importance, but we did not go there. The daylight was beginning to fade and we had to go on to Danville, Virginia, where our hotel reservation was waiting.

As we continued along the road northward, we passed the locations where Samuel Watt and Richard Stubblefield had lived. The same cut-over forest and a few little areas farmed gave the same appearance seen in the other pictures. The day light was gone, so the camera was put away.

Some may wonder what is gained by going so far to see the rolling terrain, the lazy little streams and a few cows wandering around. Well, there is a good feeling about having been there, on the same soil, seeing exactly how high the hills are, how wide the rivers. You remember that the old settlers came, lived, and moved on. Out into Tennessee, some did better than others. Some may have wished that they had stayed in the garden of Eden.

APPENDIX F

PEDIGREES TO MEDIEVAL ANCESTORS IN EUROPE

Fifteen short years ago, the family research began which lead to the publication of this book. Originally, the goal was to try to find American ancestors. Hence, the book was given the title, Metts Ancestors in America. A few relatives - Nora Turner, Ella Richardson, Frances Pillow and others - had done considerable research, but none had found evidence that lead back to Europe. When emigrants from Europe were found, whose names had been traced back to famous forebears, an entirely new area of interest was apparent. Obviously, the history, the legends, and the mystery of the past would lure most students to follow the trail. However, there were pitfalls.

PROOF always poses a challenge to any genealogist. As the past is searched, the further back in time one goes, the dimmer become those foot prints in the sand. The so-called "professional genealogists" quarrel continuously with each other, with the long dead old writers of the past, and with the hobbyists who love to search, about what constitutes PROOF! These professionals think that they know the answers. They do not! Even DNA evidence is challenged in the courts. Proof of paternity is not simple.

The American ancestors claimed were found, as far as possible, by use of primary records from archives, courthouses and personal collections. Much of the material is from original research. Also, much is compiled from the writings of other writers. **In no case was any statement "manufactured" by this writer.** In earlier editions of this book, the European Royal lines were added, as found, along with the appropriate emigrant. Now, all five of the pedigrees are placed into Appendix F. Pedigrees of this sort are subject to challenge on the basis of proof. However, usually, the challengers claim lack of proof, according to their definition of proof, and seldom, if ever, do these experts present a proved version! There are many hereditary societies which require applicants to present proof for membership. Some of them are mentioned in Appendix A. The five pedigrees enclosed were approved by one or more of the societies. There is no way to be certain about every entry dated hundreds of years ago. So, you may **BELIEVE IT OR NOT!**

One thing is certain, anyone may wonder when they see names like William the Conqueror and the great Charlemagne, so a few words about numbers are appropriate. If you start with yourself and count backward, you will have one for you and two for your parents. Then, there are 4 grandparents and 8 grandparents. Then, continue - 16, 32, 64 etc. By the time you get to the 20th generation, you will have over a million ancestors. The Magna Charta Barons are in about the 26th generation. England did not have millions of people in 1066, so if you have any English blood, the probability exists that you may descend from the famous people. The trick is to find the genealogical trail.

Having established a pedigree which has been approved by the only authorities we have, the number of lines that we have are limitless. Would you like to trace your lineage to Ole King Cole who was a merry ole soul? Silly? No, not really. It's easy. You do not need to search very far. Someone has done it for you. The lineage of Queen Elizabeth of England is in several genealogy books. She has an ancestor, Geoffrey Plantagenet, in the 29th generation. You have the same ancestor on two of the enclosed pedigrees. You can start there and claim all of hers back to Mark Anthony in the 72nd generation. He was born in 83 B.C. Queen Elizabeth has Charlemagne at her 41st generation.

The following five pedigrees are identified by these emigrants: Edward Johnson (See p. 303), Giles Carter (See p. 289), Edward Digges (See p. 218), William Boddie (See p. 136), and John Waller (See p. 217). The first three pedigrees have been expanded to claim lines of some of the various husbands or

wives of members of the direct line. This can be done by those interested for the other two Boddie and Waller lines.

Many genealogist have a goal to find a line to one or more of the Sureties who enforced the English Magna Charta, which has become the recognized basis for human rights and freedom throughout the world. Our Constitution is based, to a large degree, upon the principles of the Magna Charta. When the document was forced upon King John of England by many of the English Barons, they appointed twenty-five of their number, those most powerful, as so-called Sureties to enforce the terms of the Magna Charta. Of the twenty-five barons, only seventeen have living descendants. To trace your line to a single one is considered to be a great honor. Societies called The Magna Charta Dames (for ladies) and The Magna Charta Barons (for men) are organized from persons who have proved that lineage.

Research of these lines is conducted, usually, through use of the books available in many libraries. As more people become interested in genealogy, large libraries and archives collect the older references and continue to acquire new sources. The early writers and researchers, before 1950, deserve great credit as leaders for providing books with information that was easily used by researchers. In 1898 and in 1915, Charles H. Browning published two books with the title, Magna Charta Barons. These books have outstanding historical information as well as organized lineages. Later, about a dozen excellent books were published by John Wurts. These volumes were titled, Magna Charta. A number of thoughtless, inconsiderate, modern writers have criticized these early leaders, calling attention to what may be errors in their work. Of course, in the early years, there were no computers, copy machines and other advantages enjoyed by researchers today. One thing is certain - there may be errors, but there is a great amount of correct information!

About 1950, Frederick Lewis Weis and Walter Lee Sheppard, Jr. produced Ancestral Roots of Sixty Colonists Who Came to New England Between 1623 and 1650, accurate, referenced and well received. They followed that with a corrected and larger volume, Magna Charta Sureties, 1215. The title changed slightly and eventually, in the Seventh AND LAST Edition, became Ancestral Roots of Certain American Colonists Who Came to America Before 1700, 1993. These are the most dependable references available. Next, will be the upcoming series of books by David Farris called, Plantagenet Ancestry of Seventeenth Century Colonists. The first volume is being published in 1996.

Of course, those who criticize errors make errors! All errors will never be corrected. At the outstanding NSDAR Library near the White House in Washington, Burke's Peerage, Baronetage and Knightage, William Anderson's The Scottish Nation, and The Dictionary of National Biography are old reliables.

The wonderful world of knights on horseback, crusaders riding off to the Holy Land, and endless adventures can be found by those who study. Go to the library!

Pedigree of

ALBERT CASWELL METTS ,JR. and ARMSTRONG HART PILLOW BARKER

Descent from the Sureties for the Magna Charta:-

- Gilbert de Clare, heir to the earldom of Hertford, d. 1229.
- Richard de Clare, Earl of Hertford, d. 1218.
- Hugh Bigod, heir to the earldoms of Norfolk and Suffolk, d. 1225.
- Roger Bigod, Earl of Norfolk and Suffolk, d. 1220.

Generation:

- 41. CHARLEMAGNE, Holy Roman Emperor, 747-813. he was the father of
 - 40. Pepin, King of Italy, 776-810, the father of
 - 39. Bernhard, King of Lombardy, d. 818, the father of
 - 38. Pepin of Vermandois, Seigneur of San Quentin, who had
 - 37. Pepin de Senlis de Valois, father of
 - 36. Lady Poppa de Valois, who married Rollo the Dane, Duke of Normandy, d.931
 - 35. William Longswords, Duke of Normandy, d. 943.
 - 34. Richard the Fearless, Duke of Normandy, 933-996, m. Lady Gunnora of Denmark, daughter of Harold VIII, King of Sweden, and Cyrid, Queen of Sweden.
 - 33. Richard II, Duke of Normandy, d. 1026.
 - 32. Richard III, Duke of Normandy, d. 1028, m. Adela of France, d.1079, daughter of Robert II, King of France, 970-1031.
 - 31. Alice of Normandy m. Ranulph, Count of Bayeux. Their son
 - 30. Ranulph de Meschines, Viscount de Bayeux. Their son
 - 29. Ranulph de Meschines, Earl of Chester, d. 1128, m. Lucia Tailboys, d.1136
- She descended from:

- 37. Alfred the Great, King of England, 849-901. His daughter
- 36. Lady Ethelfleda m. Ethelred, Earl of Mercia, d. 912. They had
- 35. Lady Elfwina, who married Dulf of Devon and they had
- 34. Leofwine, Earl of Mercia. His son
- 33. Leofric III, Earl of Mercia, d. 1057, married Lady Godiva of Coventrytown. the legendary Saxon Lady who rode through the streets, d. 1080, the mother of
- 32. Alfgar III, Earl of Mercia, d. 1059, m. Princess Elfgifu, daughter of Ethelred II, King of England.
- 31. William, Lord Malet, General of William the Conqueror, d.1072.
- 30. Lucia of Mercia m. Ivo de Tailboys and they had
- 29. Lucia Tailboys m. Ranulph de Meschines, as above,. They were parents of
- 28. Adeliza Meshcines (Chester), d. 1128, m. Richard de Clare, Earl of Hertford, d. 1136. They had
- 27. Roger de Clare, Earl of Hertford, 1116-1173, m. Maud St. Hillary and had
- 26. RICHARD de CLARE, Surety for the Magna Charta, 1215, He married Amice Meullent, Countess of Gloucester. She descended from William the Conqueror as follows:

- 30. WILLIAM I, the CONQUEROR, (natural son by Arlette or Herleve), b. Falaise 1027, d. Rouen, 9 Sep 1087, Duke of Normandy, King of England 1066-1087, married 1053 Maud (or Matilda) of Flanders, b. 1032, d. 3 Nov 1083. He was the father of:
(We 121)
- 29. HENRY I, King of England b. 1068, d. 1 Dec 1135, King of England 1100-1135, called "Beauclerk", married 11 Nov 1100, Matilda of Scotland. He had issue by a number of mistresses.
(We 121 & 124)
- 28. Robert of Caen, (natural son of Henry I), b. c. 1090, d. Bristol c. 31 Oct 1147, called "the Consul" Earl of Gloucester, married Maud, dau. & h. of Robert Fitz Hamon, d. 1107.
(We 124.)
- 27. William Fitz Robert, d. 23 Nov 1183, Lord of the manor of Glamorgan and of Cardiff Castle, 2nd Earl of Gloucester, son of Robert, Earl of Gloucester, d.

- 1147, and Mabel, dau. of Robert Fitz Hamon, and grandson of King Henry I of England, married c. 1150, Hawise de Beaumont, d. 24 Apr 1197 (We 63 & 124)
26. Amice Meullent, d. 1224, Countess of Gloucester, d. 1225, married RICHARD de CLARE, a Surety for the Magna Charta, 1215, 6th Earl of Clare, Hertford and Gloucester, d. c. 28 Nov 1217. (We 63)
25. GILBERT de CLARE, Surety for the Magna Charta, 1215, b. 1180, d. Penrose, Brittany, 25 Oct 1230, Earl of Gloucester and Hertford; m. 9 Oct 1217, Isabel Marshal.
24. Isabel de Clare, b. 2 Nov 1226, d. aft. 10 Jul 1264; m. May 1240, Sir Robert de Brus, b. 1210, d. Lochmaben Castle, 31 Mar 1295, Lord of Annandale, son of Robert de Brus, d. 1251, and Isabella, dau. of David of Huntington and Maud of Chester.
23. Sir Robert de Brus, b. Jul 1243, d. bef. 14 Jun 1304, Earl of Carrick, Lord of Annandale,; m. (2) Turnberry, 1271, Margaret, Countess of Carrick, d. 1292, dau. of Nigel, Earl of Carrick, and Margaret, dau. of Walter, 3rd High Steward of Scotland. He descended from: (We 41)
29. Malcolm III and his wife Lady Margaret.
28. St. David I, hallowed by the people but never canonized, b. 1080. d. Carlisle, 24 May 1153, King of Scotland, 1124; m. 1113 Matilda, d. 1131, dau. of Waltheof, Earl of Northumberland, and Judith, niece of William the Conqueror. (We 170)
27. Henry, Prince of Scotland and Earl of Huntingdon, d. 12 June 1152; m. 1139, Ada de Warenne, dau. of William de Warenne and Isabel Vermandois. (We 93, 170) She descended from Hugh Magnus as follows: (We 93 & 170)
29. Adelaide de Vermandois, d. c. 1120, Countess of Vermandois and Valois; m. (1) HUGH MAGNUS, d. 1101, Duke of France and Burgundy, Marquis of Orleans, Count of Amiens, Chaumont, Paris, Valois, and Vermandois, a leader of the first Crusade; m. (2) bef. 1103, c. 1102, Reinald, Count of Clermont d. 1162. (We 50)
28. Isabel de Vermandois, d. 13 Feb. 1131, Countess of Leicester; m. (2) 1118 William de Warenne, d. 11 May 1138, second Earl of Surry. (We 50,83 & 93)
27. Ada de Warenne, d. 1178; m. Henry, Earl of Huntingdon and Northumberland, b. 1114, d. 12 Jun. 1152, Son of David I, King of Scots, and Maud of Northumberland. (We 89 & 93)
26. David, Earl of Huntingdon, knighted by Henry II, 1170; m. 26 Aug 1190, Maud, dau. of Hugh de Kevelioc, Earl of Chester, David d. 17 Jun 1219, at Yardley, Northhamptonshire, buried Sawtree Abbey. (We 252)
25. Isabel m. Robert Bruce, 4th Baron of Anandale, d. 1245. Isabel died 1252.
24. Robert Bruce, b. 1210, d. 1295; m. Isabel Clare, dau. of Gilbert de Clare, the Surety. (We 252)
23. Sir Robert de Bruce, b. 1243, d. 1304; m. Margaret Carrick. (We 252)
22. Robert de Bruce I, Earl of Carrick, b. Writtle, Co. Essex, 11 Jul 1274, d. Cadross, Scotland, 7 Jun 1329, King of Scotland, 27 Mar 1306-1329, a national hero of Scotland; m. (1) Isabel, d. 1297, dau. of Donald, Earl of Mar, by his first wife, Helen, dau. of Llewellyn ap Iorwerth, Prince of Wales. (We 252)
21. Marjory de Bruce, d. 2 Mar 1316; m. 1315, Walter Stewart, b. 1292, d. 9 Apr 1326, High Steward of Scotland. Walter Stewart descended from: (We 252)
28. GEOFFREY PLANTAGENET, Count of Anjou, Duke of Normandy, 1113-1151. He was the father of his natural son: (We 123)
27. Hamelin Plantagenet, Earl of Surry, d. 1202, m. 1164 as her (2) husband, Isabella de Warenne, d. 1199. They had: (We 123)
26. Isabella de Warenne, called Ida, d. 1199, who married ROGER BIGOD, Magna Charta Surety, 1215, b. 1150, d. bef. 2 Aug 1221, Steward of England, 2nd Earl of Norfolk. They were the parents of: (DNB Vol. XX, p. 819) (Br 88) (We 69)
25. HUGH BIGOD, Magna Charta Surety, 1215, d. Feb 1224/5, 3d Earl of Norfolk; m. Maud Marshal, d. 27 Mar 1248. (We 69 & 70)

24. Isabel Bigod; m. (2) after 1230, Sir John FitzGeoffrey, d.23 Nov 1258, of Shere, Farnbridge, etc., Justiciar of Ireland, 1245-1256, son of Geoffrey Fitzpiers, Earl of Essex and Aveline de Clare. (We 70,72,75 & 246C)
23. Avelina FitzJohn, D.C. 1274; M.C. 1257, Walter de Burgh, B.C. 1230, d. 28 Jul 1271, Earl of Ulster, son of Richard de Burgh, Justice, and Egidith de Lacy. (We 75)
22. Egidia (or Jill) de Burgh; m. James Stewart, 5th High Steward of Scotland, B.C. 1243, d. 1309. (We 75 A)
21. Marjory de Bruce, d. 2 Mar 1316; m. 1315, Walter Stewart, b. 1292, d. 9 Apr 1326, High Steward of Scotland. (We 252)
20. Robert II Stewart, b. 2 Mar 1315/6, d. Dundonald Castle, 19 Apr 1390, Earl of Atholl, 1341, Earl of Strathern, 1358, King of Scotland, 22 Feb 1370 71-1390,; m. 22 Nov 1347 (Papal dispensation), Elizabeth, dau. of Sir Adam Mure, of Rowallan, Co. Ayr, and Joan Cunningham. (We 252)
19. Robert III Stewart, (called John at birth), b. 1347, d. 4 Apr 1406, Earl of Carrick, 22 Jun 1368, King of Scotland, 1390-1406,; m. on or bef. 1367, Annabella, d. 1401, dau. of Sir Hugh Drummond and Mary Pontifex, of Strobhall. (We 252)
18. Mary Stewart, d. 1458; m.(1) 24 May 1397 (marriage contract), George Douglas, 1st Earl of Angus, 1389-1402, d. plague in England, 1402. (We 265)
17. Elizabeth Douglas; m. bet 6 & 16 Oct 1423, Sir Alexander Forbes, 1st Lord Forbes, b.c. 1380, d. 1448. (We 256)
16. James, 2d Lord Forbes had, in 1456, licence to fortify Drumminnor Castle, called Forbes; m. Egidia, dau. of William Keith, 1st Earl Marshal. (We 256)
15. William, 3d Lord Forbes; m. Christian Gordon, dau. of Alexander, 1st Lord of Huntly, and died bef. 5 Jul 1483. (LVJ 66) (We 256)
14. John, 6th Lord Forbes; m. (2) Christian, dau. of Sir John Lundin.(We 256)
13. William, 7th Lord Forbes; m. 19 Dec 1538, Elizabeth, dau. and co-heir of Sir William Keith, of Innerugie, as above. (LVJ 66) (We 256)
12. George Johnson, of that Ilk and Caskieben succeeded his grandfather in 1548, and died in 1593. He married Christian Forbes, dau. of William, 7th Lord Forbes, who survived him until 1622. Their 5th son was: (LVJ 2)
- George Johnson descended from:
22. Dominus Andrew de Garviach, Sheriff of Aberdeen, 1264, appears in 1273.
21. Sir James de Garviach, appears of Cordyce in 1316, and of Balnacraig in 1324-9; m. "Helen of Mar". His son: (LVJ 50, 61, 62)
20. Sir Andrew de Garviach, was Dominus de Caskieben, in 1357. His daughter and heiress, Margaret, became the wife of the first Johnston of Caskieben
19. Stephen de Johnston, called The Clerk, m. Margaret de Garviach, before Apr 1380. (LVJ 62, 63, 75)
18. John de Johnston m. Marjory Lichton and survived 1428. (LVJ 121)
17. Gilbert de Johnston m., bef. 1428, Elene Lichton, dau. of the Laird of Usan, was alive, 1476. (LVJ 121)
16. Alexander Johnston of that Ilk, succeeded before 1481. Before 1 Mar 1476, he m. Agnes Glaster of Glack. (LVJ 121)
15. William Johnston of that Ilk and Caskieben, fell at the battle of Flodden in 1513,; m. (1) Margaret Meldrum, dau. of the Laird of Fyvie. (LVJ 228)
14. James Johnston succeeded his father in 1513; m. Clara, dau of Barclay of Gartly. (LVJ 2)
13. William Johnston married Margaret Hay of Delgaty, was killed at the battle of Pinkie, 1547. (LVJ 2)
12. George Johnston married Christian Forbes, as above. (LVJ 2)
11. Dr. Arthur Johnston, Medicus Regius, the Latin poet, b. 1608, degree of MD in 1610, two wives, 13 children, d. 1641, buried, Oxford; m. Barbara Gordon. (LVJ 5)
10. Edward Johnson, emigrant to America;m. Elizabeth Walker, sister of George Walker. (LVJ 121, 122, 125, 128)

9. Benjamin Johnson, b. 1701, Hanover Co.,VA, d. bef. 1739; m. Marjory Massie, b. 1705. (LVJ 131)
8. Gideon Johnson, Sr., d. 1808, Amelia Co.,VA, to Rockingham Co.,NC; m. Ursula Allen, dau. of William Allen and Ann Owen.
7. Ursula Johnson, b. Amelia Co.,VA; m. John Pillow, 1745-1793, Amelia Co., VA, to Rockingham Co.,NC, to Davidson Co., TN.
6. Abner Pillow, 1784-1860; m. Mary S. (Polly) Thomas, 1788-1822, m.1808.
5. William H. Pillow, 1812-1864;m. Elizabeth T. Porter, 1817-1902.
4. William Reese Pillow 1842-1889; m. Elizabeth Jane Scales, 1849-1924.
- Pedigree of ALBERT CASWELL METTS, JR. ARMSTRONG HART PILLOW BARKER
- | | |
|--|--------------------------------------|
| 3. Elizabeth Porter Pillow, 1870-1953, | 3. Walter Reese Pillow,1886-1937, |
| m. John Madison Oliver,1867-1934. | m. Helen Esther Durden,1887-1975 |
| 2. Gladys Marie Oliver, 1893-1950, | 2. Walter Reese Pillow,Jr.,1911-1970 |
| m. Albert Caswell Metts, 1886-1965. | m. Harriet Lucile Gillespie, 1910- |
| 1. Albert Caswell Metts, Jr., 1921- | 1. Armstrong Hart Pillow, 1946- |
| m. Elizabeth Lee Gray, 1944. | m. Bruce Elkin Barker, 1983. |

Note: (We xxx) means ANCESTRAL ROOTS of Certain American Colonists Who Came to America before 1700 SEVENTH EDITION, 1992/3, by Weis, with Line Number.
 (Br xxx) means MAGNA CHARTA BARONS, 1915, by Browning, with page #.

Pedigree of

ALBERT CASWELL METTS, JR.

through the emigrant
GILES CARTER

This pedigree includes descent from **Sir Roger Bigod**, second Earl of Norfolk and Suffolk, who was one of the twenty-five Sureties elected to enforce the terms of the Magna Charta of England. The pedigree begins with Emperor Charlemagne, and the first twelve generations through Geoffrey Plantagenet are taken from the pedigree of Her Majesty Queen Elizabeth of England, published in Magna Charta, Wurts, v.3, p. 288. Queen Elizabeth's lineage has been traced to Boadicia ("Victoria"), British Queen before 62 A.D.; Tiberius Claudius Caesar, Emperor of Rome; and Mark Anthony.

Generation:

44. **CHARLEMAGNE**, Holy Roman Emperor, 742-814, m. Hildegarde, 757-782. They were the parents of
43. Pepin, 776-810, King of Italy, m. Bertha of Toulouse.
42. Bernhard, King of Lombardy, d. 812, m. Cunegonde.
41. Pepin, a lay abbot in 840, m. and had
40. Herbert I, Count of Vermandois, d. 902, m. and had
39. Herbert II, Count of Vermandois, d. 943, m. Hildebrand.
38. Robert, Count of Vermandois, d. 968, m. Adelaide de Chalons.
37. Adelaide, Countess of Chalons, d. 976, m. Geoffrey, Count d'Anjou.
36. Fulk III, Count d'Anjou, d. 1040, m. Hildegarde.
35. Ermengarde d'Anjou m. Geoffrey II de Gastinois.
34. Fulk IV, 1043-1109, Count d'Anjou, m. Bertrade de Montfort.
33. Fulk V, 1092-1144, Count d'Anjou, m. Ermengarde du Maine, d. 1126.

32. **GEOFFREY V "PLANTAGENET"**, 24 Aug 1113-7 Sep 1151, Count d'Anjou, Duke of Normandy, 1113-1151. He was the father of his natural son: (We 123)

31. Hamelin Plantagenet, Earl of Surry, d. 1202, m. 1164 as her (2) husband, Isabella de Warenne, d. 1199. They had: (We 123)

30. Isabella de Warenne, called Ida, d. 1199, who married **ROGER BIGOD, Magna Charta Surety, 1215**, b. 1150, d. bef. 2 Aug 1221, Steward of England, 2nd Earl of Norfolk. They were the parents of: (DNB Vol.XX, p. 819) (Br 88)

(We 69 & 93) (Browning 1898, p. 79; 1915, p. 88).

(The next nineteen generations from Roger Bigod, the Surety, to the emigrant, Giles Carter, were provided, by letter, dated 22 November 1971, from Mrs. R. J. Scanlin, Registrar of The National Society Magna Charta Dames, to Mrs Garrett C. Baker, 5446 Vanderbilt, Dallas, Texas)

29. Margery Bigod, m. William Hastings-his first marriage. (We 93)

28. Henry de Hastings, d. 1249, m. Ada, 4th dau. of David, Earl of

- Huntington, and his wife, Maud of Chester. (We 93)
27. Henry de Hastings m. Eve (Jean) Cantilupe.
26. John de Hastings, 2nd Baron Hastings and Baron of Bergavenny,
d.
1313, m. (1) Isabel, dau. of William de Valence, Earl of
Pembroke
and 1/2 brother of King Henry III.
25. Elizabeth Hastings, d. 6 March 1352, m. (3) Roger, Lord Grey
of
Ruthyn.
24. Reginald de Grey, 2nd Baron Gray of Ruthyn, b. 1322, d. 28
July
1388, m. before 29 Nov 1360, Alianore, dau. of Roger
LeStrange of
Knockyn, Salop.
23. Reginald de Gray, d. 18 Oct 1440, m. (2) Lady Jean, dau. of
Baron
Astley.
22. Eleanor Grey, m. William Lucy, Esq. of Charlecote, co.
Warwick.
21. Sir William Lucy, Knight, KB of Charlecote, m. Margaret, dau.
of
Thomas Brecknet, treasurer of Henry IV, m. (2) Alice, dau. of
William Hanbury.
20. Edmund Lucy of Charlecote, d. 1498, m. Lady Jean, dau. of Sir
Richard Ludlowe.
19. Sir Thomas Lucy of Charlecote, d. 1525, m. Lady Elizabeth,
dau. of
Sir Richard Emson.
18. William Lucy of Charlecote, d. 1551, m. Anne, dau. of Richard
Fermere of London.
17. Sir Thomas Lucy, MP of Charlecote, d. 1600, m. Joyce, 2nd
dau. of
Thomas Acton of Sutton.
16. Sir Thomas Lucy, Knight, of Charlecote, d. 1605, m. (2)
Constance,
dau. of Richard Kingsmill of High Clare.
15. Lady Barbara Lucy, m. Richard Tracy of Stanway and Tewksbury,
Sheriff of Gloucestershire in 1560.
14. Paul Tracy of Stanway, co. Gloucestershire, High Sheriff in
20th
of Queen Elizabeth I; created Baronet by King James I, 29
June
1611, m. Anne, dau. of Ralph Shakerly, Esq.
13. Elizabeth Tracy, m. Giles Carter of Swell in co.
Gloucestershire,
d. 1664.
12. Giles Carter, Emigrant to Jamestown, Va. Moved to Henrico Co,
Va.
where his will d. 14 Dec 1699-Pr:Feb 1701/2, m. Hannah
Crewes.
(The next four generations are documented in Giles Carter of
Virginia, by General W.G.H. Carter, 1909.)
11. Theodrick Carter I, c.1676-1737, of Henrico and Prince Edward
counties, m. Elizabeth ---.
10. Theodrick Carter II, d. 1777, of Prince Edward Co., m. Anne
Waddill, dau. of William Waddill.
9. Susannah (Nancy) Carter of Prince Edwards Co., m. Richard

- Stubblefield, 1732-1802, of Rockingham Co., NC.
8. Nancy Stewart Stubblefield, 1750-1826, m. William Bethell, 1744-1804, of Wales, American Revolutionary Captain.
7. William Bethell II, 1764-1833, m. Mary (Nancy) Watts, 1776-1875.
6. Jane Watt Bethell, 1809-1876, m. Dr. Robert Henry Scales, 1805-1885, of Rockingham County, NC.
5. William Nathaniel Scales, 1825-1864, m. Martha Jane Kaigler.
4. Elizabeth Jane Scales, 1849-1924, m. William Reese Pillow, 1842-1889
3. Elizabeth Porter Pillow, 1870-1953, m. John Madison Oliver, 1867-1934
2. Gladys Marie Oliver, 1893-1950 m. Albert Caswell Metts, 1886-1965
1. Albert Caswell Metts, Jr., 1921 - m. Elizabeth Lee Gray, 1944.

The National Society
An Hereditary Order



Magna Charta Dames
Instituted March 1, 1909

P.O. Box 4222, Phila., Pa. 19144

22 November 1971

Dear Mrs. Baker:

In reply to your recent inquiry concerning your lineage, we find that you are enrolled as a descendant of the Surety Roger Bigod through your connection with the Giles Carter family of Jamestown, Virginia.

Enclosed is an outline of the generations in the Old World. For purposes of comparison it would be a satisfaction to see the American generations to your own name, on the carbon copy, as convenient.

Sincerely,

Rose T. Scanlin (Mrs. R. J.)

Registrar

Mrs. Garrett C. Baker
~~5446~~ Vanderbilt
Dallas, Texas 75206

(Inclosure to letter from Mrs. R.J.Scanlin.)

1. Roger Bigod-2nd Earl of Norfolk and Suffolk, b. 1150, d. before 1221, m. (1) Isabella (Ida), dau. of Hameline Plantagenet.
2. Margery Bigod, m. William Hastings-his first marriage.
3. Henry de Hastings, d. 1249, m. Ada, 4th dau. of David, Earl of Huntington, and his wife, Maud of Chester.
4. Henry de Hastings m. Eve (Jean) Cantilupe.
5. John de Hastings, 2nd Baron Hastings and Baron of Bergavenny, d. 1313, m. (1) Isabel, dau. of William de Valence, Earl of Pembroke and $\frac{1}{2}$ brother of King Henry III.
6. Elizabeth Hastings, d. 6 March 1352, m. (3) Roger, Lord Grey of Ruthyn.
7. Reginald de Grey, 2nd Baron Grey of Ruthyn, b. 1322, d. 28 July 1388, m. before 29 Nv. 1360 Alianore, dau. of Roger LeStrange of Knockyn, Salop.
8. Reginald de Grey, d. 18 Oct. 1440, m. (2) Lady Jean, dau. of Baron Astley.
9. Eleanor Grey, m. William Lucy, Esq. of Charlecote, co. Warwick.
10. Sir William Lucy, Knight, KB of Charlecote, m. Margaret, dau. of Thomas Brecknet, treasurer to Henry IV, m. (2) Alice, dau. of William Hanbury.
11. Edmund Lucy of Charlecote, d. 1498, m. Lady Jean, dau. of Sir Richard Ludlowe.
12. Sir Thomas Lucy of Charlecote, d. 1525, m. Lady Elizabeth, dau. of Sir Richard Emson.
13. William Lucy of Charlecote, d. 1551, m. Anne, dau. of Richard Fermere of London.
14. Sir Thomas Lucy, MP of Charlecote, d. 1600, m. Joyce, 2nd dau. of Thomas Acton of Sutton.
15. Sir Thomas Lucy, Knt. of Charlecote, d. 1605, m. (2) Constance, dau. of Richard Kingsmill of High Clare.
16. Lady Barbara Lucy, m. Richard Tracy of Stanway and Tewksbury, Sheriff of Gloucestershire in 1560.
17. Paul Tracy of Stanway, co. Gloucestershire, High Sheriff in 20th of Queen Elizabeth I; created Baronet by King James I, 29 June 1611, m. Anne, dau. of Ralph Shakerly, Esq.
18. Elizabeth Tracy, m. Giles Carter of Swell in co. Gloucestershire, d. 1664.
19. Giles Carter, Emigrant to Jamestown, Va. Moved to Henrice Co, Va. where his will D. 14 Dec. 1699-Pr:Feb. 1701/2, m. Hannah Crewes.

The letter from Mrs. Scanlin with inclosure is included for use as proof by anyone who wishes to join the National Society Magna Charta Dames or the Somerset Chapter, Magna Charta Barons.

ALBERT CASWELL METTS, JR.

Descent from the Sureties for the Magna Charta:-

- William d'Albini, lord of Belvoir Castle, d. 1236.
- Hugh Bigod, heir to the earldoms of Norfolk and Suffolk, d. 1225.
- Roger Bigod, Earl of Norfolk and Suffolk, d. 1220.
- Henry de Bohun, Earl of Hertford, d. 1220.
- Gilbert de Clare, heir to the earldom of Hertford, d. 1229.
- Richard de Clare, Earl of Hertford, d. 1218.
- John Fitz Robert, lord of Warkworth Castle, d. 1240.
- John de Lacie, lord of Pontfract Castle, d. 1240.
- William de Lanvallei, lord of Stanway Castle, d. 1217.
- William Malet, sheriff of Somerset and Dorset, d. 1217.
- Saire de Quincey, Earl of Winchester, d. 1219.
- Robert de Roos, lord of Hamlake Castle, d. 1226.
- Robert de Vere, heir to the earldom of Oxford, d. 1221.

- 23. **KING EDWARD III**, married Philippa of Hainault. Their third son was
- 22. Lionel of Antwerp, K.G., married Elizabeth Burgh, descended as follows:
- 27. **WILLIAM d'ALBINI** the Surety was lord of Belvoir Castle and ninth in descent from Louis IV, King of France. He married Margery Umfraville and died 1 May 1236. Their son
- 26. William d'Albini married first Albreda.
- 25. Isabel d'Albini married to Robert de Roos, descended as follows:
- 27. **ROBERT de ROOS** the Surety was born in 1197 and died in 1226. He was 4th Baron of Hanlake Manor. His wife, Isabel, was daughter of William the Lion, King of Scotland, and they had
- 26. William de Roos, died 1258, married Lucia FitzPiers.
- 25. Robert de Roos, as above, married Isabel d'Albini.
- 24. William de Roos married Maud Vaux.
- 23. William de Roos married Margery Badlesmere.
- 22. Thomas de Roos, married Beatrice Stafford.
- 21. Margaret Roos, wife of Reynold de Gray, died 1440.
- 20. Elizabeth (Eleanor or Isabel) Gray, married to Robert, 5th Baron Poynings killed at the siege of Orleans in 1446.
- 19. Richard Poynings, died in his father's lifetime, 1430, married Alianore, daughter of John Berkeley, of Beverstone.
- 18. Eleanor Poynings, married to Henry Percy, died 1461, descended as follows:
- 28. **WILLIAM de LANVALLEI** the Surety was governor of Colchester Castle and married Hawise Basset. He died in 1217, leaving an only daughter
- 27. Hawise Lanvallei married to John de Burgh, died 1275.
- 26. John de Burgh, died 1279, married Cecily Baliol.
- 25. Margaret Burgh, married Richard, son of Walter de Burgh.
- 24. John de Burgh, died 1313, married Elizabeth Clare,
- 23. William de Burgh married Maud Lancaster,
- 22. Elizabeth Burgh, as above, married Lionel of Antwerp, K.G.
- 21. Philippa Plantagenet, their only child, became wife of Edmund Mortimer,
- 20. Elizabeth Mortimer married Henry "Hotspur" Percy,
- 19. Henry Percy died 1455, married Eleanor Neville,
- 18. Henry Percy, as above, married Eleanor Poynings.
- 17. Henry Percy, K.G., who was confined in the Tower of London from 1461 to 1469 and was released by King Edward IV, to whom he swore allegiance. He was murdered 28 Apr 1489, His wife was Maud, daughter of William Herbert, Earl of Pembroke, and they had four sons and three daughters, among whom was
- 16. Eleanor Percy, who became the wife of Edward Stafford, K.G., lord high constable of England in 1511. Like his father, he was the victim of domestic

treason and was decapitated on Tower Hill 17 May 1521. His baronial descent is as follows:

28. ROBERT de VERE the Surety was hereditary lord great Chamberlain of England, and 8th in descent from Hugh Capet. He died 25 Oct 1221, having married Isabel Bolebec.

27. Hugh de Vere, Earl of Oxford, died 1263, having married in 1223 Hawise Quincey, daughter of SAIRE de QUINCEY the Surety, who was Earl of Winchester and was born before 1154 and died 3 Nov 1219 on the way to Jerusalem. His wife was Margaret (Beaumont) Bellomont.

26. Robert de Vere, 5th Earl of Oxford and 6th great Chamberlain, who died 2 Sep 1296. He married Alice Saunford.

25. Joan de Vere, whose husband William de Warren, killed in a tournament at Croydon in 1285, was son of John, Earl of Warren.

24. Alice Warren, wife of Edmund FitzAlan, Earl of Arundel who without trial was beheaded at Hereford in 1326.

23. Richard FitzAlan "Copped Hat", Justiciar of North Wales and Admiral of the West, married second Eleanor Plantagenet, daughter of Henry, Earl of Lancaster.

22. Joane FitzAlan married to Humphrey de Bohun, descended as follows:

28. HENRY de BOHUN the Surety, was Earl of Hereford and 5th in descent from MALCOLM III, King of Scotland. He died on a pilgrimage to the Holy Land in 1220. His wife was Maud FitzGeoffrey.

27. Humphrey de Bohun, Earl of Hereford and Essex, married Maud, daughter of Raoul de Lusignan, Count of Eu.

26. Humphrey de Bohun married first Alianore Braos.

25. Humphrey de Bohun, died 1298, married Maud Fiennes.

24. Humphrey de Bohun, died 1322, married Princess Elizabeth, daughter of KING EDWARD I.

23. William de Bohun, K.G., born about 1310, died 1360, married Elizabeth Badlesmere.

22. Humphrey de Bohun, K.G., lord high constable of England, died 1372. His wife, as above, was Joane FitzAlan. They had

21. Alianore, called also Eleanor Bohun, whose husband was Thomas of Woodstock, Duke of Gloucester, 6th son of KING EDWARD III

20. Anne Plantagenet, widow of Thomas and wife of his brother Edmund, 5th Earl of Stafford, K.G., who was killed 22 Jul 1403. Her third husband was William Bourchier, of whom later, Edmund was descended as follows:

27. RICHARD de CLARE the Surety, was 4th Earl of Hereford, dying in 1217. He descends from Sveide the Viking. He married Amicia of Gloucester and they were the parents of

26. GILBERT de CLARE the Surety, who was born about 1180 and died 25 Oct 1230. His wife Isabella was one of the sisters of William Marshall the Surety

25. Richard de Clare married Maud, daughter of the Surety JOHN de LACIE, was 15th in descent from Alfred the Great and 28th in descent from Cerdic, and married second Margaret, daughter of the Surety SAIRE de QUINCEY.

24. Gilbert de Clare, Earl of Gloucester and Hertford, who died in 1295, having married second Joan of Acre (daughter of KING EDWARD I and his wife Eleanor of Castile.

23. Margaret Clare, wife of Hugh, died 1347, son of Hugh, Lord Audley.

22. Margaret Audley, married Ralph, Lord Stafford, K.G.

21. Hugh Stafford, K.G. died 1386, married Philippa, daughter of Thomas de Beauchamp, K.G.

20. Edmund Stafford, K.G., as above, married Anne Plantagenet.

19. Humphrey Stafford, K.G., killed 27 Jul 1460, married Anne Nevill,

18. Humphrey Stafford, slain in the battle of St. Albans, 22 May 1455, having married Margaret, daughter of Edmund, Duke of Somerset, K.G. (who was son of

John Beaufort, K.G., and grandson of John of Gaunt, K.G., 4th son of KING EDWARD III) They had

17. Henry Stafford, K.G., who was beheaded in the market place at Salisbury 2 Nov 1483. He married Katherine, daughter of Richard Widville, Earl Rivers. She descended from:

26. WILLIAM MALET the Surety, q.v., lord of Curry-Malet, Somersetshire, died about 1217, married Mabel (called also Alice) Basset.

25. Mabel Malet married Hugh de Vivonia, baron of Chewton.

24. William de Vivonia de Fortibus married Maud of Kyme.

23. Cecily Vivonia married John de Beauchamp, who died in 1283. In the 5th of King Edward I he was made governor of the Castles of Caermerdin and Cardigan.

Their son

22. John de Beauchamp took part in the wars of Scotland and soon after, in the 14th of King Edward II, he succeeded to the extensive landed possessions of his mother in cos. Dorset, Wilts, Surrey and Cambridge. Two years afterward he was made governor of the Castle of Bridgewater. He died in 1336.

21. William de Beauchamp married and had

20. Mary Beauchamp who married John Bodulgate (Bedelgate).

19. Elizabeth (Mary) Bodulgate married Richard Woodville (Wydville) died 1441, son of John and grandson of Richard Woodville and wife Elizabeth Lyons.

18. Richard Woodville of Grafton, Earl Rivers, K.G., governor of the Tower of London, knighted in 1426, was a great warrior on the Lancastrian side. He was Treasurer of the Exchequer and afterward Lord High Constable of England for life. In 1436 he married Jacqueline of Luxembourg, born 1415, died 1472, also of royal descent, They had

17. Katherine Woodville who married Henry Stafford, K.G., as above, and had

16. Edward Stafford, K.G., as above, married Eleanor Percy.

15. Mary Stafford who became the wife of George de Nevill, K.G., Lord Abergavenny,, descended as follows:

24. JOHN FITZROBERT the Surety, was high sheriff of co. Northumberland and governor of New-Castle-upon Tyne, and married Ada Baliol. He died in 1240

23. Roger FitzJohn, lord of Warkworth, died 1249, married Isabel.

22. Robert FitzRoger married Margaret Zouche.

21. Anastasia FitzRobert married to Ralph de Neville.

20. Ralph de Neville, died 1367, married Alice Audley.

19. John de Neville, K.G., married Maud Percy.

18. Ralph de Neville, K.G. married Joan Beaufort, daughter of John of Gaunt and granddaughter of KING EDWARD III. Their fourth son was

17. Edward de Neville, K.G., who died 18 Oct 1476, having married Elizabeth Beauchamp descended as follows:

28. ROGER BIGOD the Surety was Earl of Norfolk and Suffolk and 15th in descent from Sveide the Viking. Born about 1150, he died in 1221, having married Isabella, daughter of Hameline Plantagenet. Their son

27. HUGH BIGOD was also a Surety, and Earl of Norfolk and Suffolk. He married about 1212 Maud, a sister of William Marshall the Surety, who was also 16th in descent from Sveide the Viking.

26. Isabel Bigod married first to Gilbert de Lacy, died 1230.

25. Margery Lacy married John Verdon.

24. Theobald de Verdon, died 1309, married Margery.

23. Theobald de Verdon, married first Maud, daughter of Edmund, Lord Mortimer of Wigmore. She died in 1315 and their second daughter was

22. Elizabeth Verdon, who became the wife of Bartholomew Burgerssh, constable of Dover Castle who died 3 Aug 1355. They had

21. Bartholomew Burgerssh, an original Knight of the Garter, married first Cecily, daughter of Richard of Weyland, and had

20. Elizabeth Burgerssh, born 1375. For his gallant conduct in the French Wars, Sir Edward was summoned to Parliament from 1357 to 1372. Their son

19. Thomas Despenser, K.G., beheaded 1400, married Constance, daughter of Edmund of Langley, K.G., son of **KING EDWARD III**. Their only daughter was
18. Isabel Despenser who became the wife of Richard Beauchamp, Lord Abergavenny and Earl of Worcester, also of baronial descent. Their daughter
17. Elizabeth Beauchamp inherited from her grandfather the barony of Despencer when his attainder was reversed in 1461. She married Edward de Nevill, K.G. They had
16. George de Neville who was knighted at the battle of Tewksbury 9 May 1471. He died 20 Sep 1492 having married Margaret, daughter of Sir Hugh Fenne, treasurer of the household of King Edward VI. She died 28 Sep 1485, leaving
15. George Neville, K.G., K.B., born 1483, died 1536, married Mary Stafford.
14. Ursula Neville who died in 1575, married Sir Warham St.Leger of Ulcombe, Kent, born 1525, died 1597, Chief Governor, 1565, and Knight Marshal of Munster in 1579. They had
13. Anne St.Leger, a descendent of Alfred the Great, born in Chilham in 1555. She died 24 Aug 1595. He was Muster-master General of English Army. They had
12. Sir Dudley Digges of Chilham, near Canterbury. He was born 1583 and died 18 Mar 1639. He attended University College. He presented 13 generations of his family to the Visitations of Kent, 1619. He was a member of the London Company and Master of the Rolls in 1619. He married Lady Mary Kemp who inherited Chilham Castle where she was born and died in 1620. Their son
11. Edward Digges was a colonial Governor of Virginia. He was born in 1620 and died in 1676 at Belfield, Virginia. He married Elizabeth Page who died in 1691. Their daughter
10. Catherine Digges was born in 1654 and died in 1727. She married William Herndon who was born in Kent, England in 1649 and died in 1722. They had
9. Edward Herndon of New Kent Co., VA, born 1678 and died 1757. He married Mary Waller of Newport Pagnell, born 1674 and died 1722. They had
8. Anne Herndon of Orange Co., VA, born about 1712 and died in 1777. She married James Lea who died in 1771. Their daughter
7. Delphi Lea was born in 1748 and died 1813. She married Joseph Henderson, who was born 1737 and died 1809. They moved to Wilkes Co., GA. Their daughter
6. Isabella Graves Henderson died in Wilkes Co., GA on 12 Oct 1826, married Joshua Callaway, Sr., born 1757, died after 1794. Their son
5. Rev. Joshua Sanford Callaway was a famous Baptist preacher in Georgia. He lived from 1789 to 1854. His second wife, Elizabeth Shivers, of Hancock Co. was born in 1798 and died in 1831. They were the parents of
4. Mary Milner Callaway was born in 1828, died in 1883. She married Capt. William Oliver, a Confederate Officer. He was half owner of mills hiring 2200 people. He lived from 1829 to 1891. Their son
3. John Madison Oliver was born 1867, died 1934. A graduate of University of Miss., he owned one of the first telephone companies in America. He married Elizabeth Porter Pillow of Greenwood, MS, born 1870, died 1953. Their daughter was
2. Gladys Marie Oliver of Gainesville, GA. She was was born in 1893, died in 1950. She married Albert Caswell Metts, of Greenwood, MS, born 1886, died 1965. He was a Major in the Artillery in World War I.
1. Albert Caswell Metts, Jr. was born in 1921.

WILLIAM BODDIE

Generations 1 through 25 are from "The ROYAL DESCENTS of 500 IMMIGRANTS to the American Colonies or the United States Who Were Themselves Notable or Left Descendants Notable in American History", by Gary Boyd Roberts, published in 1993.

1. Louis IV, King of France, d. 954 (probable grandson maternally of Edward the Elder, King of England, d. 924 = Gerberga, daughter of Henry I the Fowler, German Emperor, d.936
 2. Charles, Duke of Lower Lorraine = Adelaide ---
 3. Gerberga of Lower Lorraine = Lambert, Count of Louvain
 4. Maud of Louvain = Eustace I, Count of Boulogne
 5. Lambert, Count of Lens = Adeliza of Normandy, sister of William I, the Conqueror, King of England and descendant of Charlemagne
 6. Judith of Lens (paternity uncertain) = Waltheof II, Earl of Huntingdon, Northampton, and Northumberland
 7. Matilda of Northumberland = Simon de St. Liz, Earl of Huntingdon and Northampton
 8. Matilda de St. Liz = Robert de Clare
 9. Walter FitzRobert = Maud de Lucy
 10. Alice FitzWalter (sister of Robert FitzWalter, leader of the Magna Charta barons) = Gilbert Pecche
 11. Hamon Pecche = Eve ---
 12. Gilbert Pecche = Joan de Creye
 13. Gilbert Pecche, 1st Baron Pecche = Iseult ---
 14. Sir Simon Pecche = Agnes Holme
 15. Margaret Pecche = John Hunt
 16. Iodena Hunt = Thomas Cornish
 17. John Cornish = ---
- (NOTE: The ancestors above are also those of President Calvin Coolidge)
18. Margaret Cornish (sister of the 2nd John) = Thomas Mildmay

19. Walter Mildmay = Mary Everard (sister of Thomas Everard who married Mary Cornish)

20. Thomas Mildmay = Anne Reade

21. John Mildmay = Frances Rainbow

22. Thomasine Mildmay = John Boddie

23. Thomas Boddie = ---

24. John Boddie = Mary ---

The following generations are taken from Metts Ancestors in America, Pp. 105 - 139.

25. William Boddie of Virginia, b. c.1635 in England, d. 1717, Isle of Wight, VA = (1) Anna ---, d. 1683; (2) Elizabeth; (3) Mrs. Mary (----) Griffin. By Anna, their daughter was

26. Mary Boddie, b. c. 1653, in England = John Browne, d. 1720

27. Thomas Browne, d. 1718, Chowan Co., NC = Christian ---

28. Sarah Browne = Daniel McDaniel, d. 1729, Craven C., NC

29. Anne McDaniel = John Oliver, b. c.1735, d. 1787, Jones Co, NC

30. McDaniel Oliver b. 1772, d. 1831 = Charlotte ---, b. 1775, d. 1820, Twiggs Co, GA

31. Wiley Oliver, b. 1802, d. 1853 Eufalla, AL = Milbray Faulk, b. 1808, d. 1853

32. Capt. William Oliver was a Confederate Officer. He was half owner of mills hiring 2200 people. He lived from 1829 to 1891 = Mary Milner Callaway, born in 1828, died in 1883

33. John Madison Oliver was born 1867, died 1934. A graduate of University of Miss., he owned one of the first telephone companies in America. He married Elizabeth Porter Pillow of Greenwood, MS, born 1870, died 1953.

34. Gladys Marie Oliver of Gainesville, GA, born 1893, died 1950 = Albert Caswell Metts, of Greenwood, MS, born 1886, died 1965. He was a Major in the Artillery in World War I. Their son was

35. Albert Caswell Metts, Jr., born in 1921.

JOHN WALLER

Generations 1 through 18 are from "The ROYAL DESCENTS of 500 IMMIGRANTS to the American Colonies or the United States Who Were Themselves Notable or Left Descendants Notable in American History", by Gary Boyd Roberts, published in 1993.

1. William I the Lion, King of Scotland, d. 1214 = Ermengarde de Beaumont

2. (illegitimate by a daughter of Richard Avenal) Isabel of Scotland = Robert de Ros, Magna Charta Surety

3. Sir William de Ros = Lucy FitzPiers

4. Sir William de Ros = Eustache FitzHugh

5. Lucy de Ros = Sir Robert Plumpton

6. Sir William Plumpton = Christiana ----

7. Alice Plumpton = (1) Sir Richard Sherburne; (2) Sir John Boteler

(Note: Ancestors 1 through 7 are, also, ancestors of President George Washington.)

8. (by 2) Sir William Boteler = Elizabeth Standish

9. Sir John Boteler = Isabel Harington, daughter of Sir William Harington and Margaret de Neville, SETH

10. Elizabeth Boteler = Hamon Mascy

11. Margaret Mascy = John Holcroft

12. Margaret Holcroft = James Gerard

13. William Gerard = Dorothy Page

14. Dorothy Gerard = Thomas Waller

15. Edmund Waller (not the poet of the same name, who was a second cousin of the half blood of this Edmund) = Mary Smith

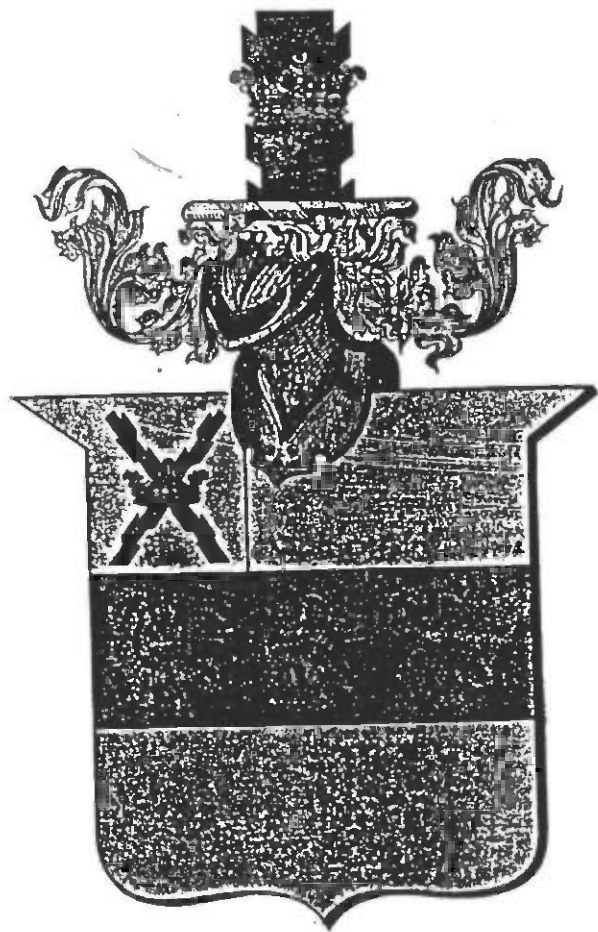
16. Thomas Waller = Ann Keate

17. John Waller = Mary Pomfrett

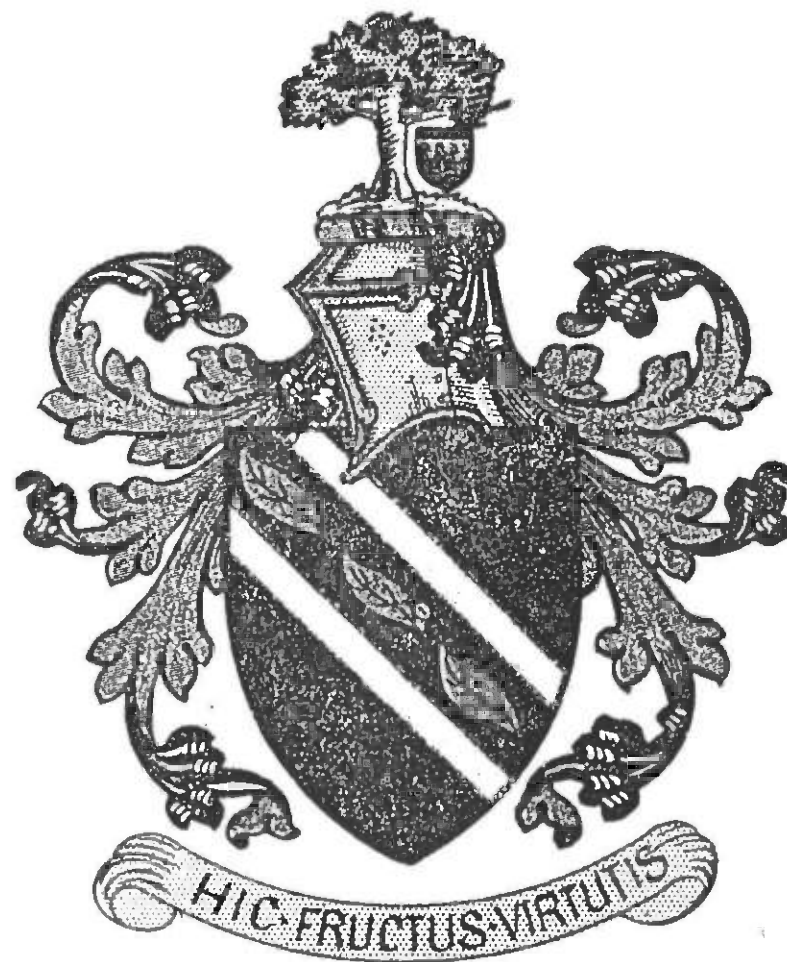
18. Col. John Waller of Virginia = Dorothy King

(NOTE: Following lineage from Metts Ancestors in America, p.226..)

19. Edward Herndon of New Kent Co., VA, born 1678 and died 1757. He married Mary Waller of Newport Pagnell, born 1674 and died 1722. They had
20. Anne Herndon of Orange Co., VA, born about 1712 and died in 1777. She married James Lea who died in 1771. Their daughter
21. Delphi Lea was born in 1748 and died 1813. She married Joseph Henderson, who was born 1737 and died 1809. They moved to Wilkes Co., GA. Their daughter
22. Isabella Graves Henderson died in Wilkes Co., GA on 12 Oct 1826, married Joshua Callaway, Sr., born 1757, died after 1794. Their son
23. Rev. Joshua Sanford Callaway was a famous Baptist preacher in Georgia. He lived from 1789 to 1854. His second wife, Elizabeth Shivers, of Hancock Co. was born in 1798 and died in 1831. They were the parents of
24. Mary Milner Callaway was born in 1828, died in 1883. She married Capt. William Oliver, a Confederate Officer. He was half owner of mills hiring 2200 people. He lived from 1829 to 1891. Their son
25. John Madison Oliver was born 1867, died 1934. A graduate of University of Miss., he owned one of the first telephone companies in America. He married Elizabeth Porter Pillow of Greenwood, MS, born 1870, died 1953. Their daughter was
26. Gladys Marie Oliver of Gainesville, GA. She was was born in 1893, died in 1950. She married Albert Caswell Metts, of Greenwood, MS, born 1886, died 1965. He was a Major in the Artillery in World War I. Their son was
27. Albert Caswell Metts, Jr., born in 1921.



Boddie



WALLER

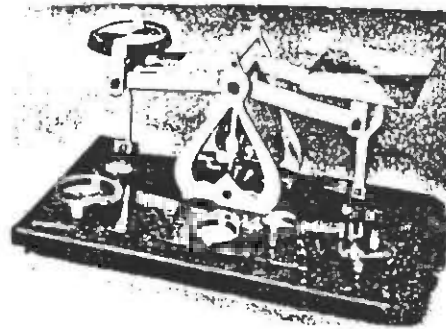
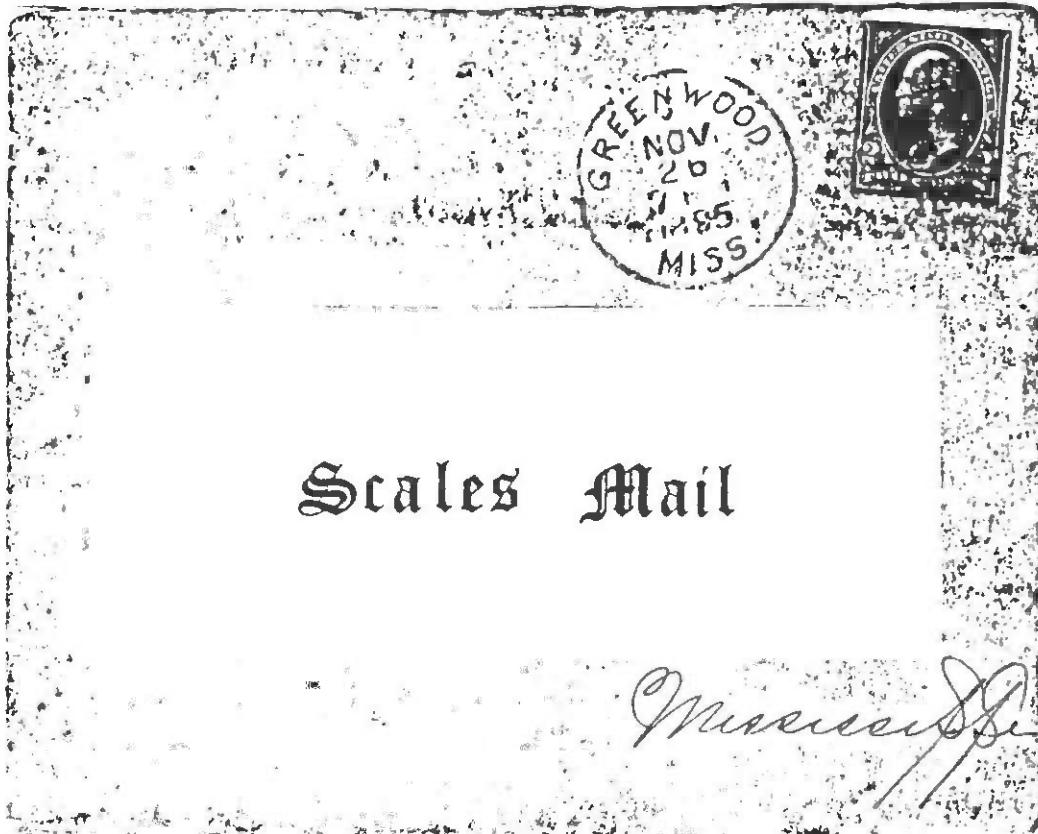
FORMERLY OF SPELDHURST

Arms.—Argent, on a fesse azure, three pelicans or, vulning their breasts gules, on a canton argent, two staves raguly in saltire of the fourth, charged with a ducal coronet or.

Crest—On the middle of a staff raguly gules, a ducal coronet or.

(See Burke: General Armory, London 1884 page 94.)

APPENDIX G



A mail scale

1987 - This pamphlet was prepared separately in 1985. It is included in this fifth edition because of its historic content and the insight into the personality and life of Martha Jane Kaigler Scales, wife of William Nathaniel Scales.

1985

ALBERT CASWELL METTS, JR.
4019 Sylvan Oaks Drive.
San Antonio, Texas 78229

FOREWORD

Many legends of the Old South were documented in fiction by people who wished that life on the old plantation had been like it never was. Often, stories passed from generation to generation strayed from the truth. In the old family legends the best was remembered, but the worst was forgotten. On the other hand, some historians relentlessly pursue the truth with persistence and patience and when factual information is found, it is recorded.

The letters reproduced here are valuable and interesting because they are first hand accounts of life in Greenwood, Mississippi, a hundred years ago. No explanations, expansions, or conclusions are needed. The reader gets personal and factual reports from the letter writers telling of their interests, activities, happiness and sorrows. They tell the true story of their life in the 1880's.

Most Americans think of the Mississippi Delta as the land below New Orleans where the Mississippi River runs into the Gulf of Mexico. However, people in Mississippi consider the delta to be the great oval land mass between Vicksburg and Memphis, bound on the east by hills that rise abruptly from the flat sea of rich yankee topsoil left ages ago by the ever changing Father of Waters. On the western side of the delta, a dirt levee holds the crooked and mighty Mississippi River within its banks. Greenwood is in the center of the delta on the Yazoo and Tallahatchie Rivers. The Scales and Pillow plantations are west of the town.

Nature abhors a straight line. Change is inevitable and continuous. The loss of the War Between the States brought changes to the South from which it has never recovered. From the chaos that followed Lee's surrender, some sort of social order evolved by the 1880's. People learned again to respect basic human needs - food, clothing and shelter. Also, we see them clinging to close family ties.

Man learns from the past. After looking back for a hundred years, can we look to the future for the same period? We know that cycles are natural. A lost man circles to his own trail. The earth follows its orbit. The Bible tells of good times followed by bad ones. Even life is a cycle. In the Mississippi delta more than half of the people are black, the white people own most of the land. Many black children and few white children are born. Will these white children move on to better places to live, leaving the land? Will the black children want to farm the land, or, too, will they move on? Will the delta return to tropical forest populated by swarms of mosquitoes? If this happens, the cycle will be complete. Old Mother Nature has been harsh throughout the history of man. Even the muddy Mississippi lies in wait to reclaim its ancient channels through Clarksdale to Greenwood and on past Yazoo City and Vicksburg to the shallow southern sea.

Scales Mail



LETTERS - MARTHA JANE KAIGLER SCALES TO ADDIE PINCK SCALES BALL

Martha Jane Kaigler had five sisters. One was named Adeline, called Addie, who married Harris and lived in Franklin, LA. She had a daughter named Mollie Harris. Then came sisters Ellen A.; Catherine; Mary Ann, who married Sam Lesslie of Greenwood; and Elizabeth Lovie. Martha's children were Elizabeth Jane, Addie Pinck, Mattie and Alfred Leslie. Lizzie had Mattie, Bessie, William H. (died young), Annie, Addye, William N. (Will), Robert Lessley (Bob), Terry (died as a baby), Mary, and Walter. Martha called people by the first letter of their name. L is Lizzie, P is William Reese Pillow, who died in 1889, M or Aunt M is Mary Ann Kaigler Lesslie, Sister A is Adeline, mother of Mollie Harris.

Addie Pinck Scales Ball married Dr. John Lewis Ball, mentioned often in these letters. They had seven children. Two of the children were Dr. William Pinck Ball and Jennie Lewis Ball Cyrus. She is the "Jennie" in the letters.

In 1880, Martha (M.J.) is 56 years old - 64 in 1888. Lizzie is 31 in 1880, 39 in 1888. Elizabeth Jane (L or Lizzie) had a sister, Mattie and her oldest child had the same name. The sister, Mattie Kaigler married Waites Terry. Both died young leaving no children. Martha refers to Waites in her letters. Also, Adeline had a daughter Mattie. Martha calls New Orleans the "City". This transcription is as exact as reading the old letters allows. [Notes are shown in brackets, are for explanation, and are not part of the letters.] ??? means that words could not be read or are uncertain. Unless a letter is identified as being written by someone else, it was written by Martha Jane Kaigler Scales to her daughter, Addie Pinck. Other documents are entered in sequence so the story becomes clearer.

Martha writes without worry about sentences, punctuation or capitals. Her spelling is remarkable. Remember that most people in her generation could not read or write - particularly women. The constant whine about poor health may be because she was writing to the member of the family who was a doctor. He may have left Mississippi to get away from all the sick Pillows and Scales! Also, it may have been fashionable for ladies to be "in

ill health". Martha lived to the age of 82. Lizzie, Elizabeth Jane Scales Pillow, lived 75 years. Her daughter Elizabeth Porter Pillow Oliver lived 83 years. Addie Pinck Scales Ball lived a good life until she died at the age of 73

(31 December)

1880

My Dear Daughter

It has now been two weeks since I wrote last, am just getting about after a spell of plurisy & rheumatism not able to go out of room Lizzie has had a very sick family & little Robert [This is Bob Pillow at two years old] is still in doubt he & Terry [This baby died two weeks later, 15 Jan 1881] had croop & if be he Has pneumonia Lizzie is up, Pillow [This is William Reese Pillow, husband of Elizabeth Jane] compelled to remain in town L stayed with them at night. Mattie is sick a great deal & fear she has dropsey - & I am so uneasy about her. We have had fearful weather Snow still on the ground & the coldest sort of weather L [Leslie] is tired of farming before he begins & is trying to rent out to Waites he thinks there is too much hard work I'm decidedly in favor of renting I still have no cook Mr. D & I manage to get coffee bread or biscuit & fry meat sometimes all at my fire place. Alf broke my wagon entirely down yesterday & we are without wood or nearly so tomorrow is new year I hope the Holidays have been pleasant for your whole family I was taken last tuesday night week & have seen none but my family Mr Sisloff Sam Atelay & Mr. Edmondson I forgot to say we cook grits. I recon all my flowers are killed Hyacinths & Pansys ought be beautiful after this cold spell I look for Sister Mary next week but if could be would rather wait until I get a cook she is to come over to consult Col George the roads are terrible Pillow Waites Leslie & Mr D walk instead of ride to town L got me 8 delightful fresh Pears from the China men last week the cattle have died up dreadfully so many a corn [The writing is clear, but meaning is not known.] Well I wish you all a happy & prosperous new year kiss the children love to you & Dr Ball. love to Fannie & all friends Ely Waites & wife have been several days with Mattie we had a new Judge but he wouldn't be persuaded to ajourn court on account of bad weather Mr Montjoy has rented his place can't be satisfied since his wifes death the old blacksmith Mr Howard Lykes & old Ike Doby or McLemore, are dead died about the time Eldredge died Mr Dennis expects to live with Jasper Tom D talks of overseeing for Dr Lucas he has been right sick here old Jinny is dead burried yesterday pneumonia. My hands have all backed out of renting after taking all my land love to all of you affect Mother

M.J.Scales

Kiss all the children

M J Scales

[Most of the letters in this document were written on lined tablet paper, but the next letter and one other are written on fine stationery embossed with a raised picture of the U.S. Capital building and the word "Congress" over the dome.]

Feb 11th 1880

My Dear Daughter

I was going to La to day Mollie Wrote to Mr Pillow but he cant go expected to go with me but old Edmundson told him a false hood & he has no money to help them with if nothing prevents I will start monday morning it was so cloudy & rained at night I ached so I was afraid to start have reumatism all over Mrs D. Davis is the only one who suffers just as I do even with the loss of mind but her hands are worse Sister Mary's [Mary Ann Kaigler Lesslie] fingers have enlarged so she cant hardly put on any kind of glove joints nearly an inch thick her first fore finger on right hand looks out of place other wise she keeps well. The business is to raise the first Mortgage or rather to pay the owner & take the first Mortgage myself I will have to borrow one thousand dollars but P [William Reese Pillow] may take that much off of my hands the amount is 2,000 I have one thousand in the city [New Orleans] besides enough to run the place & take me to Texas if nothing occurs out of the usual way Pillow cant leave Lizzie she dont know where to look suffers so much with heart disease she is very large. Mattie likes Cary Woods finely. my oats look fine all of the negroes are doing finely no kan say more here yet except Steven Johnson that I have heard of, he dont live here, I havent forgot our buggy - With much love to you all
Your affect Mother

M J Scales

Kiss all the children

Waites took some seed to mail to you Pumpkins. long yellow & we suppose the very large Winter squash the smallest seed Pumpkins the Kershaw seed you will know I had to mix them 2 kinds in each paper if nothing happens I'll be gone over two weeks, tell Johny he must be good I'm very proud of William and Jennie tell Scales I'm proud of him & Johny for helping you Kiss them all for me little Addie [Addye Pinckney Pillow - 1874-1972 - here she is six years old.] says she is bound to go with me to see you this summer P- [William Reese Pillow] looks badly is very yellow Leslie left to Minter City monday to be gone until that evening Texas [taxes] collecting.

Saterday

Lizzie has a fine boy & was so sick last night knew nothing of it until morning

Sunday evening

Lizzie has had a chill L [Leslie] will mail this as he goes for the Dr. her babe favors all the others.

[This child is Terry Pillow. Family records show his birth as 03 Feb 1880. He died 15 Jan 1881. It seems that the 03 Feb should be 13 Feb.]

[There are two letters from a cousin Mollie to Addie Pinck. Martha Jane's sister Adeline had a daughter, Molly Harris. She wrote these letters. The children mentioned as going to public school must be hers.]

Your letter received 19th.

Jan 21 1882

My dear Cousin

Your letter of the twelvth inst came duly to hand. I am surprised that the molasses has not reached you it has had

time to go to Europe. I inclose the bill of lading & did not know whether I ought to send it to you or keep it. We had a delightful visit from Aunt Mary only she returned so quickly we did not see half enough of her. She carried Katie back home with her. They stayed in N.O.[New Orleans] Monday until Friday. I was all ready to go with them as far as N.O. my trunk packed and all I had to do was to put on my hat - when I got a business message that compelled me to stay at home. I felt just like taking a Boohoo if I had been a few years younger think I would have indulged. You are a bad girl very bad to accuse me of taking offence when I was just thinking it was as sweet as could be in you to wish me to have it - but - I know how hard you have to work and I was not going to take your money to get something nice to eat - when it was not necessary. I never in the world would dream of accusing you of stingynest - and feel assured that if we were in want no one would be more willing according to their means than your dear self to help us. But - as long as we are not dear cousin don't expect me to take your money big or little unless you get a lottery as Aunt M [Mary] talks about. Little Fran has been very ill with malarial fever but is up again. Ma is quite well and I think we will sell our place. We have an offer of thirty five thousand twelve of it cash. Our debts are about ten so that will give us enough to live on economically. We are negotiating. The gentle seemed anxious to buy. I do hope you will not be troubled about the molasses. Give my love to Dr. Ball and all the children and if you do accuse me of any more meanness I will come over and fight-it-out- Ever Your loving cousin

Mollie

[The next letter was written to Addie Pinck Scales Ball from her Aunt Mary - sister of Martha Jane Kaigler Scales. Mary Ann Kaigler married Sam Lessley. This is the origin of the Lessley names in the family with unusual as well as usual spelling. Mary Ann inherited the Double Oaks Plantation west of Greenwood, MS]

Greenwood Miss Nov 19th /82

My Dear Niece

Your welcome message of love came to me while I was at Lizzies on a visit. It made me sigh that you were not with us. I had a pleasant visit of three days duration. Your Ma being there the most of the time & they were all well, which is the greatest of blessings, & your Ma related to me all her journeyings & pleasures of the past summer which gave me pleasure in change of thought, she & Lizzie met at Grand Junction & returned home together, she stays at home some nights & a part of every day, but cant get a cook, so I did not go to her home at all, she seemes unhappy there & I know it is because she feels so unsettled, the yard covered with leaves & no one to clean up anywhere, what a pity to have such a pretty home & let it look so neglected, so different from the olden times when love and friendship ruled supreme when her children were all around her and she felt there was a work to be done, then her pride was stimulated & and she lived for them. Now she has only Leslie at home & all is changed, so sadly changed. Lizzie is thinking or speaking of getting a governess for her children at home, she will leave Mattie & Bessie in Tenn I recon until they are grown, & go every summer to see them, & I will remain in Miss awhile longer perhaps, & then & then. We have no preacher at this time not even a methodist, but we will have by january. Fanny is well

again & sends love to you. Mrs Baskett's health is better, though she looks very pale & delicate she does the cooking for 7 in the family, she has a boy 13 or 14 years old to assist her, & he is a great help, so much better than a girl. & stays at home better, old Mrs Taylor is very sick, & 'tis thought that Mrs Hamilton has cancer, she suffers intensely, & Dr Davis says cannot get well, poor woman, 'tis sad to die & leave little helpless children, & they have been spoiled, & taught nothing in the way of work. I do hope and pray that you & Dr Ball will live to raise yours. Your Ma says Jennie is very bright in books, I am so glad I hope you can educate her thoroughly, so if she has her living to make, she can make it by teaching school, boys can work in one place if not in another, but girls have a hard time sometimes. Your Ma is speaking of going off somewhere says she dont know where yet, but any way she is going, is nt it nice to have plenty of money so as to go whenever the notion takes you. This is a very poor letter but please excuse it, & try to take care of yourselves & live for your children, take care of Leslie & make him good and smart.

Affectionately Aunt Mary

I lost all the money I speculated with in the marriage associations, now I will quit.

Greenwood Miss
Dec. 20th 1882

My Dear Daughter

I have only sad news to write Old gen Humphrey died last night Phil Cobb about a week ago & Young Mathews Dr Henry head man last week besides many negroes. McNeil Daughter Kate H is going to move to Winona to live & take Boarders & her Pa & step Mother she says is going every badly wants to sell out Pillow offered his & my Place this morning Webster has offered his small place & B Chambers would if he could even Mrs Sisloff wants to sell & go to the Pina woods I am right unwell again this evening suffering with my liver & swelling considerdibly.

Lizzie sent a trunk to her children with 5 large cakes Preserves salmon turkey Pickle Oranges Raisons Apples Candy & Pecans, besides a few Presents from the children to the girls I have gotten nothing for anyone except 2 small rocking chairs & a gal of whiskey for Le [Leslie] & my Egg nog which we take every morning it seems to be of service to me Lizzie is broke down it was Leslie that thought of going to Tenn but has given it out I heard Sister Mary [Mary Ann Kaigler Lesslie] spoke of going to Oxford with Al Smith's family they want to take Annie with them [Annie Henry Pillow -1873-1899] as they are Pillow I think he may agree to it. the baby is so good Addie is having chills looks badly but Annie is fat Old Dr McClain is still very sick Dr Davis did not talk as if he thought he would ever get up I hope you are all well & will have a nice Christmas I would not be surprised if the things Lizzie sent wouldnt be all spoiled. I went to see Mrs Taylor & Davis, found both in bed & no one but a colored woman to care for them. I was told that 5 coffins were made in Greenwood Sunday. I suppose there are ten or fifteen bales of cotton still to pick I dont know whether I will get to the city again this winter I am swelling last night it rained fearfully & my flour got right wet it looks as if we would have snow & is right warm. Your Aunt A [Adeline Kaigler Harris in LA] is in fine health & I suppose Hattie Bear is married, Minnie married in New Mexico her

old Beau from Morgan City he went for her his name is St-Clair. I believe I wrote you about meeting Mr Hughs an old school mate of Dr Balls he married Vickey Young Nicks Widow, I have nothing more to tell you. Give my best love to the children Dr B & yourself & Johne Caperton if he is there also my best wishes that they may have a merry Christmas am sorry I have nothing to send but have no money only had the money five bales brought & I had to pay mine & negroes Taxas [taxes] L [Leslie] had George Scotts horse using & he died with blind staggers [She means that Leslie borrowed the horse and the horse died. This may be the old German blood showing!] I heard Joe Dorseys mule was sick & one of Leslies has a swelling on her badly we fear is Charbone. Leslie sends love to you all he is nearly crazy for me to sell & I will do so if I can, Lizzie is half sick and worried I dont think the girl she has is any better than Ellen was You cant put anything good she wont steal &, eat

Your Affect Mother
M J Scales

Write soon
I see it has cleared up again

[The next sad letter is from Elizabeth Jane Scales Pillow - Lizzie- to her sister Addie Pinck Ball in Cleburne, TX. Lizzie tells of the loss of her baby girl who was never given a name - born 20 Dec 1883 and died on Christmas Day a few days later.]

Jan-4th 1884

Dear Sister

I wrote you a long letter on New Years day - but as it was of rather a doleful nature I burned it just now & decided I try another. I suppose Mama wrote you of my sickness and the loss of our little baby girl. She was the largest of any of the children weighed 11 1/4 - strong looking, fat - & a remarkably pretty baby had very dark hair. even Will [William Reese Pillow, the father] acknowledged her a pretty baby - but - she was only spared to us 5 days - we suppose died with croup, but thought it colic until she was past doing anything for - I never witnessed such suffering from 10 o'clock one night til ten the next when it was almost a blessing - she breathed her last - for Sister you can never know until you pass through the trial what it is for a Mother to witness such suffering & know how powerless we are to save or even give relief - her musles were all drawn & she was stiff in six hours after taken but with every possession of pain her whole frame would quiver - & she turned purple in the face - & yet - clung to life suffering that way for 24 hours - I hope you may never loose any of your loved ones - for - it matters not how many we have there are none to spare - and a baby even so young is sadly missed. This has been a sad and lonely Xmas.

Will [her husband] went to Winona to get some fine cattle he had shipped from Columbia [His old home in TN] - took a chill & got back as far as Carrolton - & could not get home he was quite sick out there just got back last night - has a very bad cough & looks worse than I ever saw him. Lessly carried the children out to school and brought Will home - Lessly had a gay time with the Carrolton girls - he dont know which he likes the best of all the girls. We are having a good deal of sickness in the way of severe colds & horsness. Tell the children Aunt Lizzie could not get to town to get them any presents for Xmas but she will send them by Grandma if not before. Ma & Lessley were here today, she has no cook and it is hard on her this weather for it is miserably cold

& she either has to come here to eat or eat cold vitals, they often come to breakfast - & stay till after dinner - if they would come earlier I would be glad to have her come every day but L [Leslie] wont get up & it is sometimes 1/2 past 9 before they get here. I breakfast - It dont trouble me now for we have 2 meals a day & I'm not able to do anything - but - I am getting impatient. I get out & have things regular & straight once more - especially my milking - we make plenty of butter - but it is nearly cooked in the churning - minks killed nearly all our chickens so we dont get many eggs & this means they wont get any - but - when I get well I will start the ball a rolling - we killed 6500 lbs of meat this winter but it turned so warm about Xmas I lost all my bones and a good deal of sausages.

The children all send so much love to you all - your girl is the best-looking - Our children got so many nice Xmas presents - but - enjoy dancing to William's harp & making a big noise more than anything, are now all marching even to Mary - they all love rough play - Willie hops on Robt and I am trying to save him.

Write soon to your loving sister

L

The next letter is from Martha's son Alfred Leslie Scales to his sister Addie Pinck.

✠ A. L. SCALES, ✠

BROOKLYN PLANTATION,

Greenwood, Miss. *Aug 19th* 1884

Greenwood, Miss. Aug 19th 1884

Dear Sister

Yours & Mamas letters dated on the 11th was recd yesterday eve. I was glad to hear that all the children are well but I sorry to hear mama was not so well. I improved a little in health but have fever every few days I have to take medicine all the time.

We had a little shower a few days ago but not enough to do much good. Our cotton is as well formed as I ever saw it. It is not very large. Brother Will had a stalk with 100 boles on it.

Our fruit is all gone I had some very nice grapes from the vine Mama bought from Mr. H.

I have 6 or 7 doz eggs & about the same no # of butter. I am going to give the children a little



dance before they go back to school. Sister is going to give them one tomorrow night wish William & Jennie could be here let one of the children come home with Mama I will take good care of them.

I will have to close as I have no news to write, I will write to Ma tomorrow or next day.

Leslie

Greenwood Miss
Jan 9th 1885

My Dear Daughter

I received your letter with Williams & Jennies was glad to hear from you all & that you Dr. Ball & Johnney were all convalessing rapidly. I take a pill nearly every morning sometimes I feel as if I would fall am so nervous I shake as if I had palsey. I take Tody [A tody is whiskey, sugar and not much water] for it, I have backach nearly all the time it has been so since I had that spell in Jackson Miss last spring. Well old Joe Smith & Aunt Manday are both very low not soe expect to live long Joe has gravel [kidney stones?] & Aunt M had headach for 5 or 6 months &, is loosing her mind so Peter Johnson told me today both confined to bed. M has had no Dr at all. P said Dr Henry kept promising to go see her but never did they live on his place says he never has made anything since he left here. I wrote to Col H if Mr. Spearing had not sent the molasses to write to Mr Cocke get him to have one bbl cooler Malasses sent & send his bill to him if two bbls [barrels] came to you use the best and if you can sell apart of the other all right if not let the children make candy every friday night - will - be able to use over one anyhow if you get two & and besides I would give Cousin Mollie 10 gallons if you get two bbls. Leslie [age 24] & Bessie [age 15] have gone to a candy stew to night for the benefit of Episcopal Church. B staid at home she had a breaking out like heat, Miss Barnes wrote that Addie [age 11] & Annie [age 12] were just as happy as could be. Talloo & little Mary Baily are both very low Talloo has been in bed about 5 weeks. Mrs Chambers is still up here Dr Davis is with them nearly all the time I hardly think I will go to City before first of Feb. Dr. Liney wrote to me to go to the all healing springs in N. C. he thought it would benefit me but 5 months is a long time before it might suit me he said I could get board at 6\$ pr month & some cures were almost meraculous My liver burns inside next to my bowels as much as turpentine does on the out side & I feel as if I had fever nearly all the time sometimes my spleen burns too & pains me right often but not like the liver & the liver is so very sore under next to the bowels. Leslie got me some fite ointment I'm going to try it now. Lizzie, Sister Mary & Bessie all went to town today. I don't go out in the damp often but went shopping about 2 hours in the middle of the day, I wrote to Mollie & directed to Franklin, La I hope she will not have much trouble or loose her money. With lots of love to you all & many thanks for kindness in every respect & lots of kisses for the children
Your Mother affect

M J Scales

the cattle Col H sold cleared a little over 9 1/2 [This means 9 1/2 cents per pound] he has not sold a bale of mine the 6 bales was what Leslie sent to pay me. George Scott was sunk & will get 50\$ a bale only five bales. I recon you all get tired of so many

poor letters but, I have no other company except news papers & they hurt my eyes to read too long at night, good night to all tell the children I'll answer their letters when I get some news, Bessie read their letters to night she looks larger than her Ma.

[No Place or date given, but this has to be the fall of 1884 because the molasses was sent on Jan. 11th 1885.]

My Dear Daughter

I received your letter this evening. I would like so much to have the land joining you & if Dr. Ball don't need my money I want him to buy it for me I wrote asking him to write to me who in Ft Worth I should send the money to for him but have had no answer hope to get one soon I could send 1 thousand dollars right now if I could go to the City haven't quite so much there & am afraid to send by Mollie she is so careless - she leaves tomorrow morning she has gone to Lizzies tonight they will have a nice party as the band is invited. Mattie is sitting up but not dressed yet her face is still badly swelled she has been sick 15 days liked to have died she has no idea of marrying anyone things have wound up differently than was a while ago expected I could not bear to see her marry a drunkard we expect to visit you the last of May & perhaps stay all summer her eyes are somewhat inflamed & can't write or read much says she will write to you as soon as she gets well tell Dr. Ball if he can to get me the place I can probably pay cash in a very short time say a month my land is not all rented yet & I will have to run the negroes to about 300 \$ & get a few more provisions for myself I have sent money enough to pay Judg tuition to summer but will have to buy him a new summer suit he is a real good boy I got a letter from him today I don't like A.P.[Who is AP? This letter is to Addie Pinck, so she is eliminated!] much but don't say anything about it in your letters to L or M, she was making Mattie a cats paw for her & Waites fun & we liked to have a general quarrell. [The "cat's paw" refers to the old fable about the cat that was made to burn its paw getting hot nuts for the other animal.] Did you write to Sister A about the syrup and molasses it was only 14 dollars a bbl white syrup I wrote to her but could not tell how to ship it & how much you want don't never depend on me again I have so much trouble and sickness can't tend to my own business & am too forgetfull I am getting so I can't bear to write at all believe I am loosing my mind with much love to you all Your affect Mother

M J Scales

Fannie Glaze starts to Cleburne Monday to live with Sallie & Ward Mrs Allen is apposed to her going she is Mrs A's Cook kiss all the children for me I want to send Dr Ball 1000 now & 500 in a little while if he will write me how to send it

[This is the right place to insert a document about the much mentioned mollasses.]

Garden City Plantation,

←BAYOU TECHIE.→

Franklin P. O., La., Jan 11th

Mr. J.L. Ball-
Cleburne-

Dear Sir-

Yours of Dec 27th, /84 With P.O. order for \$20 enclosed to hand-

I shipped you on Jan- 9th- one 50 gal. Bbl of Cooler Molasses - per Morgan's La. & Texas R.R. Care of G.C. & S. Fe R.R.-Houston- As per instructions by letter of 29th 84 - which I hope will be satisfactory-

My wife wishes to be remembered to your wife - also to Miss Mollie Harris if she is with you.

Very resp.

Robt R. Cocke

N.B. I would have shipped sooner-but Mr. Shaffer, the gentleman who made the molasses was away from home-
RRC

[The back of the document above has the address of Miss Mollie E. Harris, 359 Rusk Street, Houston, Texas. This identifies our cousin Molly who wrote about molasses!]

[The next letter is from Leslie Scales to his mother, Martha Jane Kaigler Scales.]

Greenwood Miss
Feb 23rd 1885

Dear Mama

I rec'd your letter a day or two since I am glad you have improved in health Every thing is progressing slow I have not done but very little plowing yet. I do believe every thing has been froze up for more than a month. I shipped old Richard's cotton to Hawkins more than a week ago but have not heard any thing from him Your freight has been rec'd & stowed away in the room back of mine. Bob has been with me for more than a week. he got his leg broke in a rastle two weeks ago.

Bro Will [William Reese Pillow] left for N. O. [New Orleans] last Thursday. Chaffy and Powell broke [He must mean that the company went bankrupt.] and had 70 bales of Bro Will's cotton. I do not know whether he lost it or not. Leslei & I will start to the exposition Saturday provided bro Will did not loose his

cotton & hope you and sister A will meet us there. I send you a card so if you come you may know where to find us, it has been raining for two days. I never saw the River as low as it is now at any time before at this time of the year. Bring Leslie home with you if sister will let him come or any of the others. Sister L has a splendid teacher & I will get her to take him, & teach him while she is here. I have a mustang horse for him to ride. I will have to close with much love to all and accept the larger portion for your self. From your devoted son

Leslie

You will also find a letter enclosed from Katie L

[This is the second letter written by Cousin Mollie Harris.]

Fort Worth, Texas

Oct 25 /85

My Dear Cousin Addie.

I have had a sick family ever since your Ma and Aunt M [Mary] were here and little Peter and the baby both are quite sick with dengue now. I have also a young man here with it. He had a room down in town, and no one to do anything for him and I brought him here to take care of him. When these are well, all will have had it but Mr. Smith and I hope he will escape. I hear it is subsiding some, but I have as many sick neighbors as I ever had. Judge Brokhaus, Mr. Godwin and Mr. Newt Hawkins family have all had it. Dr. Smith says there are a great many cases in the county. I feel all broken down with so many sick folks - and don't feel that I ever can get to feeling well again. They are all well at Pa's. I had a pleasant visit but not long ago. Pa and Mother promise to come down and spend the winter with me. They will stay some I know, but I doubt about their being contented here very long. My garden looks as green as spring. I have lots of cabbage - turnip greens and lettuce, and the prettiest roses and carnations that I ever saw.

I enjoyed Aunt Mary's and your Ma's visit so much. Think your Ma has failed very much since I saw her - and fear she will not stand many more sick spells. Aunt Mary looks splendid. I want to write to them as soon as all are well. I was so sorry to hear of Aunt A's death [Who is Aunt A? This is the only point that does not check out for Mollie to be daughter of Adeline.] - but was expecting it. I suppose your Mama has sent for Katie [see note at end of letter]. Write me if you expect to go back this fall. Your friends there will be greatly disappointed if you do not. I think if you lived in Cleburne, Aunt Mary would come out to Texas to live. Monsieur is well and well pleased with his school. Peter and Florence are going to public schools. [Note that these must be children of Mollie.] Give my love to Dr. Ball and the children and write soon to your affect

Cousin Mollie

[Note: Wm. Nathaniel Scales had a brother, James Pinchney Scales who followed him to Greenwood, lived there for a while and moved on to Carrollton, MS, where he lived until he died in 1886. He was speaker of the house in the MS legislature when his daughter was born in 1861 in Jackson. Her name was Kate Lewis Scales. One of Martha Jane's letters, above was written in Carrollton. Also, Martha Jane Kaigler had a sister named Catherine who married a Kaigler cousin in Mississippi.]

Carrolton Miss
Sept 14th (18)88

My Dear Daughter

I left Cleburne as we expected had breakfast & Dinner in Paris [Texas] a regular Dining Car breakfast cost 75 cts Dinner was too early & I had bought some California Pears. We were at Houston at 6 in the evening & New Orleans 6 in the morning just to think one day & night & 3 or 4 hours to City. I remained in City until five in the evening as I would have to remain at Winona all night had I come straight through as it was I left City about 5 evening got to Winona 4 morning went up to the parlor at Mrs Hawkins had a nice knap on sofa she did not know I was there until just before breakfast. Mr. Weed went with me to the Hotel.

When I first left Mrs. Georges a Mr. Porter was the first to take buss [that's what is written] he used to live at Buckana he knew Dr. Ball & seemed to know me he kindly assisted me & went several hours ride on carrs to the place he had moved to. Then I got in conversation with a Mr. Huggins of Georgetown & then some Georgia ladies so wasn't lonesome took a sleeper at Houston & breakfasted at City Hotel. Wrote to Mr. H to get me some meat [Meat, usually pork was salted in and stored in barrels. The salt port was used to cook various green vegetables and for other uses.] he called & I was shopping & you may guess I was surprised when he stepped up to me at swatst for I had written to call at one. I did not know the price of meat & I did not want to go over the amount of money in his hands it has gone down over 5 dollars on Bble. Pillow got home 2 days did not go to exposition. Lizzie still had fever & P so cross I think he ought to be branded how L or child[ren] can love him I can't make out even W-T- says he can't make P out as long as he has known him. says he is pleasant everywhere but to his own family. I have not heard from Leslie Lizzie expected him out here yesterday. Bessie looks taller than you do will soon be as tall as her Ma. Make Jennie study I am still suffering with pain or burning in my liver & didn't sleep half hour all night L is much swelled now days when ever she sews on machine she swells badly. Old Mrs Gee is dead. Dr. Askew has had Paralasy- & better but not well I got Addie a red cashmere Le nill get a yard of sattin to match to trim it with - it would not become Annie at all & I'm not sure it will Addie it cost 75 cts per yard I got L the gown like I gave you I did not get Annie a dress. L was never much abliged for the triming & dress you sent. wishes you had come on out Jennie she helps the children every night they are all very backward. Willie [Will Pillow] goes to Mrs. Lane with the Saunders boy the girls all go together Robert [Bob Pillow] has not started to school Lizzie is lying down she likes her cook has no other servant hired an old man to cut wood. I divided my Onions



with Lizzie, the crops are poor every where & no vegetables but Potatoes & Peas. I should not be surprised L bought the place Pillow sold his Tennessee interest Mr. D is still up there I recon saved money enough to keep drunk I wish he never would come back L is disappointed in him but I blame P because he was there & did not look after things - & I think exactly what I said about P. L, is greatly deceived I think do not mention anything about these things either there nor write back.

With love to children Dr B & yourself
your Mother affect.

M J Scales - I brought apart
of your cakes & to Robert & Mary- Lizzie will write as soon as she is better-

Commenced this wrong Page - think of it was Chinese style

[In 1888 Martha Jane is 64 years old. She has 19 years to live!]

Nov 12th 1888

I have had no opportunity of mailing my letter so write a little more Lizzie & I expect to go to town this morning Leslie is going to gin himself Willie is with him Tell Dr. Ball before I got sick to bed I had that terribly tired & achie feeling I had while at your house had burned myself all over with Turpentine I got Leslie to rub the heel of my left foot, it was like Dengue fever [Dengue is a specific epidemic disease, chiefly tropical, attended with fever, eruptions, and severe pains. Probably. Martha had something else! Most people in Mississippi had malaria in the old days.] & I turned dreadfully yellow. And when I took a chill in the morning send for the Dr he gave me lots of medicine I don't think I could have took a nother chill we have a splendid crop of cotton but little picked This morning we had the whitest frost think I ever saw it was like snow or burnished silver I'm a fraid I've lost many of my finest flowers every thing was growing like summer & so many flowers at least 20 kinds of roses in bloom Lilys Babardias & Habsathamnus Honeysuckles & Chrisanthemums & geraniums & Begonias & many other flowers that usually bloom in spring. Well, Hannah is crazy again came up tried to unlock my front door with her key had a Hatchet in her hand & was going to break the door said it was her house she struck Johnny & he hit her back & made out he was going to cut her with his knife, took a stick to Laurence She fought her husband when he tried to take her home & he had to drag her runs just like a drunken man says Col Claudlow gave her his house & she is going up there & turn Mrs Chickering out, says she is the Bible that she died to save dancing sinners & rose again nearly every body is afraid of her found Lesley's buggy back set it up on the gallery by front steps says it is her chariot & she is going to ride made Alf give her 2 of Leslies Mules called to a man to get out of his buggy that she has as much right to ride there as he had. I filled your box as full of bulbs as I could pack in took up some other things for you & cousin Mollie but got to sick could not send them will try again

Love to all

M J Scales

Mrs. Lizzie Scales Pillow Laid To Rest

The remains of Mrs. Lizzie Scales Pillow who died in Gainesville, Ga., on Friday night were laid to rest in the family cemetery here yesterday afternoon after a beautiful and appreciative tribute had been paid to her memory at the First Presbyterian church of which she has been a member for many, many years.

Although Mrs. Pillow has been a resident of Gainesville, Ga., for the past seventeen years she had never moved her membership from the Greenwood church which she loved so well and in which she labored lovingly for the Master's cause for many years.

Funeral services were conducted by Dr. J. F. Marion, pastor of the Presbyterian church. Beautiful floral offerings attested the sympathy of a large circle of friends filled the church with their fragrance and later formed a beautiful mound over her grave.

A large number of out of town relatives and friends attended her funeral among them being her daughters, Mrs. M. P. Robinson, Mrs. E. P. Oliver of Gainesville, Ga., and Mrs. E. C. French of New Orleans; a niece and nephew, Mrs. Jennie Cyrus and Leslie Ball of Cleveland, Texas; Judge and Mrs. G. A. McLean of Winona, Mrs. Strong Webster, Winona; Mr. and Mrs. Lee McLean, Blaine, Miss.; Mr. and Mrs. John McLean of Itta Bena; Mr. and Mrs. F. C. Broyles of Greenville, Tenn.; Mr. and Mrs. A. C. Metts of Clarksdale; Mr. L. S. Hemphill, Sr., of Valley Hill; Mr. Will Rich of Itta Bena; Mrs. W. D. Brown, Salem, Va.; Mr. and Mrs. Fisher Avent, Mrs. Jim Tainey and Mrs. A. Watkins of Minter City; Miss Bessie Brown, Salem, Va., and Mr. and Mrs. Ben Miller of Bogalosa, La.

Cleburne, Texas

This completes the letters from Martha Jane Kaigler Scales to her daughter Addie Pinck Scales Ball and other letters that apply. Now is the appropriate time to insert the picture, below, that shows some of the persons writing or written about. The picture was made in about the year 1890. The little girl is Mary Irving Pillow, who was called Mamie (1882-1935). At the funeral for Lizzie Scales Pillow, she is listed as Mrs. E.C.French of New Orleans. Above Mary is Mattie Scales Pillow (1868-1946). She was at the funeral, too, as Mrs. M.P.Robinson, of Gainesville, GA. She was called Auntly by the family in later years. To Mary's left is Elizabeth Jane Scales Pillow at age 41. By this time she had given birth to eleven children. She lived from 1849 to 1924. Her obituary is to the left. The lady to Mary's right is her grandmother, Martha Jane Kaigler Scales (1824-1907), who wrote most of the letters in this document.



Dr. John Lewis Ball and Addie Pinck Scales had a son, James Winston Ball, who married Eva Lucile Blakeney. Their son, James Winston Ball, Jr., lives at 4915 Creighton Drive, Dallas, Texas 75214. A letter from Winston initiated this document. He has found members of the Texas Scales family interested and they sent these letters. This search continues. Parts of two letters will be copied below.

Winston's cousin, Addie Scales Wall, 250 E. Alameda 608, Santa Fe, NM, 87501, is called "Doll" by the family. She writes: "I grew up being proud of our ancestors. My mother made several trips back to Mississippi as a young girl and spoke fondly of Aunt Lizzie and Will Pillow and other relatives. Stories of the annual visits of my great grandmother, Martha Jane Kaigler, to the Ball clan in Cleburne were repeated often when the family

remembers her well. My mother told us that she was an 'elegant lady'. She always stayed at the Cleburne Hotel and drove out each day to the Ball farm about five miles north of the town. Another story was that in the bottom of the trunk that she traveled with, was a black taffeta dress which she never wore. She always had it with her to be buried in, just in case! My uncle, Leslie Ball, now deceased, made numerous trips to Mississippi and knew the relatives there better than any others of the family. He talked of the dogs and horses, of the crops, and the 'good life' there. Will Pillow was one of his favorite people."

Doll's brother and Winston's cousin is Ralph L. Cyrus, 4100 Jackson #530 B&C, Austin, Texas, 78731. He has a daughter, Cinda Lynne Cyrus. In one of his letters, Ralph wrote, "Mom used to like to reminisce about her visits, as a girl or 'young lady', to Grandma Scales and how she was always 'so royally entertained', like dances on the lawn, etc. Mom was especially fond of Aunt Lizzie. The name 'Pillow' was frequently mentioned, but it meant little to me at the time. This was a closely knit family. I remember that later my Uncle Leslie accompanied Grandma Ball back to the old home place for a visit, and this must have been several years after Grandma Scales' death; and according to a newspaper clipping I have [the one above] I have, he also accompanied my mother to Aunt Lizzie's funeral. Your father and mother were among the relatives listed."

There are several other papers and letters that were with this file. They are concerned with the Scales family in Texas and are reproduced here to make certain that they are not lost.

First, below is an academic report card for William P. Ball. He is the son of Addie Pinck Scales Ball and Dr. John Lewis Ball.

Record of standing in recitation of William P. Ball for the month ending December 14th A.D. 1885:

To be perfect requires 100 in each study-----	
Geography	92
Physiology	85
Dictionary	64
Arithmetic	--
Latin	77
Grammar	85

J. W. Newbrough

This young man was 14 years old. He became a medical doctor.

Next, a letter believed to be written by a younger sister, Mary Elizabeth, to Dr. John Lewis Ball.

McKinney, Texas
Jan 30 ith /85??

Dear Brother,

Ma requested me to write to you this eve - and to ask you to visit us right soon. The phasicians here advise her to have the tumor cut out of her face, and she says she would be better satisfied if you could see it, and pass your judgement on the prospects of having it done. We are anxious for you to come

start without something to prompt you. And we consider this enough, if it is possible for you to leave home at all. I know Sister Adda will not say a word against it, if all are well. I would say bring the family but know it would be throwing away ink, but will say bring some of the children. We will be glad to have as many as can come. Jennie being the only girl you might bring her if none of the others can come. I wrote you some time ago, and have but little time to write this eve as it is late, and I will have to go to the office. Ida is spending this week in G-ville. She is out of a job now. Today is real spring like. Please let us know immediately if you can come, and what day you will be likely to be here. Dr. Sims thinks the operation ought to be performed in the course of five days, but if you say you will be here soon it will be put off of course. Now write soon and say you will be here on the next train please. Love to all

Affly your
Sister M

[the last letter was written to Dr. William P. Ball, sent by his brother, Thomas Albert Brook Ball--T.a.b.--no date--no address.]

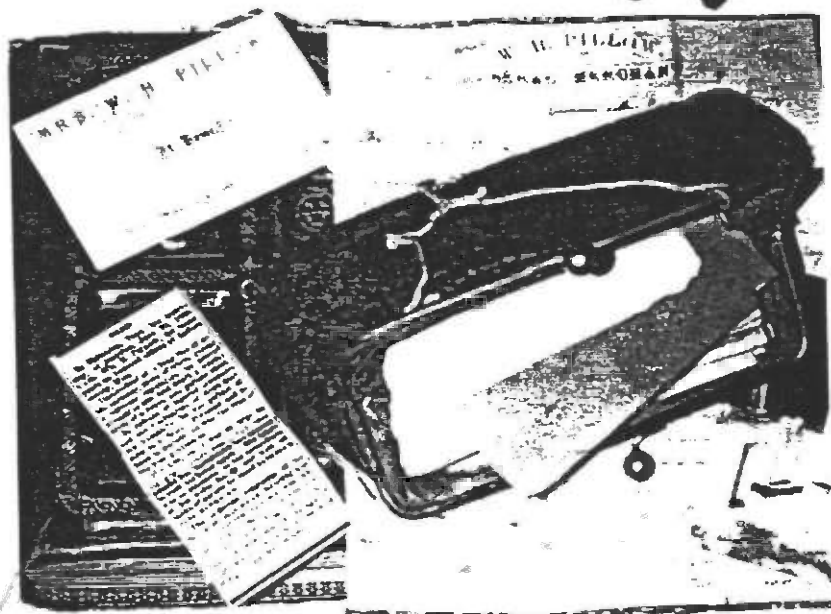
Dr. What do you expect to do next year? Do you expect to remain with Bro. John? I guess you have fine land to work & some enjoyment & work such land & have good stock to work and ride. It will be so late when I get there am afraid will not have time to visit you soon as will have to go right to work - to pay my expenses going - out there and will cost the boy some to travel on N-No-So-W-C-B have not forgotten how to count expenses yet - Every dollar a man spends & nothing to show for it - is a clear loss & charged to profit-in whatever business he goes at - I can say by holding on to & and being saving - I can show some of the first money I ever made - and that from a small cotton crop - of 3 bales - sold in /-77- There is nothing like holding on to it - As Uncle Grip says "Money is a big fellow - I tell you". And by 1st Dec. next my policies will bring me \$2500.00 if I were to marry at that time & will be worth a great deal more 1 yr longer - I am carying an other parties who will marry this fall - where I will get 1000 \$ so when I get this aded to my capital & married will ask you to come & spend a day or so. Do you want me to bring you any thing from here - Jeff would go with me if he could slip off - Yr. Uncle

T.a.b-

APPENDIX H

Willie

Loves
Lizzie



BY

WILLIAM REESE PILLOW

1867 - 1889

DEDICATION

This little pamphlet is dedicated to my beloved grandmother, Elizabeth Porter Pillow. She was a grand lady in every way. She taught me many things. As a child, I visited her for a month each summer between school sessions. She was never wealthy when I knew her, but she lived like a multi-millionaire. The family called her "Bessie" or "Sister Bess" and her grandchildren called her, as closely as I can spell it, "Maam Ma". She had studied music in Paris and wanted us to use the French word for "mother" - well, it never came out right, but she never worried about that, or anything else. The family tells the story that she had 40 marriage proposals before she married John Madison Oliver.



PREFACE

One hundred cousins came to the Pillow family reunion in Greenwood, Mississippi, on June 29th, 1991. As if drawn by a mighty magnet, members arrived from all over the country - Virginia, Georgia, Tennessee, Texas and the Magnolia State. Marguerite had posted the names of the first Pillows to be born in Mississippi - eleven children of William Reese Pillow and Elizabeth Jane Scales. The home of the youngest child, Walter Reese Pillow, was the site for the reunion. Under the giant trees that surround the old brick mansion, Dale and Susan extended the gracious hospitality of the old homestead, which, today, is their home. Clare, Hart and all of the Greenwood cousins made the visitors welcome.

Ann Lee Oliver Rice came from Marietta, Georgia. Her father was the son of Elizabeth Porter Pillow, one of Walter's older sisters, called "Sister Bess" by the family. Ann had a very old purse, made of alligator hide and lined with silk. It contained many letters that seem to have not been read for over a hundred years. Transcribed exactly, word for word, we must remember that our strict discipline and rules for spelling, punctuation, and capitalization did not exist in the olden times. Words were spelled the way they sounded and the way they were spoken. The letters were love letters written by the Pillow common to every Pillow at the reunion, William Reese Pillow, to his wife, Elizabeth Jane Scales. He calls himself Willie and he calls her Lizzie". I read the letters. After thirty years and three wars in the infantry, I have the hide of a rhinoceros and a heart of stone, but I believe that I shed one tear. This pamphlet is written by Willie. As I continue, he will be Willie and she will be Lizzie.

I am writing this preface as a letter to the kin, trying to set the stage for the letters that follow. The pamphlet is written by William Reese Pillow in the years from 1867 to 1889. I think the ladies will appreciate the man in a quite different light after reading these letters. We see a very sensitive person, even a poet, as he tells Lizzie of his love of her and his family. Those first settlers of the Mississippi delta suffered terribly. They endured sorrow beyond comprehension. There were no window screens, then, no way to control mosquitoes and the disease that followed them. Water was foul, and they drank that water. Little children died in their mother's arms. Ignorance about medicine and disease made problems even greater. Tears were shed, but life went on. Family ties were close.

Willie knew that he was dying for several years, yet he never gave up. He was sent from place to place to "drink the water", believing that his liver would begin to work again. His death was called "Malignant Jaundice". "Malignant" does not necessarily mean cancer. It means

"uncontrollable". Jaundice is yellow skin caused by bile problems. In fact, Willie was sick for too long to have had cancer in those days. Hepatitis may have been what killed him. He was 47 when he died.

Never forget the years 1860 to 1865. The War Between the States devastated the South. During the war, families were on different sides, quite often. Willie came from a home where his father and mother sided with the Union. Willie was a Confederate Corporal. Before going on, I think it interesting to copy a few lines from a newspaper, "The Maury Democrat", dated 26 April 1894. Columbia, TN, is in Maury County.

"It was a beautiful night in January; the snow had fallen to the depth of several inches, the full moon shone brightly; objects could be seen far and near, save in front and rear where the dense timber grow. The patrol walked his beat to and from the entrance to the bridge--the bitter cold forbid his standing still. Some fifty feet away the relief sat around the campfire; the more fortunate peacefully slumbered in the camp below, dreaming perhaps of the loved ones at home. The cavalry camp-fire on the hill a few hundred feet away had faded and died out; nothing broke the stillness save the murmur of the swift river below and the soft whisper of the relief guard nearby. Corp. W. R. Pillow had just ascended the embankment to relieve the sentinel for a moment that he might warm his benumbed hands. He measured his beat once-twice, when a musket shot rang out upon the air; the shot was immediately returned. A call from Corp. Pillow told his comrades that he had been wounded; this alarm had reached the camp below and men rushed half dressed with musket in hand to the rifle pits at the mouth of the bridge. -----Corp. Pillow was shot through the calf of the leg, another ball passed through his hat.-----"

The wounded soldier was sent home. The war ended. After he recovered, a grown man, he planned to make his place in the world. Willie was in love with a young lady in Mississippi. In 1867, Willie was 25 years old.

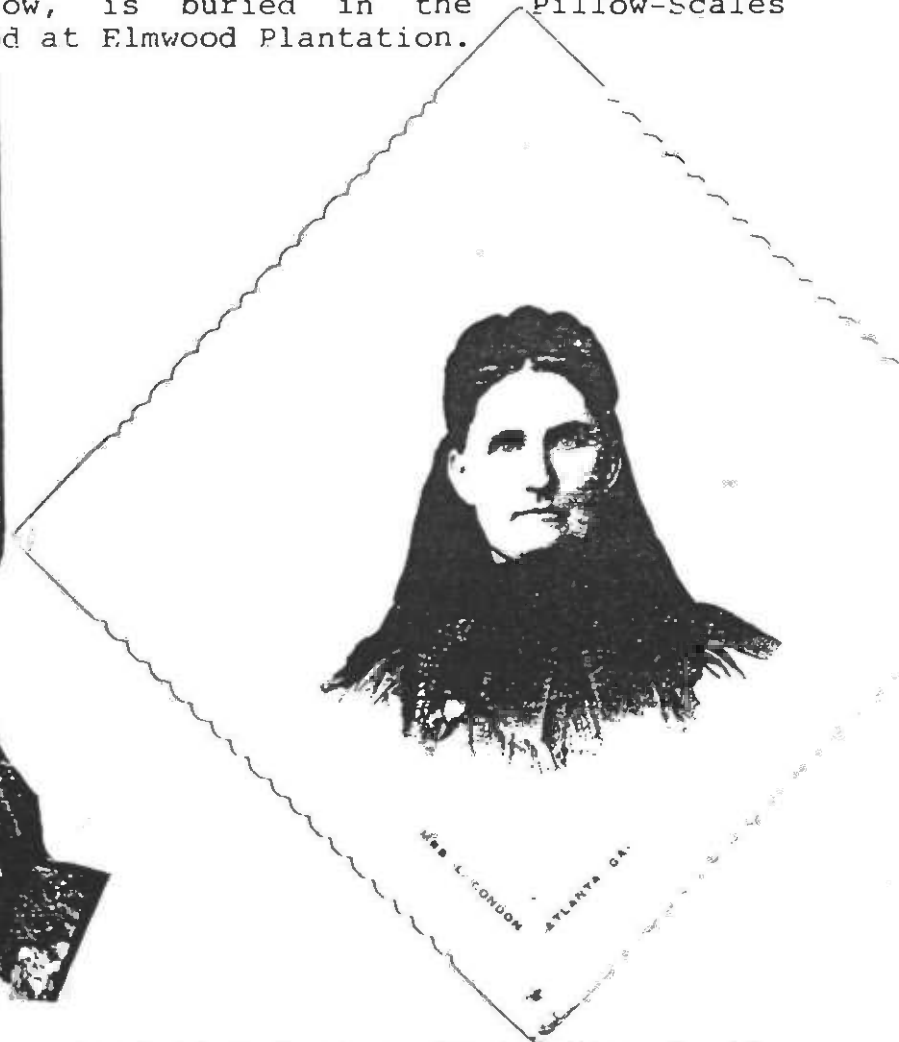
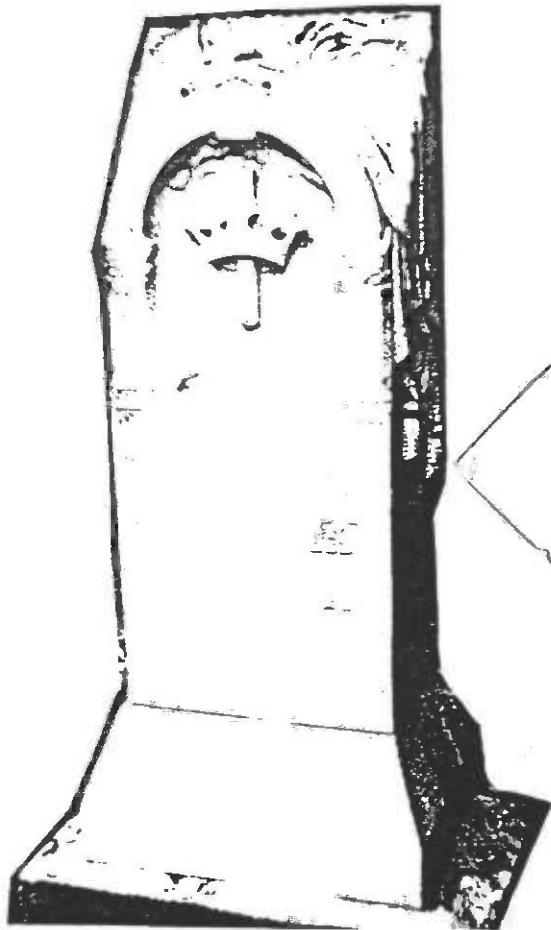


HALCYON HALL-

In Columbia, Willie was one of ten children. He was one year older than his brother, Walter, and he had a brother, Robert. They lived in a big home called Halcyon Hall, built in 1845. Willie's father died in 1862. The letters

mention travel back and forth from the home in Columbia to Greenwood. Trains were used to travel and to send letters. His children were sent to Columbia to be educated. As each of the letters is transcribed, notes will be inserted, as needed to explain or to present pictures of some of the people mentioned.

Willie calls his mother-in-law "Mother" when writing to Lizzie. She is Martha Jane Kaigler Scales. Lizzie's father, William Nathaniel Scales died in a yankee Prisoner of War camp in Columbus, Ohio, where he is buried. Martha Jane, pictured below, is buried in the Pillow-Scales Cemetery in Greenwood at Elmwood Plantation.



This pamphlet has no copyright and is prepared for family members. In the first letter, Willie is at Halcyon Hall in Columbia and Lizzie is at Elmwood Plantation in Mississippi.

Colonel Albert C. Metts, Jr.

Columbia July 7th, /67
"Midnight"

Miss Lizzie

You may think this letter passing strange perchance an unpardonable presumption; yet must I write an rely upon your clemency for pardon if offence I do commit. Not twelve months have grown and waned in heavens blue vault since first we met, and within that time have seldom met. Yet sufficiently often to form with me impressions which ages cannot eradicate. Yet I have seen and known thee - and now you may inscribe upon your banner "vici" - have known and felt the influence which you are to exert over me for all future time. Have longed to tell you but the dreadful fear of disappointment sealed my lips. and now write to tell you. one word from you will keep me always - (but I am not plain enough) to tell you I love you and you only to tell you I want, I need your love. what answer have you for me? On what now hangs my future with you: sure in your love - life, joy, happiness. all is mine without you.- without love, sorrow, trouble and disappointment.

In your hands I place my destiny offering you only love the devotion of a life-time. and if affection be wealth a priceless boundless fortune. Think not this I pray you the hastily formed idea of a visionary. but believe me when I tell you 'tis the mature and deliberate conclusion of many anxious hours and wakeful nights and believe me in serious earnest, I ask you weigh well the whole matter try your heart know your feelings well then decide firmly, finally, and forever. Remember upon your decision hangs my weal or woe - (No I will not ask you to remember this for that were selfish) and I will not be selfish although I love you. but ask you remember the decision is final and let it be what it may I shall abide by it. I leave the matter with you here, I ask the most priceless boon to man, woman's love - give it to me and thereby strew earth's richest and rarest flows along my path of life. Be thou to me the day star of existence - the bright sun of my life to guide and direct to noble deeds. Take what time you wish to decide this matter. for surely you are deeply concerned in it and your own happiness to be secured before mine. then write me your decision and if you cannot decide if I have not been explicit enough write one word, come and I will

hasten to you to prove that I love you. should you decide against me please return this letter and forget 'twas ever written. Please let me hear from you soon and until then believe me what you will have me.

Wm R. Pillow

Columbia July 23/67

Miss Lizzie

I received your letter this morning and with a trembling hand and anxious heart I broke the seal, and although you did not fully answer, from it burst forth happiness for in it you almost bid me hope. Yes I do hope to yet know the realization of the most fondly cherished hope of my life and if to night I had your assurance that you loved me, it would be the happiest of my life. That I might call you mine, think of you as mine, pray for as mine & mine only. Oh! I was getting so weary of that often repeated answer "no letter" and I feared you would not answer my letter at all, and the days were so

long and end and the nights so weary and lonely, but that has past, and had I your assurance of success I would have my recompence and be paid in the happiness of our day for a lifetime of anxious care, I thought before I wrote to you I knew how dear you were to me. but was mistaken, I knew it not until the last two weeks, but Oh! how bright this day might have been how bright the future how much of pure joy and happiness could I see in store had your answer been positive and favorable. clouds I know there are and rough stony places in the pathway of life, but with you I would not fear them. If we are to journey to-gether let any fate befall me I feel there is a heart to meet it. I will leave Columbia next week and shall never stop until I see you.

which time I hope you will be able to tell me my destiny. Goodby and Heaven bless you and make you forever happy

Yours

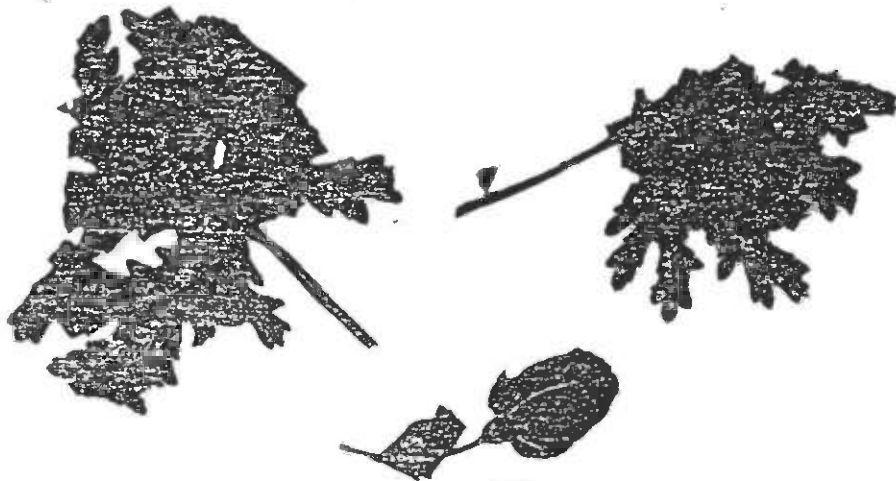
Wm R. Pillow

P.S.

I must return many thanks for the beautiful flower and I assure you that I will keep it yes forever and in after days and in your absence, when I gaze upon it it will roll back the tide of time to the many pleasant moments I have spent with you.

W--

Note: In this letter were pressed flowers.



Columbia 28th 1867

Dearest One,

To night while Walter is absent on a visit to his sweetheart, I will again avail my-self of this opportunity of performing the most pleasant duty in life, writing to you. there is nothing around to disturb me in my writing, Save the merry and coquettish laugh of Augusta, who is evidently carrying on one of her flirtations, the knowledge of which has caused me to spend manu unhappy moments. I have begged & plead, with her, have asked her for the sake of humanity, and the love I bore for her to desist, but as yet all my entreaties have been in vain. and it sometimes makes me really angry to see a thick headed stuped man who has so little pride or self respect, as to be put off from day to day, & from week to week, discarded & then drawn back, time and again, by a single word or look. It is enough to make a man loose confidence in woman. to see the

deception they use in many cases. But there are some who deserve the full confidence of man. and who will never be appreciated as highly as they should be. If I continue writing on this subject you will think I am really in a bad humor when I am not, nor do I wish you to think there are none in which I place confidence for you know there is one whose truth and fidelity I would stake my life upon.

Today has been a long, dreary, gloomy, one, yet we should not complain of the clouds of one day when we have had so many bright ones, I feel that today has been a blank one in my life, as I have had nothing to do but sit around the fire with other boys criticise & comment on the girls, I expect you will think this worse than nothing.

Now, to my friend Needham, I cant pass him by unnoticed for I have heard from his "Majesty" since your letter, Through Mr. Lud Estes who allowed me to read a letter from him, dated (I believe) on the 15th, in which he positively asserts

that you and I are engaged, he also says that he hopes you are getting a good man underscores "good man". I hope so too, and I answered to see that the good & honest Gentleman ---- your interest so much at heart. I suppose he is sincere in all he says.

There is no news in Columbia at present except it is generally believed that cotton will be relieved of all tax. excuse this brief and uninteresting letter as I have written hurriedly in order to get it in tonights mail knowing that I would not have an opportunity of writing again for more than a week, as I will be busy day and night for some time taking stock in the Drug Store, I will either buy or sell, prefer the former, provided I do

not have to pay too dear for it. Give my best love to all
and kiss Mr Dennis for me. write soon and let me know when
you are going to New Orleans. Good-night and may Heaven
always protect you is the earnest prayer of your

Willie

Note: This letter had no Month of 1867 shown. It had
another small pressed flower in the envelope and a card
copied below. Also, there is a note on the outside of the
page which reads:

"My one Love in Life & death

My heart's idol always--

I wish these letters buried with me. Thy are to me
more precious than jewels"

This bothers me because the letters were not buried with
Willie. Maybe they should have been, but it seems that
Lizzie kept them in the old purse and they fell into the
hands of my grandmother, Sister Bessie, who squirreled them
away until she died and they went to her son, William, then
to Ann. After considerable thought, and after reading the
letters, I can see no reason to destroy them. There is
nothing derogatory, only good, kind and sincere statements
that show the admirable character of a man who must have
been good. I have returned the letters to Ann. I have
zerox copies. The statement, above, is the only time it
appears. He seems to have been in a very unhappy mood at
the time.

In these transcriptions, I skip a line when the letter goes
to another page.

When Willie refers to Augusta, she is his sister. I think
Willie uses this trick to try and get an answer from Lizzie.
Who knows? Another dried flower is enclosed.

MRS. W. H. PILLFOW

At Home,

THURSDAY, MARCH 25, 1869, 8 O'CLOCK P. M.



Care Bend August 7th 1867

Dearest one

Tonight while many of my friends have left our city for Shelbyville to seek enjoyment "by tripping the light fantastic toe" and the pleasant company of the fascinating and lovable Miss Sallie Cooper by whos solicitation they attend I thought it more pleasant to retire to the secluded home of my brother where I might be left solitary and alone with my thoughts of you, and bright hopes of the future, for certainly there is nothing that affords me more pleasure when you are so far away.

This is a beautiful moon-light night and when I began my letter had just returned from a long ramble in the woods, where the gentle breeze with a soft voice seemed trilling thy name round each quivering leaf, each giant

oak each flickering star, and even the pale moon though cold and distant in appearance as it sheds its dim light on my path, seems to whisper in your lovers ear the sweet accents of thy name, and it was then, and now, that if this heart had audible language, it would unfold and lay before you its true feelings, that you might see and know each to be pure and could never for one instant doubt its sincerety. I then pictured my future as one of blissful happiness, the retrospective view afforded me much pleasure, for I believe that you did respond to my every tender thought. And I can assure you that there is nothing unpleasant connected with the present, for it is happiness to know that you are enjoying your-self with friends, yes, perhaps you are at this moment dancing the set you promised for me with your "Brother"

But the Doctor where is he At: I imagine I see you kneeling to the dear, old, jealous hearted eccentric, fellow, allow me a word or two in his behalf, be as tender and gentle with the old fellow as you think he deserves, for I am satisfied that you will have the refusal of his heart and hand, I have much to tell you about the Dr. and other gentlemen of your County, among them is one Mr. Chizom Johnson. I met this man in Carrolton, but the many things I wish to relate about him would be uninteresting in a letter.

Now to my dear little Sister Addie (if you will permit me to call her such) how is she, well I hope I also imagine her upon the floor with the friend of my boy-hood (Telon) ready for a set. poor boy I pity him for I really think he loves her and she treats him with so much indifference

tell her to "be kind to her lover where-ever she is", and kiss her for Cam and Bob.

And my little "Widow" bless her sweet amiable heart give her my love and say that I would like to have a game of cards with her to night provided she would

not cheat. Remember me kindly to your mother and the rest of the family. Think of me as your ever true and loving Willie

" May angels watch over, and guard you".

P.S.

I hope that you will come to Tennessee with Miss Addie goodbye

McKinney sends oceans of love, and says that he has a prior claim to my precious jewel.

This letter is interesting because Sister Addie is Addie Pinck who married Dr. Ball, moved to Texas and headed the great Ball family of Cleburne, Texas. Is the Doctor, not named, Dr. Ball? Below is a picture of Sister Addie, later in life, taken out in Texas. Do not confuse this Addie with the daughter of Lizzie.

Care Bend is not on recent maps, but Shelbyville is in Tennessee, southeast of Columbia. Use of the words "floor" and "set" means a dance floor and set of dances, usually a couple of tunes which has been promised to a man.



Columbia August 5th/67

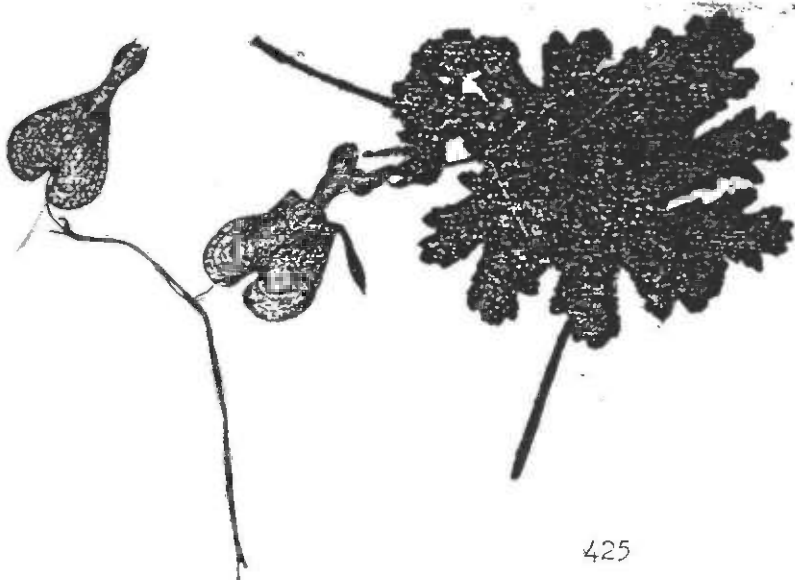
Dearest One

I am glad to inform you that I reached home safe and sound. (As Saturday noon when I left you) on Sunday night at nine oclock and had it not been for for leaving the air which my loved one breathed would have been highly delited at my returnal to the dear old place of my youthful happiness. But to leave you the one for whom every pulsation and every tender cord of this heart throbs with that pure feeling of love that is seldom experienced. to leave the one I love more dearly than even life it-self was sad but there was one consoling thought, that it would not be forever and there is still a brighter hope that the day will come in which we shall meet no more to part untill that final day in which we shall be called by Him to whom we owe our existance. Oh! you have no idea how hard it was for me to leave you, yet there was pleasure left me still which was one and only one long and sweet thought of you. I had seen you, had heard the soft sweet notes of your gentle voice which still rings clearly yet in the ear of your lover, like that of an colien harp, I heard your well known footstep as you passed from room to room or approached the one in which I patiently waaited for your entrance, saw the fairy like form as it glided so gently by and my heart was filled with inexpressible joy and happiness. But I almost fear that I will disgust you with in my vain attempt to express my feelings. I intended (as you know) to call by the Springs

for Sister Mary but hearing at Tuscumbia that she had returned home did not stop; upon reaching Columbia found that she had not returned, there is no one in Columbia who has any conception as to where I have been, Miss Lizzie. I have a dreadful headache to night when I began my letter hoped to be able to finish without making any excuse, but find the pain is increasing, and am compelled to ask you to excuse me from further writing to night anso this short and un-interesting letter and I will promise to try and do better in the next which will be soon. give my love to all,

Remember me as truly yours

W-----



Constance

Columbia August 31, 1867

Dearest One

" I am sitting alone in my silent room
This beautiful and pleasant night
Watching the flickering stars fill the gloom
With many a pictuer bright "

Yes alone - and not alone for I have my thoughts for company and pleasing company it proves. (not withstanding your long silence and the sad disappointment of not receiving a letter not even one kind word to cheer the "lonely heart of the one who so wildly worships you", but I will not quarrel with you to night but strive to make my letter as interesting as possible. To-night sitting thinking of my fancies as they assume form in the stars watching them as they come and go in continually dissolving views - unconscious of the world around me until the deep sounding strokes of the bell announce the hour of twelve, telling me the closing struggle of the dying month and the opening of the new

and I rouse myself with a purpose I will let the first task of the new month be one of love I will before I sleep write thee my life, my loved one. I have been thinking a great deal to night of the past, of the future. have gone over it again that life that is a bright reality - passed from childhood to youth known its joys and sorrows felt again that glowing hope of early manhood when the world seems only a place where in to choose your honors, felt again the crushing sensation of hopes defense gone through the late struggle of intestine war fought its many hotly contested battles, sat round the camp-fire with comrades tried and true laughed with them yes laughed again as I laughed then with a heart newly breaking, felt again that deep sorrow which one can only feel (it seems to me) when alone on duty in the still hours of midnight and thinking of the ruine of his home - passed - again those long days and nights of suffering, heard again woman's gentle voice and felt her gentle touch as she bathed my feeble brow. thought of many of all those acts of kindness and sympathy which lighten the care of a suffering soldier, lived again those anxious days of my slow recovery, saw my restoration and knew I owed it all to woman's care, heard again my mother's thanks giving as she took me in her arms and blessed God that I had been spared, felt again my Sister's kiss, retraced all the many years from the cradle down to the present time - felt theis sorrows and shared their joys lived anew my life since I new you - remembered thy smiles felt all those hopes and fears and am aroused to consciousness of surrounding things by that solemn bell as one by one its mighty strokes announce the closing of the month, time that was but shall be no more forever, a month spent how? alas how few can satisfactorily answer. A month gone, yet clinging to is a memory which must go with me to that bourne from which no

travler returns, a memory let life be what it may must ever seem one bright oasis in the desert of life, and I feel to night let the clouds of life be ever so thick the recollection of the passed happy month will always be one bright star to illumine the darkness. Have tried also to look beyond the misty vale which separates the present from the future, have asked myself again that question am I doing right? asked myself do I love you as I should will I

give back answer ever unto death & I love you more than life. and I turn to my task happy, why happy? because I believe you love me and do I have any fears for the future? No none - I confidentially believe that with you I shall be happy always - and my trust and confidence in you being perfect I look calmly into the future and am happy now, but Oh! if you was in Columbia away from that land which is so unworthy to be hallowed by your duty and loneliness. I would be happier still. But I will stop this strain as I suppose you are tired of it already and would prefer that I would write on some others. I met your Mother and Miss Addie at the depot and Oh! how sorry I was to hear that you was and had been for some time unwell, and how disappointed to find no message or letter from you. Oh! Miss Lizzie, if you knew how much, how dearly I would appreciate a letter from you I know you would write, if you knew how great the anxiety as day after day I would impatiently watch the opening of the mail, and Oh! how dreadful the suspense of four long and weary weeks, you would write. Please write and write soon to your lover. I would come down with your Mother but it is impossible for me to leave home for two weeks yet at the expiration of which time I will come. It is now very late goodby and may holy angels watch thee always and keep you from all harm is the sincere and earnest prayer of your loving Willie

P.S. Please excuse mistakes as it is now after two and I haven't time to copy and sleep much write soon love to all my friends

Yours

W

Columbia
November 5th, 1867

Dearest One

Once more I find myself alone, in my little "sancto-sanctum" of old Halcien Hall, with no one to interfere or disturb me in my thoughts of you, the past and the future. And although I feel much fatigued from a long and hot days hunt, I am never so weary as to render it unpleasant to pour out my thoughts to you. Yet if I should fail in my attempt to interest you, I hope you will take the will for the deed. I had been sitting for an hour thinking of you unconscious of all around me, when I was aroused from my dreams by Augusta who had seated herself at the piano and begun singing that little favorite of mine, "I love you" Ah! yes how true, and how expressive, are thos few and simple words

And how much pleasure and happiness it affords me, to know that I am permitted to love one so pure amiable and lovely as yourself. But I will not weary you with another one of my vain attempts at telling you how much I love you. My hunt of today was one of success killing in all thirty five birds, and I feel as tired as if I had walked the same number of miles. I found on my return home that Columbia was in a perfect state of excitement about the Black Crook which was and is yet being played nightly in Nashville. I have not yet attended, but expect to go down this week and take Lizzie and Augusta who are almost crazy to see it. When I return I will write you a full description of it. When I returned from my visit to you I found all the family uneasy about me They had heard that I was sick and had

thought seriously about sending Walton after me, the night I reached home they were all standing on the poach watching for me, Ma actually refused to kiss me because I had remained one or two days longer than she expected me to. I tell her that I will make my visits from home more frequent as they all seem to think more of me in my absence than when I am with them. And Miss Addie, bless her mean sweet little heart. I could not call on her and she would not come to see me. I suppose the letters I brought her contained all the news she wished to hear from home, she has promised to spend the last friday night and saturday of this month with Lizzie and I expect to have a gay time with my little pest. I saw her last friday night at a lecture that was given

at the Athenaeum I only had a chance to shake my head and fist at her which she resented by making an ugly face at me. Louli was highly delighted at receiving a letter from you and she says that Judgi must be the dearest little fellow in the world or at least he writes very sweet letters. Sisters Mary and Lizzie join me in love to you. Kiss Mattie and Judgie for me, and remember me kindly to your Mother and Aunt. and say to Old Man Dennis cheer up and never despair. Goodnight and may angels smile on your pathway through life, is the earnest prayer of your Willie

P.S I must call upon you to assist me in praying off the many stories I have told in regard to where I have been.

I will send the pen and knife which are to complete my present by the next mail.

Louis County Nov 19th 1867

Dearest One

I may in this attempt to interest you fail, as it is to be only a journal of the two or three days in which I will be absent from home, on another of those long horseback rides which I am compelled to take into the barren hills of Hickman and Lewis Counties. Yet I shall endeavor to give you as correctly as I can every thing that occurs, and such portion of my thoughts as I think would be interesting to you.

I left home this morning at sun rise, ate breakfast with Grandmother, three miles from town, left there about seven oclock and as I was riding a splendid horse, two hours found me in the beautiful little city of Mt. Pleasant, where I remained for a half hour in search of a gintleman with whom I had business, saw him but accomplished nothing. Still I determined to not allow this to discourage me in the rest of my journey; but mounted my horse and repeating to myself that old maxim "that a

bad beginning makes a good ending", and was soon beyond the sight of the city. I had then the distance of eighteen miles to go before I reached the next village, but business was soon forgotten, and my thoughts were of the most pleasant nature, for they were then lingering with my heart around the gentle form of my far off fairy, who although far away is ever present to buy me on in my daily toils. I would occasionally wake from my dreams and become (for a time) deeply interested in the beautiful scenery, which completely surrounded me, on one side would be a grand and lofty hill, on the other a beautiful little valley, filled with brooks whose "low murmurs seem to gush forth from the midst of roses". In this way I had been riding along pleasantly dreaming and admiring the beauties of nature for three hours when I was much surprised upon ascending a steep hill, to find myself in the city of Henryville. This city consists of six small log huts. But I will not attempt a description of it, as there is nothing in or about it to interest any one

I reached my journeys end for the day about half past four. have riden forty one miles and am somewhat fatigued, but I will again say that I am never so weary as to render it unpleasant for me to commune with my little sweetheart.

So after washing and primping a little, I have walked out to "watch the dying of the day", and where I may enjoy the weak yet pleasant rays of the setting sun, and where I may be in solitude with my sweet thoughts of you. But just as the last rays of "Sol" are tinging hill and tree top and when I am most deeply interested in the sublime scene, I hear a voice calling out from the house at which I am stopping. Dr. Young. "Mr. supper is ready", & as I am very hungry I will repair to the house, & have no doubt that by

the time I am through eating, the old man will think I have been starved for a week, or that I am trying to get the worth of my money. As I have eaten supper & smoked once or twice & after bidding the old lady and husband good-night hoping they will not charge me as

extravagantly as I ate, I am once more alone, seated in a room which though roughly furnished is very neatly arranged such as is generally found in our freestone Counties of Tennessee

To night while sitting smoking (upon the piazza which ran along the entire front of the house) my every thought has been of you, in fact this day has been "but one long and loving thought of you", and all that was needed to complete my happiness, was that it had been ordained for us to spend and enjoy the hooties of this evening together.

For fear of wearying I will close, by bidding you good-night, and giving to you the prayers of a warm and loving heart

Forever yours
Willie

P.S.

I will return home to-morrow as I was so fortunate as to find all the persons with whom I had business at this place, it seems that the old maxim is a true one, it is in this case as I have saved a ride of seventy five miles I will write more when I reach home. Goodby W---



Capt. William Reese Pillow, first elected sheriff of Leflore County, (was sheriff before 1875), and his bride, Elizabeth Jane Scales, February 18, 1868.

Note: Willie married Lizzie on February 18, 1868. This letter was written on 16 October 1868. The first baby, Mattie will be born on 24 November 1868, nine months and 6 days after the wedding. Willie is in Columbia. His brother Walter is to marry Mollie. Lizzie is at Elmwood, eight months pregnant.

My Dear Little Girl

I arrived here this evening, yet I was a little unwell last night and this morning on the train, caused by eating a small piece of shoat for supper, but I have gotten entirely well and all that causes me to feel uncomfortable is the want of sleep. But I am not so much so to prevent my writing to my little "Idol". It is useless for me to attempt a description of my travels or feelings as I was returning. Nor do I feel it my duty to describe my feelings on my arrival at home. But darling, it is impossible for me to interest you without them and you would think I was rather cold if I did not write my feelings. So your Willie will power out to you the feelings of his warm and loving heart (so far as he can find words to express them) Love, your Willie is sad and lonesome to night, without his little girl to pet and cheer him, and Oh how hard it is that we should be torn from each other when we are so dependant on each, for happiness, Oh cruel fate it is that has caused the separation of two hearts that beat as one, and can never live without the other. They were all glad to see me at home, welcomed me with many kisses, yet they could not comfort my sad heart it was with tears that I met them, for it reminded me that my dear sweet, and loving little wife was absent, yes every thing was wanting, to complete the happiness of your boy and make cheerful his heart again. Yet they they seemed to think of nothing but you, and were rather disappointed that you did not return with me. I remained at the house but a short time, but went down to the store where I endeavored to employ my mind for a short time with business, which I did, but it was for a short time, as night soon came on and I was compelled to face what I had tried so hard to shun. at first I thought of staying with Dale, and not go home but after reflecting I concluded it would be as hard one time as another, and went home. Mrs Fleming was kind enough to meet me with a kiss and offer consolation she asked many questions about you and regretted that she had not seen you before you left. so all passed off more cheerfully with many question from the family about you all. Supper was announced and here another voice whispered the absence of my

dear little love, the vacant chair caused tears to gather in my eyes and so much that Ma asked me if I had been crying. Supper was soon over with (or at least my part of it) and I asked Ma for our key. And Oh! my daer, I have never had such feelings as I had upon entering the room, the windows were down, the blines closed, and all was dark and silent as

eath. There was nothing that seemed to welcome me. there was no one there to meet me with a smile and a kiss as there had been before she was not there to twine her little arms around me and press me to her warm and loving heart. she was not there to give me a sweet look which assured eternal devotion, but every thing seemed sad and lonesum love in your absence. and I fell that all I loved, all on earth that was dear to me was gone. and I could find no relief except in tears, and upon my knees I prayed that this might be the last time that we should be separated, I then took my seat in front of the window where we have so often sat to gather, and I thought of the many happy moments we had passed there while you was in my lap, and right here and

then I resolved that this should be the last time we should ever be separated for so long a time. hereafter where ever I go, you must go, and where ever you are, I will be. Witness my hand and seal this 16th day of October 1868. can not see how I am to live without you so long, and so you must be surprised to hear that I will be at home with you soon, unless I improve very mush I think three weeks will find me with you. Lizzie wrote to you on Thursday Carrie & Ella have written but have not yet sent them. Little Will has been crying fit to break his little heart because you did not come back with me. he says you went off without telling him goodbye, and that you do not love him. and that everybody hates him and how he wishes he was dead. I found an invitation to Miss Lotties wedding here for us. but she has lanchd out on the broad sea of life with the old Ship before I reached home. and I suppose is now safely anchored at home with her-----be sure and burn this letter or blot this -----how is -----[it is "blotted out"] I hope that Mother is still improving give my love to her & Aunt Mary and a kiss ask Addie to kiss you a thousand times for me and I will pay her back with interest when I come have you seen the Dr if so what do you think of him my love to all. a kiss to Mattie & Judge. tell Addie that I cant find a set of gray furs in town and ask her what kind I must get the white ones are all the stile now. good by love they all join me in much love to you may heaven bless and make my little girl happis is the earnest prayer of your devoted and loving Willie

Lonesum Room Oct 18/68

My Dear Little Wife

This is Sunday night and I must say I am glad to see night come for I have been so lonesum to day. Dear without you for it is the first Sabbath that I have been from you since we were married. one reason for its being so very sad and lonesum is that I have always looked to it as a day of pleasure as I would have nothing to do but pet my little girl, and it is the only day that I could expect to exclusively devote to you, and as I have been without you it is nothing but natural that I would feel sad. yet I have been fortunate to day, for since twelve oclock I have been very busy. but not with the duties of the day but have been attending to worldly matters. About dinner time a boy came from the farm and reported that there was three negrows out there killing our hogs so as soon as I could eat dinner and get a horse I started out. But met Walter and Bobbie who had heard of it before I did and had succeeded in capturing

them, so when we reached town as Waalter and Bob had eaten dinner of course it fill my lot to attend to the rest of it which kept me busy until about four oclock this evening, during which time I had gotten a little wet (as it had been raining all the evening) so I remained down in Town until supper time. wen I went to Sisters ate supper and brought Will up to sleep with me, he is now in bed talking about and wishing for you he has been talking about you all night and says that if he ever sees you again he bets that you will never get away from him anymore. Rebecka Mayes gives a large party Tuesday night and I expect it will be a grand affair there are more than two hundred persons invited and every body is making great preparations for it, but poor Gus has been most too sick for her to attend she was making her party dress when taken, but she is not seriously ill I expect you might guess what is the matter with her. she and Pick have had a big quarrel but he still hangs on, it is rather lengthy for me to give you the particulars but will tell you all when I come he has been trying hard to get

her to marry him this winter but she says she is too young to think of marrying this winter Pick is in hot water he doesn't know what to do Miss Eugeen Wilson is to be married on Wednesday night, to Mr. Washington Long. Young Archie Hughes reached here one day last week from Washington City with his Bride his father gave a very nice reception, he is going to make this his home and read Law under his father I think he is making a splendid beginning at starvation for before he knows much about law he will know more about children. Walter marryes next Wednesday night week they will constitute the company except relations the same company will be here & at Sisters.

Tuesday October 20th 1868

My love I have held this letter over until today hoping that I would receive one from you to day and have the pleasure of answering it but I must say I have been disappointed. I hope that you are not in the "fix" as I wrote you on last friday night the same day I reached home, There is nothing

I cant feel that this letter can interest you much but I hope that you will excuse it with the promise to try and do better; all join me in love to you Ma says that she feels that some member of the family is dead without you and to say that I am not lonesum would be false yet I try and console myself that it will not be long until I will see you goodby and may heaven protect and deliver to me my dear sweet little girl to whom I have and do yet swear eternal devotion give my very best love to all

Your Loving

Willie

A doz kisses
for my Lizzie
from Willie

Sunday night Oct 25/68

My Darling Little Wife

This has been a long and lonesum day to your boy without his little girl. last Sunday I had something to occupy myself with. to day my love has been one of the few in my life in which I have had entirely pleasant thoughts for they have been devoted to my angel they have been all of you. and yet connected to them has been a feeling of sadness which has never before stolen its way into my heart. I really cant tell you what my feelings have been. for I am happy and yet unhappy. happy because I could think of you all day, happy because I worship you, happy because in thinking of you I know that I am thinking of the only one on earth that earnestly and devotedly loves me. unhappy darling because I miss you and am lonesum without you unhappy because I fear & feel that you are unhappy because this is the day to which I have looked forward to as being one of happiness to both & in which I might enjoy the company and society of my dear, sweet and loving little wife, but oh how hard it is that I should be deprived of this happiness & cause you to be unhappy so

Monday Night 26

Dear I am more cheerful to night than I was last for I have been busy all day preparing for the wedding & party. I have invitations for you, Mother Addie & Aunt Mary but have neglected to send them I am having my own fun at Walters expense, and am paying him back for the jokes he played at our expense. bets are running high on him in nine months and three days. I am betting that he comes out a head of our time. I will be very busy until the party is over and dont know that I will be able to write more until afterwards, it is to be a Thursday night I dont feel that I am doing right to send you what I wrote last night. but dear please think of it only as a blue spell wont you love. Yes I know you will for my little girl will do most anything that would make her Willie happy

In regard to renting the land, I have all most concluded to rent and cultivate all of it provided Mother dosent want half if she does I will cultuvate half provided you are willing. The reason I think of cultivating all is that I can get stock, plows, gearing & everything I want except provisions

[Note; gearing means harness such as bridles or plow lines]

on the very best of terms and it will require but little money. Dear I wish if you can you would find out whether it will be difficult to get hands or not and also whether I can buy corn or not down there and if so what it will cost.

Mrs Fleming and all the family send much love to you. Ella has just brought a letter to mail for her. Never mind why didnt you write to me by Wednesdays mail, but I wont scold you this time provided you will promise to do better

so goodby Angel and may heaven bless and make my girl happy
are the earnest prayers of your
Willie

Many many Kisses
for my little girl

P.S.

Excuse mistakes of all kinds. Dear I never go to sleep
without Kissing your picture a hundred times, and singing "I
never can forget you"

Note: All the talk about bets seems to refer to the birth
of the first child. Here, Willie is having a great time up
home for brother Walter's wedding and Lizzie is back on the
farm almost nine month's pregnant. Why is there not one
word about the expected birth? Mattie will be born in less
than a month.

The picture, here, is of Lizzie. It was in the old purse of letters
and may be the one that Willie was kissing every night. This may be a
good time to list Willie's ten brothers and sisters, since some
are mentioned. They are: Mary, Walter, Augusta, Annie, Robert,
Ella, Carrie, Elizabeth and Abner. This Elizabeth, too, is called
"Lizzie". From the letters, there is a close relationship between
Willie and brother Walter, who is one year younger than Willie.
Sister Augusta is six years younger.

Willie's spelling, writing and English improve with all the
practice, but he will go to his grave and never learn to spell
"Lonesome"!



Nov 2nd 1868

My Darling Wife

"I am lonely to night love without you" Yes I am lonely & sad [Note: Lonesome Willie copied "lonely" from a song, then spelled it "lonly" in the very next line!] Oh I feel that I would give the world to have my darling little wife with me to night for Molly & Walter are with us & they seem so happy. it nearly kills me to see others so happy when I am just the reverse. This may sound selfish but I cant help it for I know that there would not be a happier mortal on earth than I would be if I was only with my love & what is worse than all is to know that my little girl is unhappy. I can stand it myself very well until I think that she is unhappy and oh darling it makes me really miserable every time I think of it. Dear I received your long and loving letter thid evening & oh how happy it made me & and yet it made me feel so badly to see, feel & know how dearly you love me, to see that your every thought is of me & that your aim in life is to make me happy & oh how little I deserve such love and affection. It hs been often since I left you dear Lizzie that I have looked back on our

passed life and seen my errors, seen where I have treated you really badly, seen where I have inflicted deep wounds in your dear little heart & trampled the true & warm devotion of a good and loving wife under foot. Oh yes I have heard the deep & heavy sobs of your allmost broken yet loving heart. But oh my darling, darling girl I hope, yest I know that you have forgotten & forgiven your boy for all these bad acts & and hope that they have never caused you to be unhappy since they occured and that you may never think of them again. But ah dear I have been mad justly to pay for them all for it has been with many bitter tears & deep regrets that I have reviewed this portion of opur life But I have resolved & well know that this eval tide can never again flow through my now most penital heart. Love you may think strange that I would write this, but darling I cant help it for I feel it so deeply, and it is a relief to me for I feel so much better after making a full and open confessin of my feelings, & I must confess that there has been times since I left you that I was perfectly miserable and also confess that this is one of the times but it will soon be over Love for the clouds are allready

broken and the sun shines more brightly than ever when I think of & look forward to the time when I will soon be with my little angel, blessed in her love & when I can take her in my lap look in her bright little eyes while she tells her Willie how much he was missed & and how dearly he is loved, yes then I can kiss & press my little angel to my heart, again be happy & feel that I have paid for all that I am now suffering. Then all clouds will have disappeared, then will the sun shine brightly on a bright May morn & our hearts

beet joint in love unforlorn oh darling such happiness is
in store for us. I feel it, I know it & wont this repay us
for what we have suffered. Yes, yes? my love for then we
will be happy together. Dear as it is now very late and I
feel that I have expressed my feelings fully I will closs by
asking a blessing on you & hoping that you are happy

Friday 6th 1868

It has been five days since I wrote you a line. This is
longer than I have gone since I left you without writing but
it could nopt be helped for I have

been very busy both night and day making my arrangements to
live down there next year and had a great deal of business
that I was compelled to attend to before I left home I will
tell you all when I come. I dont think I ever laughed as
much in my life as I did at Walter when he recieved your
present Darling I have but ten minutes in which I can male
my letter and for fear you would be disappointed the next
male I will close by sending much love to all & hoping that
you may be crowned with reaths of happiness I am your most
devoted and loving

Willie

P.S.

You may look for me on the 20th and should I fail to
write between now & then you may know that I cant do so as I
have a great deal of writing to do between now and then
Please kiss my picture & think of & love you darling

Boy Willie

Let me know what articals of clothing
you want me to bring you love

Columbia Tenna Nov 8th/68

My Darling Darling Wife

One more lonesum Sunday has passed and in it I have given you oceans of loving thoughts & connected with its passing without you, has been but one & but one consoling thought, that is, that but one move is yet to pass before I shall see my little girl, yes darling in one week & a half I will be with you and we'll be happy. it seems twelve months since I saw you & the nearer the time comes the more impatient I get. I will leave home next Thursday night one week, and on Saturday following I will be with my little angel, and oh how happy we will be that day when we meet & how different will timw pass then to what it does now, and oh how perfectly happy I will be, but dear the time will pass so slowly from now until then, but I can think each night when I lydown that I am one day nearer my darling Lizzie, so I will try to look forward to the happy days which are in store as a compensation for the

trilals we are now, and have been compelled to undergo, Darling I have never written a single letter in which I have given myself full satisfaction I have never felt that I have done my full duty as a husband, or that I have expressed my feelings of love & devotion as fully as I felt them, but dear this would be impossible as I could never find words sufficient to express them. So Love whatever errors I may have committed I hope & well know that you will excuse, for I can tell you darling when I see you how much I have missed you & how unhappy I have been without you much better than I can wwrite it, for I feel that I could talk to you a week without eating, drinking or sleeping so you may look out & expect to do without sleep for at least two or three nights after I get there. Darling I dont think I ever laughed as much in my life as I did at Walter when he recieved your letter & bridal present. I laughed until I couldn't laugh and my side hurt me all night from it. I will tell you about it when I come. You asked what I gave them as a present, it was a very handsom waiter and howe of goblets, given in our names jointly

[Note: trilals must mean trials, but howe means nothing to me!]

They had about 25 presents and some very handsome ones. I hope dear that you recieved my dispatch in time to prenen your feelin uneasy about me, I dont think I ever saw a more quit election in my life and we made a gain in this county of a thousand votes for the democrats and twenty thousand in the state. Sister's party was a very pleasant one There was a small crowd but everyone enjoyed themselves. I believe I have given you all the news of interest. Bob Friersons Mother died yesterday. I send you the opinion of Mr. Otts as you requested. All the family join me in love to you Ella &

Carrie are getting impatient for an answer to their letters
Give much love to Mother for me, Sister & Aunt Mary and kiss
Judge & Mattie for me. May angels watch over and guard my
sweet little girl and deliver her Willie safely to her are
my earnest prayers

Be cheerful untill I come

A dozen Kisses
for my angel
Good night Love

Note: We do not know whether "Lonesum Willie" got back to
Greenwood on the 20th as he had promised, but we do know
that Lizzie had their first child four days later - Mattie!
I hope he got some sleep before the great event. Did he
become "Happy Willie"?

This is the last letter for eight years. Back on the
plantation there was a string of events. Now, let's look at
the results:

William Reese Pillow and Elizabeth Jane Scales had
eleven children:

1. Mattie Scales	24 Nov 1868-13 Oct 1946
2. Elizabeth Porter (Bessie)	09 Nov 1870-17 Aug 1953
3. William H.	20 Nov 1871-29 Jun 1872
4. Annie Henry	22 Jun 1873-01 Oct 1899
5. Addye Pinckney	16 Nov 1874-06 May 1972
6. William Nathaniel (Will)	04 Jul 1876-15 Jan 1946
7. Robert Lessley (Bob)	12 Jun 1878-19 Mar 1943
8. Terry	03 Feb 1880-15 Jan 1881
9. Mary Irving (Mamie)	28 Apr 1882-09 Apr 1935
10. Infant girl	20 Dec 1883-25 Dec 1883
11. Walter Reese (Walter)	28 Nov 1886-16 Jul 1937

The next letter will be written in June of 1875. Mattie
will be six and Sister Bess will be four years old. The
bet on Willie's brother Walter may have paid off for some -
Walter and Mollie were never able to have children.

Office of
W. R. PILLLOW,
GENERAL MERCHANT.

Greenwood, Miss., June 15th 1875

My Darling Lizzie

I arrived last night a little after dark having stopped at Greenwood and your mothers a short while I felt that I had as soon go to jail as home. None there "to love none to caress" All dark and gloomy. No cheerful faces. No gentle good or prattling tongues to be heard from my loved ones to drive away the gloom of loneliness that had overcome me long before I reached lonely spot. No laughing babe or chirping Annie here now to relieve the wearied mind of its toils and cause it to forget its troubles. All here, Save the jewells of my heart which I had unwillingly but dutiously given up. Yes all here to remind of my absent ones. The worn and tattered "hot" of my Pet was about the first thing I saw on entering the house. The dusky saddened countenance of Eliza too was a constant reminder of the Missing ones, and now & then a sad heavy si from her would break the silence. For hours in rain I endeavored to forget in slumber that you was gone. I felt that I would give freely one year of my life for a sweet good

night from you I would close my eyes only to open them on something that would more forsably remind me of my loneliness. Kate and the Pup were more restless than I ever saw them and especially Kate showed that she missed you, would come to the bed put her feet up & look at me in a pitiful manner. Whether she missed you or because she was sorry for me I was unable to tell The clock had struck one before I had succeeded in sleeping and this morning I awoke only to be reminded that you was gone. Julia wanted breakfast given out. Do not think Pet that I wish to be vided of these remembrencies for the purpose of forgetting or have my affection weaned from you, for while they are panefull they are sweet.

But that I wish to look at it in the true light, best for your and my happiness in the future health to you and our little one is. worth many trials & besides we would never know how to appreciate each other as we should was it not for such trials. Be cheerfull and enjoy yourself if you wish to make happiness for your loving

Will

P.S. Everything is moving on finely brick yard and crop all well except Rily Mule he has foot eval Kate, Pup, & Eliza

Office of
W. R. PILLOW,
GENERAL MERCHANT.

Greenwood, Miss., Monday June 28th 1878

My Darling Lizzie

There is an insufficiency of words in my vocabulary to give utterance or expression to the joyous feelings I experienced on receiving the letter which I had for days looked forward to with anticipated joy & thanks to you & heaven that my fond hope was fully realized. In receiving the medium through the thoughts of my loving & beloved one has been communicated to me in words of soft tender and assured love, which so pleasingly occupy the mind of your devoted Will. Yes my darling, loving Lizzie you have, ever, since you consented to love & become my companion through life occupied that high position in the heart and mind of your Will that no other has or can ever reach. 'Tis true you've had many a cause to doubt and many a tear have shed at the seeming cold indifference shown you by me, yet my Darling, you must admit that when first I had the right to call you mine, I loved yes worshiped you, and that I was as kind gentle and tender as my nature would admit. For months I caressed and gave freely to you my feelings of ardent affection, but at length I fancied that you had grown

weary and tired of my love, and oh, then it was that heaven alone can and did witness the feelings of anguish I experienced, and so for five long and weary years I silently suffered from this ironeous idea on imagination. But Darling at last the dawn of happiness approached, I threw off the yoke that had bowed my spirit bathed in unwholesome drink, and soon the bright sunlight of that young and tender love returned to its former cell and found there that same soft love of youth made more dear by the wrongs and mistreatments I had given you. And it was not until then that I discovered that the mode I had chosen to drown my trouble was only creating them. But now my Pet I know that you join me in Thanks to God that I am again happy, and feel doubly assured that I occupy that position in the heart of my little wife I have so long sought and wished for

I expect you will be saying as Bob Moon says "give us a rest" & as it is now late I will do so for tonight good night Darling Kisses for you & the children

Our crop is looking well but corn is suffering for rain Your Turkeys are doing well & are all here yet. I have two hens with young chickens. Had our early rose

W. R. PILLOW,
GENERAL MERCHANT.

Greenwood, Miss, Monday June 28th 1878

My Darling Lizzie

There is an insufficiency of words in my vocabulary to give utterance or expression to the joyous feelings I experienced on receiving the letter which I had for days looked forward to with anticipated joy & thanks to you & heaven that my fond hope was fully realized. In receiving the medium through the thoughts of my loving & beloved one has been communicated to me in words of soft tender and assured love, which so pleasingly occupy the mind of your devoted Will. Yes my darling, loving Lizzie you have, ever, since you consented to love & become my companion through life occupied that high position in the heart and mind of your Will that no other has or can ever reach. 'Tis true you've had many a cause to doubt and many a tear have shed at the seeming cold indifference shown you by me, yet my Darling, you must admit that when first I had the right to call you mine, I loved yes worshiped you, and that I was as kind gentle and tender as my nature would admit. For months I caressed and gave freely to you my feelings of ardent affection, but at length I fancied that you had grown

weary and tired of my love, and oh, then it was that heaven alone can and did witness the feelings of anguish I experienced, and so for five long and weary years I silently suffered from this ironeous idea on imagination. But Darling at last the dawn of happiness approached, I threw off the yoke that had bowed my spirit bathed in unholusum drink, and soon the bright sunlight of that young and tender love returned to its former cell and found there that same soft love of youth made more dear by the wrongs and mistreatments I had given you. And it was not until then that I discovered that the mode I had chosen to drown my trouble was only creating them. But now my Pet I know that you join me in Thanks to God that I am again happy, and feel doubly assured that I occupy that position in the heart of my little wife I have so long sought and wished for

I expect you will be saying as Bob Moon says "give us a rest" & as it is now late I will do so for tonight good night Darling Kisses for you & the children

Our crop is looking well but corn is suffering for rain Your Turkeys are doing well & are all here yet. I have two hens with young chickens. Had our early rose

At this point, two letters will be inserted for obvious reasons.. They were published in my book, Metts Ancestors in America. One was written by Lizzie's mother, the other by Lizzie.

Feb 11th 1880

My Dear Daughter

I was going to La to day Mollie wrote to Mr Pillow but he cant go expected to go with me but old Edmundson told him a false hood & he has no money to help them with if nothing prevents I will start monday morning it was so cloudy & rained at night I ached so I was afraid to start have reumatism all over Mrs D. Davis is the only one who suffers just as I do even with the loss of mind but her hands are worse Sister Mary's [Mary Ann Kaigler Lesslie] fingers have enlarged so she cant hardly put on any kind of glove joints nearly an inch thick her first fore finger on right hand looks out of place other wise she keeps well. The business is to raise the first Mortgage or rather to pay the owner & take the first Mortgage myself I will have to borrow one thousand dollars but P [William Reese Pillow] may take that much off of my hands the amount is 2,000 I have one thousand in the city [New Orleans] besides enough to run the place & take me to Texas if nothing occurs out of the usual way Pillow cant leave Lizzie she dont know where to look suffers so much with heart disease she is very large. Mattie likes Cary Woods finely. my oats look fine all of the negroes are doing finely no kan say more here yet except Steven Johnson that I have heard of, he dont live here, I havent forgot our buggy - With much love to you all Your affect Mother

M J Scales [This is Lizzie's mother]

Kiss all the children

Waites took some seed to mail to you Pumpkins. long yellow & we suppose the very large Winter squash the smallest seed Pumpkins the Kershaw seed you will know I had to mix them 2 kinds in each paper if nothing happens I'll be gone over two weeks, tell Johny he must be good I'm very proud of William and Jennie tell Scales I'm proud of him & Johny for helping you Kiss them all for me little Addie [Addye Pinckney Pillow - 1874-1972 - here she is six years old.] says she is bound to go with me to see you this summer P- [William Reese Pillow] looks badly is very yellow Leslie left to Minter City monday to be gone until that evening Texas [taxes] collecting.

Saterday

Lizzie has a fine boy & was so sick last night knew nothing of it until morning

Sunday evening

Lizzie has had a chill L [Leslie] will mail this as he goes for the Dr. her babe favors all the others.

potatoes dug. They are fine & plentiful. Have seen Ed but twice since you left. She has not been to see me. But Miss Emma Miss Lizzie & Mrs Wadlington came here one evening after the Male have no fear of my neglecting my business I have learned to quit that long since, Expect I have bought the Foster place at least have made an offer & think he will take it. There is but one thing that pesters me in regard to it. That is how Mother is to get along Love to her & children Grand ma Grand Pa & Aunt Emma Kiss our Babes for me & make them Kiss Ma Ma for Pa Pa. Write as often as your Dicks & Joes will allow you

Your loving
Will

Side note: Miss Eddie is holding the mules while I go to mail the letters Sends Love Will

Note: The next letter from Willie will be in 1881, three years later. Then, the family has six children. Mattie is 13, Bess 11, Annie 8, Addie 7, Will 5, and Bob is 3. Little Terry has been born and has died. In my book, Metts Ancestors in America, there are letters written in the 1880's between Martha Jane Kaigler Scales, Lizzie's mother and her daughters. They tell of Terry's death and Willie is mentioned in some of the letters. Lizzie's mother was called "Mother" by Willie. She called Willie, "Pillow" or just plain "P".

June 14, 1881

My Little Pet

I recieved your letter of the 10th yesterday evening & you have no idea how rejoiced I was to hear from you. Lessley recieved one from Mother saying you would start for Tex on Sunday you say nothing about it but I suppose it to be the case I hope to hear from you this evening if you did in your letter you say "if I go to Texas it will be at least 4 weeks before I get home" This is continually passing through my mind. Now Darling you should not do me this way. You ought not to have told me that you would come by the first of July & and then postpone two weeks I never did you that way, for when I left telling you that I would be back at a certain time I never failed to be there in 24 hours of the time. si if you can consistency with your pleasure it will be a great pleasure to have you come when you promised & I am satisfied if you could only know how much you are missed & how I pine for you day after day & night after night, nothing save an impossability would check you from lesening the space between us. I know I never was as

glad to see any human being as I will be to see you & I know I never hated to see anyone leave me as I did you & never will again My feelings were different than ever before. I felt that my heart would burst. but I expect you will say & think this rather weak for an old man of 13 married years. you can believe it or not Darling but it is true, & one other feanture is that my feelings (or Love I should say) is greater for you now & has been for the last few months than it ever was before save a few months in the early portion of our union oftimes I have looked back upon them with feelings, deep, but sad and thought then as the oasis of my life. These silent but not unfrequent wanderings have been my secret & my joy yet amid these joys a feeling of sadness, a heavy heart & a moist eye would arouse me from my wanderings & why should I have been so moved about the happiest days of my life. Through long years I have striven to discharge the duties of that sacred vow & make bright the days to you & never until now could I account for my sad madiness, it was because the happy months refered to had passed & I never dared hope that they would return, but at last through the perserverance of my Angel that same fresh youthful tide of love is flowing through the channels of, and filling to its brim this heart that is yours and yours alone. Worlds I would give

if I could at this moment clasp you in my arms and press your heart to mine that I might prove what I have said was true, and should God in his wisdom take me before I see you remember that there was one heart that was yours.

And now going back to your return I have several reasons for wanting it, first my own selfish happiness second you

know court will come in the first Monday in July & it will be impossible for me to give any attention to home. one other is I am jealous of Addie or any one else that you may be with, I know when you read this you will think me an old crazy fool. But it is your old Loving fool

If you conclude to come so you will get to Winona between the 1st & 4th of July I will go there for you but after that I cant leave my Court if you come the shortest and quickest route I had rather Mattie would come home before going to school as it will cost no more to bring her by home. Bob will say he loves you best but I think I will have him before you get here. Bessie & Wates went to McNutt this morning & will not get back before morning. Willie , Ann, Bob Send many Messages all of which beg to be excused from writing I will begin cutting oats tomorrow so I will not have time to write again for two or three days but I think I have done remarkably well. This is about the eighth letter I think You will raise about 25 or 30 Peonies this year They are looking well "Goodby swet heart goodby" Love and Kiss to all Tell Mattie I wish she would write to me & tell Pinc to give you one good square kiss for me

Your Loving
Will

Kiss Kiss

Elmwood June 15th 1881

My Little Pet

You cant immagine how rejoiced I was on recieving your letter & Picture it is a good one of the prittiest little girl of my knowledge & I certainly value it above all my possessions & shal continue to do so until I get its original, My Pet, My Idol, My Love, The Angel of My Heart. But I must not feed you from my heart every time I write for fear you would tire of it & wan a change of diet. The little bunch of flowers remind me of one you gave me years ago so you may know they too are appreciated, Darling The hands are all awaiting my movement for work I have been driving the reeper all morning & will have it to do this evening so you will have to excuse me from further writing at this time & I assure you it is a great sacrifice of pleasure for me to quit but this will inform you that we are all well and want to see you I could never tell you how much so good by My Little Sweet-heart from your lover

Will

Kiss Kiss

[This child is Terry Pillow. Family records show his birth as 03 Feb 1880. He died 15 Jan 1881. It seems that the 03 Feb should be 13 Feb.]

[The next sad letter is from Elizabeth Jane Scales Pillow - Lizzie- to her sister Addie Pinck Ball in Cleburne, TX. Lizzie tells of the loss of her baby girl who was never given a name - born 20 Dec 1883 and died on Christmas Day a few days later.]

Jan-4th 1884

Dear Sister

I wrote you a long letter on New Years day - but as it was of rather a doleful nature I burned it just now & decided I try another. I suppose Mama wrote you of my sickness and the loss of our little baby girl. She was the largest of any of the children weighed 11 1/4 - strong looking, fat - & a remarkably pretty baby had very dark hair. even Will [William Reese Pillow, the father] acknowledged her a pretty baby - but - she was only spared to us 5 days - we suppose died with croup, but thought it colic until she was past doing anything for - I never witnessed such suffering from 10 o'clock one night til ten the next when it was almost a blessing - she breathed her last - for Sister you can never know until you pass through the trial what it is for a Mother to witness such suffering & know how powerless we are to save or even give relief - her musles were all drawn & she was stiff in six hours after taken but with every possession of pain her whole frame would quiver - & she turned purple in the face - & yet - clung to life suffering that way for 24 hours - I hope you may never loose any of your loved ones - for - it matters not how many we have there are none to spare - and a baby even so young is sadly missed. This has been a sad and lonely Xmas.

Will [her husband] went to Winona to get some fine cattle he had shipped from Columbia [His old home in TN] - took a chill & got back as far as Carrolton - & could not get home he was quite sick out there just got back last night - has a very bad cough & looks worse than I ever saw him. Lessly carried the children out to school and brought Will home - Lessly had a gay time with the Carrolton girls - he dont know which he likes the best of all the girls. We are having a good deal of sickness in the way of severe colds & horsness. Tell the children Aunt Lizzie could not get to town to get them any presents for Xmas but she will send them by Grandma if not before. Ma & Lessley were here today, she has no cook and it is hard on her this weather for it is miserably cold & she either has to come here to eat or eat cold vitals, they often come to breakfast - & stay till after dinner - if they would come earlier I would be glad to have her come every day but L [Leslie] wont get

up & it is sometimes 1/2 past 9 before they get here. I breakfast - It dont trouble me now for we have 2 meals a day & I'm not able to do anything - but - I am getting impatient. I get out & have things regular & straight once more - especially my milking - we make plenty of butter - but it is nearly cooked in the churning - minks killed nearly all our chickens so we dont get many eggs & this means they wont get any - but - when I get well I will start the ball a rolling - we killed 6500 lbs of meat this winter but it turned so warm about Xmas I lost all my bones and a good deal of sausages.

The children all send so much love to you all - your girl is the best-looking - Our children got so many nice Xmas presents - but - enjoy dancing to William's harp & making a big noise more than anything, are now all marching even to Mary - they all love rough play - Willie hops on Roht and I am trying to save him.

Write soon to your loving sister

L

Note: The above letters show the real world that Willie and Lizzie faced. From Willie's letters, one might not know that little babies were dying, and that people like Lizzie were suffering from heart disease. Next, we return to Willie's letter written in 1881

Sundy Sept 14th 1884

Dear Lizzie

I wrote you a short letter in town yesterday evening & for fear you will be uneasy about Robert & thought you would perhaps like to hear from us all I have determined to repeat the dose tonight Robert is better and up wanted to go over to Walters to see the girls to day [Note: Robert is Willie's son, Robert L. Pillow, age 6. Walter is Willie's brother, on the other side of the river, married to Molly, and they have no children. Willie, mentioned by old Willie is his son, William N. Pillow. The girls are some or all children of Willie and Lizzie - Mattie 16, Bessie 15, Annie 11, and Addie P. 10. Little Walter will not be born for two more years.] but I thought best to keep him with me & did so but let Willie go this morning & as I neglected to tell him to come home tonight he has remained Robert watched anxiously for him as long as it was light enough for him to see & finally I reconciled him by letting him Sleep with me. I have had to remain in the house all day with him for he seemed to be afraid for me to be out of his sight. So it was about as hard on me as it was on him but however the day has passed & sleep time will soon be here & I hope to be able to pass quietly to the land of nod where dreams of past and future happiness may be recalled and fore told & that the

Morrans [? Morns ?] Sun may rise, and renew my willingness to wear the yourk of duty that is allotted me in this life & that I may be so blessed as to be able through life to lighten the burden off those who have a right to claim & expect the reward of my exertions for it is my pleasure that they should. & when it shall please him to whom I am so grateful for my existance to take it from me. it will be my earnest prayer that he may guide your happiness & that it may be not less than you now enjoy and should your lot be cast with another may he prove worthy as a father to my children and Husband for my honey for

Love is not philosophy,
Love is but a dream that hides;
In the heart and there abides,
Lightly Sleeping,
Coily Weeping,
Till the tender heart confides,
Never harming,
Love's More Charming,
Than all else on earth besides.

Dont you think so. good by with a kiss & with love to Aunt Mary
Your Will

Written on side:

I hope you are improving & will soon be able to come home but dont come as long as you improve or at least until you feel you are not improving & then a few days in Carrollton will perhaps do you good You can write occasionally if you will



G. S. Judd

*22 W. Senoith St.
Columbia, Tenn.*



"Nichols" Station Sta. Lynchwood, Miss.

Note: In 1884, the same year that the previous letter was written, the advice below was written. The girls are between 10 and 16 years old.

Advice from William Reese Pillow to his Daughters

Your Fathers advice

Remember , That which most highly adorns woman is modesty
Allow no man to put his arm around you and excuse yourself
by saying I can see no harm in a waltz trust no man who will
say he can see no harm in (the so called) innoent liberties
such as holding your hand or stealing a kiss as he calls it
and he lies when he makes you believe that none but he will
ever know it, he would further have you believe that he
thinks it so innocent that he would never again think of it
when if he ever again lays eyes on you it is his first
thought and it is the first thing he tells his friend after
he leaves you and he would be certain to tell the young man
of whom he is jelous

Remember, none have your interest more to heart than Mother
and Father therefore heed them

Have but few confidants and know them well before you
unbosom to them

Be kind and polite to all but take not all for associates
Menopolize not conversation a good listener is admired more
than an everlasting talker a modest talker is apt to have
good attention

Say nothing about these to a gentleman except he should
violate one of them in such case if you have a copy of it
let him read it for him self & say nothing except tell him
your father gave it to you

Show it to lady friends if you wish. Compliments

Another Note: I hesitate to judge poor ole "Lonesum Willie"
after more than 100 years, however, this does give me a
chance to wonder why some further advice to the girls may
have served them well. Probably, I knew my wonderful
grandmother, Sister Bess, better than anyone, better than
her husband and certainly, her father. As a child, I spent
many summers with her and she confided in me, telling me
many of her secrets. As a young lady, she was curious about
the facts of life. Instead of going to her parents, she
questioned the black servants at Elmwood. They told her
that little babies were found in hollow stumps in the woods.
That is what she believed when she married Mr. John Madison
Oliver at age twenty-two.

455
454

← Page out of order →

think of leaving your little wife and struggle on with out the true heart & brave----- of her own Will. Oh my darling if you knew how dearly & tenderly I love you my one lover. you would

get well, by force of Will & God's help - that one ----- journey down the hill of life together heart-to-heart - hand-in-hand. ----- --- an eternal reunion let us look more to God & pray ----Faith that he will spare our darling to us, Many years yet [Several lines that seem to be a plan for Aunt Mary to stay with the children] so I can be with you and am sure that will be cheapest - after all. Whatever you do will suit me so dont let it worry you in the least-

Mr. Coleman is awaiting to hear from you as he is needing finances badly. I borrowed \$45.00 darling for him

[Writing sideways over the other writing, as was done long ago to save paper. It is not legible, but seems to be about her difficulty in getting money to go to Columbia. She tells him not to worry] Many good night kisses Wife

The letter from Lizzie is put here to let the reader understand letters that follow, which were written by a man who knew he was dying. During the five years, the children were teenagers or grown. The girls were educated in Columbia at a school called the Athenaeum where Lizzie had been educated. It still stands today.



ATHENAEUM—Built in the late 1830s for Samuel Polk Walker, nephew of President James K. Polk. The first occupant, however, was the Reverend Franklin Gillette Smith, president of the Female Institute, and founder of the Athenaeum. Smith's family continued to own the property until 1973, when it was given to the Association for the Preservation of Tennessee Antiquities.

Pictures below were provided by our cousin in Texas, Addie Wall, called "Doll" by her family. Writing on the back of these girl's school pictures say, for the group on the right, "Elizabeth Jane Scales and friends". I do not know which girl is Lizzie. The group to the left - "Scales girls graduating call".



The round picture, below, taken about 1888, shows Mattie on top, her mother, Lizzie to the right, her grandmother, Martha Jane Kaigler Scales, to the left and little sister, Mary, called Mamie on the bottom. Mamie is the one who learned to play the banjo while sitting on my mother's piano!



These four pictures show the girls of Willie and Lizzie, all taken in Columbia. The top two were taken at the same time and so were the bottom two. No names are on the pictures. I will guess. If you disagree, I could care less! The three girls are: left, Mattie (Auntly) b. 1868, middle Annie b. 1873, right my dear grandmother Bessie b. 1870. The picture beside the three is Addye b. 1874. On the second row, we have Annie, again, later on, and to the right is one of the babies, girl or boy, who knows?



J. W. YORK PHOTOGRAPHER



J. W. YORK PHOTOGRAPHER



SEAVY & YORK, COLUMBIA, TENN



SEAVY & YORK, COLUMBIA, TENN

Five years will pass before the next letter written by Willie. It will be dated January 6th 1889. Life at Elmwood must have continued with the farming and the birth of little Walter Reese Pillow on 28 November 1886. He was named after Willie's brother, Walter. Also, as noted in the letters so far, Willie and Walter, brothers one year apart, were friends as well as brothers. Walter had no children. In the file of letters, there is one letter written by Lizzie - only one. Willie's letters are easy to read, Lizzie's is not, but parts are legible and interesting. It is not dated, but must have been written at Elmwood, while Willie was off at Bailey Springs, just before he died on June 29, 1889, of "Malignant Jaundice" at his mother's home, "Halcyon Hall", in Columbia, Tennessee. For several years before his death, knowing that he was very ill, he went from place to place looking for a cure which could not be found.

While some may suspect that his malignant jaundice was cancer, it probably was not. He was ill for too long. It is possible that he died of hepatitis, which causes the liver to fail. That brings on jaundice. "Malignant" can mean uncontrollable, not necessarily cancer.

The letter from Lizzie is out of order, but transcribed, as it can be read, here: -

Sunday Night

My own darling

I wrote you yesterday but it rained so hard could not get it mailed so will not send it - This has been one day without rain, but I feel we will have more rain as it is so warm and cloudy. I recieved your letter last night saying you could leave Bailey on 13th for Columbia so flowers I mailed on 12 will miss you - but I have one p--- left - on our bush which I will send you tomorrow with a few Marchine neil roses from Brother Walter's bush.

I spent today there. The baby is not at all well - has a very sore mouth & tongue caused from disordered stomach. He is very fretful which of course makes your brother and Mollie anxious & unhappy. Brother Walter could talk of nothing but little Walter's smartness. I think he will be all right - in a few days - if not - Mollie will take him to the springs.

Mr. Coleman came home Friday eve - [about ten lines are not clear, but seem to be about some sort of court trial and may not be important, letter continues:]

so I can be with you my darling - for I am so sorry the water did not benefit you, but we wont give up my sweetheart but try the coast & high dry atmosphere & everything else that promises affecting your recovery - dont give up my precious love. keep cheerful & trying, for the sake of the old wife whose every heartbeat is one of love for you, dear

think of leaving your little wife and struggle on with out the true heart & brave----- of her own Will. Oh my darling if you knew how dearly & tenderly I love you my one lover. you would

get well, by force of Will & God's help - that one ----- journey down the hill of life together heart-to-heart - hand-in-hand. ----- --- an eternal reunion let us look more to God & pray ----Faith that he will spare our darling to us, Many years yet [Several lines that seem to be a plan for Aunt Mary to stay with the children] so I can be with you and am sure that will be cheapest - after all. Whatever you do will suit me so dont let it worry you in the least-

Mr. Coleman is awaiting to hear from you as he is needing finances badly. I borrowed \$45.00 darling for him

[Writing sideways over the other writing, as was done long ago to save paper. It is not legible, but seems to be about her difficulty in getting money to go to Columbia. She tells him not to worry] Many good night kisses Wife

The letter from Lizzie is put here to let the reader understand letters that follow, which were written by a man who knew he was dying. During the five years, the children were teenagers or grown. The girls were educated in Columbia at a school called the Athenaeum where Lizzie had been educated. It still stands today.

Note: This is the first of 12 letters written between January and June, when Willie died. He went from place to place, seeking a cure from water, clean air, altitude, or food. Maybe he blamed the swampy, mosquito ridden Mississippi Delta, but he never wrote that he did. At this stage, I have wondered whether anyone will be interested in such sad details, but his attitude is quite remarkable. He writes poetry for his old sick wife just a month before he dies!

Monday Night Jan 6th /89

I wrote you on yesterday but as you were so uneasy about me I thought you would like to hear from me often I went out to see Annie yesterday & found her well and look remarkably well. the children are all looking in good health Will says tell you Menkin wants to sell you some more carpets I will expect Wates by the middle of the week if you see him tell him I am at the Gaston Hotel. It is costing me 2.50 a day to stay in the city which is pritty steep but is as little as I can get along on. I am living on raw Oysters and broiled trout & it is agreeing finely I was troubled when I got here & last night with my bowels but they are all right to day & every thing seems to agree with me. except I have taken fresh cold I will write often take care of your Self love to all and a (kiss) for My little wife

Your Will

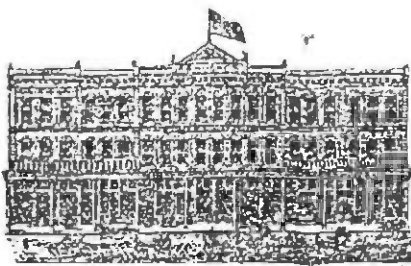
UNITED STATES HOTEL,

Hot Springs, Ark.

R. B. HUGHES, Proprietor.

New Brick Fire-Proof Hotel, centrally
located opposite principal Bath Houses.

— ALSO —
MANSION HOUSE,
FAR ROCKAWAY, N. Y.



Jan 20th 1889

My Dear Little Wife

I recieved your letter to-day and was glad enough to get it The first except one from Bessie at Sunnie Side. Thanks for violets Tell Sweetheart that I will consider her as a copartner with you in sending them. I took my seventh bath to-day and have felt a wonderful change for the better in the last two day. And I now feel that God will Spair me to my loved ones that they may have an adison who's life has been so far & will be to the end one of devotion to them. I have no aim in life furthan their protection and the promtion of their happiness so far as it is in my reasonable power. And I believe that as our children advance to maturity that God will cause them to realize and appreciate the earnestness with which we have toiled for them. May God bless you and ours including our old Aunty in health is the prayer of your loving Will

A Kiss for all & many for My Little Wife (Kiss)

Feb 14th 1889

My Dear Little Wife

Your letters come promptly to hand and are always welcome and I am pleased to hear that all are well and getting on well. I want to see you so much and spoke of running home for a day or two but Bob will not hear to it says it is useless for him to try to build me up if I propose to act that way. So I suppose for the present I will have to abandon the idea he is working faithfully on me, for the first four or five days after I came he did little else but study my case & I think he has it pretty well for his measures seems to be doing me more good than any I have taken. he is getting a splendid practice is going all the time night and day several nights since I have been here he has been up all night long has had two cases of difficult child birth. They are all as kind and attentive as can be. last night was a restless one with me had some fever & my bowell troubled me no little but I feel real well this morning My color is beginning to improve more rapidly & if it continues for a few weeks I will begin to look like I might be kin to white people. I have been thinking of the boys schooling & health & thought of writing to Mr Barres to see if he would take them to board & School & he would perhaps

Keep them with him this summer while we go to N.C. What do you think of it my idea is that they ought to get out of the bottom before warm weather or they will be sick when they do go. I thought that Annie & Addie Mary & Aunt Mary provided it suits her could come here, it is necessary that we look round & make some disposition of them. I hope Mattie is pleased with her horse I do not know whether he will work or not but will find out from the party I got him of. [Note: Picture of Mattie and her horse follows.] I had wished several times that I had not bought him as we expect to be from home this summer I send you some violets one swanly white the other

double purple. If there is anything you want let me know & I will try and restard to the call, all join me in love to you, good-by love to all & Many (Kisses) for My little wife from your

Loving Will

Sunday night Feb 17th

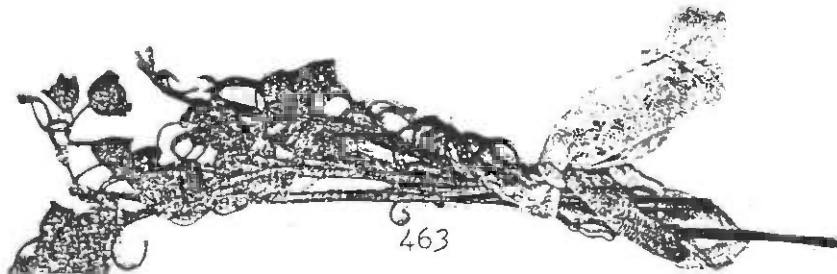
My Dear Little Wife

One year ago we were here together you was then on the Sick list and I never felt better. to night I am the invalid but you are not with me, I dare say by nomeans your fault, tomorrow twenty one years ago we were united as man and wife. then full of youth and vigor we gave little thought as to what the twenty one years would bring us. little thought as to the cares and trials we had to undergo all was joy and happiness no shadow passed on our path save that of sunlight tinted with shades of gold and sparkling diamonds which melted away

only to be replaced by those of a more brillien gem we were happy then my Darling and we are happy now but a careful review of this long time Shadows may be Seen overhung by Dark Clouds, yes Storms raging with violence have Come and passed away. Yet the heart that throbbd for you years ago, Still throbs for its mate where ere it may go How I wish you was with me and how fully I expected to be with you on tomorrow and remain until after the 23rd when I left home but the Lord has not seen fit to so order it therefore we must submit. As I begun this with but little fire in my room and it is turning Cold & I am Coughing some I will close with a (Kiss) for the night

Monday morning

I rose this morning feeling quite well as I have for several previous ones and I am satisfied that my condition is being improved all the time but it is so slow and I also feel that it is but a matter of time with prudance when I will be well again. I hope you are all well and will remain So. Tell the boys that they never did anything in their lives that I appreciate more than their willingness to give up their guns and they should loose nothing by it Some day I will show my appreciation,, tell them and Mary that I will write to them before long. I hope the Horse and Mules have arrived When I wrote about them I thought they were Shipped to Greenwood but two days afterward Bill Moon told they were shipped to Grenada but suppose they have reached home before this if not tell Mr. Coleman to send to Mr. Boyd at Grenada for them. I am glad to hear that the cars have reached the river & hope they will soon be running on the otherend for it will be quite a convenience to us all. Am glad to hear that everything is getting on well in the farming line & expect the same cas with you. ell Mr. C. to not sell Rousseau hay any longer than he is Sure we will have more than we will want. John, Flla, Sarah, Bob & Ma join me in love to all Kiss the children for me & make each of them Kiss My dear little wife for Your Loving Will





April 4th 1889

My Dear Little Wife

Your letter came today and was gladly recieved Robt reciev one from Will & he is answering it, he writes and cries he has had several home sick spells & talks a great deal about how long about how long it will be before he sees you & and Will he talks of all but of you & he mostly, am sorry Mother is unwell hope it will not last long I hope you will take care of yourself & not be exposed too much to the hot Sun. Your potatoes Should be worked as soon as they are all up. do not ban [Note: it may be "bar"- I am not a farmer!] off but plow with a Small sweep & burst middle with either Sweep or turning plow & the second time you work them use

turn plow entirely. I am sorry to hear that Mother is not well give my love to her & tell her to leave there before she gets in my fix I would be glad to have her come up here She could spend a few weeks pleasantly here at least if she will come I will do all in my power to give her a nice time. Everyone seems to think I have improved very much. but I have not felt at all well since I came until today I feel that I will start uphill again & hope to continue. hope the children will all remain in good health & that you will arrange to leave by the first of June. Love & Kisses to all & Many Many (Kisses) for my little wife from her Loving Will

In this envelope there were two cards, below:

John Richard.

Miss Augusta Lillow.

April 19th 1889

My dear Little Wife

Your concert or whatever you call it went off last night & I suppose and I hope with much pleasure and profit and I know Sweetheart covered herself with honors provided she did not turn mule about the time. Robert and I thought and talked about you all last night and the first thing Bob said this morning was "Well Willie is a sleep for he was up late last night" Robert is improving fast and I slowly I long since abandoned the hope of a rapid recovery I now look for it in the far off future. It is time Luke was taking the wool from the sheep. You can let Charley

take the Hogs & put them out Side Such as you wish him to have I don't think I ever saw finer farming weather than we have had here it rains about every ten days just enough for a good season and then turns warm & sunshine and I suppose you are having about the same weather. When you get the wool from the sheep if there is not enough to make a bail have long sacks made of bagging & tromped it in them as tight as you can and Ship to William Oliver. Wesson Mills it must be marked just as a bale of Cotton would be. Write to Mr Oliver informing him of shipment & he will send check for same. Robert joins me in love to all. and accept many (Kisses) from Your Loving Will

Note: This letter is interesting because Mr. Oliver is William Oliver, my Great Grandfather, who owned half of the Wesson Cotton and Wool Mills that employed 2200 people. His son, John Madison Oliver married my grandmother, Sister Bess, Elizabeth Porter Pillow Oliver, in 1892 - three years after this letter was written.

The concert Thursday night was the best amateur performance we ever attended, the song by little Mary Pillow was very fine indeed. We will not particularize further except to say that Ben Humphreys and Arch Peteet brought the house down and caused buttons to fly in every direction. Over \$300.00 was made for the church. A number of ladies and gentlemen were present from other places. We believe it would pay well to repeat the concert.

*This is Mamie French
Who, also, later,
learned to play
The banjo!*

Columbia May 2nd 1889

My Dear Dear Little Wife

Your letter of the 28th recieved to-day and I was quite glad to recieve it, as it has been full 10 days since I recieved one. You have not so much as thanked me for the flowers I expressed you, and but for little Mary making mention of them I would have no evidence that they were ever recieved. you do not mention them in your letter, but I do not think or believe it was caused by the want of love you have for me and that you did appreciate the flowers and that it is simply an oversight that you have not mentioned them. "You Say you cannot live always begging for crums of affection" I regret

that we do not look at this subject alike, with me it is not necessary that you should tell me hour to hour, from day to day or from week to week that you love me to convince me of the fact; I believe that you do love me and will continue in that belief until I have sufficient evidence to the contrary, I do not object to your telling me that you love me and that as often as it is your pleasure to do so. but I do think you do me a very great injustice and one that I do not deserve when you charge me with a want of affection because I am not continually telling you of it. The best evidence that I love you is that for twenty years I have been true and constant to you. I have been true to my Marriage vowe and while I have no doubt that many better men than I has broken this vowe yet I claim

that no better evidence can be given of the love and affection I bear to you, but it seems that you do not and have never placed any confidence in my love I always begin and end my letters with affection all of which is heartily felt. So Darling believe once for all that I do love you and that I care for no other woman as I do for you.

I recieved a sack of peas the other day that I suppose came from you though you do not mention them they werer much enjoyed by all the family and all join in thanks for them it was a large mess & Bob enjoyed them he says because they came from home, he is doing well and is getting as fat as a pig I hear

Well my little wife accept many loving thanks of her husband for her kindness in send his dinner and the beautiful little flowers I havent time to write a note or I would power [pour] out my feelings of thanks to you, in haste your

Affectionate

Husband

Willie

Note: In the envelope was the poem on the next page, written by Willie.

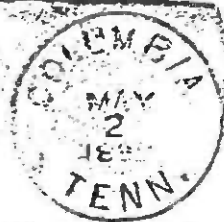
Note; This letter is not dated nor is a location shown.

My Dear Little Wife

I recieved a letter from you on yesterday and one today was glad that everything is getting on well in the farming line and am pleased to know that you have good prospects for success in your church entertainment. As to the lots that I priced Mr. Barnes he cannot get them at what I priced them to him six months ago. so there is no danger of Mr Gardner getting them except he bugs from me, As for the missing tools on the place you wright as if you could get them up if you had the authority I hereby give you authority to git them

if you can & tell Mr Coleman that I say clothe you with all the authority and all the assistance necessary in getting them. If you find them you will do more than I could. but you can rest assured that I do not propose to loose them provided there is crop enough made to pay for them. As for Roberts going home. I think it best that he should remain here he is improving fast and I heaar his lessons each day tell Will to look sharp or he will out weigh him before long Tell Mary that she must act her part better than any of the girls so her sweetheart will be proud of her tell her I will write to her soon. I donot think it worth while to send Willie with Mr. Barnes as it will be but a short while when he will come away. unless you wish him to remain all the Summer with him. The weather has been fine since I came here but are wanting rain which I think we will have in a few hours as it is thundering. My improvement as usual is slow Robert sies for home yeet but since I put him to his books hasent as much time to think of it. Tell Aunt Mary that it has been a long time since she wrote to me. Robt joins in love & Kisses to all with a bushel of love and (Kisses) for my darling wife from her Loving Will

Twenty years have come and passed away
So life seems real to us this day
Yes, twenty years and something more
You pledged to me by the ring you wore
My love was real my love was true
God knows what I was then to you
Whether through love or sympathy for me
A true wife I have found in thee
My ~~desire~~ ~~was~~ - not one of fame
Your comfort being my chief aim
A Merchant a Lawyer you'd have me be
I preferred simply W. R. B.
Now my love was not this best
For many a day we'd had our rest
Otherwise had I been a liar
Our children would less respect their sire



Mrs W. R. B. Pillow
Greenwood
Miss

Columbia May 13th 1889

My Dear Little Wife

I leave here this morning at 10 oclock for Hurrican Springs near Tulahoma Tenn and about 50 miles South of Nashville on the Nashville and Chatanuga road I feel better this morning than I have for 10 days hope I will go to improving again if I do not I am comeing to Costalleon Springs next hope Mother has gotten entirely well and that you are all well. how is Mother you never mention her. how is the G.P.R.R. progressing. Ma says she can take all of us if we can stay in two rooms. that is our room & one back of it with four beds. Anni will take Carrie's rooms. I think we can manage

by the Boys & I taking Cots on the galery which I am sure will be pleasant to me. So when you get ready pull up and come on with your crowd. how is my Meadow getting on. We had a fine rain here yesterday hope you have had one. I wish you would ask McKimbrough if he collected the Gardner note. how is his wife hope her leg was not badly broken well as I havent more than time to get ready by train time I will close with love & Kisses to all including Mother tell Mary to Kiss Aunt Mary & Mother for me I know then that it will be done good-by with much love & Kisses from

Your loving

Will

Hurican Springs May 14th/89

My Dear Little Wife

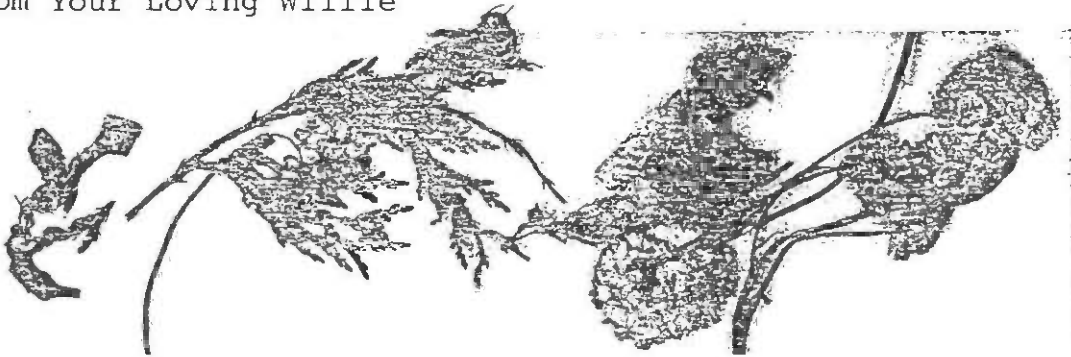
I reached here this morning about 10 oclock and find it an attractive place so far as nature is concerned it has certainly done wonders for it. there is nothing fine in the way of improvements plain buildings and furniture with very good home-like food well cooked I have been drinking the water freely since I arrived and am determined to get the good results if any there be for me as soon as possible and I feel very much better tonight than I have for some time though I felt better yesterday before I left Columbia and it may be that my bad Spell was over and that

I would have improved as much had I not come but am very much inclined to think that the water is going to benefit me if it touches my liver at all it will do more than anything I have yet found and if it serves me well I expect it would be a good idea for you and the girls to come by and spend a week or ten days before going to North Carolina, by the way have you any idea as to when you will go, in writing me direct to Tullahoma, Tenn, Box No 133. I hope Mattie has entirely gotten over her spell and that the rest of you are in good health. the weather is quite cool have had good rains hope you have. Love to all. good-by with much love & Many Kisses from your loving Will

Bailey Springs June 10th 1889

My Dear Lizzie

Your letter of the 6th came to-day. I am glad to hear so good a report of the crop & hope that such may continue but you said nothing about the meadow You all seem to think it of little importance which is a mistaken idea it is not alone a profitable but a very necessary crop to the place. I am glad all are well & that Aunt Mary has consented to come with you. have not heard from Mrs Black. Wrote yesterday to Cullioka to see about board will let you hear as soon as I know. I cant say I am much better than when you left. Love to all and many (Kisses) for yourself from Your Loving Willie



Note: This is the last letter. In 17 days, Willie died in Columbia at his mother's home.

Bailey Springs June 12th 1889

My Darling Lizzie

I have recieved 2 letters from you recently am glad to hear that all are well & crops in good fix with a good rain on them As to potatoes I would not ship so small a quantity do not think it would pay dispose of what you can. cant you Sell Some of them to the negrows on the place you had better risk getting pay in the fall than let them rot however do the best you can any disposition you make of them will please me. As to Bailey think he had better be out on the pasture at the lower place am glad Kate has a filly colt

it and her last years colt ought to make a real good & pritty team Some day I will try and buy it from Willie for you and give you the other one & you will afterwhile have a nice team and something that will remind you of me in years to come. I think your idea of Sending Bessie on with Addie is a good one I have written to Culleoka & will hear from there Soon I will leave hear tomorrow for Columbia do not think the water is doing me any good. I may return if so will write you at once hoping that you all remain well and with love and Kisses to all reserving Many for your dear Self from your

Loving Will

DIED

In Columbia, Tenn., his native city, of jaundice, June 29, 1889, Capt. Wm. R. Pillow, for many years and honored citizen of Leflore county, Miss.

Descendant of a long line of noble ancestry, some of whom gained a national reputation, he proved himself in life and death a worthy scion of a brave and gallant stock.

In defense of injured innocence and the vindication of down-trodden humanity, he was gallant almost to a fault. Polished and urbane in society, he was the type of the true gentleman.

His hospitality was as large as his great, noble heart, and none passed his threshold but desired to visit his home again. His honor was stainless as the escutcheon of his noble family, and with all ranks of society he stood SANS PEUR SANS REPROCHE.

The immense concourse of his fellow citizens which followed him to his last resting place, was witness of what esteem he was held in by all ranks. Taken all in all, "we ne'er shall see his like again" QUIESCAT IN PACE, in the hope of a glorious resurrection.

J.L.B.

DIED

In Columbia, Tenn., his native city, of jaundice, June 29, 1889, CAPT. WM. R. PILLOW, for many years an honored citizen of Leflore county, Miss.

Descendant of a long line of noble ancestry, some of whom gained a national reputation, he proved himself in life and death a worthy scion of a brave and gallant stock.

In defense of injured innocence and the vindication of down-trodden humanity, he was gallant almost to a fault. Polished and urbane in society, he was the type of the true gentleman.

His hospitality was as large as his great, noble heart, and none passed his threshold but desired to visit his home again. His honor was as stainless as the escutcheon of his noble family, and with all ranks of society he stood SANS PEUR SANS REPROCHE.

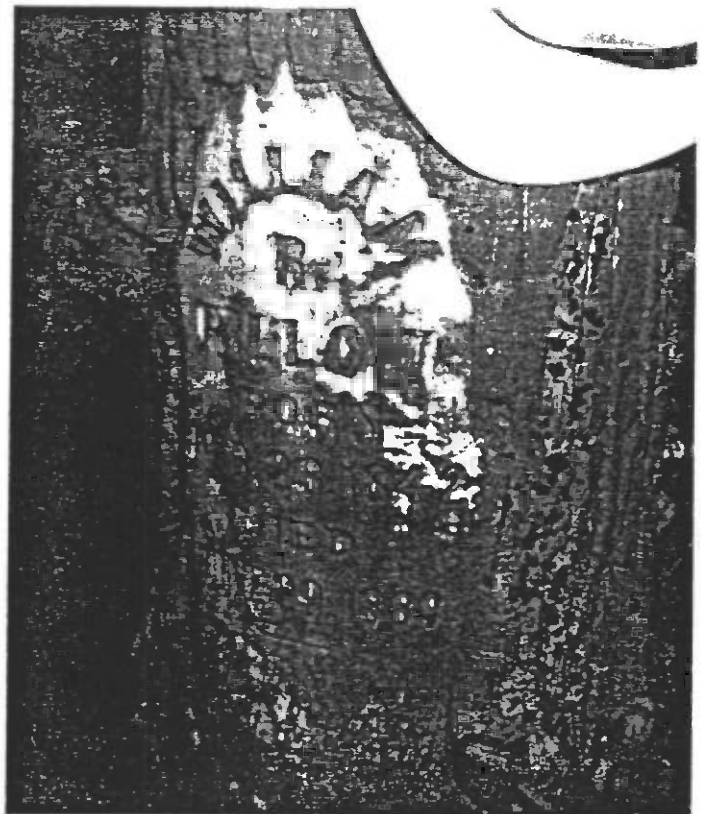
The immense concourse of his fellow citizens which followed him to his last resting place, was witness of what esteem he was held in by all ranks. Taken all in all, "we ne'er shall see his like again."

QUIESCAT IN PACE, in the hope of a glorious resurrection.

J. L. B.



The carved marble tree is Willie's tombstone. The stone on this side is Lizzie's.



In the old purse was an envelope with a large lock of human hair.
It was chestnut brown, no whitw strands, fine and curled. The
initials on the envelope are of Elizabeth Porter Pillow - Bessie.

*Our precious mother's
hair.*

E.P.P.



FAMILY BIBLE OF WILLIAM H. PILLOW, SR. OF COLUMBIA, TN

This Bible belongs to William Harden Pillow of Greenwood, MS. The transcription is made from copies and from notes from the original where words were not legible in the copies. The family pages are not numbered.

MARRIAGES

Wm. R. Pillow & Lizzie J. Scales
Feb 18th 1868
Percy Robinson & Martha Scales Pillow
Aug 11th 1891
John M. Oliver & Elizabeth Porter Pillow
March 24th 1892
Annie Pillow & John Erskine married
Nov. 18th 189? (? 8, or 7 or 6 - blotted and overwritten)
Addie Pillow & George Williamson
June 22, 189? (? 7 or 8 - blotted and overwritten)

Mary Irving Pillow & Floyd Lawson Scales
January 2nd 1907 (Married E.C. French May 22 - 1913 -)
William N. Pillow & Sara McLean
April 22, 1914
Robt L Pillow - Frances McLean Peebles
June 10, 1914
Walter R Pillow & Nell Durden Nov 31 1910

-----End of Page-----

BIRTHS

Wm Rees. Pillow Feb 23rd 1842
Lizzie Jane Scales July 11th 1849
Mattie Scales Pillow November 24th 1868
Lizzie Porter Pillow May 9th 1870
Wm H Pillow Nov 20th 1871
Annie Henry Pillow June 22nd 1873
Addie Pinck Pillow Nov 16th 1874
Wm Nathaniel Pillow July 3rd 1876
Robert Lessley Pillow June 12th 1878
Terry Pillow Feb. 13th 1880
Mary Irving Pillow April 28th 1882
Infant girl Baby Dec 20th 1883
Walter Pillow Nov 28 1886
Helen Peebles Pillow Daughter of R.L. Pillow June 25 1915
Elizabeth P. Pillow " " " " January 13 1917
Walter Pillow Jr. Nov 22d 1811
George Durden Jun 29th 1914
Lillian Dale Sept 5th 1916
Wm N. Dec 6th 1918 - son of Walter Pillow
Dudly No 30th 1920

-----End of Page-----

MEMORANDA

Annie Henry Pillow graduated at
the "Athenaium" Columbia, Tennessee
May 26th 1892. "Valedictorian"
Mary Irving Pillow graduated June 7, 1900
at Warrenton, VA
Mrs. Mary Lessley Walton died
Mattie Scales Terry died Jan. 29, 1881
Waites Scales Terry died

This Bible was bought with gold earned W.H. Pillow
Sen. in early manhood, given to Wm H. Pillow, Jr. by his
Grand Mother Pillow & at his death (?writing?)
in this Bible

DEATHS

Mrs. M.J. Scales died Aug 21 1908 - agd 84 yrs
Wm Reese Pillow died June 19th 1889 at Columbia Tenn.
(Elizabeth Scales Pillow - Jan 18 - 1924)
(Our dearly beloved Mother)
Wm H. Pillow June 29th 1872

Terry Pillow January 15th 1881
?Mary? Elizabeth Robinson died Dec 25 1899
Baby infant of L.J. & W.R. Pillow Dec 25th 1883
Wm R. Pillow June 29th 1889
Annie Pillow Erskine & Infant died
Oct 1st 1899.
Percy Robinson died Sept - 16th 1902

-----End of Transcription-----

I certify that these copies were made under my supervision
from the Pillow Family Bible owned by William Harden Pillow. In
cases where the old, dim and yellow pages would not copy clearly,
I hand copied the words from the original to the best of my
ability so that they could be used in the transcription.

Subscribed and sworn to before me at San Antonio, Texas, on
this 24th day of April A.D. 1989.

Elizabeth A. Morris
(Signature of Notary)



ELIZABETH A. MORRIS
Notary Public, State of Texas
My Comm. Exp. 12-27-92

Armstrong Hart Pillow

Armstrong Hart Pillow

(NOTARY'S SEAL)

SCALES-PILLOW CEMETERY

Located west of and near Greenwood, Mississippi, on West River Road. Property owned by Alfred Leslie Scales. The inventory was made on April 6, 1989 by a family member, Hart Pillow Barker, San Antonio, Texas.

FIRST ROW OF THREE ROWS

1. Mary Jane
Wife of S.J. Lessley
died April 17, 1859
2. Mrs. Mary A. Walton In loving
Born March 11, 1816 memory of
Died Oct 6, 1890 our aunt
3. Elizabeth Pillow Oliver
May 9, 1870 -
Aug 17, 1953
daughter of William Reese Pillow &
Elizabeth Scales Pillow
4. Addye Pillow Williamson
Nov 16, 1874 - May 6, 1972
Daughter of William Reese Pillow &
Elizabeth Scales Pillow
5. Mattie Pillow Robinson
Born Nov 24, 1868
Died Oct 13, 1946
6. Percy Robinson
Born June 24, 1864
Died Sept 16, 1902
7. Mary Elizabeth
Percy & Mattie Robinson
Born Dec 12, 1897
Died Dec 25, 1897
8. Annie Pillow Erskine
Born June 22, 1873
Died Oct 1, 1899
9. John Erskine
1866-1932

MIDDLE ROW

1. Mary E.
daughter of W.N. & Martha J. Scales
Born Oct 6, 1845
Died ? ? ? (Infant death)

5. Mrs. M.J. Scales
June 12, 1825
Aug 21, 1908
6. Mattie I. Terry
Wife E.W. Terry
Oct 6, 1858
Jun 29, 1881
7. E.W. Terry
Son of B.T. & E.D. Terry
Aug 16, 1853 - May 30, 1889
8. Elizabeth Waites
wife of Dr. B.T. Terry
Born Oct 14, 1832
Died April 16, 1916

I certify that this information was copied exactly to the best of my ability from the headstones in the Scales-Pillow Cemetery.

Subscribed and sworn to before me at San Antonio, Texas, on this 04 day of April A.D. 1989.

Elizabeth A. Morris
(Signature of Notary)



ELIZABETH A. MORRIS
Notary Public, State of Texas
My Comm. Exp. 12-27-92

Armstrong Hart Pillow

Armstrong Hart Pillow

(NOTARY'S SEAL)

NOTES ON THE SCALES - PILLOW CEMETERY

The listing of graves in the Scales - Pillow cemetery was made by copying the inscriptions exactly. In some cases, "pet" names, initials or less than complete names were carved into the headstones. These notes are intended to identify and clarify the names and the relationship of the persons within the family. Please notice that the list designates three rows of graves and numbers within the rows. A reference, "III 5" will mean "Third Row, grave number 5". That grave is M. J. Scales. She will be the first discussed. Names of those buried in the cemetery will be in bold type underscored to distinguish them from other names mentioned.

III 5 Martha Jane Kaigler Scales was the daughter of William Kaigler and Elizabeth H. Beasley Kaigler of Woodville, MS. Martha married William Nathaniel Scales, who died in a Union POW camp during the War Between the States. He bought the land which became the Scales - Pillow plantations near Greenwood, MS, to include that where the cemetery is located. In the cemetery are two of Martha Jane's five sisters:

I 2 Mary Anne Kaigler Lessley/Walton, and I 1 Mary Jane Lessley, the wife of her son, Samuel J. Lessley, who was killed in the War Between the States. Mary Anne married Walton, her 2nd husband late in life.

II 2 Elizabeth Kaigler Lovie.

Also, in the cemetery are four children of III 5 Martha Jane Kaigler Scales:

II 5 Elizabeth Jane Scales Pillow

III 4 Alfred Leslie Scales, Sr., and his wife III 3 Katherine Wade Scales had one child, Alfred Leslie Scales, Jr. By another marriage, III 3 Katherine Wade Scales was the mother of III 1 Edgar C. Walt and III 2 Katherine Walt.

II 1 Mary E. Scales, Infant.

III 6 Mattie Scales Terry, wife of III 7 E. Waites Terry, who was the son of Dr. B.T. Terry, whose wife was III 8 Elizabeth Waites Terry.

II 5 Elizabeth Jane Scales Pillow, above, was the wife of II 6 William Reese Pillow. In the cemetery are nine of their eleven children:

I 3 Elizabeth Porter Pillow Oliver

I 4 Addye Pinckney Pillow Williamson

I 5 Mattie Scales Pillow Robinson, her husband, I 6 Percy Robinson, and their infant child, I 7 Mary Elizabeth Robinson.

I 8 Annie Henry Pillow Erskine and her husband I 9 John Erskine.

II 3 Infant daughter

II 4 William Harden Pillow, infant.

II 4 Terry Pillow, infant.

II 7 Mary Scales Pillow French, and her son, II 10 Robert Martin Scales.

II 10 Robert Leslie Pillow, and his wife, II 9 Frances Peebles Pillow.

This accounts for all graves in the cemetery. Hart Pillow copied the writing on the headstones on April 6, 1989. The private cemetery is in a beautiful grove of trees and wild terrain, surrounded by a heavy iron fence.

Well, cousins, some books start with a "Foreword", but this one will end with a few words from the old soldier. My two index fingers are sore from typing "Lonesum" 743 times, "Happy" 889 times, and "Love" 7,232 times. Hart, if you do not believe me, go ahead and count the words! I have tried to let Willie write this book, and I think he did a great job. I will not judge Willie. The readers, if anyone reads this pamphlet, will decide about the character of our ancestor. I doubt that anyone will doubt that this was a case of true love, unless you read the letters his mother-in-law wrote! My mother-in-law didn't like me either - I guess it runs in the family!

Lizzie lived a long, long life. She did not marry again. At the reunion, I said that one thing Pillow men did was to marry great, strong, smart women. Certainly, Elizabeth Jane Scales Pillow was one of them. Part of her obituary states:

Mrs. Lizzie Scales Pillow Laid to Rest

The remains of Mrs. Lizzie Scales Pillow who died in Gainesville, Ga., on Friday night were laid to rest in the family cemetery here yesterday afternoon after a beautiful and appreciative tribute had been paid to her memory at the First Presbyterian church of which she had been a member for many, many years.

Lizzie died on January 18th 1924 at the age of 74 years. The two pictures of Lizzie below were taken in Atlanta in 1923, the year before she died. The ugly little kid in her lap is Colonel Albert Caswell Metts, Jr. If you don't believe me, ask Dudley.



I enjoyed seeing all of you kids at the reunion.

Index

This index includes the Metts Ancestors in America. Each name listed is in the direct line. Brothers, sisters, aunts, uncles and cousins are not indexed.

Allen, Ann (Nancy) 233, 258, 261, 274
Allen, Valentine 68, 233, 235, 239, 261, 273, 274; 274-a&b, 333, 367, 370, 371
Allin, Abraham 233, 272
Allin, Richard, Jr. 233, 271
Allin, Richard, Sr. 233, 271, 292
Allin, Ursula 233, 237, 261, 272, 303
Allin, William 233, 239, 270-c, 272, 273, 303, 333
Anderson, Frances 1, 73, 78, 79, 331, 335, 343, 355
Anderson, John 1, 78,
Anderson, Tabitha 1, 360
Anderson, Walter 1, 78, 80, 333, 342, 355, 356-365
Arnold, Ann (Nancy) 233
Arnold, William 233
Baldridge, James 2, 104-x, 104-y
Baldridge, Jane 2, 104-x, 104-y
Beasley, Elizabeth H. 233, 300
Beasley, Robert C. 301-j
Bethell, Jane Watt 233, 258, 263, 281, 283
Bethell, William 233, 235, 282, 283, 284, 285, 286, 372, 373, 383
Bethell, William, Sr. 233, 68, 233, 263, 284, 285, 286, 333, 383
Boddie, Mary 105, 136, 390
Boddie, William 105, 136, 390
Bonner, Elizabeth G. 1, 886, 88, 89, 93, 96, 97, 98
Bonner, Hubbard 1, 86, 88, 93, 95, 96, 97, 98
Bonner, Joseph 1, 68, 93, 96, 97, 333
Bradley, Thomas 1, 99
Bradshaw, Hugh 233, 279, 333
Bradshaw, Jane 233, 279
Bridger, Joseph 105, 106, 138, 171-178, 289, 333, 334
Bridger, Martha 105, 167, 170, 171, 173, 178, 179
Bridger, Samuel 105, 171, 173, 178, 179
Brockman, Henry 105, 191
Brockman, Samuel 105, 188, 191, 192, 193
Brockman, Sarah 105, 188, 190, 191, 192
Brooks, Elizabeth 233, 272, 303
Brown, Jean (Jane) 233, 275, 276, 277
Brown, William 105, 136, 275, 276, 280
Browne, John 105, 136, 138, 139, 390
Browne, Margaret (Peggy) Fleming 233, 334
Browne, Sarah 105, 390
Browne, Thomas 105, 136, 138, 390
Callaway, Edward 105, 142, 147, 149, 150
Callaway, John 105, 142, 144, 147, 149, 150, 151, 188
Callaway, Joshua Sanford 95, 105, 138, 141-147, 153, 157, 159-161, 142, 147
Callaway, Joshua, Sr. 105, 106, 142, 147, 148, 149, 188, 189, 388,
Callaway, Mary Milner 105, 110-115, 120, 138, 144, 181, 388, 390, 3
Callaway, Peter 105, 142, 149, 150, 151
Campion, John 311, 325
Campion, Mary 311, 325
Carter, Giles 233, 289, 290-292, 294-a, 382, 384
Carter, Susannah (Nancy) 233, 286, 287, 292, 293, 294, 382
Carter, Theodrick I 233, 291, 292, 382

Carter, Theodrick II 233, 292, 293, 382
 Cartmell, Nathaniel 2, 104-o, 104-z
 Cartmell, Sarah 2, 104-u, 104-z
 Chester, Mary 2, 104-t, 104w, 104-z
 Chester, Thomas 2, 104-t, 104-u, 104-z
 Cock, Agnes 104-1, 104-10, 333
 Cock, Alexander 1, 99, 100
 Cock, George 1, 100, 101, 104-1, 104-2, 104-10, 333
 Cock, John W. 1, 100, 101, 104-h,u,1,2 & 10, 333
 Cock, Linus 1, 90, 91, 100, 101, 102-104, 104-a, 104-g, 104-h
 Cock, Louisa Overall 104-h
 Cock, Parilee 1, 28, 90, 91, 92, 99, 104, 104-h
 Coplepower, Katherine 233, 299, 300
 Cowan, Elizabeth 105, 156, 157, 158, 164,
 Cowan, George 68, 105, 106, 156, 158, 163, 164, 165, 333
 Crewes, Hanna 233, 289, 290, 291, 292
 Crewes, Hannah 233, 382, 384
 Digges, Catherine 105, 388
 Digges, Edward 105, 388
 Dixon, Patience 105, 153
 Dixon, Thomas 105, 153
 Dorington. Joan 105,167, 169, 170
 Elliott, Mary 2, 104-a
 Faulk, Milbray 105, 122, 123, 126, 390
 Fleming, Joseph 233, 275
 Fleming, Margaret (Peggy) 233, 275, 276, 278
 Froman, Maria Christina 2, 104-b, 104-o
 Froman, Paul, Sr. 2, 104-k,333
 Gibson, Mary 233, 258, 259, 263
 Glymph, Elizabeth 1, 42, 48, 49, 50
 Godwin, Barnaby 105, 167, 171
 Godwin, Liliory 105, 153, 154, 156, 165, 167, 171
 Godwin, Thomas 105, 106, 138, 167,170, 171, 173, 333
 Godwin, Thomas, Sr. 105, 167, 169, 170, 333
 Godwin, William 105, 167, 171
 Godwyn, Anthony 105, 167-169
 Godwyn, John 105, 167-169
 Godwyn, Robert 105, 167-169
 Godwyn, William I 105, 167-169
 Gould, Mary 105, 150
 Gray, Elizabeth Lee v., 38, 39, 195, 311, 325, 328, 313-330, 380
 Gray, John 311, 313-322, 333
 Gray, Joshua 311, 319, 321-325, 327
 Gray, Lyman J., Sr. 311, 325, 328
 Gray, Lyman Joseph 311 325, 328, 330
 Gray, Lyman Root 311, 323, 324, 325, 327
 Green, Mary 105, 195, 196, 207
 Hall, Deborah 311, 323
 Harrison, Andrew 1, 66, 67, 68
 Harrison, Margaret 1, 66, 67
 Harrison, Mary 1, 65, 69, 72
 Haslett, Rebecca 311, 325
 Henderson, Isabella Graves 105, 106, 148, 149, 188, 190, 388, 392
 Henderson, John 105, 187, 188, 190, 333
 Henderson, Joseph 105, 147, 148, 187-191, 190-a, 190-b, 333, 388, 3
 Henderson, William 105, 187, 188

Herndon, Anne 105, 189, 195, 199, 206, 211, 213, 218, 388, 392
 Herndon, Catherine Digges 217, 221
 Herndon, Edward 105, 213, 217, 218, 221, 392
 Herndon, William 105, 388
 Heyd, Johannes 2, 104-k
 Heyd, Magdalena 104-k
 Hite, Elizabeth 2, 104-j to 104-q
 Hite, Jost 2, 104-k to 104-n
 Hodges, Elizabeth 1, 331, 335, 351, 352, 353, 354
 Hodges, Frances Anderson 1, 331, 335, 343, 351, 355
 Hodges, John 1, 63, 64, 68, 70, 73-79, 333, 335, 338, 351, 352, 354
 Hodges, John, Sr. 1, 73, 74,
 Hodges, Margaret 1, 20, 31, 60, 62, 63, 64, 78, 79
 Hoggatt, Elizabeth 233, 244
 Hopkins, Ann 1, 53
 Hunt, Mary 1 233, 273
 Hunt, William 1, 233, 273
 Johnson, Benjamin 233, 273, 303, 304, 380
 Johnson, Edward 233, 273, 303, 304, 334, 379
 Johnson, Elizabeth 105, 150, 151, 272, 304
 Johnson, Gideon, Sr. 233, 235-239, 272, 273, 303, 310-a to h, 333, 367, 37
 Johnson, Ursula 233, 237, 238, 240, 272, 303, 380
 Jones, John 2, 104-y
 Jones, Mary 2, 104-y
 Jones, Nathaniel 104-y
 Kaigler, Andrew 68, 233, 235, 294, 299, 300
 Kaigler, Andrew, Jr. 302, 302-a, 333
 Kaigler, Andrew, Sr. 233, 235, 297, 298, 299, 300, 301-1, 333
 Kaigler, Elizabeth H. Beasley 301-b to k
 Kaigler, Martha Jane 233, 258, 266 to 270-16, 295, 301, 301-k, 331
 Kaigler, Martha Jane 233, 331, 383, 395 to 412, 456
 Kaigler, William 233, 267, 295, 299, 300, 301, 301-b, 302, 302-b, 3
 Kennamer, Charles Albert vii.,
 Kennamer, David Wendell II vi.
 Kennamer, John David vii.,
 Kennamer, Virginia L. v., vi., viii.
 Kirk, Christopher 1, 54, 55
 Lea (Leigh), James 105, 188, 189, 195, 197-206, 211, 218, 333, 388, 392
 Lea, Delphi 105, 188, 189, 195, 199, 204, 388, 392
 Lea, William 86, 105, 188, 195-207, 210, 333, 334
 Leath, Ephraim 2, 104-r, 104-s, 333
 Leath, Hannah 2, 104-c, 104-r, 104-q
 Leath, James 2, 104-g, 104-r, 104-t, 104-u
 Long, Gabriel 1, 65-68, 70-72
 Long, Jeremiah 1, 65
 Long, Mary (Polly) Harrison 1, 57, 65, 70, 72
 Long, Reuben 1, 55, 57, 59, 65, 68, 69, 70, 71, 72, 333
 Long, Richard 1, 65-68
 Looney, Dominick 311, 325
 Looney, Mary Ann 311, 325
 Looney, Patrick 311, 325
 Mackey, Violet 233, 277-279
 Madison, John 105, 193, 196
 Madison, Mary 105, 192, 193, 104-a, 194-b

Magee, John 1, 93, 94
 Major, Francis 105, 195, 196, 205, 208, 209, 210
 Major, William, Jr. 105, 207, 208, 209, 210
 Major, William, Sr. 105, 210
 Mason, Elizabeth 105, 207, 209, 210
 Mason, Lemuel 105, 137, 207, 209, 210, 211, 333
 Mason, Lt. Francis 65, 105, 207, 208, 210, 211, 333, 334
 Massey, Margaret 233, 273, 303
 Maye, Elizabeth 105
 McCarthy, Dennis 311, 326
 McCarthy, Helen Theresa 311, 326, 330
 McDaniel, Anne 105, 130, 133, 136, 137, 138, 390
 McDaniel, Daniel 105, 133, 136, 137, 138, 390
 McGee (Magee), David 1, 93, 94
 McGee, Rachel 1, 93, 95, 96, 97, 98
 McKay, James, Jr. 2, 104-u
 McKay, James, Sr. 2, 104-t to 104-w, 333
 McKay, Lydia 2, 104-u
 McKay, Robert, Sr. 2, 104-t, 104-u
 McMahan, Helen 311, 326
 Megee (Magee), David 1, 93, 94, 95
 Merckle, Abraham 2, 104-k
 Merckle, Anna Maria 2, 104-j-1, 104-k to n
 Merckle, Anna Veronica 2, 104-k
 Metts, Albert Caswell v. 1, 29, 35, 36, 37, 195, 235, 334, 388, 390
 Metts, Albert Caswell, III 38, 108, 380
 Metts, Albert Caswell, Jr. v.1, 36-39, 165, 195, 233, 330, 334, 380, 388, 390
 Metts, Elizabeth Gray vi., 1, 38, 39
 Metts, John Phillip v., 1, 23-27, 30, 35, 79, 81, 92, 104
 Metts, Michael Albert (1825-1899) 1, 17, 19, 20-27, 31, 51, 53, 62, 64, 79, 3
 Metts, Michael Albert II (1984-) vii., 1
 Metts, Patricia Coy Jurgens vi., 1
 Metts, Stephen James vii. 1
 Metts, Virginia Lee vi., 1
 Metts, William Roger vi. 1
 Metz, Henrick 1, 6, 9, 10, 13, 14
 Millerin, Elizabeth 1, 41, 43, 44
 Minge, Mary 233, 273
 Mitts, Henry 1, 4, 6, 11, 14-17, 68, 296, 333
 Mitts, Phillip 1, 7, 16-19, 29, 41, 51
 Murphy, John 311, 325
 Murphy, Mary Anna 311, 325
 Nash, Dr. John J. 1, 60, 62, 63, 74, 77, 78, 79
 Nash, James 1, 56, 57, 60, 68, 333
 Nash, John 1, 55-60, 64, 65, 68, 70, 72, 76, 79, 333
 Nash, Mary Richards 1, 20, 24, 25, 27, 31, 51, 53, 79
 Nash, Nancy 1, 56-62, 64, 79
 Nash, Reuben 1, 59-62, 334
 Nash, William I 1, 53-56
 Nash, William II 1, 55
 Nash, William III 1, 55
 Nash, William IV 1, 55
 Nickells, James 233, 284, 284-b, 333
 Nickells, Jeane 233, 284

Oliver, Elizabeth (Bessie) Pillow 233, 207-1, 408
 Oliver, Elizabeth Porter Pillow 105, 233, 270-2, 480
 Oliver, Gladys Marie 105, 380, 383, 388, 390, 392
 Oliver, Gladys Marie v., vii, 35, 37, 105-108, 119, 233, 235, 253
 Oliver, John 1, 68, 105-107, 129-138, 333, 390
 Oliver, John Madison iv., v., 35, 104-110, 119, 252, 253, 380, 383, 388, 39
 Oliver, McDaniel 105, 122, 126-130, 135, 390
 Oliver, Wiley 105, 122-126, 130-132, 334, 390
 Oliver, William 35, 105-141, 181, 253, 334, 390, 392
 Overall Family 104-a to 104-z
 Overall, Abraham 2, 104-c, 104-g to 104-j, 104-q, 104-r, 334
 Overall, Christina Froman 104-c
 Overall, Elizabeth Ann Waters 104-h
 Overall, Hannah 104-g
 Overall, John (1707-1743) 2, 104-a, 104-b, 104-c
 Overall, John (1756-1819) 2, 104-c to 104-f, 333
 Overall, Louise (Louisa) 2, 104-a, 104-g, 104-f, 104-h
 Overall, William (1682-1726) 2, 104-a, 104-y
 Overall, William (1725-1784) 2, 104-b, 104-c, 104-o
 Overall, William, (b. 1650/60) 2, 104-a, 104-x
 Owen, Ann 233, 272, 303
 Owen, Thomas 233, 272, 303
 Pillow, Abner 104-b, 233, 235-237, 239, 241, 243-245, 248, 334, 38
 Pillow, Elizabeth Jane Scales 233, 270-2, 476, 477, 478, 480, 481
 Pillow, Elizabeth Porter 105, 106, 233-5, 251-2, 258, 275, 477
 Pillow, Elizabeth Porter 233, 380, 383, 388, 408, 457, 475
 Pillow, Jasper 233, 235-238, 248
 Pillow, John 233, 333, 334, 367 to 370, 380
 Pillow, John 68, 233, 235-241, 255, 256, 261, 272, 274, 279, 303
 Pillow, William H. 233, 237, 245, 247, 248, 251, 270-1, 275, 280, 380, 475, 47
 Pillow, William Reese 233, 413 to 474, 475, 476, 477, 478
 Pillow, William Reese 233, 249, 251, 281, 331, 334, 380, 383, 413 to 474,
 Pitt, Ann 105, 167, 171, 182
 Pitt, Hester 105, 178, 179, 181, 184
 Pitt, Nicholas 105, 181
 Pitt, Robert 65, 105-6, 138, 171, 179, 183-186, 208, 333, 334
 Pitt, Thomas 105, 181
 Pitt, William (d. 1540) 105, 181, 182
 Pitt, William (d. 1624) 105, 181
 Porter, Elizabeth T. 233, 245, 248, 249, 250, 275, 280
 Porter, Hugh 68, 233, 235, 277, 278, 279, 280, 280-b to d, 333
 Porter, Jean (Jane) Browne 280-e
 Porter, Mary 105, 163, 164
 Porter, Rees 68, 233, 235, 275, 277, 278, 280, 280-a, 333
 Porter, William 233, 277, 278, 279
 Porter, William Reese 233, 244, 249, 279, 280, 280-e
 Saeber, John Michael 1, 41, 42, 43, 45
 Scales, Dr. Robert H. 233, 258, 260, 263, 264, 266, 281, 371, 372, 373
 Scales, Elizabeth Jane 233, 249, 251, 258, 268, 270-1, 297, 383, 456, 475, 4
 Scales, Joseph 233, 258, 259, 263, 367, 368, 370
 Scales, Martha Jane Kaigler 233, 331, 395, 476, 477, 479, 480
 Scales, Nathaniel 68, 233-239, 258-264, 274, 284, 295, 333, 367, 36
 Scales, William Nathaniel 233, 270-a to 270-h, 334, 383, 395, 477
 Scales, William Nathaniel 233, 258, 266-270, 301-c, 302, 270
 Seawell, Ann 105, 207, 210

Shivers, Elizabeth 95, 105, 138, 141, 144, 153-160, 388
 Shivers, Jonas 105, 153, 154, 155, 158, 167
 Shivers, Jonas, Sr. 105, 153
 Shivers, Willis 105, 153-164, 334
 Shockley, Penelope 1, 95
 Smythies, Elizabeth 105, 167-169
 Smythies, John 105, 167-169
 Stubblefield, George 233, 285
 Stubblefield, Nancy Stewart 233, 282, 285, 287
 Stubblefield, Richard 68, 233, 235, 239, 286, 287, 288, 293, 333, 373, 374, 38
 Stubblefield, Robert 233, 239, 285, 286
 Stubblefield, Simon 233, 285
 Suber, George 1, 42, 45, 46, 47, 48
 Suber, Michael 1, 41-43, 47, 48, 50, 333
 Suber, Rachel 1, 333
 Suber, Rebecca 1, 17, 19, 20, 39, 41, 42, 50, 51
 Taylor, Dr. Ward J. 1, 28, 89, 90, 92, 92-a to 92-d, 99, 104, 334
 Taylor, Elias 1, 86-89, 93, 95, 98, 334, 334
 Taylor, Moses 1, 84-86
 Taylor, Nora v., 1, 27-31, 33-35, 79, 81, 91, 92, 99, 104
 Taylor, Ward 1, 28, 81-86, 88, 333
 Thomas, Jesse 68, 233, 235, 244, 333
 Thomas, Job 68, 233, 235, 244, 333
 Thomas, Mary (Polly) Hamilton 233, 244, 280
 Thomas, Mary S. 233, 243-245, 280
 Todd, Isabella Minor 105, 193
 Tweedy, Fanny 104-3, 104-5, 104-8
 Tweedy, Frances 104-2
 Tweedy, Joseph 1, 100, 101, 104-1 to 104-10, 333
 Tweedy, Mary 1, 101
 Waddill, Ann 233, 293, 382
 Waddill, William 233, 293, 382
 Walker, Alexander 233, 304
 Walker, Elizabeth 233, 304
 Waller, John 213, 217
 Waller, Mary 105, 213, 217, 221, 388, 392
 Waters, Elizabeth Ann 2, 104-b, 104c
 Watt, Mary (Nancy) 233, 263, 283
 Watt, Samuel, Jr. 233, 239, 282, 283, 284-A, 333, 373, 374
 Watt, Samuel, Sr. 233, 239, 282, 283
 Watts, Mary 233, 383
 Weyman, Hans Peter 1, 46
 Weyman, Rachel 1, 46, 47, 48
 Wood, Julia 311, 323, 327
 Wood, Sally 233, 244
 Wood, George 311, 323
 Woolfork, Mary 105, 187, 188